

# ESSEX



## ARCHAEOLOGY AND HISTORY



TRANSACTIONS OF THE ESSEX SOCIETY  
FOR ARCHAEOLOGY AND HISTORY

Volume 31

2000

**ESSEX**

**ARCHAEOLOGY AND HISTORY**

THE TRANSACTIONS OF  
THE ESSEX SOCIETY FOR ARCHAEOLOGY AND HISTORY

VOLUME 31 (Third series)

2000

Published by the Society at the Museum in the Castle 2000

# THE ESSEX SOCIETY FOR ARCHAEOLOGY AND HISTORY

The Society was founded in 1852 as the Essex Archaeological Society

Its objects are:

- (1) To promote and encourage the study of the archaeology and the history of the historic county of Essex.
- (2) In furtherance of the above, to publish the results of such studies in *Transactions* and to disseminate information on matters relating to archaeology and history in Essex through appropriate media.
- (3) To organise conferences, lectures, and visits for the benefit of members and interested members of the public; to educate the wider community in the historical and archaeological heritage of Essex; to co-operate with other bodies on matters of common interest and concern.
- (4) To provide library facilities for Society members and approved members of the public.

## *Publications*

The articles in its *Transactions* range over the whole field of local history. Back numbers are available; list and prices on application; list and prices on application to the Librarian.

Members receive a regular *Newsletter* covering all aspects of the Society's activities, news of current excavations and fieldwork, and items of topical interest.

## *The Library*

The library is housed at the Hollytrees, High Street, Colchester, and is extensive. It aims to include all books on Essex history, and has many runs of publications by kindred Societies. Members may use the library on any week day during Museum opening hours, on presentation of a signed membership card.

## *Membership*

Application should be made to the Hon. Membership Secretary for current rates. (address inside back cover).  
A list of officers, with addresses, can be found inside the back cover.

## *Subscribing Societies in Essex*

Billericay Archaeological and History Society; Brain Valley Archaeological Society; Colchester Archaeological Group; Essex Society for Family History; The Friends of Historic Essex; Halstead and District Local History Society; Haverhill and District Archaeological Group; Ingatestone and Fryerning Historical and Archaeological Society; Maldon Archaeological Group; Saffron Walden Historical Society; Waltham Abbey Historical Society; Westcliffe High School for Girls; West Essex Archaeological Group; Woodford and District Historical Society; Chigwell School.

“Reproduced from the Ordnance Survey mapping with the permission of the Controller of Her Majesty's Stationery Office © Crown copyright. Unauthorised reproduction infringes Crown copyright and may lead to prosecution or civil proceedings”.  
Essex Society for Archaeology and History 2000.

ISSN 0308 3462

# Essex Archaeology and History Volume 31 (2000)

## Contents

A Late Bronze Age hoard from High Easter	M.J.CUDDLEFORD and P.R.SEALEY	1
Excavations on the Hatfield Heath to Matching Tye rising main, north-west Essex	E.B.A.GUTTMAN	18
Prehistoric, Roman and post-medieval material from Harlow: investigations at Church Langely 1989-1994	M.MEDLYCOTT	33
Late Iron Age and Roman sites at Grenville Road and College Road, Braintree	A.GARWOOD and N.J.LAVENDER	94
Excavations at 79 Hythe Hill, Colchester 1994-5	HOWARD BROOKS	112
A Saxon inter-tidal timber fish weir at Collins Creek in the Blackwater estuary	R.L.HALL and C.P.CLARKE	125
The medieval manors of Maldon	W.R.POWELL	147
St. Thomas Becket's sisters and other studies	The late J. HORACE ROUND, revised and completed by W.R.POWELL	154
Church dedications in Colchester archdeaconry	JANET COOPER	161
'The Master of Little Braxted in his prime': Ernest Geldart and Essex, 1873-1900	JAMES BETTLEY	169
Work of Essex County Council Archeology Service, 1999	SALLY GALE (ed.)	195
Archeology in Essex 1999	A.BENNET	210
Historic Buildings Notes and Surveys 1999	D.D.ANDREWS (ed.)	233
Church Miscellany 1999	D.D.ANDREWS (ed.)	254
<b>Shorter Notes</b>		
A flint axe from Bradfield	PHILIP WISE	270
Late Bronze Age activity at South Ockenden	HELENKA JURGLEWICZ & DAVID MAYNARD	272
Marshland-inland relationships in Roman Essex: sheep, salt-licks and seasonal salters	P.M.BARFORD	276
Possible Saxon burials at Hatfield Peverel	KATHERINE REIDY & DAVID MAYNARD	279
A medieval oven at Grays, Thurrock: excavations at the Stifford County primary school, Parker Road 1995-6	DAMIEN BODEN & STUART GIBSON	285
The probable site of Pleshey Old Church located	M.J.CUDDLEFORD & PETER COTT	293
Medieval remains at Parsonage Farm, Wimbish	D.A.G GADD	300
Martello Tower 'C', Lion Point, Jaywick	DAVE WENT	306
<b>Book Reviews</b>		309
<b>Essex Bibliography</b>		311

*Cover illustration:* Church of St. Nicholas, Little Braxted: view from SE in 1886, showing the north aisle and vestry added by Ernest Geldart in 1884. [By permission of the British Library 4705.C.C.14 (3)]

## A late Bronze Age hoard from High Easter

by M. J. Cuddeford and P. R. Sealey

*The nucleus of a late Bronze Age hoard was discovered on boulder clay in High Easter parish by M. J. Cuddeford in 1993 at TL 6360 1712 in the course of a metal detector survey. Additional finds from the hoard dispersed by agricultural activity were made then and in the years 1994-96. Seventy-one Bronze Age finds were retrieved, with a total weight of 1754.07g; the average weight of items from the hoard is 24.7g. All the finds were bronze, with socketed axes as the dominant artefact type. It is difficult to account for the extent to which socketed axes outnumber other artefacts, but the same is true of many other scrap hoards of the period. The term Easter axe is proposed for a group of socketed axes in the hoard not encompassed by existing classifications; the type is distinct from the ubiquitous South-eastern axe. Most of the material was scrap metal and the presence of material directly connected with bronze smithing shows the find is a founder's hoard. Only two items of scrap in the hoard joined; a dearth of joining pieces is typical of such scrap hoards. The High Easter finds exemplify the Carp's Tongue province of Ewart Park metalworking, now dated c.920-800 BC. The contents of the hoard are noteworthy for the inclusion of fragments of the rare St Nazaire type sword, an import from France, and for the presence of seven rings. Carp's Tongue sword fragments in the hoard allow a significant minor adjustment to the distribution map of these swords because they have not previously been reported from central Essex. A Shoebury variant South-eastern socketed axe found in the vicinity at Great Garnetts and acquired by Colchester Museum in 1904 is also described; it too may have come from the hoard. Scrap hoards of Ewart Park date outnumber all other Bronze Age hoards from south-eastern England and High Easter contributes further to this imbalance in the archaeological record. None seem to be votive and the large number of such Ewart Park hoards demands some special explanation for their burial and non-recovery in antiquity. Despite difficulties in understanding the transition from bronze to iron working, the advent of iron c.825 BC remains the best explanation for the burial of hoards like High Easter.*

### Discovery and excavation

The hoard was discovered in October 1993 at TL 6360 1712 in High Easter parish, on a south-west facing slope just below the 85m contour on boulder clay (Fig. 1). It was found by M. J. Cuddeford using a metal-detector during a fieldwalking exercise undertaken to investigate plough soil peripheral to a scatter of

Romano-British pottery 400m to the west-south-west that had first been observed in 1984.

The first Bronze Age find was a socketed axe, after which the surrounding area was carefully walked with overlapping detector sweeps in a linear pattern. This led to the recovery of the socketed gouge, and several more complete and fragmentary axes. Then 10m south of the first find, the metal detector indicated a substantial buried target which turned out to be the hoard nucleus. A 50cm square was excavated. The first metalwork was reached 30cm below the surface and the main body of metalwork lay no deeper than 40cm from the ground surface in a matrix of natural boulder clay. The hoard nucleus was no more than 20cm across. It consisted of

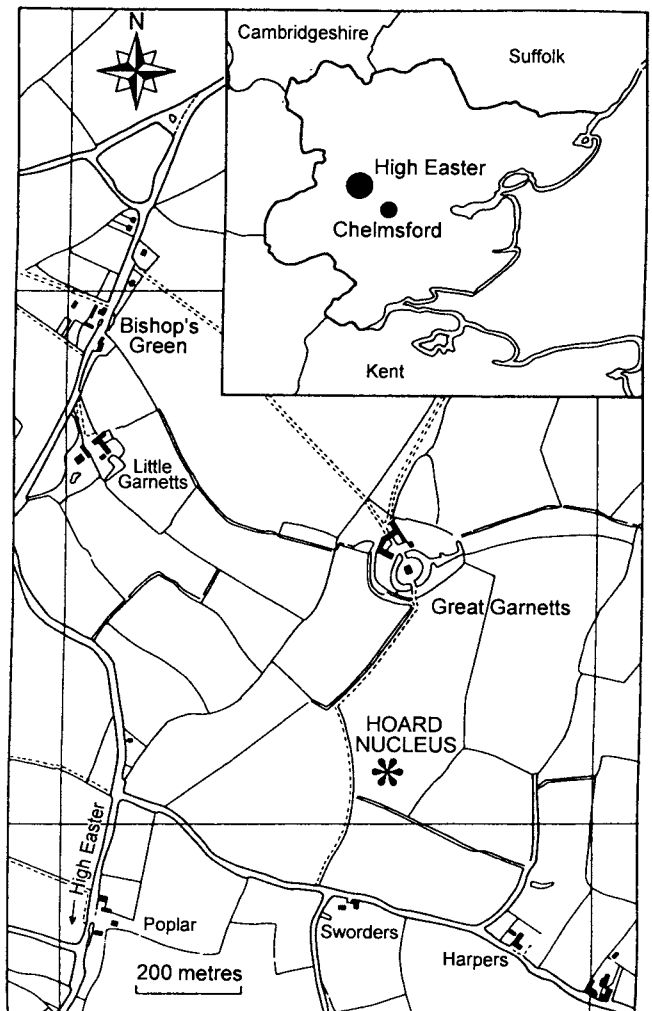


Fig. 1 The location of the High Easter hoard

several more axes, the intact and the scrapped peg-hole spears, and various fragmentary objects including six of the rings. A couple of fragments were located within the sockets of axes, and the scrapped peg-hole spear had been wrapped around two socketed axe fragments. For the most part the axes were lying flat or slightly inclined, with no evidence of patterned arrangement. The bottom-most objects and their soil matrix were examined for any evidence of fabric or plant fibre imprint, but no such trace was observed: had the hoard been buried in an organic container, no trace survived. Much of the filling of the axe sockets was boulder clay but a small amount of darker earth was recovered from within the hoard nucleus. More finds dispersed from the hoard were made in the years 1994, 1995 and 1996, up to a distance of 60m (the miscast sword hilt) from the nucleus. Other material from the adjacent plough soil includes the gouge, stud, ring VII, the two ingot fragments and the three lumps of solidified bronze splashes. Nothing was retrieved in searches undertaken in 1997 and one is confident that as much of the hoard as can be recovered has been retrieved. At the time of discovery, no comprehensive record was kept of what material came from the hoard nucleus and what was found in the surrounding plough soil. There is an indication in the hoard catalogue where that information is available for any given find and a summary of the position is given in Table 1.

<i>artefact</i>	<i>hoard nucleus</i>	<i>plough soil</i>
intact peg-hole spear (cat no.31)	●	
scrap peg-hole spear (cat no.32)	●	
rings I-VI (cat nos 46-58)	●	
ring VII (cat no.59)		●
miscast sword hilt (cat no.40)		●
gouge (cat no.29)		●
stud (cat no.60)		●
ingot fragments (cat nos 67-68)		●
bronze splashes (cat nos 69-71)		●

*Table 1. Items from High Easter with specific provenances (a dot indicates the presence of an item in the specified area)*

High Easter lies on the dissected boulder clay plateau that dominates the landscape of north-west Essex (Allen & Sturdy 1980,1,4-6). There is a graphic account in Clarke (1998,2) of how intractable some of the soils on the boulder clay can be to work and it is understandable that finds of late Bronze Age metalwork are much less common there than elsewhere in the county (Couchman 1980, fig.17). But the Couchman distribution map was compiled before metal-detector finds had impacted significantly on the picture. Surveys of the boulder clay by M. J. Cuddeford indicate a higher level of activity than hitherto anticipated in the form of a background noise of small single finds of metalwork. Nevertheless only two settlements of the period are known on the boulder clay and both lie on its fringes, at Stansted airport and Broads Green (Brown 1988,13). Stansted is 11.5km to the north-west of the hoard findspot and Broads Green 7km to the south-east.

The present location of the hoard is Saffron Walden Museum; it was generously donated by the landowner, Mr R. C. Boreham.

**Other finds**

Very little other material was found in the operation that brought the Bronze Age metalwork to light. Apart from the hoard, nothing indicative of Bronze Age occupation or activity was observed. A 3rd century AD radiate coin was recovered in the vicinity of the hoard and a few undiagnostic Roman coarseware sherds were found elsewhere in the field.

**Hoard catalogue**

Each of the 71 items from the hoard was given a number, from 1 to 71. Those numbers are retained in the catalogue below. The same numbers were used for the illustrations. Missing numbers in the figures are explained by fragments that were not illustrated, and by the presence of ring fragments that further study showed came from the same ring.

*Socketed Axes*

1. Looped socketed axe (Fig.2 no.1). Weight: 57.49g. Length 56.5mm; diagonal mouth width 32.5mm; blade width 34.5mm. There is an unobtrusive rounded moulding to the sub-circular mouth, with an uneven upper edge. Below a shallow and uneven groove under the collar there is a vestigial horizontal rib. A waisted body with rectangular section terminates in an expanded curved blade. The blade edge is blunt from corrosion with at least one concave nick that looks like a removal caused by fracturing in use. The casting seams are evident, except on the narrow loop and towards the end of that face. Inside the socket there are two internal ribs on the broad faces that descend from the top of the collar to within about 10mm of the blade interior (Ehrenberg 1981 rib type 5b). Repeated hammer blows to the upper part of the tool crushed the mouth and caused two cracks in the collar; a hole in the centre of the illustrated face presumably also relates to ancient damage.

2. Looped socketed axe (Fig.2 no.2). Weight: 82.05g. Length 63mm; diagonal mouth width 28.5mm; blade width 36mm. There is a plain chamfered collar to the sub-rectangular mouth, with an uneven upper edge; the ends of both runners stand proud. Below there is a suspicion of a vestigial horizontal moulding. A more or less straight body with rectangular section broadens out towards an expanded curved blade. The blade edge shows no signs of wear in antiquity and the axe may never have been used. The casting seams are evident, even on the loop; on the unillustrated face the seam has been hammered out towards the blade end.

3. Looped socketed axe (Fig.2 no.3). Weight: 86.18g. Length 69mm; maximum width of mouth 39mm; blade width 40mm. There is a plain rim to the mouth, with an

A LATE BRONZE AGE HOARD FROM HIGH EASTER



Fig.2 Finds from the High Easter hoard. Nos 1-5 Easter socketed axes; nos 6-9 South-eastern socketed axes; and no.10 unassigned socketed axe.

even upper edge. The loop is waisted where it rises from the collar end, suggesting wear from the thong that secured it to the handle. A waisted body of sub-rectangular section broadens out towards an expanded curved blade. The blade edge has a concave nick that looks like a removal caused by fracturing in use; otherwise the blade is sharp and it may have been annealed and rehammered (bearing in mind the indications of use on the loop). The casting seams run the whole length of both sides, including over the top of the loop and along the side beneath. Blows to both faces have crushed the mouth and caused three cracks; there are deep scratches up to 1mm wide extending obliquely across the blade edge.

4. Looped socketed axe (Fig.2 no.4). Weight: 55.15g. Length 57mm; maximum width of mouth 31mm; blade width 33mm. There is a plain rim to the mouth, with an even edge. A waisted body of rectangular section broadens out towards an expanded curved blade. The blade edge is blunt from corrosion but its even curve with no use fractures suggests the tool had been sharpened in antiquity not long before burial. The casting seam on the unillustrated side is readily apparent, except at the blade end where it has been removed. On the other side the seam has been removed, apart from under the loop and for a short length below towards the blade. On both internal broad faces of the axe inside the socket there is a rib that runs to within about 20mm of the blade (Ehrenberg 1981 rib type 5a). In antiquity a large gash of metal had been removed from the upper part of the axe, from the rim to the lower end of the loop. It is clear that the gash had been made by forcing the collar outwards. The gashed face has many deep scratches running obliquely across the tool towards the blade; a crack on the other face at right angles to the long axis looks like the result of a blow to the tool when it was being scrapped.

5. Looped socketed axe (Fig.2 no.5). Weight: 62.26g. Length 56mm; maximum width of mouth 29mm; blade width 33mm. There is a plain chamfered rim to the sub-circular mouth, with an uneven upper edge. A waisted body of sub-rectangular section broadens out towards an expanded curved blade. An oval hole 3mm long adjacent the lower end of the loop is a casting flaw. The casting seams are evident for the whole length of both faces; wear on the loop has made the seam less conspicuous there. Inside the socket, a rib 20mm long (Ehrenberg 1981 rib type 5a) runs down the illustrated face. It is unusual to have a rib on only one side; normally two are present, one on each of the opposing internal faces of the socket. The blade is corroded, as is much of the original surface at this end of the axe.

6. Looped socketed axe (Fig.2 no.6). Weight: 94.99g. Length 57mm; maximum width of mouth 39mm. There is a rounded moulding to the mouth, with an even upper edge. From another rounded horizontal moulding below rises the loop. Where the loop rises from the collar end,

it is waisted suggesting wear from the thong that secured it to the handle. The body has a waisted profile and rectangular section; it terminates in a straight break where the blade end had been removed. The uneven course of the casting seams down the axe is prominent, but towards the end of both sides has been filed and hammered out in antiquity. The rear face has a large chunk of metal removed. Its removal caused a wide shallow groove and a crack through the remaining surface of that face. The broken edge shows no sign of abrasion and was evidently removed not long before burial of the hoard. A cluster of partially superimposed hammer blows is apparent on the centre of the front face and the line towards the bottom of the illustrated side is another blow made when the axe was broken up for scrap. Some of the original surface has been lost below the collar from corrosion.

7. Looped socketed axe (Fig.2 no.7). Weight: 156.93g. Length 81.75mm; maximum width of mouth 37.25mm; blade width 47.5mm. There is a plain rim to the mouth, with an even edge; the stump of one of the runners is still apparent. Below there is an unobtrusive horizontal moulding, from which the upper end of the loop rises. A waisted body of rectangular section broadens out towards an expanded curved blade. The casting seam on the illustrated side is readily apparent, except over the loop and towards the blade end where it has been removed. On the unillustrated side the casting seam has also been removed towards the blade. There are some pockets of deep pitting on the illustrated face at the blade end. The unillustrated face has been still more severely affected by this circular pitting, not at the blade but around the mouth and along the body. It is possible that this disfigurement was caused by air bubbles in the casting operation. The left blade tip is missing and there are two concave nicks midway along the edge that look like removals caused by fracturing in use; otherwise the blade edge is sharp and shows little sign of wear. A tiny hole between the mouldings around the mouth on the illustrated face is a casting flaw; a slight hollow below might be the position of a blow in antiquity that marked the start of the dismemberment of the tool for scrap.

8. Looped socketed axe (Fig.2 no.8). Weight 109.75g. Length 73mm; maximum width of mouth 34.5mm; blade width 41.5mm. There is a rounded rim moulding to the sub-rectangular mouth, with an uneven upper edge. Below there is a narrow horizontal moulding, from which the upper end of the thin loop rises. The loop is waisted where it rises from the collar end, suggesting wear from the thong that secured it to the handle. A waisted body with rectangular section terminates in an expanded curved blade. The casting seams are prominent, even on the loop. Both moulds had been misaligned vertically by about 1mm. Inside the socket there are two internal ribs on the broad faces that descend from the top of the collar for some 30mm; one lies parallel to the long axis of the tool, the other runs obliquely (Ehrenberg 1981 rib type 5a). The blade edge



is blunt from corrosion and around the blade tips the original surface has been lost on both faces of the axe.

9. Looped socketed axe (Fig.2 no.9). Weight 97.4g. Length 62.5mm; diagonal mouth width 32.5mm; blade width 36mm. There is a rounded moulding to the sub-rectangular mouth, with a jagged upper edge. The position of one of the runners can still be made out on top of the collar in the middle of the illustrated face. Below there is an unemphatic horizontal moulding, from which the upper end of the wide loop rises. The loop is waisted where it rises from the collar end, suggesting wear from the thong that secured it to the handle. A waisted body with rectangular section terminates in an expanded curved blade. What might be taken to be wear to the blade on the side opposite the loop has been exaggerated by the loss of part of the axe through bronze disease before illustration. The casting seams are prominent, even on the loop. Inside the socket there are two internal ribs on the broad faces that descend from the top of the collar to within a few mm of the blade interior (Ehrenberg 1981 rib type 5b). Corrosion has led to the loss of the cutting edge and there is extensive pitting behind the blade on the unillustrated face.

10. Looped socketed axe (Fig.2 no.10). Weight: 128.02g. Length 66mm; maximum width of mouth 39mm. There is a plain rounded rim to the mouth, with an even edge. Below there is an unobtrusive horizontal groove from which the upper end of the loop rises and which demarcates the lower edge of the rim collar. The slightly waisted body has a rectangular section. The casting seam on the illustrated side has been hammered or filed down, except on the rim collar; on the unillustrated side it is more conspicuous. On each internal face of the axe inside the socket there is a rib that runs the whole of the extant length (Ehrenberg 1981 rib type 5b). In antiquity a large rectangular removal of metal had been made from one face to below the loop; at the lower end the face of the axe bears the depression caused by the hammer blow that removed it. The blade end of the axe had also been detached; dents about the size of thumb prints on both faces at the broken end were caused by the blows that removed it.

11. Looped socketed axe fragment (Fig.3 no.11). Weight: 11.78g. Length 36.75mm; maximum width 15mm. There is a plain rounded rim formed by a thickening of metal at the mouth, with no sign of a horizontal moulding below. The casting seam is prominent, except on the outer part of the loop. On the rim there is a large corrosion pit; smaller pits have disfigured part of the loop. Where the loop rises from the collar end it is waisted, suggesting wear from the thong that secured it to the handle.

12. Looped socketed axe fragment (Fig.3 no.12). Weight: 11.73g. Length 33.25mm; maximum width 19.75mm. There is a plain rounded rim formed by a

thickening of metal at the mouth, with no sign of a horizontal moulding below. The casting seam is prominent, except on the outer part of the loop.

13. Looped socketed axe fragment (Fig.3 no.13). Weight: 14.87g. Length 33.5mm; maximum width 19.25mm. There is a plain rounded rim formed by a thickening of metal at the mouth. The casting seam is evident on the lower part of the loop and between the loop and rim, but absent from the rest of the loop.

14. Looped socketed axe fragment (Fig.3 no.14). Weight: 12.39g. Length 31.5mm; maximum width 23.5mm. There is a plain rounded and projecting rim formed by a thickening of metal at the mouth. The casting seam is prominent. The lower end of the loop had been broken in antiquity but the rounded finish of what at first sight looks like the corresponding upper stump suggests a miscasting in which the original loop was not continuous.

15. Socketed axe mouth fragment (Fig.3 no.15). Weight: 23.82g. Length 43.25mm; maximum width 30.5mm. The mouth has a plain rounded moulding.

16. Socketed axe mouth fragment (Fig.3 no.16). Weight: 14.91g. Length 35mm; maximum width 30.5mm. The mouth has a plain rounded moulding; the casting seam is prominent.

17. Socketed axe mouth fragment (Fig.3 no.17). Weight: 12.37g. Length 24mm; maximum width 26.5mm. The mouth has a plain rounded moulding with a vestigial parallel moulding below; the casting seam is prominent.

18. Socketed axe fragment (not illustrated). Weight: 13.45g. Length 25mm; maximum width 23.5mm. The fragment comes from just below the rim at one of the corners of the axe and has a prominent rounded moulding.

19. Socketed axe fragment (not illustrated). Weight: 3.01g. Length 18mm; maximum width 12.5mm. The fragment is part of the mouth of the tool. The metal becomes thicker towards the rim but there is no feature that could be described as a moulding.

20. Socketed axe body fragment (Fig.3 no.20). Weight: 20.37g. Length 25mm; maximum width 25.75mm; maximum depth 14.25mm. The fragment is part of the body of an axe removed from just behind the blade; one face has been forced in towards the opposite face. The casting seam has been hammered flat.

21. Socketed axe body fragment (Fig.3 no.21). Weight: 13.59g. Length 21.5mm; maximum width 18mm; maximum depth 21mm. The fragment is two corners of the body of an axe. The casting seam is still perceptible, but it has been removed for part of its length by

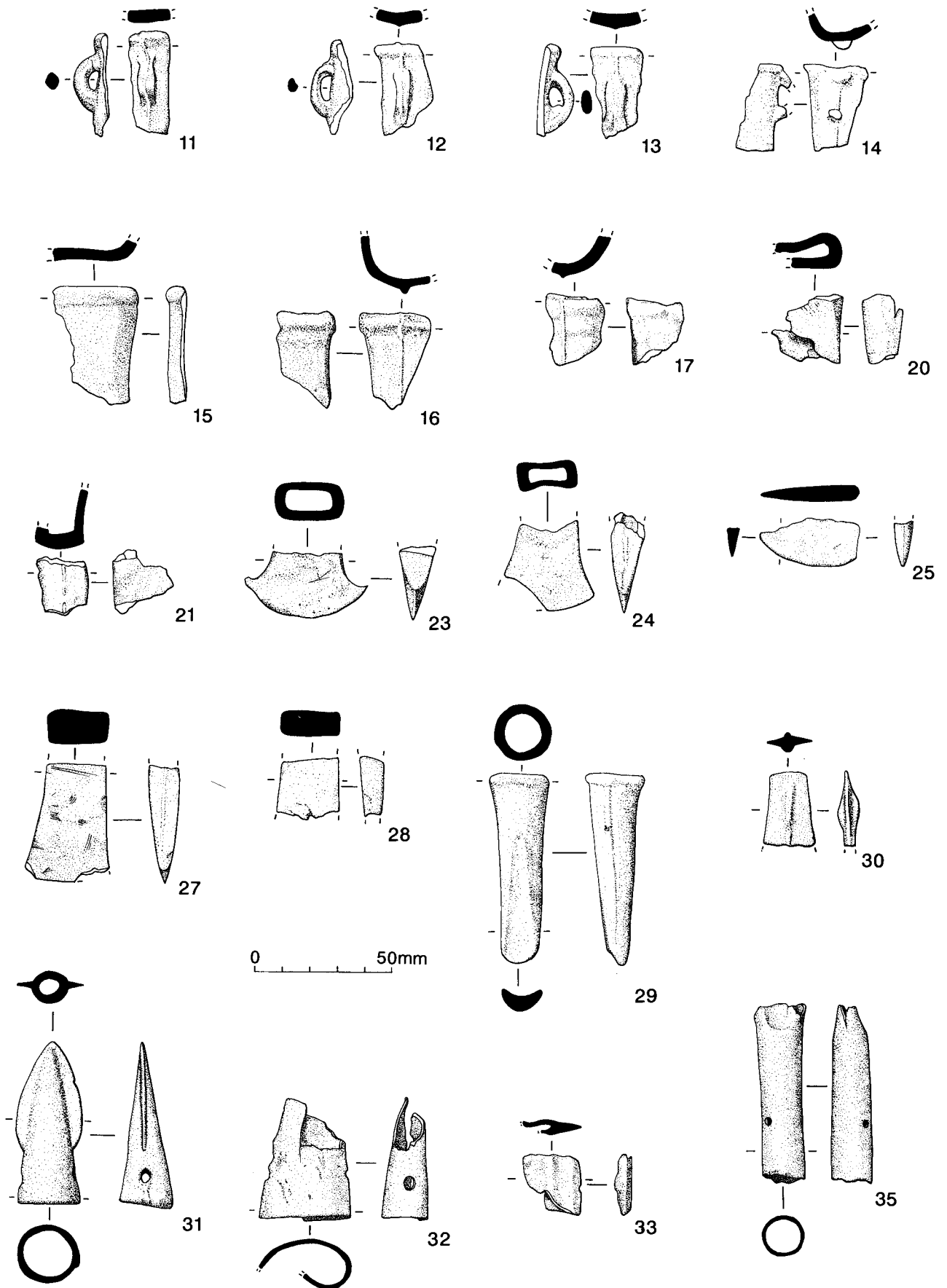


Fig.3 Finds from the High Easter hoard. Nos 11-25 socketed axe fragments; nos 27-28 palstave fragments; no.29 socketed gouge; no.30 tanged knife fragment; nos 31-33 spear blades, and no.35 spear ferrule.

hammering.

22. Socketed axe body fragment (not illustrated). Weight: 5.07g. Length 28mm; maximum width 13mm; maximum depth 10.5mm. The fragment is the corner of a socketed axe.

23. Socketed axe blade fragment (Fig.3 no.23). Weight: 8.53g. Length 29mm; maximum width 44mm; maximum depth 8.75mm. The body is rectangular in section; the casting seams have been completely removed for the short length of each side that survives. There is an expanded curved blade with prominent tips. One of the blade tips is missing and there are several concave nicks along the blade edge caused by use in antiquity. The line along which the blade has been removed from the rest of the axe is neat and straight. There is some pitting on both faces.

24. Socketed axe blade fragment (Fig.3 no.24). Weight: 31.34g. Length 32.75mm; maximum width 33.5mm; maximum depth 11mm. The body is rectangular in section; the casting seams have been filed down and hammered out for the short length of each side that survives. Curved sides end in a curved sharp blade; there is a large concave removal from one corner. The line along which the blade has been removed from the rest of the axe is uneven and jagged; at the break there are dents on both faces caused by hammer blows when the tool was broken up for scrap. The surface is uneven and pitted.

25. Socketed axe blade fragment (Fig.3 no.25). Weight: 12.33g. Maximum length 17.75mm; maximum width 35.5mm; maximum thickness 50.75mm. The tip of an axe with gently curved blade. Although no part of the actual socket survives, the prominent casting along the only surviving side establishes it as a Ewart Park phase tool and so the likelihood is that it came from a socketed axe (rather than a palstave). The unillustrated face has a deep straight dent 9mm long; the cutting edge is worn and corroded.

26. Socketed axe blade fragment (not illustrated). Weight: 6.12g. Length 20mm; maximum width 13.75mm; maximum depth 6.75mm. The blade tip of a socketed axe with curved blade (no part of the socket survives and it is conceivable the tip came instead from a palstave, but the likelihood must be that it is part of a socketed axe). There is no sign of a casting seam on the short length of side present. The curved blade has been beaten out of true by a hammer blow and a small dent on the edge of the side also represents activity when the tool was reduced to scrap. Both faces have grooves and hollows from a faulty casting, presumably caused by damage to the surface of the mould.

Socketed axes 6-9 are the so-called South-eastern type, characterised by the prominent collar mouth with moulding below from which the loop springs, and concave sides with rectangular section (Schmidt &

Burgess 1981,212-17,pls 84-6 nos 1267-1294; Needham 1990,28-31). One of them (no.9) is the Isle of Harty type, defined on the basis of finds from northern England and Scotland as an early variant by Schmidt and Burgess (1981,213,pl.84 nos 1267-70). The presence of South-eastern axes is entirely what one would have expected for a hoard of this date in south-east England.

But five (nos 1-5) of the remaining more or less complete axes are a different matter. They form a homogeneous group of small and chunky tools with sub-rectangular bodies and curved sides that terminate in an expanded blade. It is in the treatment of the mouth that they differ so much from the South-eastern axe. Although the metal may be thicker there, nothing approaches the bulbous moulding of a South-eastern axe. Below the mouth the surface may have the shallowest of grooves, imperceptible except in an oblique light. Typically the mouth end of the axe is smooth and featureless, apart from the occasional hint of a vestigial lower moulding. Mindful of the number in the hoard it is proposed to call them Easter axes, a type quite distinct from the South-eastern. What we call Easter axes were described by Schmidt and Burgess as their "rectangular socketed axes", a type found occasionally in the Carp's Tongue hoards of south-east England but which they were reluctant to acknowledge as a coherent category (Schmidt & Burgess 1981,217-18,pl.86 nos 1295-1303).

Most of the socketed axe fragments in the hoard are too small to allow allocation to a type. One of the unassigned socketed axes (no.10) has an unusual mouth: below the bulbous rim there is a collar; its lower edge is defined by a light groove. This typology sets it apart and it cannot be accommodated within existing schemes of axe classification.

Enough survives of ten socketed axes from the hoard to establish whether or not they had internal ribs. The only rib type present is Ehrenberg 5, present on six of the ten. Ehrenberg (1981,217) was able to show that this was the most common rib type for Essex and East Anglia, where it was present on at least 25 % of the axes surveyed by her. It is difficult to know why the High Easter figure of 60 % is so much higher. Even if the other six axes did not have ribs, the incidence would (at 37.5 %) still be higher than the Ehrenberg average.

The complete and fragmentary socketed axes represent a minimum of sixteen tools: five are our Easter axes, four are South-eastern, and the remaining seven are unidentified or represent fragments too small to be assigned to a type. There are no mould duplicates or siblings for the socketed axes in the hoard, including the axe from Great Garnetts described in the appendix. Duplicates are tools made from the same (re-usable) bronze mould; siblings are tools from fired-clay moulds (used only once) formed from the same wooden or clay pattern or former. One has the impression that the axes from the hoard are a rather disparate group that had all been in circulation before burial.

*Palstave Fragments*

27. Palstave fragment (Fig.3 no.27). Weight: 60.48g. Length 44mm; maximum width at blade end 30.5mm; maximum depth 11.25mm. The section is rectangular with sides that flare out gently towards a curved cutting edge; the casting seams are visible on both sides but have been hammered and filed smooth. Both blade tips have been removed and the surface is covered with dents and deep scratches and hammer marks. The broken edge at the butt end is neat and straight.

28. Palstave fragment (Fig.3 no.28). Weight: 25.33g. Length 23.5mm; maximum width 23mm; maximum depth 9mm. The section is rectangular with gently flared sides; neither side has any trace of a casting seam. At the butt end the broken edge is neat and straight; the other (blade) end is jagged.

It is conceivable that both fragments came from a short-flanged axe, but a palstave is more likely. Two different tools are represented. By Ewart Park times the palstave was redundant in Essex and both tools are survivals; the narrow blades would be appropriate to tools late in the palstave series (Schmidt & Burgess 1981,158).

*Craft Tools*

29. Socketed gouge (Fig.3 no.29). Weight: 54.63g. Length 69.5mm; diameter of mouth 20.5mm; maximum blade width 15.5mm. The gouge is socketed with a plain circular mouth formed from a thickening of metal; the sides are slightly waisted. Both casting seams still stand proud, although they had been partially hammered down in antiquity. The inside of the curved blade has fine longitudinal scratches. There are no scratches elsewhere on the gouge and so they must have been caused by wear in antiquity; the blunt and corroded state of the actual blade confirms the fact of ancient use. The gouge was found in plough soil, not the hoard nucleus.

30. Tanged knife handle fragment (Fig.3 no.30). Weight: 6.18g. Length 28mm; maximum width 19mm; depth 7.75mm. The butt end is slightly curved with facets to both edges. Both sides are waisted and the tang has a flattened lozenge cross-section. Along both faces there is a pronounced midrib. The surface is uneven and the midribs are roughly finished.

The socketed gouge is ubiquitous in late Bronze Age - especially Ewart Park - hoards and its presence need occasion no surprise here. But the tanged knife is an altogether rarer artefact; ours is presumably the double-edged variety (O'Connor 1980,178-9). These are the only craft tools in the hoard.

*Weapons*

31. Socketed peg-hole spear (Fig.3 no.31). Weight: 33.79g. Length 60.6mm; maximum mouth width 23mm; maximum blade width 23.75mm. The mouth is circular and the socket extends half-way along the leaf-shaped blade. There are two opposed peg-holes midway

between the socket and the base of the blade, cut through the casting seams. The mouth has been bent out of true and the uneven surface is pitted. The spear was found in the hoard nucleus.

32. Socketed peg-hole spear fragment (Fig.3 no.32). Weight: 15.2g. Length 43.5mm; maximum width 33.25mm; depth 17.75mm. The spear had been crushed and bent when it was reduced to scrap; all the broken edges are jagged. One peg-hole is present in its entirety; the second survives as a semi-circular notch along one broken edge. Nothing of the actual blade has survived. There are depressions caused by repeated hammer marks on the surface, with the occasional narrow oblique mark caused by other blows. The spear was found in the hoard nucleus, wrapped around two fragments of socketed axe.

33. Spear blade fragment (Fig.3 no.33). Weight: 5.09g. Length 22.25mm; maximum width 21.5mm; depth 6mm. The midrib is hollow and establishes that the blade came from a spear, rather than a sword. The only part of the original edge to have survived is slightly curved with a facet. There is a large concave removal from the blade edge and the midrib has a series of dents presumably caused by hammer blows in antiquity; the edges of the fractures are noticeably abraded.

34. Spear socket fragment (not illustrated). Weight: 8.01g. Length 40.5mm; width 18mm. There is a plain flat curved mouth, bent out of true when the tool was broken up for scrap. At the rim the metal is 2.25mm thick, tapering to 1mm at the further end. The outer surface is smooth with dents, the inner surface is uneven and rough.

35. Spear ferrule (Fig.3 no.35). Weight: 21.53g. Length 65.5mm; diameter of shaft 15mm; maximum width 18.5mm. The sides are straight with a circular cross-section and two opposed peg-holes. The lower end has a clean break where it was detached from the rest of the ferrule; the other end is jagged and bent from the blows that broke up the piece for scrap in antiquity. We cannot know how long it was because neither of the original ends survives, but it was presumably part of the shorter ferrule current in the Ewart Park phase that developed from the longer version found in Wilburton contexts (Burgess *et al.* 1972,216).

The short and chunky spear blade from the High Easter hoard is typically Ewart Park. Indeed the hoard exemplifies a trend in Ewart Park hoards towards spears that are smaller in size and fewer in number (Coombs 1975,77). The presence of only one ferrule in a hoard with a minimum of three spear blades is consistent with evidence from elsewhere that suggests most spear shafts in the period were not fitted with them (Ehrenberg 1977,22).

36. Type Saint Nazaire sword fragment (Fig.4 no.36). Weight: 42.63g. Length 36.5mm; maximum width at

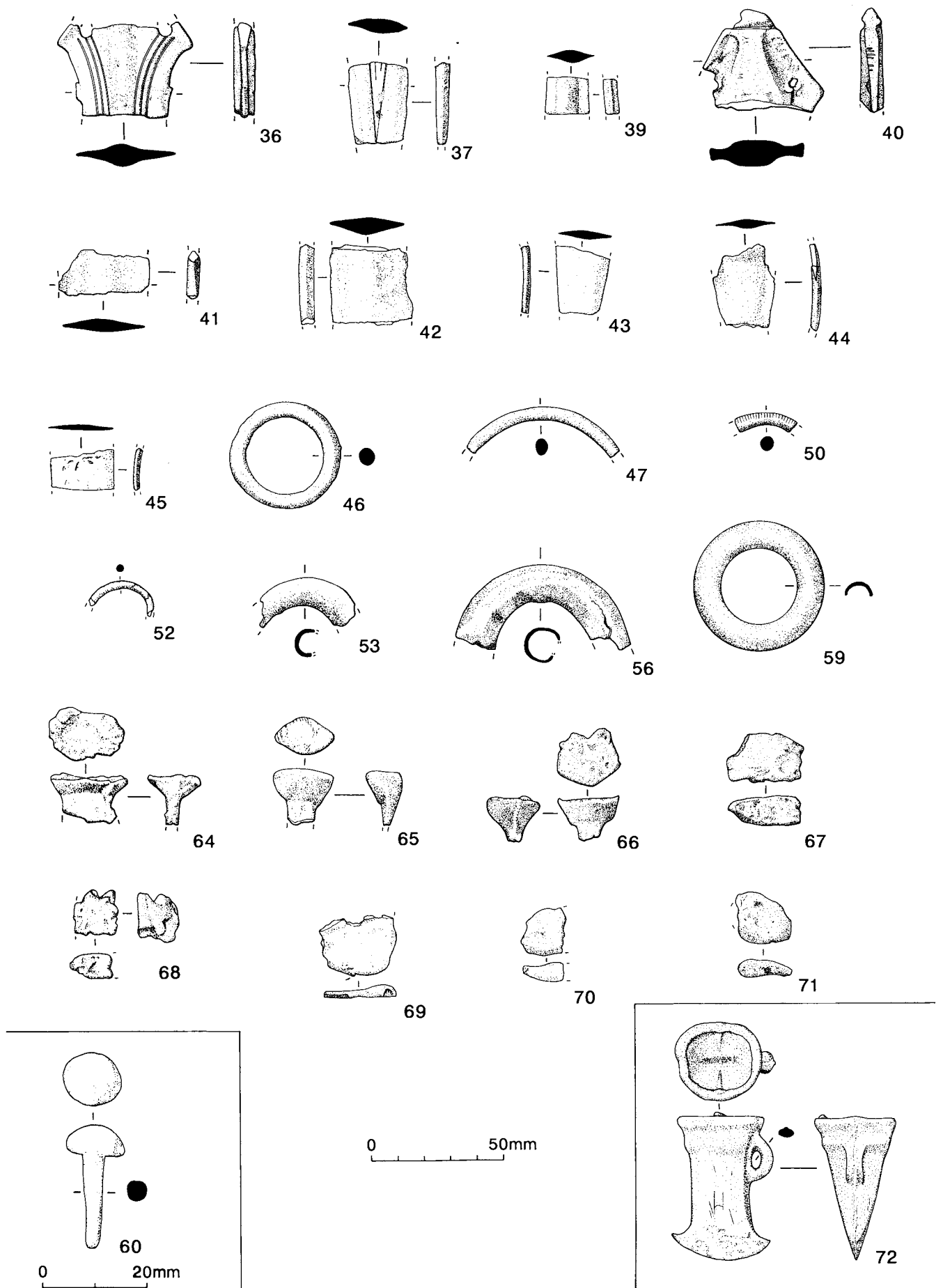


Fig.4 Finds from the High Easter hoard (nos 36-71) and the South-eastern socketed axe from Great Garnetts (no.72). Nos 36-37 St Nazaire sword fragments; no.39 Carp's Tongue sword fragment; no.40 miscast sword hilt; nos 41-45 unassigned sword blade fragments; no.46 Ring I; no.47 Ring II; no.50 Ring III; no.52 Ring IV; no.53 Ring V; no.56 Ring VI; no.59 Ring VII; no.60 stud; nos 64-66 casting jets; nos 67-68 ingot fragments; nos 69-71 splashes of solidified metal; no.72 Shoebury variant South-eastern axe from Great Garnetts.

shoulder 50.5mm; maximum depth of midrib 12.5mm. Angular concave ricassi rise from the ricassi notches to the shoulder, above which there are two rivet holes. Running from each rivet hole down both sides of the blade is a set of three parallel grooves. The midrib is rounded with bevelled wings.

37. Type Saint Nazaire sword fragment (Fig.4 no.37). Weight: 12.78g. Length 30.5mm; maximum width 22.75mm; depth of midrib 4.75mm. There is a polished surface with two converging grooves that join towards the tip end; two more short lengths of grooving peter out within 7mm of the top of the fragment. In section the fragment is lenticular with bevelled edges. The right edge has been eaten away by corrosion. Multiple grooves that extend towards the blade tip settle the identity of the fragment.

Saint Nazaire swords are imports from France confined to the Wicken Fen, Isleham (both Cambridgeshire) and Blackmoor (Hampshire) hoards. They were current from the end of the Wilburton industry until the initial Ewart Park phase, as represented by the Blackmoor hoard itself (Colquhoun & Burgess 1988,53-4,pls 39-40 nos 251-5,pl.126). Their rarity in this country makes their presence here of some interest.

38. Carp's Tongue sword blade fragment (not illustrated). Weight: 1.54g. Length 15mm; maximum width 9mm; depth of surviving midrib 3.75mm. The blade edge is straight and the fragment is demarcated from the midrib by a groove from which the tiny portion of surviving midrib rises steeply. Despite the tiny size of the fragment, the groove flanking the midrib shows the weapon is a Carp's Tongue sword.

39. Carp's Tongue sword blade fragment (Fig.4 no.39). Weight: 5.32g. Length 14.5mm; maximum width 17mm; depth of surviving midrib 5mm. The narrow width shows the fragment came from towards the blade tip and the straight sides indicate a Carp's Tongue sword.

Very few complete Carp's Tongue swords are known from Britain; most are represented by fragments in scrap hoards. On the mainland of Europe their distribution is centred on western and southern Brittany, with an extension south towards the Gironde. Evidently they reached Britain as exports of scrap metal from France (Colquhoun & Burgess 1988,111).

40. Sword hilt fragment (Fig.4 no.40). Weight: 45.11g. Length 40.5mm; maximum width 44.5mm; maximum depth of midrib 9mm. Just inside the shoulder there is a complete rivet hole, with part of a corresponding hole on the opposite side. Below the complete rivet hole, the break in curve marks the start of the ricasso. Both shoulders are concave and end in a blunt rounded terminal demarcated by a horizontal groove. The flange edges of the shoulder are separated from the midrib by a wide concave groove. There is an uneven and lumpy

finish to the hilt, particularly in the grooves between the midrib and flange that one might expect of a hilt that would have been hidden from view beneath a bone or wooden grip.

The piece is apparently unique. No parallel can be found for a hilt like this among the swords (and indeed the dirks and rapiers) from Britain. So short a hilt cannot have provided a satisfactory grip for a sword and one wonders if this was a broken weapon refashioned as a knife or dagger, as with some other Bronze Age swords (Colquhoun & Burgess 1988,78 no.360,123 nos 756,758-9,pls 54 and 111). Dr S. P. Needham and R. Maraszek suggest the hilt is a miscasting. It was not found in the hoard nucleus, but some 60m away in plough soil.

41. Sword blade fragment (Fig.4 no.41). Weight: 10.45g. Length 17.25mm; maximum width 34mm; depth of midrib 4.5mm. There is a plain and polished surface; the section is lenticular. Not enough of the sword is present to facilitate identification of the type.

42. Sword blade fragment (Fig.4 no.42). Weight: 23.78g. Length 30mm; maximum width 32.75mm; depth of midrib 5.5mm. There is a plain (ungrooved) surface; the section is lenticular, with bevelled edges. The fragment has been bent into a slight curve along the long axis of the sword. Both blade edges have been eaten away by corrosion. Not enough of the sword is present to facilitate identification of the type.

43. Sword blade fragment (Fig.4 no.43). Weight: 5.62g. Length 25.5mm; maximum width 20.5mm; depth of midrib 2.25mm. There is a plain (ungrooved) surface; the section is lenticular, with bevelled edges. The fragment comes from just behind the blade tip; not enough of the sword is present to facilitate identification of the type.

44. Sword blade fragment (Fig.4 no.44). Weight: 7.67g. Length 31.5mm; maximum width 22.5mm; depth of midrib 3.25mm. There is a plain (ungrooved) surface; the section is lenticular. The fragment comes from just behind the blade tip; it has been bent into a slight curve along the long axis of the sword. Only along the blade edges does the original patination survive, the rest of the surface is rough from corrosion. Not enough of the weapon is present to allow identification of the type.

45. Sword blade fragment (Fig.4 no.45). Weight: 3.59g. Length 15.75mm; maximum width 24mm; depth of midrib 2.5mm. There is a plain (ungrooved) surface; the section is lenticular. The fragment comes from towards the blade tip; it has been bent into a slight curve along the long axis of the sword. Both faces have grooves and hollows from a faulty casting, presumably caused by damage to the surface of the mould. Not enough of the weapon is present to allow identification of the type. Sword blade fragments 41-45 all have gently rounded

sections, sometimes with a bevelled edge. Positive identification on this basis is not possible but the likelihood is that they came from one or more Ewart Park swords, the most common bronze sword in the British Isles (Colquhoun & Burgess 1988,55).

All the sword fragments of whatever type catalogued above have a consistent style of scrapping. They show only slight signs (or none at all) of having been bent to facilitate breakage, and the fracture lines are generally neat and straight. This impression of homogeneity is reinforced by the mean item weight of the fragments, which - apart from that of the spears - stands apart from other categories of find in the hoard (see below).

#### *Rings and Stud*

46. Ring I (Fig.4 no.46) weighs 22.5g. It is solid and circular in section, with an external diameter of 41.5mm and a maximum thickness of 6mm. The complete ring is present but corrosion has left the surface rough and uneven.

47. Ring II (Fig.4 no.47) is represented by three solid arcs of metal, circular to oval in section (catalogue nos 47-49). They weigh 2.4, 3.58 and 8.79g respectively. The ring has an external diameter of 64mm and a maximum thickness of 4.75mm. About two-thirds of the original artefact is present. Corrosion has left most of the surface rough and uneven, with some areas of pitting.

50. Ring III (Fig.4 no.50) is represented by two short joining lengths of solid metal (catalogue nos 50-51), weighing 1.72 and 2.84g respectively. Together they are 36.5mm long; the section is oval to circular. On the outer face of the longer piece is a series of neat parallel incised lines running half way around the surface. The two lengths presumably lost their circular shape when the ring was broken up for scrap.

52. Ring IV (Fig.4 no.52) is represented by a curved length of solid metal weighing 0.68g. It is 36mm long, with a circular section 2.5mm thick. About half the ring survives; it has been bent out of true but evidently had an original external diameter of about 24mm.

53. Ring V (Fig.4 no.53) is represented by three fragments (catalogue nos 53-55), weighing 0.8, 2.16 and 4.37g. It was made from a semi-circular piece of metal 6.75mm across, with an external diameter of some 60mm. Rather more than half of the section of the ring survives. Parts of the inner and outer surfaces have brown staining as if the ring had been in contact with iron at some stage.

56. Ring VI (Fig.4 no.56) is represented by two tiny and one large fragment (catalogue nos 56-58), weighing 0.42, 0.48 and 26.06g respectively. It was made from a hollow metal oval 15mm across, with an external diameter of some 64mm. At no point does the metal form a complete unbroken circle. The outer face is

smooth and shiny with a light grey finish, suggesting a tinned surface or production from a lead-rich alloy (Needham 1990,108). Inside the largest fragment there is an amorphous (unidentified) brown lump, with some patches of rust-like staining on the exterior.

Hollow rings were made in the Bronze Age, but they are rare. They were apparently made from sheet metal bent into a tube, sometimes with overlapping edges (Burgess *et al.* 1972,217). But it is more usual to find a gap on the inside; sometimes the aperture is big enough to give a c-sectioned bracelet. Damage to the inside of both Rings VI and VII does not allow their original form to be reconstructed but an aperture there would account for the fact that corrosion attacked them at this point. Bracelets with apertures are common on the mainland of Europe, where they are usually decorated (Needham 1990,62 citing O'Connor 1980,206-14).

59. Ring VII (Fig.4 no.59) is a circular band of semi-tubular metal weighing 18.19g. Its inner edge is marginally lower than the outer. The external diameter is 49mm. The outer face is smooth and shiny with a light grey finish (exactly like Ring VI), suggesting a tinned surface or a high-lead bronze. It was found in plough soil beyond the hoard nucleus. But the lower inner edge is a feature reproduced on the semi-tubular ring from the Monmore (Perthshire) hoard (Stewart 1882,29 fig.6) and this detail of typology strengthens the case for a Bronze Age date.

Semi-tubular rings like High Easter are known from six Ewart Park phase hoards (Pearce 1974,60 with refs). Four come from Scotland. Nearer to home are the semi-tubular rings in the Great Freeman Street hoard from Nottingham (Smith 1957,GB.22 no.16) and the Green End Road hoard from Cambridge (Clark 1938,pl.6,fig.20 no.5). They are a rare type with no immediately obvious function.

Ring VII was found in plough soil peripheral to the hoard but Rings I-VI were part of the hoard nucleus and their Bronze Age credentials are not therefore in doubt. Rings are not well represented in late Bronze Age hoards of Ewart Park date from southern England (Sealey 1988,10) and the presence of so many at High Easter is unusual. A variety of functions seems reasonable. Solid rings like I and II may have included scabbard and baldric fittings and horse harness, while hollow ones like VI are thought to have been bracelets.

60. Stud (Fig.4 no.60). Weight: 4.02g. Length 22.75mm; maximum diameter of head 10.75mm. The stud has a rounded head with flat base; the straight shank is rectangular in section. At the end the shank is bent and the tip is missing. The stud does not respond to a magnet and so we are not dealing with an iron object with a coating of copper-alloy. It was found in plough soil, not the hoard nucleus.

Studs are rare in the late Bronze Age. They make their first appearance in Wilburton hoards, and finds from settlement sites show them still current in the succeeding Ewart Park phase. Their precise function

remains unclear (Needham 1980,21-2). At least three small bronze pins with round heads were found hidden inside the socket of an *iron* peg-hole spear from the late Bronze Age Melksham (Wiltshire) hoard, a find of the Llyn Fawr (Hallstatt C) phase. But it is unlikely they ever secured the spear blade to the shaft because they are so small (Gingell 1979,246,fig.13 no.5a). Nor would our stud fit any of the peg-holes in the High Easter spear blades or ferrule (it is too big); in any case the underside of the dome on the stud is flat and a rounded base would have been needed for use on a curved surface.

*Miscellaneous Scrap Metal, Industrial Waste and Raw Materials*

61. Scrap of bronze (not illustrated). Weight: 1.41g. Length 18.75mm; width 7.5mm; depth 3.25mm. The fragment is apparently the edge of a bladed tool and the asymmetrical section suggests the possibility of a sickle.

62. Scrap of bronze (not illustrated). Weight: 1.63g. Length 16.5mm; width 12.5mm; depth 2.5mm. All the edges of the tool are broken but one end has part of what looks like an original curved side. Mindful of the thickness of the metal, this is apparently part of a socketed axe.

63. Scrap of bronze (not illustrated). Weight: 0.25g. Length 15.5mm; width 8.25mm; thickness 0.25mm. All the edges of this thin flat plate are broken but one end has part of what looks like an original curved side. The thinness of the metal makes it difficult to hazard an identification but it might be part of a hollow ring.

All three fragments are parts of artefacts but their diminutive size makes a positive identification difficult. They are the smallest portions of scrap in the hoard and the inclusion of such tiny pieces testifies to the value of bronze in the period.

64. Casting jet (Fig.4 no.64). Weight: 16.07g. Length and width of the upper surface of the reservoir 28.5 and 19.75mm respectively; height of the jet 17mm. The feeder is 20mm long and 4.25mm wide. There is a low conical reservoir with a dished and rough upper surface and single feeder below which descends from the reservoir at an oblique angle.

65. Casting jet (Fig.4 no.65). Weight: 15.43g. Length and width of the upper surface of the reservoir 22.25 and 14mm respectively; height of the jet 20.25mm. The feeder is 9.5mm long and has a lenticular section 3.5mm thick. There is a steep-sided conical reservoir with a level upper surface and single feeder below which descends from the reservoir at an oblique angle. The worked upper surface of the reservoir is quite unlike the other two jets and may have been used as a rasping tool and anvil, as Needham (1990,71) suggested for one of the jets from the Petters Sports Field hoards.

66. Casting jet (Fig.4 no.66). Weight: 17.52g. Length and width of the upper surface of the reservoir 23 and

21.25mm respectively; height of jet 16.5mm. The feeder is 8mm long and 5mm wide. There is a steep-sided conical reservoir with a level upper surface and single feeder below which descends vertically from the reservoir.

67. Ingot fragment (Fig.4 no.67). Weight: 30.51g. Length 27.5mm; maximum depth 12.5mm; width 20mm. It has a relatively smooth flat upper face and a rougher convex lower surface.

68. Ingot fragment (Fig.4 no.68). Weight: 10.5g. Length 16mm; maximum depth 10mm; width 17.5mm. The fragment represents part of the outer upper edge of a plano-convex ingot.

Both fragments have every appearance of being lumps of the copper ingots so common in late Bronze Age hoards of the Ewart Park phase. They were subjected to semi-quantitative x-ray fluorescence analysis - which investigates only the surface layers - by J. C. Bayley (Ancient Monuments Laboratory) and it emerged that although 68 is indeed copper, 67 is instead a heavily leaded bronze. Whenever these ingot fragments have been analysed, the metal is copper (Evans 1881,422-3; Tylecote 1962,29-31; Northover 1983,65,67) and so there must be some doubt about the date of the leaded bronze fragment. Both were found in plough soil, not the hoard nucleus.

69. Bronze lump (Fig.4 no.69). Weight: 10.56g. Length 29mm; width 23.5mm; depth 2.75mm. The waste is flat and thin with a rounded original edge; two-thirds is jagged where the edge has been removed.

70. Bronze lump (Fig.4 no.70). Weight: 7.63g. Length 18mm; width 18.5mm; depth 6mm. The edges of the waste are rounded, except for a straight length which represents a breakage.

71. Bronze lump (Fig.4 no.71). Weight: 8.92g. Length 24.75mm; width 18.5mm; depth 6.75mm. One surface of the waste is convex and smooth; the other face is dished.

None of these lumps are artefacts. All three have the amorphous and rounded form of waste bronze, such as solidified splashes of metal from a casting operation or the remnants left in the bottom of a crucible. The lack of a flight tail shows they had not fallen any significant distance through the air before coming to rest (Needham 1980,fig.13 nos 32-3,23). All three lumps were found in plough soil, not the hoard nucleus.

**Hoard weight and minimum artefact count**

The 71 finds weigh 1754.07g, to give an average item weight of 24.7g. Items range in weight from the 0.25g of fragment no.62 up to the 156.93g of socketed axe no.9. It is difficult to say if the weight of the hoard is typical for Essex because the necessary data for the county still awaits collation. But our feeling is that at 1.75kg, High



A LATE BRONZE AGE HOARD FROM HIGH EASTER

Easter will turn out to be on the low side. One says this because Taylor (1993,54-5) puts the average weight for a Bronze Age hoard in East Anglia (Norfolk, Suffolk and Cambridgeshire) at some 4kg, although his average of 2kg for Wessex, the Thames valley and West Country is much closer to High Easter.

Bradley (1990,144) wondered if research on the weights of bronze scrap hoards might eventually lead to the identification of a unit of weight behind the whole system, comparable to that recognised by Spratling (1980) for prehistoric goldwork. This is not the place to pursue this but the weight of the High Easter hoard may transpire to be one of the most important results of the whole project, bearing in mind our confidence that at least most of the finds from the hoard have been retrieved and that contamination with earlier or later material is non-existent or minimal.

Details of the weights of the categories of artefact in the hoard are given in Table 2. It is striking that there are such variations in the average item weights - apart from those for the spear and sword fragments, which correspond so closely. There seems no reason to think that a smith intent on breaking up a group of artefacts into scrap metal would have done it systematically category by category. Perhaps this correspondence of the average weights for the spear and sword fragments can be explained by supposing they reached the smith as scrap metal from a different source to the other items in the hoard. This was certainly the case with the Carp's Tongue sword fragments which were imported as scrap from France.

artefact type	weight	number of fragments	average weight
socketed axes	1145.9	26	44.07
palstaves	85.81	2	42.90
craft tools	60.81	2	30.41
spears and ferrule	83.62	5	16.72
swords	158.49	10	15.84
rings	94.99	14	6.79
stud	4.02	1	4.02
unidentified scrap	3.29	3	1.10
raw materials	117.14	8	14.64
totals	1754.07	71	24.7

Table 2. Artefact weights in grammes and fragment counts for the High Easter hoard

In an attempt to elucidate the character of the High Easter find, we have calculated the minimum number of complete artefacts represented by the material in the hoard. The results are given in Tables 3 and 4. One might have thought that an apparently miscellaneous collection of scrap like this would include material drawn from every sphere of Bronze Age life where metal was in use and that the composition of the hoard would be a reliable pointer to the relative currency of different artefacts. If this were the case, variations in hoard compositions could be used with some confidence as evidence for conditions in the period *e.g.* scrap hoards with a conspicuous weapons component might hint at regions particularly prone to warfare. But examination of the hoard does not suggest its components are

necessarily a random collection of metalwork. A notable omission from the hoard is the sickle, an artefact central to the life of a farming community. The absence of sickles is no less remarkable than the large numbers of axes and palstaves present. In terms of weight and number they dominate the hoard, as they do with so many other late Bronze Age hoards of the region and period. Harding (1976,516-19) suggested this could be explained by postulating a more important role for axes than hitherto envisaged but his contention that axes were used as hoes and mattocks in tilling the soil (as well as the more traditional role in wood-working) does not convince.

artefact type	minimum number of artefacts present
South-eastern socketed axes	4
Easter socketed axes	5
unassigned socketed axes	7
palstaves	2
socketed gouge	1
tanged knife	1
spears (includes one ferrule)	3
Carp's Tongue sword	1
St Nazaire sword	1
unidentified sword	1
rings	7
stud	1

Table 3. Detailed analysis of the minimum number of artefacts represented by the scrap in the High Easter hoard

artefact type	minimum number of artefacts present
socketed axes	16
palstaves	2
craft tools	2
spears	3
swords	3
rings	7
stud	1

Table 4. Summary of the minimum number of artefacts represented by the scrap in the High Easter hoard

Some late Bronze Age hoards consist exclusively of socketed axes. Dovercourt is the best example from Essex with its fifteen axes, only two of which are damaged or scrap tools; the rest would have been usable in antiquity (Anonymous 1912,8,pl.1; Butcher 1923,261). Bradley (1990,118-20) sees parallels between these axe hoards from Britain and the sickle hoards so common in central and southern Germany. He suggests that axes and sickles had dual roles as working tools and as ingots. It is indeed possible that axes served as currency ingots in gift exchange and in other transactions such as ransoms or dowries. If this nascent currency were decimal it might explain hoards that consist exclusively of socketed axes where the number present is a multiple of five (Sealey 1988,13). But even if axes did assume a role akin to that of a primitive currency, it is still difficult to see how this alone can account for their dominant position in Ewart Park hoards and one is left with the nagging suspicion

that there were factors behind the selection of items for inclusion in scrap hoards of which we are oblivious.

### Phasing and date

Metalwork current in the Ewart Park phase of the late Bronze Age is divided into several regional traditions. Ours is known as the Carp's Tongue industry, from the swords of that name found in hoards like High Easter across wide areas of south-eastern England. The palstaves and Saint Nazaire swords are the only earlier material in the hoard. True Carp's Tongue assemblages have links with northern France (Burgess 1969,38-9) although how much of the material was actually imported is not known. Precise definition of the tradition is difficult because so many of the artefacts found in Carp's Tongue assemblages - but not the Carp's Tongue swords themselves - have distributions that extend beyond the south-east (Needham 1990,73). Central Essex is one region where these swords are absent from the hoard record (Brown 1996,30) and so High Easter allows an interesting minor adjustment of our distribution maps (O'Connor 1980,834; Colquhoun & Burgess 1988, pl.133; Needham 1990, fig.17.)

A major programme of radiocarbon dating of organic material associated with Bronze Age artefacts has led to a significant revision of the chronology of the period. Since 1979 the Ewart Park phase of late Bronze Age metalworking - to which of course the High Easter hoard belongs - has been assigned to the period c.900-700 BC. Initial Ewart Park material is represented by a solitary hoard, from Blackmoor (Hampshire). This Blackmoor phase falls within the period c.1020-920 BC and developed Ewart Park metalwork of the kind found at High Easter is now known to have been current c.920-800 BC (Needham *et al.* 1998,76-80,82,93,98).

### High Easter as a scrap hoard

The contents of the hoard range from complete artefacts that could have seen continued service in the Bronze Age (five of the axes, one of the spear blades, and the gouge) to small fragments of broken tools and jewellery. As the great majority of items retrieved from the hoard are broken, it is evident the cache is a body of material that was being dismembered and transformed into scrap metal. The range in size and weight of the scrap fragments shows that the scrapping operation had been suspended before the metalwork was consigned to the ground. Other scrap hoards from the county with a lower average item weight and consistently smaller items of broken artefact represent a more advanced stage of the operation; a striking example is the Southchurch hoard (Davies 1979,166-71). But the weight of the final pieces of scrap would of course have depended on the size of the crucible for which they were destined and on the final intended product. Large artefacts such as swords would take more scrap and need bigger crucibles than smaller craft tools or ornaments.

Every effort was made to locate joining breaks among the High Easter material. Only two such joins

were found, the arcs of metal that make up what survives of Ring III (and they might conceivably be modern breaks). This dearth of joins is typical of most Ewart Park scrap hoards and fits awkwardly with the *impression* given by High Easter of the scrapping operation having been suspended immediately prior to burial. Were that indeed the case more joins would have been expected. It would seem that - for whatever reason - the High Easter scrap had been extracted from a much larger stockpile of scrap. Moreover the scrap bank from which such hoards had been extracted remained above ground and never entered the archaeological record *i.e.* it was not buried in the ground, or if it was the stockpile was always retrieved in antiquity. What exactly this implies for the organisation of late Bronze Age metalworking is unclear (Needham 1990,132).

Bronze was a precious commodity in the Bronze Age because regions like south-eastern England have no natural resources of tin and copper; all the metal in circulation had to be imported as scrap or finished products. Bronze is rare on settlement sites. Some examples from nearby sites further south in central Essex illustrate this. At Broads Green, only a solidified droplet of bronze weighing less than a gramme was recovered from a late Bronze Age site (Brown 1988,12) and at the contemporary site of Springfield Lyons (where moulds for sword production were found in the ditches), no bronze at all was recovered (Buckley & Hedges 1987,5). Nor was any bronze found at the Broomfield late Bronze Age enclosure (Atkinson 1995). When bronze does occur on sites in southern England, the fragments tend to be smaller than the scrap items in contemporary hoards; complete artefacts tend to be small items of low weight - such as pins, tweezers and studs - that would be prone to inadvertent loss anyway and whose small size made recovery less likely (Needham 1980,24-5). This dearth of bronze on settlement sites in the late Bronze Age shows that a rigorous régime of waste metal collection was practised and that it was standard practice to recycle metalwork through the agency of scrap hoards. Recycling is a familiar concept to affluent contemporary western households. Glass, paper and metal cans are recycled nowadays for ecological reasons but such worthy ambitions had no place in the Bronze Age. Metal was recycled out of necessity: it was an expression of poverty (Bradley 1990,147-8 citing Woodward 1985,191). One need only look at the far greater size and weight of the broken copper-alloy artefacts on Roman sites to appreciate how much higher were standards of living even then than in the Bronze Age.

Many of these late Bronze Age hoards contain nothing other than scrap but some - like High Easter - have evidence for even closer links with the world of the bronze smith. In our hoard the casting jets, ingot fragments and solidified metal splashes show a bronze smith at work and High Easter belongs to a specific category of scrap hoard known as a founder's hoard (Needham 1990,130).

### The scrap hoard conundrum

The character of scrap hoards like High Easter is clear enough but it is far from obvious why such hoards were not retrieved in antiquity and it is this problem that we must address next.

At present the hoard phenomenon enjoys huge popularity as a topic in archaeological discourse. Interest has been stimulated by the recent discoveries of great Iron Age and Roman treasures such as Snettisham (Norfolk) (Stead 1991), Salisbury (Wiltshire) (Stead 1998) and Hoxne (Suffolk) (Johns & Bland 1993), as well as by the quickening tempo of discoveries of coin hoards of all periods. Hoard studies have been further invigorated by the growing recognition that many were buried for ritual reasons (votive hoards), without intention of recovery. The traditional view that hoards were buried for temporary safe-keeping in times of trouble has come to be viewed as pedestrian, at least by prehistorians. But it is typical of the liveliness of the current debate that it should include the publication of treasure hoards buried for just that reason - by Germans in 1945 fleeing west, away from the advancing Russian army (Painter & Künzl 1997). It is ironic that this insight from modern history cannot be amplified by anthropological research because the study of so-called primitive societies sheds no light on why Bronze Age hoards might have been buried (Coombs 1975,68).

The specific problems posed by Bronze Age scrap hoards are well known. Although there is the occasional early and middle Bronze Age hoard with broken artefacts, there are no scrap hoards as such then. They make their debut in the late Bronze Age Wilburton phase, now dated *c.*1140-1020 BC (Needham *et al.* 1998,90) but proliferate in the succeeding Ewart Park phase with a concentration in south-east England. The number of Ewart Park scrap hoards far exceeds other categories of hoard and the volume of metalwork contained in them is immense relative to earlier and later periods. It is this imbalance in their chronological distribution that has made them so puzzling.

The components of a Ewart Park scrap hoard from Withersfield (Suffolk) had been carefully arranged in the ground in such a way as to suggest a possible votive hoard (Charge 1996), although this need represent nothing more than an ordered mind with time enough to take care over burial. There is in fact no reason to view scrap hoards as votive. Ritual hoards are often found in watery contexts but Ewart Park hoards come almost exclusively from dry land. Although at least one has been retrieved from the foreshore of the river Thames in London, it would seem that the findspot was at least seasonally dry when it was buried (Cotton & Wood 1998,18-19,28). Moreover the range of artefacts found in scrap hoards and their broken condition is not replicated in votive hoards and the clustering of scrap hoards in the penultimate, Ewart Park phase of the Bronze Age is difficult to reconcile with what we know of the longevity of ritual practices in prehistory.

The most attractive explanation of the Ewart Park hoards is to relate them to the introduction of

ironworking. This was originally suggested by Burgess (1979,275-6; Burgess & Coombs 1979,v-vi) and after twenty years of debate a consensus is emerging that this is indeed the most promising avenue of approach (Needham 1990,130-40; Needham *et al.* 1998,93). Iron reduced the importance of bronze in the economy because staple artefacts such as axes and swords were now made in a new metal. Bronze working survived, but its role was henceforth confined to the production of specialist items such as cauldrons. As the quantity of bronze required by society dwindled, much of the metal accumulated in scrap hoards became redundant. Scrap was buried until such time as it was required but the pace at which iron was adopted meant that many of the Ewart Park hoards remained in the ground, forgotten.

Quite apart from the problem of establishing what advantages iron had over bronze as the staple metal for tools, there remain difficulties with proposing iron as the root cause of the Ewart Park scrap hoard phenomenon. No iron has survived in Essex from Ewart Park contexts; none of the scrap hoards in the county include the metal. The earliest iron from Essex is a set of rings and a pin associated with flint-tempered initial Iron Age pottery from the Orsett causewayed enclosure (Hedges & Buckley 1978,291-2). But iron is rare anyway until the end of the Iron Age (Sealey 1996,58) and so its absence from Ewart Park contexts is not an insuperable difficulty.

Much has also been made of the implications of the Llyn Fawr (Hallstatt C) bronze industries which developed after Ewart Park; it has been argued that the fact of Llyn Fawr bronze metalwork is inconsistent with the early introduction of iron working postulated by Burgess (Northover 1984,128-130). But this overlooks the special character of Llyn Fawr metalwork in eastern England between the Thames estuary and the Wash. For one thing there is very little of it, and what there is consists mainly of the Sompting and linear-faceted socketed axes diagnostic of the period. Few hoards are known and they consist largely of axes: Hoe (Norfolk) with its ten axes (including South-eastern, ribbed and a linear-faceted example) and ingot metal; Watton (Norfolk) with seven linear-faceted axes; and Wicken Fen (Cambridgeshire) with two more (Thomas 1989,271,281-2 with refs). Apart from Boyton (Suffolk) where a socketed axe was found with a Hallstatt C Gündlingen sword fragment wedged inside it (Burgess 1979,269-70), there are no scrap hoards of Llyn Fawr type recorded from Essex and East Anglia. Gündlingen swords themselves are seldom found in hoards and most examples are complete weapons that had been cast in rivers as offerings at a time when iron was preferred for fighting weapons (Colquhoun & Burgess 1988,116). On the European mainland much the same happened with the Mindelheim sword: bronze examples were reserved for watery deposits but iron specimens are found in graves (Bradley 1988,257). This continued production of weapons in bronze for ceremonial and ritual at the start of the Iron Age may also explain the Llyn Fawr axe hoards from eastern

England and beyond. These axes may also have had a role that belonged to the world of ceremony and ritual, in which they functioned as currency ingots in gift exchange and other transactions such as ransoms or dowries (see above). The demands of tradition sustained the manufacture of socketed axes in bronze for special roles at a time when iron had displaced bronze for working artefacts (Thomas 1989,273) and this would account for the meagre Llyn Fawr phase between the Thames estuary and the Wash.

The Burgess thesis that the Ewart Park scrap hoards found in south-eastern Britain can be seen as casualties of the introduction of iron explains why one of us began a survey of the Iron Age of Essex with this topic (Sealey 1996,46). When that was published the Ewart Park phase was dated c.900-700 BC. Since then Ewart Park has been redated backwards to c.920-800 BC. This has disquieting implications for the watershed between the late Bronze Age and our initial Iron Age. If the majority of Ewart Park scrap hoards were not retrieved in antiquity because of the impact of iron, the likelihood would seem to be that they were buried towards the end of the c.920-800 BC Ewart Park phase and that our Iron Age began (let us say) c.825 BC. In 1996 it was possible to adopt the Burgess thesis but to evade the problem of correlating our initial Iron Age pottery with developments in metal technology. This was because the emergence of the first recognisable Iron Age pottery style zone c.650 BC was not too far removed from the then accepted c.700 BC terminal date of Ewart Park. Now though we find ourselves in the unsettling position where iron was making a significant impact at a time when what we call late Bronze Age pottery was still current and would remain so for perhaps another hundred and fifty years. There is not of course any *a priori* reason why the introduction of iron needs a change in ceramic style. Now that we know late Bronze Age pottery straddles the divide between the Bronze and Iron Ages, it might be best to follow Needham (1996) and call it post Deverel-Rimbury pottery instead. It will be interesting to see how the implications of these developments are tackled in the coming years.

## Appendix

### A socketed axe from Great Garnetts

The Great Garnetts axe is looped and socketed (Fig.4 no.72). Weight: 65.44g. Length 56mm; maximum width of mouth 33.25mm; blade width 37mm. There is a plain expanded rim to the mouth, with an even upper edge. On the rim above the two internal ribs are the stumps of the two runners. Below the rim there is an unobtrusive horizontal moulding from which the loop springs. Where it rises from this moulding, the loop is waisted suggesting wear from the thong that secured it to the handle. The more or less straight sides of the axe widen out sharply to an expanded curved blade with prominent tips. In section the body is sub-rectangular. An attempt had been made to reduce the casting seams. Inside the socket there are two internal ribs: one is a short length 15mm long set some way down inside the

socket, the other runs down from the rim for about 20 mm (Ehrenberg 1981 rib types 4 and 5 respectively). There are deep longitudinal scratch marks on the unillustrated face and much of the original surface at the blade end on the other face has been eaten away by corrosion. The blade itself is blunt and shows an asymmetrical pattern of wear, with the edge on the opposite side to the loop worn back through use.

The axe is the South-eastern type, more specifically the Shoebury variant defined by Schmidt and Burgess (1981,213-4,pl.85 nos 1272-4). It was acquired by Colchester Museum in 1904 (accession number 1904.712). The register gives as its provenance Great Garnetts, a farmhouse only 400m north of the High Easter hoard. It is possible the Great Garnetts axe came from the hoard reported here, dislodged from the nucleus by agricultural activity long ago.

### Acknowledgements

The hoard was drawn by Iain Bell of Essex County Council Archaeology Section. Funding for the work was generously provided by Essex County Council through the good offices of Dr Owen Bedwin. Without his intervention it is unlikely the hoard would have been published. A contribution towards the cost of the illustrations was also made by Colchester Museum. Justine Bayley of the Ancient Monuments Laboratory kindly analysed the two ingot fragments and we thank Nina Crummy for conveying them to London. Regine Maraszek (Freie Universität Berlin) found the time in 1998 to examine the hoard in its entirety and we have incorporated her comments in our text. T. G. Cowie (National Museums of Scotland) researched the semi-tubular ring and drew our attention to the parallels cited in the text. We also take this opportunity to express our gratitude to the following for their help and advice: Peter Berridge and Anne-Maria Bojko (Colchester Museum), Nigel Brown (Essex County Council) and Dr Stuart Needham (British Museum). We are most grateful to the landowner, Mr R. C. Boreham, who permitted access for the fieldwork and who generously donated the hoard to Saffron Walden Museum.

*Authors:* M.J. Cuddeford, Hill House, Back Lane, Pleshey, Chelmsford, CM3 1HL and Dr. P.R. Sealey, Colchester Museum Resource Centre, 14 Ryegate Road, Colchester, CO1 1YG.

### Bibliography

- Allen, R. H. & Sturdy, R. G. 1980 "The environmental background". In D. G. Buckley (ed.) *Archaeology in Essex to AD 1500* (Council for British Archaeology Research Report No.34), 1-7. London
- Anonymous 1912 "List of additions to the museum" *Report of the Museum and Muniment Committee for the Year Ended 31st March, 1912*, 8-27
- Atkinson, M. 1995 "A late Bronze Age enclosure at Broomfield, Chelmsford" *Essex Archaeol. Hist.*, 26, 1-23
- Bradley, R. J. 1988 "Hoarding, recycling and the consumption of prehistoric metalwork: technological change in western Europe" *World Archaeology*, 20, 249-60
- Bradley, R. J. 1990 *The Passage of Arms: an Archaeological Analysis of Prehistoric Hoards and Votive Deposits* Cambridge

## A LATE BRONZE AGE HOARD FROM HIGH EASTER

- Brown, N. R. 1988 "A late Bronze Age settlement on the boulder clay plateau: excavations at Broads Green 1986" *Essex Archaeol. Hist.*, 19, 1-14
- Brown, N. R. 1996 "The archaeology of Essex c.1500-500 BC". In O. R. Bedwin (ed.) *The Archaeology of Essex: Proceedings of the Writtle Conference*, 26-37. Chelmsford
- Buckley, D. G. & Hedges, J. D. 1987 *The Bronze Age and Saxon Settlements at Springfield Lyons, Essex: an Interim Report* (Essex County Council Occasional Paper No.5) Chelmsford
- Burgess, C. B. 1969 "The late Bronze Age in the British Isles and north-western France" *Archaeol. J.*, 125 for 1968, 1-45
- Burgess, C. B. 1979 "A find from Boyton, Suffolk, and the end of the Bronze Age in Britain and Ireland". In C. B. Burgess & D. G. Coombs (eds) *Bronze Age Hoards: Some Finds Old and New* (British Archaeological Reports), British Series No. 67, 269-82, Oxford
- Burgess, C. B. & Coombs, D. G. 1979 "Preface". In C. B. Burgess & D. G. Coombs (eds) *Bronze Age Hoards: Some Finds Old and New* (British Archaeological Reports, British Series No.67), i-vii. Oxford
- Burgess, C. B., Coombs, D. G. & Davies, D. G. 1972 "The Broadward complex and barbed spearheads". In F. M. Lynch & C. B. Burgess *Prehistoric Man in Wales and the West: Essays in Honour of Lily F. Chittly*, 211-83. Bath
- Butcher, C. H. 1923 "Essex bronze implements and weapons in the Colchester Museum" *Trans Essex Archaeol. Soc.*, 16, 258-67
- Charge, B. B. 1996 "A late Bronze Age founder's hoard from Withersfield, Suffolk, WTH-012" *J. Haverhill and District Archaeol. Group.*, 6 (2), 115-22
- Clarke, C. P. 1998 *Excavations to the South of Chignall Roman Villa, Essex 1977-81* (East Anglian Archaeology Report No.83) Chelmsford
- Clarke, J. G. D. 1938 "Early Man". In L. F. Salzman (ed.) *The Victoria History of the County of Cambridgeshire and the Isle of Ely*, 247-303. London
- Colquhoun, I. A. & Burgess, C. B. 1988 *The Swords of Britain* (Prähistorische Bronzefunde 4.5) Munich
- Coombs, D. G. 1975 "Bronze Age weapon hoards in Britain" *Archaeologia Atlantica*, 1, 49-81
- Cotton, J. & Wood, B. 1998 "Recent prehistoric finds from the Thames foreshore and beyond in Greater London" *Trans London Middlesex Archaeol. Soc.*, 47 for 1996, 1-33
- Couchman, C. R. 1980 "The Bronze Age in Essex". In D. G. Buckley (ed.) *Archaeology in Essex to AD 1500* (Council for British Archaeology Research Report No.34), 40-6. London
- Davies, D. G. 1979 "Hatfield Broad Oak, Leigh, Rayne, Southchurch: Late Bronze Age hoards from Essex". In C. B. Burgess & D. G. Coombs (eds) *Bronze Age Hoards: Some Finds Old and New* (British Archaeological Reports, British Series No.67), 149-72. Oxford
- Ehrenberg, M. R. 1977 *Bronze Age Spearheads from Berkshire, Buckinghamshire and Oxfordshire* (British Archaeological Reports, British Series No.24) Oxford
- Ehrenberg, M. R. 1981 "Inside socketed axes" *Antiquity*, 55, 214-18
- Evans, J. 1881 *The Ancient Bronze Implements, Weapons and Ornaments of Great Britain and Ireland* London
- Gingell, C. 1979 "The bronze and iron hoard from Melksham and another Wiltshire find". In C. B. Burgess & D. G. Coombs (eds) *Bronze Age Hoards: Some Finds Old and New* (British Archaeological Reports, British Series No.67), 245-51. Oxford
- Hedges, J. D. & Buckley, D. G. 1978 "Excavations at a Neolithic Causewayed Enclosure, Orsett, Essex, 1975" *Proc. Prehist. Soc.*, 44, 219-308
- Harding, A. F. 1976 "Bronze agricultural implements in Bronze Age Europe". In G. de G. Sieveking, I. H. Longworth & K. E. Wilson (eds) *Problems in Economic and Social Archaeology*, 513-22. London
- Johns, C. M. & Bland, R. F. 1993 "The great Hoxne treasure: a preliminary account" *J. Roman Archaeol.*, 6, 493-6
- Needham, S. P. 1980 "The bronzes". In D. Longley *Runnymede Bridge 1976: Excavations on the Site of a Late Bronze Age Settlement* (Research Volume of the Surrey Archaeological Society No.6), 13-27. Guildford
- Needham, S. P. 1990 *The Petters Late Bronze Age Metalwork: an Analytical Study of Thames Valley Metalworking in its Settlement Context* (British Museum Occasional Paper No.70) London
- Needham, S. P. 1996 "Post Deverel-Rimbury pottery". In R. P. J. Jackson & T. W. Potter *Excavations at Stonea, Cambridgeshire, 1980-85*, 245-57. London
- Needham, S. P., Bronk Ramsay, C., Coombs, D. G., Cartwright, C. & Pettitt, P. 1998 "An independent chronology for British Bronze Age metalwork: the results of the Oxford radiocarbon accelerator programme" *Archaeol. J.*, 154 for 1997, 55-107
- Northover, J. P. 1983 "The exploration of the long-distance movement of bronze in Bronze and early Iron Age Europe" *Bull. Inst. Archaeol. Univ. London*, 19 for 1982, 45-72
- Northover, J. P. 1984 "Iron Age bronze metallurgy in central southern England". In B. W. Cunliffe & D. Miles (eds) *Aspects of the Iron Age in Central Southern Britain* (University of Oxford Committee for Archaeology Monograph No.2), 126-45. Oxford
- O'Connor, B. 1980 *Cross Channel Relations in the Later Bronze Age* (British Archaeological Reports, Supplementary Series No.91) Oxford
- Painter, K. S. & Künlz, E. 1997 "Two documented hoards of treasure" *Antiq. J.*, 77, 291-325
- Pearce, S. M. 1974 "A late Bronze Age hoard from Glentnar, Aberdeenshire" *Proc. Soc. Antiq. Scot.* 103 for 1970-71, 57-64
- Schmidt, P. K. & Burgess, C. B. 1981 *The Axes of Scotland and Northern England* (Prähistorische Bronzefunde 9.7) Munich
- Sealey, P. R. 1988 "A Late Bronze Age hoard from Fingringhoe" *Essex Archaeol. Hist.*, 18 for 1987, 7-15
- Sealey, P. R. 1996 "The Iron Age of Essex". In O. R. Bedwin (ed.) *The Archaeology of Essex: Proceedings of the Writtle Conference*, 46-68. Chelmsford
- Smith, M. A. (ed.) 1957 *Bronze Age Hoards and Grave-Groups from the N.E. Midlands* (Inventaria Archaeologica, 4th Set, GB.19-24) London
- Spradling, M. G. 1980 "Weighing of gold in prehistoric Europe". In W. A. Oddy (ed.) *Aspects of Early Metallurgy* (British Museum Occasional Paper No.17), 179-83. London
- Stead, I. M. 1991 "The Snettisham treasure: excavations in 1990" *Antiquity*, 65, 447-64
- Stead, I. M. 1998 *The Salisbury Hoard* Stroud
- Stewart, C. 1882 "Notice of a hoard of bronze weapons and other articles found at Monadh-Mor, Killin" *Proc. Soc. Antiq. Scot.*, 16 for 1881-82, 37-31
- Taylor, R. J. 1993 *Hoards of the Bronze Age in Southern Britain: Analysis and Interpretation* (British Archaeological Reports, British Series No.228) Oxford
- Thomas, R. 1989 "The bronze-iron transition in southern England". In M. L. S. Sorensen & R. Thomas (eds) *The Bronze Age-Iron Age Transition in Europe* (British Archaeological Reports, International Series No.483), 263-86. Oxford
- Tylecote, R. F. 1962 *Metallurgy in Archaeology* London
- Woodward, D. 1985 " 'Swords into ploughshares': recycling in pre-industrial England" *Economic History Review*, 38, 175-91

# Excavations on the Hatfield Heath to Matching Tye rising main, north-west Essex

by E.B.A. Guttmann

with contributions by W. J. Carruthers, C. J. Going, E. Harrison, J. Last, T. McDonald, E. B. Pieksma, T. Stickler and T. Waldron

*Fieldwalking by the Essex County Council Field Archaeology Group and archaeological monitoring by the Hertfordshire Archaeological Trust led to the excavation of three sites along the route of a pipeline across the Boulder Clay of north-west Essex. Late Bronze Age field boundaries and a small, rectilinear post-built structure, Roman field boundaries and medieval ditches and pits were excavated. A cremation was found in a posthole of the Late Bronze Age structure, and placed pottery deposits in an adjacent gully. The associated special deposits suggest a ritual function for the structure and link it with the similar, possible shrine at Broads Green near Great Waltham.*

## Introduction

In February and March 1997, the Hertfordshire Archaeological Trust (HAT) carried out excavations and monitoring in advance of pipe laying by Tilbury Construction on behalf of Thames Water (Fig. 1). The route of the pipeline was across chalky Anglian Boulder Clay at c. 65-75 m O.D., and through Hoxnian or Devensian Head deposits on the valley slopes below 65 m O.D. The Head (sandy hillwash and solifluction deposits) comprises up to 7 m of structureless loamy clays, silts and sands with angular flints; this deposit was found in the dry valley to the south of the Hatfield Heath sewage works, and in the Pincey Brook Valley where it is overlain by alluvium (Millward 1981).

The soils are gleyed brown earths of Chelmer Association in the river valley, and calcareous gley soils of Hanslope Association on the Boulder Clay (Avery 1980). All archaeological features were located on the Boulder Clay plateau to the south of Pincey Brook, which flows into the River Stort 3.5 km to the west.

## Methods

Prior to excavation, a desktop assessment and fieldwalking survey were carried out by the Essex County Council Field Archaeology Group (ECC FAG) (Germany and Garwood 1996). The fieldwalking survey identified five potential sites (Sites 30-34, Table 1) in the line of the pipe trench (Fig. 1), Site 33 having two distinct components. An additional site (35) was revealed in the course of archaeological monitoring.

An easement 4 - 7 m wide was stripped along the route of the pipeline, though a few centimetres of ploughsoil were left in the base to ensure the topsoil was not mixed with the subsoil during reinstatement. In the areas of archaeological potential identified by the

fieldwalking, the remaining ploughsoil was stripped under archaeological supervision in order to expose the underlying Boulder Clay on the plateau, and the colluvium in the valleys. All of the archaeological features identified were excavated and recorded, and bulk samples were taken from datable contexts (i.e. those which produced artefacts) containing visible charcoal. All features on the Late Bronze Age Site 35 were sampled.

Site	Finds
30	5 worked flints and 1 core, 157g of burnt flint
31	Roman pottery scatter
32	4 worked flints, 140g of burnt flint
33a	751g of burnt flint
33b	Medieval pottery, concentrated either side of High Road
34	3 sherds of Late Iron Age pottery, 1 worked flint, 367g of burnt flint

Table 1 Fieldwalking finds

## Archaeological and historical background

### Late Bronze Age

Evidence for later Bronze Age settlement on the Essex Boulder Clay plateau remains sparse with, for instance, only one site found during the Stansted Airport Project (Brooks and Bedwin 1989). However, Brown (1988a) notes that despite the paucity of known sites, metalwork is not uncommon on the Essex Boulder Clay; finds include a Late Bronze Age sword in or near a stream bed by Matching Green, 2.5 km south-east of Site 35 (Essex Sites and Monuments Record 4512). Some 15 km further east at Broads Green, near Great Waltham, an unusual small rectangular structure was excavated in 1986, associated with post Deverel-Rimbury pottery and a number of unurned cremations (Brown 1988a).

Sites are more numerous in the Stort Valley to the west, including roundhouses and field ditches revealed on the Boulder Clay at Thorley, near Bishop's Stortford (Last and McDonald forthcoming). Three Late Bronze Age axes have also been found in the vicinity (Hertfordshire SMR 2124, 2125 and 2126), while at Little Hallingbury on the eastern side of the valley a possible enclosure was found with another group of unurned cremations, one of which was radiocarbon dated to [sic] '950 bc' (Robertson 1975). Similar cremations were also excavated at Harlow Gravel Pit to

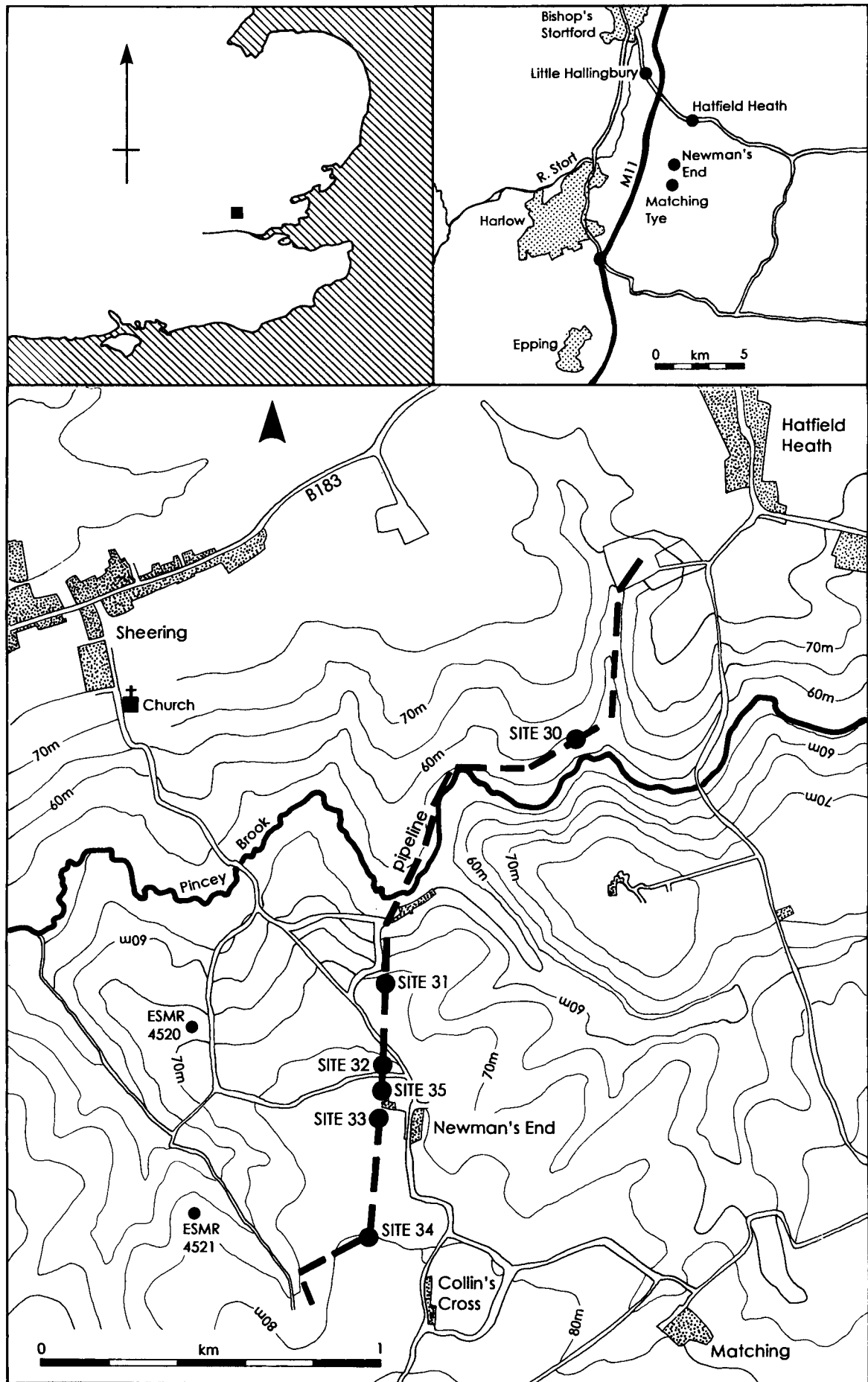


Fig.1 Location plan (Reproduced by kind permission of Ordnance Survey. © Crown copyright NC/01/154)

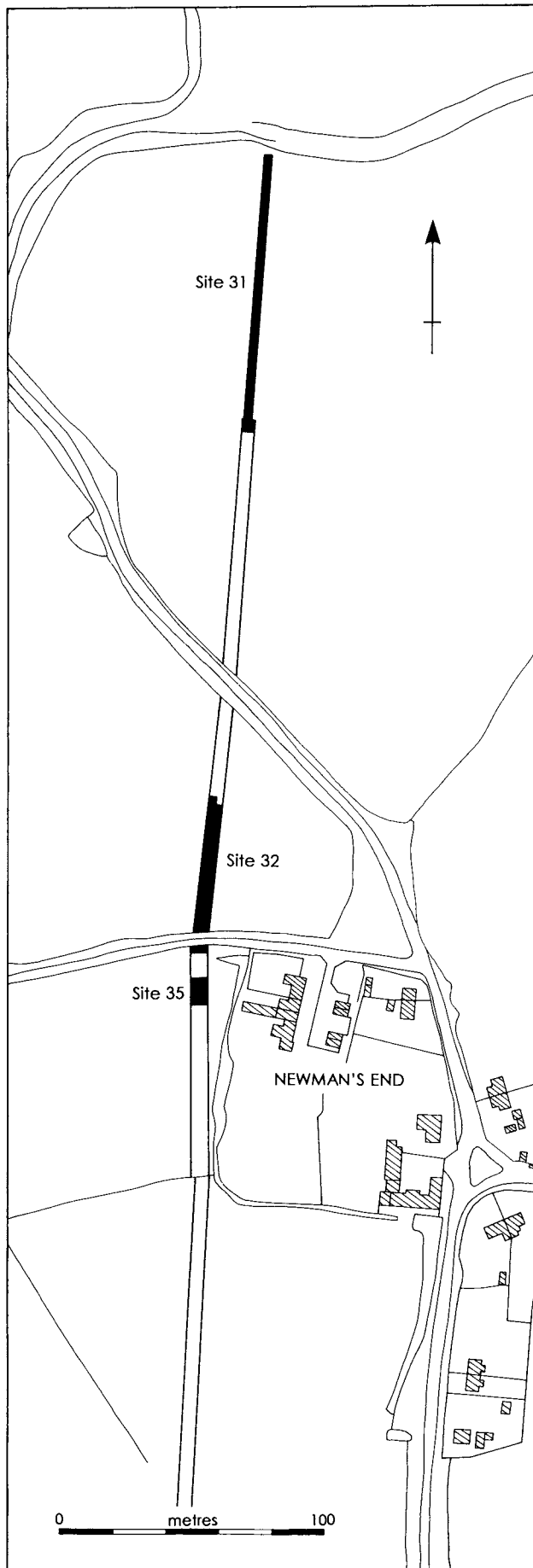


Fig. 2 Location of Sites 31, 32, 35 (Reproduced by kind permission of Ordnance Survey. © Crown copyright NC/01/154)

the east of Harlow (*ibid.*), while Late Bronze Age/Early Iron Age pits and ditches have been found near the church at Sheering (Essex SMR 9131 and 9132).

#### *Iron Age and Roman*

In contrast to earlier periods, intensive fieldwalking in the area west of Saffron Walden has demonstrated that settlement on the clay uplands was well established by the end of the Iron Age (Williamson 1984; 1986), with a tendency for sites to cluster on the edges of the clay plateau and the valley floors. A similar density and distribution of Roman sites was found, while the lighter soils on the valley sides remained unoccupied. In both periods, sites on the plateau margins tended to be larger.

Recent aerial photographic surveys of clay areas elsewhere in East Anglia and the Midlands have also revealed an increasing number of Iron Age and Roman cropmark sites beneath eroding ridge and furrow (Palmer 1996).

#### *Saxon and Medieval*

Early Saxon settlement in Essex was predominantly concentrated along the river valleys (Darby 1971) and in previously cleared land (Tyler 1996). Continuity of settlement location from the Roman period has been demonstrated at some Essex sites, such as Mucking and Rivenhall, but the Stansted survey showed a clear break in occupation, with some woodland regeneration over areas of Roman farmland (Brooks and Bedwin 1989). The same is true for the central plateau of Williamson's survey area in north-west Essex, though on the plateau margins he demonstrated some continuity of settlement between the Roman, Saxon and medieval periods (Williamson 1986).

The Domesday survey shows a high population in north-west Essex, where the chalk and gravel content of the Boulder Clay made farming easier than on the more impervious London Clay to the south (Darby 1971). Much woodland was cleared between 1066 and 1086 but as in previous periods the villages were mostly located in the valleys. Population grew dramatically up to the 14th century with a number of new settlements (Williamson 1986; Ward 1996), though the landscape around Matching consisted of dispersed hamlets and farms rather than nucleated villages surrounded by common fields. From the 14th century, the effects of famine, the Black Death and the growth of towns led to a drop in population accompanied by a widespread shrinkage of villages and hamlets in Essex and the abandonment of many farms.

#### **The Excavations**

##### *Site 30 (Fig. 1)*

The ploughsoil in the river valley and dry valley to the south of the Hatfield Heath sewage works was stripped cleanly onto the colluvium below, but no archaeological features were identified. The scatter of flints which defined Site 30 was probably brought downslope in the hillwash.



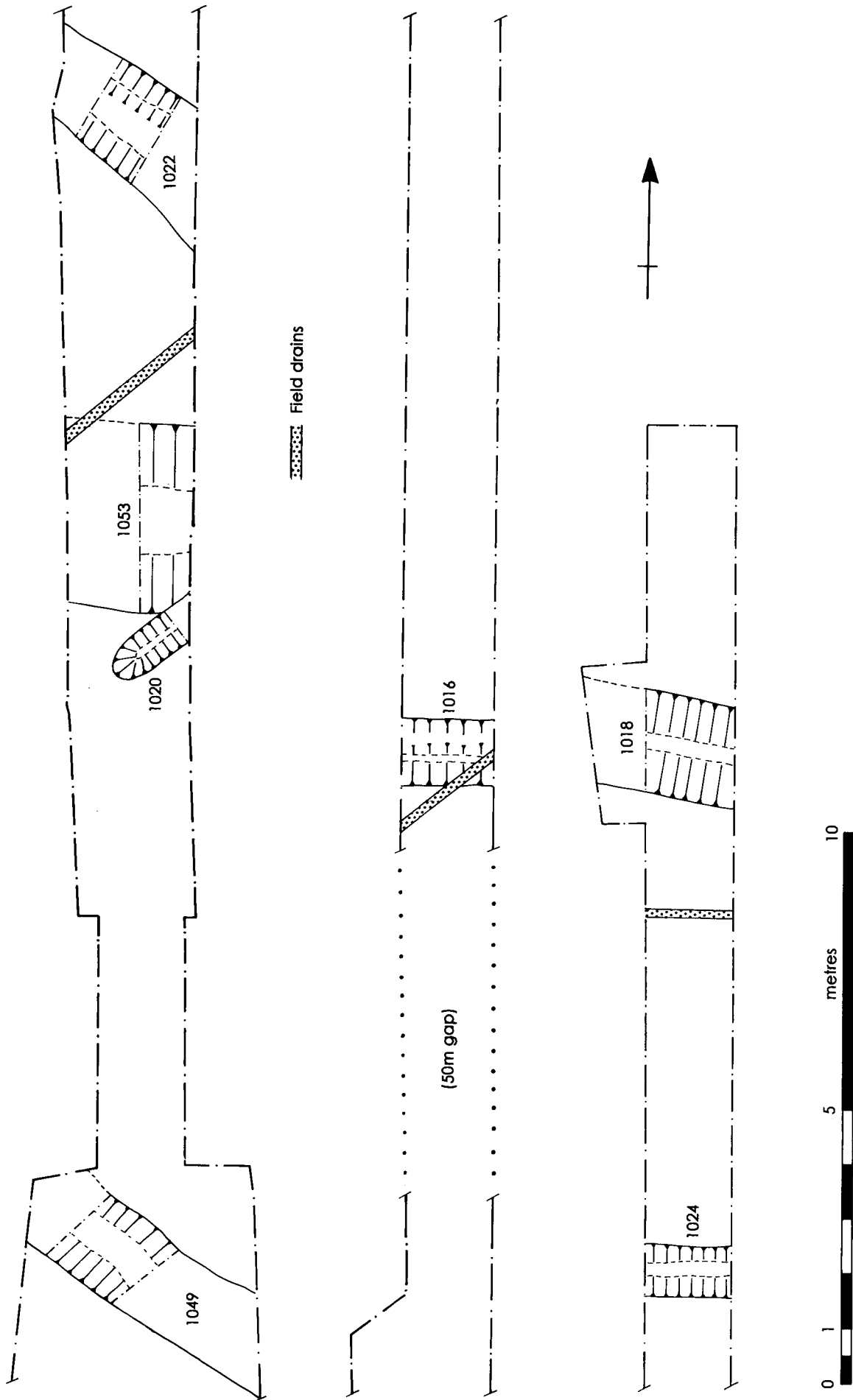


Fig. 3 Plan of Site 31

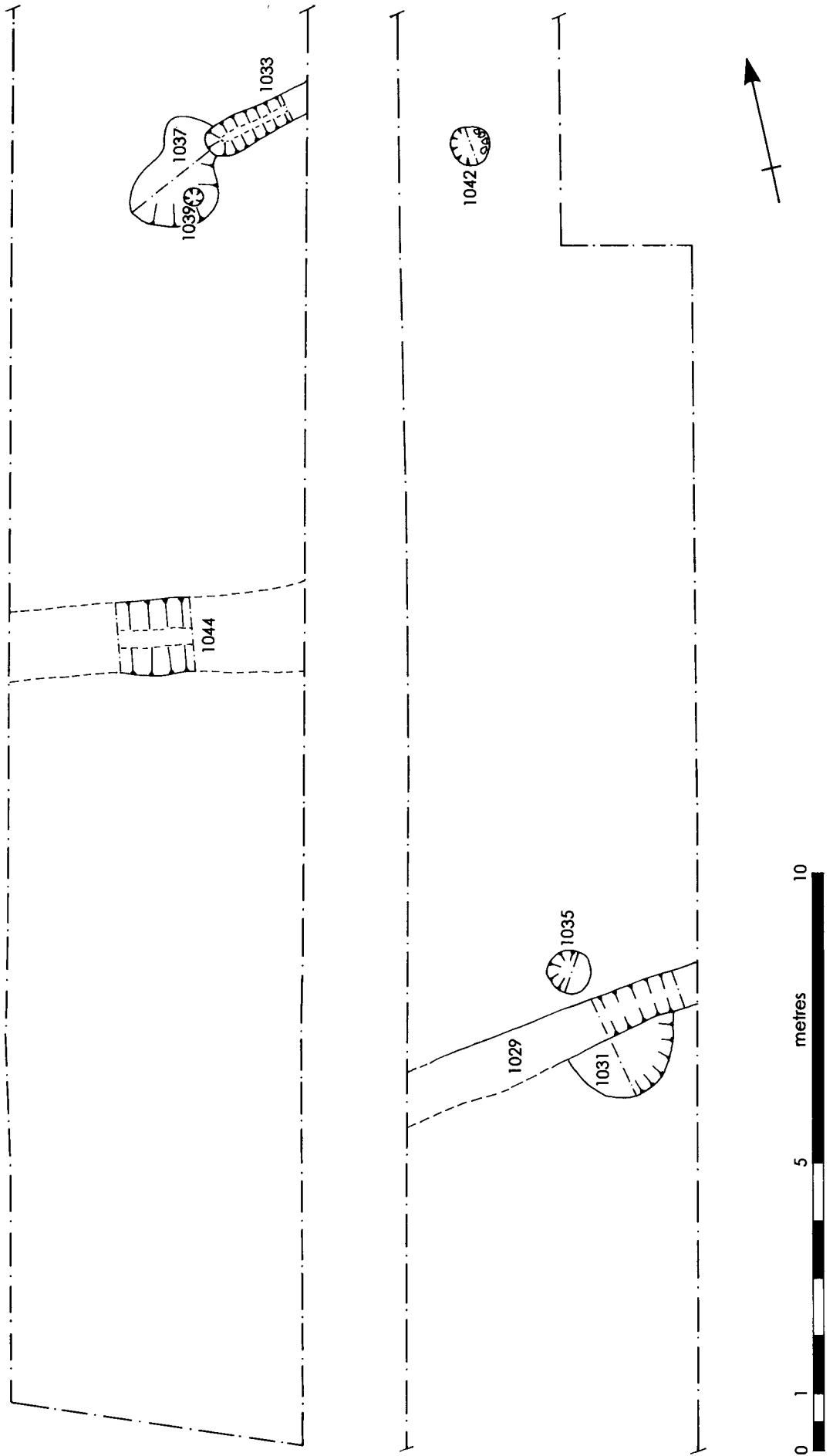


Fig. 4 Plan of Site 32

*Site 31* (Figs 1 - 3)

A trench 1.5 - 2.5 m wide and 115 m long was cut across the site of the Roman pottery scatter. The features were located directly beneath the ploughsoil (at a depth of c. 0.3 m), excepting the northernmost feature in the trench (ditch F1018), which was also sealed by colluvium. Seven ditches were recorded: three Roman (F1016, F1018, F1022), three Late Bronze Age/Early Iron Age (F1020, F1049, F1053) and one undated (F1024). With the exception of F1020, which had a north-east/south-west orientation, the ditches of both phases were orientated east-west or north-west/south-east.

Two layers were also identified. L1026 at the northern end of the trench, interpreted as colluvium, was a dark greyish brown silty clay up to 0.37 m thick; it produced one Roman and one medieval potsherd. Roman ditch F1018 cut L1026, but was also overlain by it, which suggests that the layer continued to accumulate after the final fill was deposited in F1018. Underlying L1026 was L1056, a dark greyish brown clayey silt c 0.13 m thick, which overlay the natural clay in the northern 7.5 m of the trench. It is interpreted as colluvium or a buried soil. A test pit (2 x 1 m) through the layer produced three small sherds of Late Bronze Age/Early Iron Age (LBA/EIA) pottery.

The identification of Late Bronze Age colluviation would be significant, since it would imply agricultural activity already in that period. However, the proximity of both prehistoric and Roman features, and the occurrence of residual LBA/EIA pottery in the adjacent Roman ditch (F1018), made dating of the layer uncertain. The prehistoric sherd from the primary fill of F1018 may alternatively indicate that the ditch was first excavated in the LBA/EIA and recut in the Roman period. This is not wholly unlikely, given the continuity of the field orientations: the three LBA/EIA ditches on Site 31 were on alignments which paralleled those of the Roman features immediately to the north. The ditches of both phases are interpreted as field boundaries.

The LBA/EIA ditches varied in their dimensions and fills. The deepest was F1049 (0.61 m) which had two silty fills, both producing pottery, flint and animal bone. Broad ditch F1053 and the much narrower F1020, which cut it, were only half as deep but both produced pottery, with animal bone and struck and burnt flint also from the darker upper fill of F1053. The faunal assemblage from the ditches includes sheep, horse and cattle bones.

The Roman ditches were more uniform, though F1016 (0.3 m deep) was rather smaller than the others. F1018 was the deepest feature (0.63 m) and had four fills of dark grey clayey silt: the basal deposit produced the LBA/EIA sherd mentioned above and some animal bone, while quantities of Roman pottery, bone and iron nails came from the overlying fills. Other finds from the Roman ditches comprised tile (including a fragment of box flue tile), a strip of iron and burnt clay (possibly daub). The animal bone includes horse, cattle, pig and sheep, as well as deer from F1018 and F1022 and frog

bones sealed beneath the colluvium in F1018. A number of charred seeds and charcoal fragments were also recovered.

The Roman pottery dates to the 3rd and 4th centuries. The abraded character of some of the sherds may support the interpretation of the ditches as field boundaries, if the pottery was dumped during manuring.

*Site 32* (Figs 1, 2, 4)

The easement over Site 32 was stripped of ploughsoil for 51 m from the High Road. Three ditches (F1029, F1033, F1044), three postholes (F1035, F1039, F1042), a pit (F1031) and a possible tree hollow (F1037) were recorded and excavated. The ditches were on roughly the same alignment, east-west to east-north-east/west-south-west, and may define separate house plots. They were generally shallower than the Site 31 ditches (0.14 - 0.3 m) and contained single fills of dark greyish brown silt/clay. The northernmost posthole (F1042) had a post-pipe surrounded by a stony packing fill. Seven of the eight features contained medieval pottery, while one (F1035) was undated. Pig, cattle and sheep bones were recovered, principally from F1029 and F1033, while residual flints were found in four features and LBA/EIA pot in two. Although Site 32 was identified during fieldwalking as a flint scatter, the features probably correspond to the northern part of the medieval pottery scatter Site 33b (see below).

*Site 33* (Figs 1-2)

The easement was stripped of ploughsoil for 157 m to the south of the High Road in order to investigate Sites 33a and b, both of which proved elusive. The former, a burnt flint scatter, had no associated archaeological features, although five struck flints and 39 g of burnt flint were recovered from the surface of the Boulder Clay. Site 33b was a medieval pottery scatter stretching either side of the High Road but there were no associated features identified to the south of the road while those to the north were on the site of the burnt flint scatter (Site 32) and are discussed above.

*Site 34* (Fig. 1)

The brief did not require work to be carried out on this site, and construction took place prior to the commencement of the excavation.

*Site 35* (Figs 2, 5)

This area of activity was not discovered during the field survey but was revealed during the stripping of Site 33. Features comprised a gully (F1002), a shallow pit (F1010), three or four postholes (F1004, F1008, F1027 and perhaps F1012) and a cremation (F1006). LBA/EIA pottery was recovered from three of these (F1002, F1004, F1008). Fills of all features except the cremation pit are described as dark greyish brown silty clays.

Gully F1002 was an irregular linear feature oriented east-north-east/west-south-west; the eastern end was

truncated by ploughing. It measured 0.4 m wide and only 0.12 m deep, but produced 107 sherds (732 g) of LBA/EIA pottery, including three bases or lower halves of pots, two of them placed upright. F1002 also contained animal bone, burnt clay and two pieces of burnt flint. Along with one small fragment from F1027, this was the only burnt flint from the site, which is atypical for settlements of the period. Elsewhere further small quantities were recovered from one of the ditches on Site 31, while unburnt flint chips (debitage) were found in Site 35 postholes F1004 and F1008 as well as the cremation fill L1007.

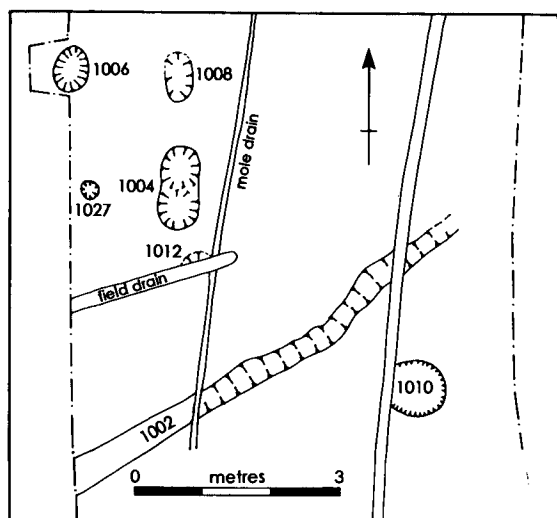


Fig. 5 Plan of Site 35

F1004 probably comprised two adjacent postholes 0.57 m in diameter, both with flattish concave bases and fairly steep sides. The fill contained burnt clay fragments (77 g) which may be the remains of a large, partially disaggregated clay weight, and part of a burnt tooth, perhaps related to the cremation in pit F1006; F1008 also produced a fragment of calcined bone which could be either human or animal.

F1012 was truncated by two field drains and a mole drain, and only a semi-circular cut *c.* 0.5 m across and 0.05 m deep survived. The feature was not well defined and may simply represent the conjunction of a number of modern cuts. A tile fragment (2 g) and a little burnt clay were recovered from the fill. F1027 contained a small sherd (1 g) of medieval pottery and may therefore be later.

Together with the cremation pit F1006, postholes F1004 and F1008, which both produced a little LBA/EIA pottery, appear to form a small structure measuring *c.* 2.6 x 2 m or more (the structure extends to *c.* 3.5 x 2 m if truncated feature F1012 is genuine). The recovery of rather more LBA/EIA pottery from gully F1002 suggests this was probably contemporary with the structure. A radiocarbon date from the cremation fill of 2760 ± 100 BP (Beta 104832) calibrates to 1145–785 cal BC (2  $\sigma$ ), with an estimated mean of 900 BC; this suggests a Late Bronze Age (rather than Early Iron Age) date for the activity.

### Prehistoric pottery

by E. Harrison

A small number of prehistoric sherds (203) weighing 1066 g were recovered from the excavation. The sherds were examined using x10 and x20 hand lenses and details recorded on sheets which form part of the site archive. Fabrics, identified by size, density and type of inclusions, are listed below:

- Fabric A: coarse flint-tempered, moderate (sub) angular flint 1–5 mm, moderate to well sorted, soft.
- Fabric B: fine flint-tempered, moderate to common (sub) angular flint <1 mm, well sorted, rare to sparse flint 1–3 mm, sparse to moderate quartz grains <1 mm, often hard, some soft.
- Fabric C: coarse flint-tempered, moderate to common (sub) angular flint <5 mm, poorly sorted, soft.
- Fabric D: coarse flint-tempered, moderate to common (sub) angular flint <5 mm, poorly sorted, sparse to moderate rounded quartz grains <1 mm, soft.
- Fabric E: vegetable-tempered, moderate rounded quartz grains <1 mm, hard.
- Fabric F: sandy, sparse sub-angular flint <1 mm, sparse rounded quartz <1 mm, well sorted, soft.
- Fabric H: sandy, abundant rounded quartz grains <1 mm, sparse to moderate sub-angular flint <1 mm, well sorted, soft.
- Fabric I: common rounded quartz grains <1 mm, well sorted, soft.
- Fabric M: coarse flint-tempered, moderate to common (sub) angular flint <5 mm, poorly sorted, sparse to moderate organic voids, particularly on the surface, soft.
- Fabric P: coarse flint-tempered, moderate to common (sub) angular flint, sparse flint >5 mm, sand.

The sherds are in average condition but are not large; their mean weight is 5 g. The majority are in flint-tempered fabrics (Table 2), in particular coarse Fabrics C (58% by weight) and D (32% by weight), while fine Fabric B comprises 5.5% by weight. The remaining eight fabrics occur only in small amounts.

Only gully F1002 (Site 35) and ditch F1053 (Site 31) produced more than small quantities of pottery and there are very few diagnostic sherds. While the majority are likely to be from jars, it was not possible to determine any forms.

Table 2 Prehistoric pottery fabrics

Fabric	Number	%	Weight	%
A	2	1	7g	0.5
B	10	5	60g	5.5
C	89	44	618g	58
D	84	41	339g	32
E	5	2.5	12g	1
F	1	0.5	2g	-
H	2	1	5g	0.5
I	1	0.5	1g	-
M	1	0.5	4g	-
O	2	1	3g	-
P	4	2	15g	1.5
Unclass	2	1	<1g	-
<b>Total</b>	203		1066g	

Of the five rims recovered, three weigh only 1 g (F1004, F1049). One small bowl sherd from posthole F1042 has a furrow just below the rim, while the rim from ditch F1053 is part of a round-bodied cup or bowl (Fig. 6.1), similar to a vessel from North Shoebury (Brown 1995, fig. 64.69). Bases of three vessels were recovered from gully F1002: one is very thick and coarse, while the other two have finger-pinned decoration, seen also on vessels from sites such as Thorley (Harrison, in Last and McDonald forthcoming) and Hornchurch (Harrison in Guttmann and Last, 2000).

Five decorated sherds were recovered. Two are furrowed (F1042,

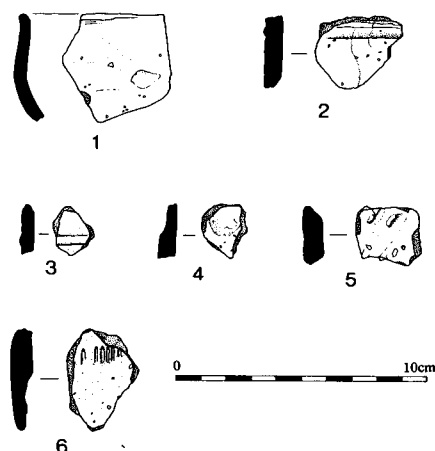


Fig. 6 Prehistoric pottery

F1053; Fig. 6.2-3), one has a single finger impression (F1049; Fig. 6.4) and one has finger-pinch decoration (ploughsoil 1000; Fig. 6.5) also similar to sherds from North Shoebury (Brown 1995, fig. 66.114, 120). The fifth sherd has a horizontal line of close set fingernail impressions (F1053; Fig. 6.6); similar decoration, usually occurring on the shoulders of vessels, has been found at several sites in Essex, including North Shoebury (Brown 1995, fig. 66.109) and Lofts Farm (Brown 1988b, figs 17.74, 75 and 81), and at Petters Sports Field in Surrey (O'Connell 1986, figs 41.9, 44.34-39). It is likely that the Site 31 sherd is also a shoulder, but since the inside surface is missing and the decoration is located at the top of the sherd this is not certain.

The small size of the assemblage and lack of information about vessel forms makes it difficult to assign a date. The predominance of flint tempering is characteristic of Late Bronze Age sites in Hertfordshire and Essex; while flint temper was still used in the Early Iron Age, the proportion of sandy fabrics increased (Brown 1988b). The presence of decorated sherds and the bowl rim from ditch F1053 also suggest a Late Bronze Age date. However, the fingernail and finger-pinch decoration seen on two sherds has also been found in Early Iron Age assemblages at North Shoebury (Brown 1995) and Lofts Farm (Brown 1988b). Thus a date in the transitional Late Bronze Age/Early Iron Age might be suggested.

Table 3 Medieval pottery from Site 31

Context	Feature	No.	Weight (g)	Fabric	Date	Notes
1000	-	1	4	6	13th-14th	from topsoil
1026	-	1	3	7	15th-16th	

Table 4 Medieval pottery from Site 32

Context	Feature	No.	Weight (g)	Fabric	Date	Notes
1000	-	1	6	3	11th-13th	handmade, cooking pot?
1000	-	1	52	1	13th-14th	large jar
(1 - 2m)						
1000	-	4	53	1	13th-14th	2 sherds
(45 - 50m)				7	13th-14th	clear glaze
				6	13th-14th	strap handle
1000	-	2	15	1	13th-14th	clear glaze
(50 - 55m)				6	14th-15th	
1000	-	1	4	4	11th-12th	handmade
(56 - 59m)						
1000	-	2	10	6	13th-14th	clear glaze
(62 - 63m)				7	16th-17th	
1000	-	1	3	1	13th-14th	
(72 - 73m)						
1030	1029	7	24	9	12th-14th	wheel-finished, cooking pot

## Roman pottery

by C.J. Going

Most of the Roman material came from Site 31. The general range was very much as anticipated: the bulk of the pottery consists of reduced wares of local origin, with some imports from the major regional producers. Finds from ditch F1018 included sherds of shell-tempered ware (Chelmsford fabric 51; Going 1987, 3-11); Nene Valley thick white ware (Chelmsford fabric 2), a later 4th century import into Essex; Hadham oxidised red ware (fabric 4); and probable Hadham fine black surfaced ware (fabric 35). Unstratified from Site 31 was a small sherd of Oxfordshire oxidised ware, again late in Essex. The material from F1018 clearly indicates it was not filled before the later 4th century, while abraded 4th century pottery from F1022 suggests that feature may even be post-Roman.

The forms encountered are equally consistent, and mainly restricted to sherds from the dish or bowl and the jar classes. Forms of interest include a 2nd century Braughing jar rim from Site 32 pit F1031 (cf. Going G21; Green 1980, fig. 34.276) and a flange-rimmed bowl in late shell tempered ware (fabric 51) from ditch F1018 (cf. Going 1987, B5.3).

Other finds from Site 32 included two abraded grey ware sherds, probably 2nd century or later, that were residual in pit F1037.

## Medieval pottery

by E. J. Pieksma

The medieval ceramic assemblage consists of 918 sherds weighing 3181 g. The sherds were analysed in detail by context. They were divided into fabric types using a binocular microscope (x10 magnification) and into form types. All the body sherds are undecorated whilst all the bases are slightly sagging forms with obtuse angles. Only two handle sherds, one definitely from a jug form, are present in the assemblage. An internal, independent fabric series for the sites was created, and 11 fabric types were identified:

- Fabric 1: Quartz-tempered orange coloured ware
- Fabric 2: Quartz-tempered greyware
- Fabric 3: Coarse shell-tempered ware
- Fabric 4: Quartz-tempered ware (dark grey)
- Fabric 5: Quartz and shell-tempered ware
- Fabric 6: Quartz-tempered ware (yellowish red)
- Fabric 7: Fine quartz-tempered redware

Table 4 (continued) Medieval pottery from Site 32

Context	Feature	No.	Weight (g)	Fabric	Date	Notes
1032	1031	1	(tot:50)	2	12th-14th	
		3		3	12th-14th	handmade
		9		4	12th-14th	handmade, thin-walled cooking pot
1034	1033	195	1098	1	13th-14th	many small and abraded
		25	48	3	11th-13th	handmade, cooking pots
		1	3	5	11th-13th	handmade
		8	103	8	11th-13th	handmade, cooking pots
		524	1509	9	12th-14th	cooking pots, many abraded
		2	14	10	?Roman	
		88	54	?		from Sample 8
1038	1037	3	4	4	11th-12th	
1040	1039	2	10	4	11th-12th	?handmade
1043	1042	3	22	9	12th-14th	2 joining ?handle sherds
1045	1044	2	(tot:66)	1	13th-14th	1 abraded
		1		4	11th-12th	wheel-finished, cooking pot
		10		9	11th-13th	handmade, abraded
		1		10	?Roman	

Table 5 Medieval pottery from Site 33

Context	Feature	No.	Weight (g)	Fabric	Date	Notes
1000	-	1	11	11	13th-14th	abraded

Table 6 Medieval pottery from Site 35

Context	Feature	No.	Weight (g)	Fabric	Date	Notes
1000	-	2	3	1	13th-14th	Sf 9, 10
		1	6	2	13th-14th	Sf12
		2	5	9	11th-13th	adraded
1028	1027	1	1	9	12th-14th	abraded

Fabric 8: Shell-tempered ware

Fabric 9: Mixed shell/flint/quartz-tempered ware

Fabric 10: Grog and organic-tempered ware

Fabric 11: Very fine tempered redware

Comparison of these types with published fabric descriptions has identified several, e.g. Fabric 1 appears to be very similar to a medieval Harlow Ware (Fabric 21D: Walker in Andrews 1991, 109). The date range for this ware is thought to be mid 13th - 14th century, probably extending into the later medieval period (*ibid.*, 129). Fabric 9 appears to be similar to an Essex medieval coarse ware, Fabric 20 (Drury 1993, 81), in its texture and range of inclusions: mostly quartz with rarer shell and flint. The date range for this fabric is 12th - 14th century.

Three of the shell-tempered fabrics also exhibit similarities to those commonly recognised in Essex. The texture and predominance of crushed (oyster) shell tempering of Fabric 3 is very similar to shell-tempered Fabric 12A in the Essex type series (Drury 1993, 78). Fabrics 5 and 8 show similarities with another Essex shell-tempered fabric, 12C (*ibid.*) which contains sand as the dominant component. The date range for many of the Essex shell-tempered fabrics is currently regarded as 11th - 13th century (Walker in Medlycott 1996, 127).

The majority of the sherds from Sites 31, 33 and 35 were recovered from the topsoil (1000) or colluvial layers (L1026), with the exception of posthole F1027 (Site 35). In contrast, most of the sherds from Site 32 were from the fills of archaeological features (Table 4).

The largest assemblage was from ditch F1033 (837 sherds, 2829 g). All the pottery is of a similar nature: unglazed domestic vessels made from a variety of local fabrics. The date for the feature derived from the ceramic evidence is probably 12th - 14th century. In contrast the majority of the pottery from ditch F1044 is probably 11th - 13th century in date although two sherds (thought to be 13th - 14th century) are slightly later. However, these sherds are very small and

one of them was recovered from the surface, making its association with the feature questionable. The date for this feature is therefore based upon the majority of the sherds: 11th - 13th century. Pit F1037 and posthole F1039 are also thought to be early (11th - 12th century); otherwise the likely date for all the features is 12th - 14th century.

Table 7 Total sherd numbers and weight by Site

Site	Sherd nos	Sherd weight (g)
31	2	7
32	909	3148
33	1	11
35	6	15

### Cremated human bone

by T. Waldron

The cremation represents the partial remains of what was probably an adult male, with no pathological changes apparent. The bones were grey/black in colour, suggesting a relatively low temperature for the funeral pyre; this is supported by the lack of the distortion or twisting that occurs when the temperature is high. Most of the bone comprised fragments measuring 10 - 20 mm, the majority of them from long bones. Several of these had a thick cortex, making it probable that the individual was male. Amongst the skull fragments was a single piece, probably from one of the parietal bones, with an unfused suture, which suggests that he was no more than 30 or 40 at the time of death. The total weight of bone was 1405 g, broken down by size and body part in Table 8, which shows that the body is by no means completely represented. There are no vertebral fragments, which would normally be expected to make up a substantial proportion of cremated remains. Very little of the pelvis was

EXCAVATIONS ON THE HATFIELD HEATH TO MATCHING TYE RISING MAIN, NORTH-WEST ESSEX

represented and none of the bones of the hands or feet were present. It seems, therefore, that the bones chosen for burial were selected, perhaps from the periphery of the pyre where the skull and limb bones would most likely have been found.

Table 8 Weight of bone from various fractions of cremation

Size fraction (mm)	Weight of identified bone by part (g)			
	Skull	Pelvis	Long Bone	Unidentified
> 10	112	1.5	490	228.5
5 - 10				450
1 - 5				92
< 1				31

**Charred plant remains**

by W. J. Carruthers

The results from the three sites are given separately. Charcoal is noted as presence only, with the most frequent taxa being listed first, and underlined if clearly dominant. Nomenclature and much of the habitat information is taken from Stace (1991). Cereal identification criteria follow Jacomet (1987).

*Site 35 (Late Bronze Age)*

The flots from this site contained fairly large quantities of modern roots and some modern chenopods (fat hen, orache etc.). Charred plant remains were not frequent, but this is often the case with prehistoric deposits, particularly if the site function is primarily ritual. Samples 1 and 4 contained burnt, unidentifiable 'slaggy' fragments; one of these (Sample 4, pit F1004) appeared to contain a small fragment of cereal so could have been a dense bread-type material.

Table 9 lists the small number of cereal, chaff and weed taxa recovered from the flots. The cereals were generally not well-preserved, perhaps due to weathering, but it is clear that free-threshing wheat, emmer/spelt wheat and six-rowed barley were cultivated. The few weed taxa recovered could occupy a range of habitats from arable fields to wasteground and hedgerows.

Table 9 Charred plant remains from Site 35

	Sample No:	1	3	4	5	6	7
Taxa	Context:	1007	1007	1005	1003	1009	1011
	Feature:	F1006	F1006	F1004	F1002	F1008	F1010
<i>Triticum dicocum/spelta</i> grain (emmer/spelt wheat)				2			
<i>Triticum</i> sp. grain (free-threshing wheat)							2
<i>Triticum</i> sp. rachis frag. (free-threshing wheat)				1			1
<i>Triticum</i> sp. (wheat grain NFI)		1		1			
<i>Hordeum vulgare</i> L. (twisted 6-rowed barley grain)		1					
<i>Hordeum</i> sp. (barley grain)		1		3			
<i>Hordeum</i> sp. (barley rachis frag.)		1					
NFI cereal grains		2		4	2	4	1
Chenopodiaceae (fat hen, orache etc - seed coat lost) - CDn				3		1	1
<i>Atriplex</i> sp. (orache) - CDn						1	
<i>Fallopia convolvulus</i> (L.) A. Love (black bindweed) - AD			1				
<i>Galium</i> sp. (cleavers frag.) - ACDH		1					
Poaceae (NFI grass caryopses)			1				
<b>Total</b>		<b>7</b>	<b>1</b>	<b>15</b>	<b>2</b>	<b>6</b>	<b>5</b>
Charcoal (in order of dominance)		Pr, Qu, C/A, Po	Fr, Qu	Qu, C/A, Po	C/A, Fr, S/P	Fr, Qu, Pr, Po	Qu
Sample size (litres of soil)		30	15	15	30	15	15

Key to Tables 9 - 11:

Habitat preferences:

A = arable  
 D = disturbed/waste ground  
 H = hedgerow/wayside  
 NFI = not further identifiable  
 o = open

C = cultivated;  
 G = grassland  
 M = marsh/wetland  
 d = damp, heavy soils  
 n = nutrient-rich

This type of burnt waste could arise from small-scale grain cleaning and cooking. While it may represent all that has survived from an originally much larger assemblage, the general paucity of charcoal in the samples suggests that there was in fact little domestic activity taking place. On the Late Bronze Age/Early Iron Age site at Stansted, charred cereal remains (mainly emmer and spelt) were sparse, and Murphy (1996) suggested that stock rearing was of greater importance on the Boulder Clay than large-scale cereal cultivation.

However, the presence of free-threshing wheat grains and chaff (a rachis fragment) in equal quantities to hulled wheat grains is of interest, despite the small numbers. Free-threshing wheats are found on prehistoric sites but usually in much smaller amounts than the hulled wheats, emmer and spelt. For instance, among much greater quantities of charred cereal remains at the Late Bronze Age settlement enclosure at Lofts Farm, emmer was predominant, with some spelt and barley and only traces of free-threshing wheat (Murphy in Brown 1988b). Hence the Site 35 finds could be an indication of ritual activity, since the rarer, possibly more highly valued, free-threshing wheat seems to be more common in ritual than occupation deposits of this period (Carruthers in Smith *et al.* 1992; Carruthers, forthcoming). Since the free-threshing wheat remains were not recovered from the cremation itself, it could be (extremely) tentatively suggested that they represent feasting rather than a burnt offering.

The charcoal assemblage shows that a range of oak/ash/hazel woodland species was available in the Late Bronze Age/Early Iron Age, and suggests possible selection of *Prunus* sp. wood (almost definitely sloe from this period) for the cremation (Sample 1). Murphy (1996) suggests that extensive woodland clearance in Essex began around 3500 BP but occurred a little later on the Boulder Clay. The evidence from these samples does suggest that some woodland still existed in the Late Bronze Age. Oak and ash woods with a hazel understorey often occur on heavy clays, and so would have been well suited to the local soils.

*Site 31 (Roman)*

The samples from ditch F1018 produced by far the highest concentrations of charred plant remains, particularly in the lowest fill,

L1048. The three samples also contained very similar assemblages, with the ratios of emmer to spelt glume bases remaining fairly constant at c 1 : 6. These may represent burnt crop processing waste from activities in the vicinity. If more than one depositional event is represented, the range of crops grown must have remained very similar for some time, with spelt wheat being the major crop, and minor components of emmer, free-threshing wheat and possibly barley and oats. The very low occurrence of these latter two cereals could indicate that barley was being used more for fodder and so was not being processed to such an extent (thus having less chance of becoming charred), and that oats might only have grown as a weed.

The ratio of grain : chaff : weed seeds was 4 : 9 : 1, with none of the larger, heavy waste products of cereal processing (such as straw nodes or large weed seeds) being present. This suggests the waste represented was probably from a late stage in the processing, possibly fine sieving to remove chaff and weed seeds smaller than the grain (Hillman 1981). Murphy (1996) reports that charred assemblages of this nature, i.e. abundant spelt chaff with a few other cereals and pulses, are commonly found on Roman rural sites in Essex to the extent that they 'tend to be monotonously similar'. This assemblage contained very few weed seeds, indicating that either the main problem for the Roman farmers was large-seeded weeds which were removed at a different stage in the processing, or that the crops were kept well-weeded and free of contaminants.

Similar uniform dumps of predominantly spelt chaff with very few weed seeds that clearly must represent many processing events have been found at the Roman settlement site at Ashton Keynes, Wiltshire (Carruthers, unpublished Wessex Archaeology Assessment Report, 1989). This suggests continuity in the types of crops grown and the use of consistently good methods of crop husbandry.

It is possible that some spelt was being sprouted to make malt for brewing, since a few detached embryos were found with elongated coleoptiles, though the sprouting might have been due to a few spoilt grains which had become damp during storage. However, Murphy

(1996) has found evidence for the production of malt using spelt from Stebbing Green and Colchester in Essex.

Of the few weed seeds present, chess (*Bromus* sp.) was the most frequent. This is commonly found in Roman charred assemblages and it is sometimes suggested that it was grown as a crop plant, although the numbers in these samples were not large enough to indicate that it had been a crop. Two cf. stinking mayweed (*Anihemis cotula* L.) seeds lacked the distinctive tubercles on the seed surface and therefore showed some similarities to corn camomile (*A. arvensis* L.), an arable weed of calcareous soils that is rarely found in British archaeobotanical assemblages and which is probably an early introduction. This could suggest the importation of grain. However, the identification is more likely to be poorly preserved *A. cotula*. Stinking mayweed is common on sites dated to the Iron Age and later. Its presence in the assemblage here indicates the cultivation of damp, heavy soils.

Other remains from edible taxa include cf. pea - the cotyledon was not well preserved but the size indicated pea. Peas are fairly common on Roman villa sites (Branigan and Fowler 1976) and may have been cultivated as field or garden plants. They are usually considered to be under-represented in the archaeobotanical record because they are less likely to come into contact with fire during their processing.

A single fragment of charred nutshell was present in Sample 13, probably of stone pine (*Pinus pinea*). Stone pine remains have been recovered from a number of Roman sites, including several in London (Willcox 1977) and Colchester (Murphy 1984). It is a Mediterranean species whose large, hard-coated seeds have been valued as a food source since early prehistoric times. Willcox (ibid.) suggests that stone pine cones may have been used as votive offerings, since they are often found on the sites of Roman temples. The (probable) presence of nutshell here indicates that the occupants of the site may have enjoyed a range of imported luxuries.

Charcoal was not recovered in large quantities from the Roman ditch samples, but it is interesting to note that the usually ubiquitous

Table 10 Charred plant remains from Site 31

	Sample No:	10	13	14
Taxa	Context:	1019	1047	1048
	Feature:	F1018	F1018	F1018
<i>Triticum dicocum</i> L. (emmer glume bases)		4	7	8
<i>T. spelta</i> L. (spelt glume bases)		23	33	56
<i>T. diocum/spelta</i> (emmer/spelt wheat grain)		7	14	28
<i>T. diocum/spelta</i> (emmer/spelt glume base)		16	58	129
<i>T. diocum/spelta</i> (emmer/spelt spikelet fork)		5		2
<i>T. diocum/spelta</i> (emmer/spelt rachis frag.)				2
<i>Triticum</i> sp. (free-threshing wheat grain)			2	1
<i>Hordeum</i> sp. (barley rachis frag.)				1
cf. <i>Avena</i> sp. (wild/cultivated oat grain)			1	
Cereal NFI		20	17	60
Cereal embryos			2	3
cf. <i>Pisum sativum</i> (cf. pea, 4.7mm)				1
<i>Polygonum maculosum/lapathifolia</i> (redshank/pale persicaria) - CDo		1		
Chenopodiaceae NFI (fat hen, orache etc., no seed coat) - CDn				1
<i>Rumex</i> sp. (dock achene)		3	1	5
<i>Trifolium/Lotus</i> sp. (clover, bird's-foot-trefoil) - DGH etc.				1
<i>Euphrasia</i> sp./ <i>Odontites verna</i> (eyebright/red bartsia) - GC etc				1
<i>Anihemis</i> cf. <i>cotula</i> L. (cf. stinking mayweed) - ADd				2
<i>Bromus</i> sp. (brome, chess) - CG		2	5	13
cf. <i>Pinus pinea</i> (cf. stone pine seed coat frag.)			1	
Poaceae NFI (grass caryopsis)		1		3
	<b>Total</b>	<b>82</b>	<b>141</b>	<b>317</b>
Charcoal		C/A Po, Pr	Fr, C/A, Po	Pr, Fr, C/A
Sample volume (litres of soil)		15	15	15



# EXCAVATIONS ON THE HATFIELD HEATH TO MATCHING TYE RISING MAIN, NORTH-WEST ESSEX

oak (*Quercus* sp.) was not identified. If clearances in this area followed the patterns indicated by Murphy (1996) it may be that oak woodland had by this time largely disappeared from the area. Hazel, *Prunus* sp. and sub-family Pomoideae (includes apple, pear, hawthorn, whitebeam) were also found in the Late Bronze Age/Early Iron Age samples, but they could all have been grown as orchard trees or planted as a fruit-bearing hedgerow in the Roman period.

## Site 32 (Medieval)

The four samples from this site were not examined in detail but were rapidly scanned in order to roughly characterise them. The following charred plant remains were observed:

Struck and burnt flint  
by T. McDonald

The collection comprises 27 struck flints. A further 23 burnt pieces are present, and 73 chips were recovered (mostly from the sieving residues). The majority of the pieces are flakes, seven of which are retouched; there are no core fragments. Five blades may represent an earlier flint industry. A small side scraper with light, nibbling retouch was recovered from a secondary, Roman context (ditch F1018). The re-use of patinated flint is present within the collection.

The raw material comprises hues of brown flint, with dark brown being favoured for tool production. A few pieces of mottled grey flint

Table 11 Charred plant remains from Site 32

	Sample No:	8	9	11	12
	Context:	1034	1043	1045	1032
Taxa	Feature:	F1033	F1042	F1044	F1031
<i>Triticum</i> sp. (free-threshing cereal grain)					4
<i>Triticum</i> sp. (free-threshing rachis frag.)		1			
<i>Hordeum</i> sp. (barley grain)		2	1		1
cf. <i>Secale cereale</i> (cf. rye grain)		1			
Cereal grain NFI		2		1	3
<i>Rumex</i> sp. (dock achene) – CD etc.		1			
Cyperaceae NFI – GM etc.		1			
	<b>Total</b>	<b>8</b>	<b>1</b>	<b>1</b>	<b>8</b>
Charcoal		Po	C/A,		
Sample volume (litres of soil)		30	30	15	30

Very little can be said about the small assemblages of cereal grains, chaff and weed seeds present in these samples. Free-threshing wheats (both bread-type and rivet-type), barley, rye and oats are commonly found on medieval sites, and some of these cereals are represented in the samples. A modern uncharred cereal grain was present in Sample 11, so contamination by recent stubble burning could be a problem. The one point of interest is the relatively large quantity of charcoal from ditch F1033 which appeared to be all of one species from the subfamily Pomoideae. This might represent the burning of trimmings from, perhaps, a hawthorn hedge along the ditch.

and green-red chert pebble flint are also present. Some pieces display frost fracturing. The flint is probably derived from gravel deposits.

Many of the flakes exhibit pronounced bulbs of percussion in tandem with hinged fractures. The core reduction employed corresponds to the second reduction strategy described at Lofts Farm, Essex (Holgate in Brown 1988b). All of the retouched pieces exhibit similar characteristics and (with the exception of the five blades) are attributable to the Late Bronze Age or a later flake-dominated industry. Pottery assigned to the Late Bronze Age/Early Iron Age was found in association with some of the burnt and struck flint.

## Animal Bone

by T. Stickler

Table 12 Quantification and identification of animal bone

Site	Context	Feature	Date	No. of Frags.	Wt (g)	Species
31	1017	1016	Ro	24	153	large animal
	1019	1018	Ro	7	24	Cervid, rodents
	1047			?	19	Sus, frog, small rodent
	1048			86	757	Bos, Sus, equid, small Cervid, rodents
	1052			7	146	Bos
	1000/	1022	Ro	7	134	equid
	1023	surface				
	1023	1022		c. 100	829	Bos, equid, large Cervid
	1026	–	Ro/Med	2	55	large animal
	1050	1049	Ro	20	41	Ovis, equid
32	1054	1053	LBA	23	82	equid
	1055			5	29	Bos
	1030	1029	Med	31	327	Sus, Bos
	1032	1031	Med	4	20	Ovis
	1034	1033	Med	65	208	Bos, Ovis, Sus
35	1045	1044	Med	1	1	unidentified
	1003	1002	LBA	26	59	Ovis

## Discussion

by E.B.A. Guttman and J. Last

### Late Bronze Age

Late Bronze Age/Early Iron Age features were found in two clusters, on Sites 31 and 35. This activity was not identified during fieldwalking, probably because the fragile pottery had crumbled in the ploughsoil. Residual LBA/EIA sherds were also found in medieval features on Site 32, previously identified as a flint scatter. The fieldwalking survey identified another concentration of burnt flint (Site 33a) to the south of Site 35; no features were found in this area when the topsoil was stripped, but given the concentration of finds in the ploughsoil, it seems likely that a site has been wholly ploughed out. However, the relative lack of burnt flint in the Late Bronze Age features on Site 35 might suggest these scatters are of an earlier date.

The prehistoric pottery from the excavation (203 sherds weighing 1066 g) was predominantly post Deverel-Rimbury plain ware, among which were five decorated sherds (in type and frequency consistent with 'plain ware' assemblages). The radiocarbon date from the cremation fill also accords well with the plain ware tradition (Needham 1993) and suggests Site 35 may be a little earlier than the settlement at Thorley, which had pottery dates of 9th - 7th centuries BC (Harrison, forthcoming).

The Site 35 features, although poorly defined, may be compared with a rectilinear structure on a similar orientation identified at Broads Green, also on the Boulder Clay plateau, 17 km to the east (Brown 1988a). The Broads Green structure measured 4 x 1 - 2 m and was formed by a combination of postholes, post slots and beam slots. This pattern of elongated or intercutting postholes was also evident at Site 35 (Fig. 7). The date of the Broads Green structure, based on the assemblage of predominantly plain post Deverel-Rimbury pottery, was estimated as 10th - 9th century BC, comparable with the radiocarbon date from Site 35.

The nature of the finds from the two structures was also comparable, and suggestive of ritual practice. A substantial quantity of pottery (215 sherds weighing 1.645 kg) was recovered from the structure and an associated pit at Broads Green, with large, unabraded sherds in a near-vertical position, indicating that they had been deliberately placed. The placement may have been for post packing, but in the light of recent research it is more likely to have been for ritual purposes. Structured or placed pottery deposits are increasingly being recognised on Late Bronze Age and Iron Age sites, often along with other finds, and frequently situated at entranceways, on boundaries and within structures (Needham 1993; Hill 1995; Bradley 1996). At Site 35 the finds from gully F1002 may have been similarly placed.

Cremations were also sometimes used to emphasize entranceways and boundaries in much the same way as placed pottery deposits. The proximity of five cremations to the Broads Green structure and the incorporation of a cremation within the Site 35 structure supports a mortuary or ritual significance. In a recent survey of Late Bronze Age burial rites, cremation deposits were found on nine settlement sites (Brück 1995). Since then further cremations have been found at Thorley, Cole Green (McDonald, forthcoming) and (Last and McDonald, forthcoming), and Gadebridge, Hertfordshire and at South Hornchurch, Greater London (Guttman and Last, 2000). At Hornchurch one of the cremations came from a small post-built structure of similar dimensions to that at Site 35; it was placed next to a roundhouse, in a similar position to orthodox four post structures elsewhere on the site.

Most of the cremations from these sites are partial or 'token' unaccompanied deposits of skull/long bone fragments, so it is interesting that the relatively large deposit at Site 35 shows a similar selection of body parts. Rather than being taken from the edges of the pyre, as Waldron suggests, the cremated body might have been incomplete to start with: Brück also suggests that (unburnt) disarticulated body parts, primarily skulls and long bones, would have circulated in settlements in a variety of ritual/political contexts.

However, Site 35 may not have been a normal settlement. Brück's survey also lists 21 cremation burials in non-settlement contexts, though most of these were urned and ten were associated with barrows, often as secondary burials (again perhaps placed on boundaries, since earlier barrows may have served as boundary markers in later Bronze Age landscapes). For none of the listed sites are other types of structure mentioned, though the survey does not include the (unpublished) cremations excavated during the course of the M11 construction, which were perhaps associated with an enclosure (Robertson 1975). The burials at Little Hallingbury, like Broads Green and Site 35, were sited on high ground above watercourses, respectively the River Stort, River Chelmer and Pincey Brook. Rivers may have functioned as boundaries in the Bronze

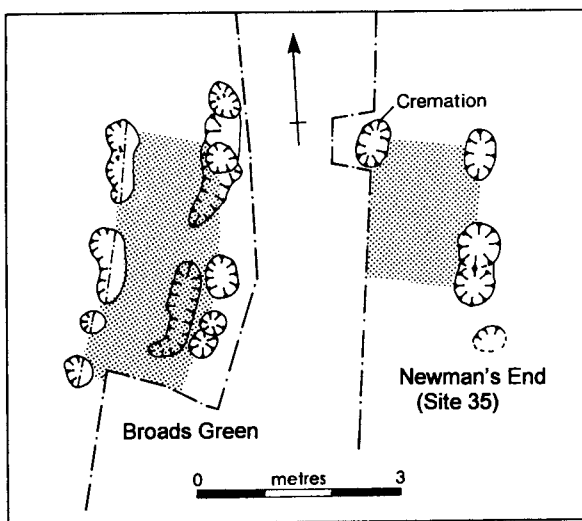


Fig. 7 Late Bronze Age structures: Broads Green and Newman's End Site 35

Age (the Stort formed a major tribal boundary in the later Iron Age) and frequently received deposits of metalwork. The removal of metalwork from circulation by ritual deposition may have paralleled the cremation and burial of human remains that had previously circulated as relics. Hence links between depositional contexts for different categories of material (pottery, metalwork, human bone) might be recoverable.

Carruthers (above) also suggests the presence of free-threshing wheat on Site 35 could be an indication of ritual activity. Some caution should be exercised since pit F1010, which produced 3 of the 4 remains of this type, was not positively dated. However, if we can assume its contemporaneity it suggests a clear spatial structure of activity on the site, with the cremation and the grain (indicative of feasting?) lying either side of a small boundary feature (F1002) with a possible placed pottery deposit.

In terms of the wider landscape around Site 35, the scarcity of charred remains suggests stock-raising may have been more significant than arable, despite the presence of weed seeds indicative of cultivated and/or waste ground. Small quantities of cattle, pig, sheep and horse bones were identified on Sites 31 and 35. Hence the Late Bronze Age ditches on Site 31 can perhaps be interpreted as stock enclosures.

#### *Roman*

The Roman pot scatter found during the fieldwalking was an accurate representation of the area of activity (Site 31). Three late Roman ditches (and one undated) were recorded on two different alignments, corresponding to the modern field boundaries at either end of the trench. They also followed the same alignments as the Late Bronze Age ditches at the southern end. The Roman features probably represent a field system associated with a settlement somewhere in the locality; the box flue tile fragment from ditch F1016 and the pine nut shell from F1018 suggest this may have been moderately wealthy, perhaps one of Williamson's (1984; 1986) plateau margin sites, although the pottery was predominantly local and lacked imported finewares.

The activity appears to date to the 4th century, though residual and unstratified Roman pottery from Site 32 was earlier than that excavated in Site 31, dating from the Late Pre-Roman Iron Age or early Roman period up to the 2nd century. Two sherds of 1st - 2nd century AD or later date were also found to the south of Site 35.

In the Iron Age and Roman periods clearance of the Essex landscape continued (Murphy 1996). The Roman assemblage from Site 31 was dominated by species which may have grown in orchards and hedgerows, similar to those identified in the Stort valley at Thorley (Gale, in McDonald and Last, forthcoming). Hence by the Roman period the rural economy appears to have been similar across the region, irrespective of soil type (Murphy 1996). For the first time, the Boulder Clay was subject to a predominantly arable regime, rather than the pastoral economy suggested for earlier

periods. The evidence from Site 31 ties in with the findings from other Essex sites: an assemblage dominated by spelt with minor quantities of emmer, free-threshing wheat and possibly barley and oats. The tentative identification of stinking mayweed, a typical weed of damp, heavy soils, concurs with evidence from elsewhere that the Romans were cultivating the plateau soils.

#### *Medieval*

The excavation established the presence of medieval ditches, pits and postholes to the north of the present day hamlet of Newman's End (Site 32). The ditches were aligned parallel to the High Road and contained pottery spanning the 11th to 14th centuries, the majority in the latter part of the range. Unstratified pottery dating as late as the 16th - 17th century was found in the ploughsoil which sealed the features. Unstratified medieval pottery was also found to the south, corresponding with the scatter at Site 33b, which was identified during the fieldwalking.

Site 32 probably represents an abandoned area of settlement at the northern end of the hamlet of Newman's End. The area appears to have gone out of use during the 14th century, at which time hamlets and villages all over Essex (and Britain) were shrinking. In this respect, the medieval evidence ties in with what is already known of the period.

#### *Occupation on the Claylands*

The proximity of Bronze Age, Roman and medieval features at Newman's End, often on similar alignments, and the presence of residual Late Bronze Age/Early Iron Age and Roman pottery in medieval features at Site 32 suggest a long continuity in settlement location and the structure of the landscape. Similar continuity in field boundaries from the Late Bronze Age/Early Iron Age to the Late Iron Age/Roman period was found at Stansted Airport (Brooks and Bedwin 1989) while at Sheering Roman brick was re-used in the parish church and features of Bronze Age and medieval date were found close to the churchyard. Williamson's survey demonstrated that the plateau margins were favoured settlement locations from the Iron Age onwards, perhaps as a response to problems of water supply (Williamson 1986, 121).

Changes in the environment and economy over time correspond with the regional evidence summarized by Murphy (1996). Oak charcoal was present in most of the Late Bronze Age features, but was absent from the Roman and medieval samples. Likely hedgerow species were evidenced in both the Late Bronze Age and Roman samples. Cereals were grown in all phases, but were sparse in the Bronze Age and may not have been grown on the plateau. By contrast, in the Roman period a large amount of crop processing waste was recovered from one of the field ditches. Some forested areas undoubtedly remained, however: the three contexts from which deer bones were recovered were all of Roman date.

The pipeline development provided an opportunity to investigate and compare archaeological and environmental evidence from a cluster of sites of different periods in a transect across the Boulder Clay. The continuity of activity around Newman's End suggests that the cleared landscape laid out at the start of the 1st millennium BC may have provided the basis for the distribution of later settlement.

### Acknowledgements

The Trust would like to thank Thames Water Utilities for their co-operation and funding of the investigation, in particular Juliet Roper (Senior Conservation and Heritage Scientist). The Trust is also pleased to acknowledge Mike Lang Hall, archaeological consultant, and Rob Butler of Essex County Council Archaeological Advisory Group. Elizabeth Pieksma thanks Helen Walker for advice on Essex medieval pottery.

*Author:* Erika Guttmann, Dept. of Environmental Sciences, University of Stirling, Stirling, FK9 4LA.

### Bibliography

- Andrews, D. 1991 'An archaeological sequence at the edge of Harlow market place', *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* 22, 108-12
- Avery, B.W. 1980 *Soil Classification for England and Wales (Higher Categories)*, Soil Survey Technical Monograph 14: Harpenden.
- Bradley, R. 1978 'Prehistoric field systems in Britain and north-west Europe; a review of recent work', *World Archaeology* 9, 265-80
- Bradley, R. 1996 'Rethinking the later Bronze Age' in Bedwin, O. ed., *The Archaeology of Essex: Proceedings of the 1993 Writtle Conference*, Essex County Council, 38-45
- Branigan, K. and Fowler, P.J. (eds) 1976 *The Roman West Country*, David & Charles: Newton Abbot.
- Brooks, H. and Bedwin, O 1989 *Archaeology at the Airport: The Stansted Archaeological Project 1985-89*, Essex County Council Planning Department
- Brown, N. 1988a 'A Late Bronze Age settlement on the boulder clay plateau: excavations at Broads Green 1986', *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* 19, 1-14.
- Brown, N. 1988b 'A Late Bronze Age enclosure at Lofts Farm, Essex', *Proc. Prehist. Soc.* 54, 249-302
- Brown, N. 1995 'Late Bronze Age and Early to Middle Iron Age pottery', in Wymer, J. and Brown, N. *North Shoebury: Settlement and Economy in South-east Essex 1500BC-AD1500*, E. Anglian Archaeol. 75
- Brück, J. 1995 'A place for the dead: the role of human remains in Late Bronze Age Britain', *Proc. Prehist. Soc.* 61, 245-78
- Carruthers, W.J. forthcoming. 'The charred and waterlogged plant remains', in Barnes, I., Butterworth, C.A., Hawkes J.W. and Smith, L., *Excavations at Thames Valley Park, Reading 1986-88*, Wessex Monograph
- Darby, H.M. 1971 *The Domesday Geography of Eastern England*, Cambridge University Press
- Drury, P.J. 1993 'The later Saxon, medieval and post medieval pottery', in Rodwell, W.J. and Rodwell, K.A. *Rivenhall: Investigations of a villa church and village, 1950-1977*, Chelmsford Archaeol. Trust Rep. 4.2./CBA Res. Rep. 80, 78-95
- Germany, M. and Garwood, A. 1996 *Hatfield Heath to Matching Tye Rising Main. Desktop and Fieldwalking Assessment*, Essex County Council
- Going, C.J. 1987 *The Mansio and Other Sites in the South-East Sector of Caesarmagus: the Roman pottery*, Chelmsford Archaeol. Trust Rep. 3.2./ CBA Res. Rep. 62
- Green, C. 1980 'The Roman Pottery', in Jones, D.M. *Excavations at Billingsgate Buildings, Lower Thames Street, London, 1974*, 39-79, London and Middlesex Archaeol. Soc. Special Paper 4
- Guttmann, E.B.A. and Last, J.A. 2000 'A Late Bronze Age landscape at South Hornchurch, Greater London', *Proc. Prehist. Soc.* , 66, 319-60
- Hill, J.D. 1995 *Ritual and Rubbish in the Iron Age of Wessex: a study on the formation of a specific archaeological record*, BAR British Series 242
- Hillman, G. 1981 'Reconstructing crop husbandry practices from charred remains of crops', in Mercer, R. ed. *Farming Practice in British Prehistory*, Edinburgh University Press
- Jacomet, S. 1987 *Prähistorische Getreidefunde*, Botanisches Institut der Universität Abteilung Pflanzensystematik und Geobotanik, Basel.
- Last, J.A. and McDonald, T. forthcoming *Excavations at Thorley and Gadebridge, Hertfordshire*, HAT monograph
- McDonald, T. forthcoming 'Archaeological excavation in advance of the A414 Cole Green by-pass, near Hertford', *Hertfordshire Archaeology*, 13
- Medlycott, M. 1996 'A medieval farm and its landscape: excavations at Stebbingford Farm', *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* 27, 102-81
- Millward, D. 1981 Geological Survey of Great Britain (England and Wales). Solid and Drift Edition: Sheet 240.
- Murphy, P. 1984 'Carbonised fruits from Building 5'; 'Charred cereals from Buildings 41, 45 and 38', in Crummy, P. *Excavations at Lion Walk, Balcerne Lane and Middleborough, Colchester, Essex*, Colchester Archaeol. Rep. 3, 40, 105, 108, 110
- Murphy, P. 1996 'Environmental Archaeology', in Bedwin, O. ed. *The Archaeology of Essex: Proceedings of the 1993 Writtle Conference*, Essex County Council Monograph
- Needham, S.P. 1993 'The structure of settlement and ritual in the Late Bronze Age of south-east Britain', in. Mordant, C. and Richard, A. eds., *L'habitat et l'occupation du sol à l'Age du Bronze en Europe*, Actes du Colloque International du Lons-le-Saunier, 16-19 Mai 1990. Paris: Edition du Comité des Travaux historique et scientifique; Documents Préhistorique 4, 49-69.
- O'Connell, M. 1986 *Peters Sports Field, Egham: Excavation of a Late Bronze Age/Early Iron Age Site*, Surrey Archaeol. Collect. Res. Rep. 10
- Palmer, R. 1996 'A further case for the preservation of earthwork ridge and furrow', *Antiquity* 70, 436-9
- Rackham, O. 1986 *The History of the Countryside*, J.M. Dent: London.
- Robertson, I.G. 1975 'The Archaeology of the M11 Motorway in Essex, 1970-75', *Essex J.* 10, 69-91.
- Smith, R.J.C., Rawlings, M. and Barnes, I. 1992 'Excavations at Coburg Road and Weymouth Road, Fordington, Dorchester, 1988 and 1989', *Proc. Dorset Nat. Hist. Archaeol. Soc.* 114, 40-1
- Stace, C. 1991 *New Flora of the British Isles*, Cambridge University Press
- Tyler, S. 1996 'Early Saxon Essex', in Bedwin, O. ed. *The Archaeology of Essex: Proceedings of the 1993 Writtle Conference*, Essex County Council Monograph
- Ward, J.C. 1996 'Medieval Essex', in Bedwin, O. ed. *The Archaeology of Essex: Proceedings of the 1993 Writtle Conference*, Essex County Council Monograph
- Williamson, T.M. 1984 'The Roman countryside: settlement and agriculture in North West Essex', *Britannia* 15, 225-30
- Williamson, T.M. 1986 'The development of settlement in North West Essex: the results of a recent field survey', *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* 17, 120-32
- Willcox, G.H. 1977 'Exotic plants from Roman waterlogged sites in London', *J. Archaeol. Sci.* 4, 269-82

*The Society is grateful to the Herts Archaeological Trust for a generous grant towards the cost of publishing this article*

# Prehistoric, Roman and post-medieval material from Harlow: investigations at Church Langley 1989–1994

By M. Medlycott

with contributions by R. Bartlett, J. Ecclestone, S. Foreman, A. Garwood, R. Havis, H. Major, T. S. Martin, K. Reidy and H. Walker

*Fieldwalking and excavation of selected sites within large-scale housing development at Church Langley to the east of Harlow New Town, revealed activity from the Palaeolithic period onwards. Early Iron Age occupation was identified at the Perry Springs Wood and Tesco sites, a Roman farmstead at the Old House site, and evidence for the post-medieval pottery industry was found at the Tesco, Fullers Mead and Laundry Farm sites. Documentary evidence indicates that in the medieval period the area of Church Langley was divided between five farms, with a mixed-farming agricultural regime, with arable agriculture becoming dominant in the modern period.*

## INTRODUCTION

This report presents the results of a limited programme of archaeological work (1989-1994) carried out in advance of the construction of 3,500 new homes and supporting infrastructure on a 130 ha. green field site of Church Langley to the east of modern Harlow (Fig. 1).

The planning application for Church Langley (in the late 1980s) pre-dated PPG16; no sites were known at that time within the application area, although it emerged later that metal-detector finds had been made there. Immediately to the west of the development area was Potter Street (Fig. 1), known to have been a focus of the post-medieval pottery industry.

Without the wording of PPG 16 to enable evaluation to take place prior to the determination of the planning application, it was not possible to arrange formal access to the area through the planning framework. Nevertheless, negotiation by Dr D.D.Andrews (then of Essex County Council's Archaeology Section) with the consortium of house-builders planning to build there did enable informal access, plus limited funding. This, with considerable help from Harlow Museum staff and volunteers, enabled a programme of intermittent archaeological investigation from 1989 to 1994. This comprised both fieldwalking over the whole area (excluding the patches of woodland), plus partial excavation of some of the sites. However, by no means all of the 14 sites found by fieldwalking (Fig 2) were excavated. No site was completely excavated and no environmental sampling was undertaken.

The list below sets out the sequence of events: this is followed by separate reports on the fieldwalking and individual excavations. For completeness' sake, also included are reports on trial trenching at Izzard's Allotments and a watching brief at Fullers Mead, both

just outside the western boundary of the development area.

- (a)1989: small-scale excavation at Laundry Farm to assess a spread of kiln debris and brick
- (b)1989 (winter): fieldwalking survey of the whole area, apart from Old House Field, which was under crop
- (c)1991: watching brief on stripping of the main access road identified a large Roman site at Old House Farm, prompting a rapid rescue excavation. Old House Field was then fieldwalked to establish the dimensions of the Roman site, and these results were added to the earlier results from (b)
- (d)1991: watching brief on the cutting of a sewer trench at Perry Spring Wood found early Iron Age deposits. Subsequent rescue excavation examined further nearby features. (By the end of this piece of work, all the initial funding had been spent).
- (e)1992 and 1993: evaluation by means of trial trenches of the Tesco supermarket site identified prehistoric and post-medieval remains (1992). This was followed (1993) by a watching brief with limited excavation during topsoil stripping of the most sensitive areas.
- (f)1993: cutting of lay-bys on each side of the access road at Old House Farm [see (c) above], prompted further watching brief and recording
- (g)1994: the development consortium made further funds available for limited excavation at Old House Farm and the early Iron Age site identified at Perry Springs Wood [see (d), above]
- (h)1996: trial trenching at Izzard's allotments and a watching brief at Fullers Mead.

## Geology and topography

The solid geology of the area consists of Upper Chalk, which outcrops on the Sawbridgeworth ridge to the north of Harlow. In the project area, the chalk is overlain by London Clay, outcrops of which occur on Harlow Common and Potter Street. The London Clay in turn is overlain by glacial drift deposits, consisting of two boulder clay levels, one of which (Hanningfield Till) formed the basis of the pottery industry in Harlow. These were separated and occasionally underlain by glacial sands and gravels. Quaternary 'Head' deposits also occur within the project area. The highest point of the survey area is at 90m OD, at Old House Wood.

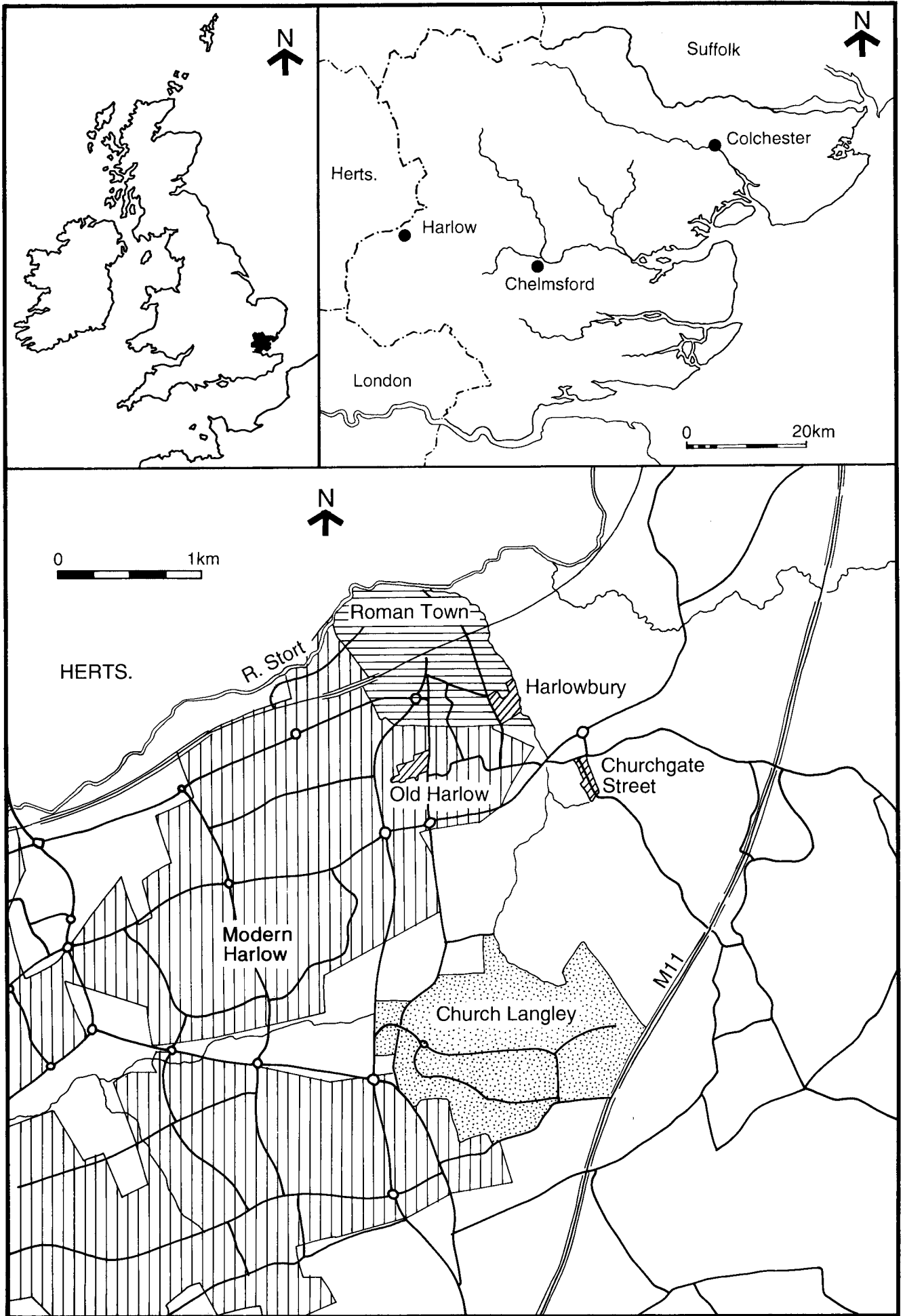


Fig. 1 Church Langley. Location map (Reproduced by kind permission of Ordnance Survey. © Crown copyright NC/01/154)

**Fieldwalking survey**

At the start of the project, Church Langley was a green field site, comprising mixed agricultural land divided between five farms (Kitchen Hall, Hubbards Hall, Brent Hall, Laundry Farm and Old House), all of which are medieval in origin. A fieldwalking survey of the development area, using standard ECC methodology (Medlycott and Germany 1994) examined 80 hectares out of the total development area of 130 hectares. The remainder of the land was unsuitable for fieldwalking, being either under pasture, woodland or set-aside. The survey identified 14 areas of potential archaeological significance (1-14 on Fig. 2), classified as follows.

*Prehistoric*

The prehistoric fieldwalking finds included worked flint, pottery and burnt flint. A total of 302 worked flints was recovered during fieldwalking, including struck flakes, cores and tools. The tools were predominantly undiagnostic retouched blades and scrapers. There was a thin scatter of worked flint across the survey area, with a denser distribution in the eastern part. A small cluster of worked flint occurred to the south-west of Perry

Springs Wood (TL 4716 0962, Site 1).

A total of 5824g of burnt flint was recovered. Although burnt flint is not intrinsically datable, recent studies have shown that the vast majority of burnt stone mounds or spreads date to the second millennium BC (Buckley 1990). A concentration of burnt flint was identified at the southern edge of the survey area, on Harlow Common (TL 4814 0914, Site 2). Observation of a trial-pit in the same area recorded a large quantity of burnt flint, though no features were discernible. Burnt flint clusters were also identified at TL 4818 0996 (Site 4) and TL 4770 1026 (Site 5), on the northern edge of the survey area.

Only 13 sherds of prehistoric pottery were found. Five occurred in a cluster at Site 3 (TL 4832 0958), immediately adjacent to the Roman, medieval and post-medieval site at Old House Wood. The fieldwalking results thus suggest that the known Roman settlement at Old House may have had an Iron Age predecessor, a suggestion supported by the recovery of some residual Late Iron Age artefacts, including pottery and a gold Gallo-Belgic quarter stater, during excavations at Old House.

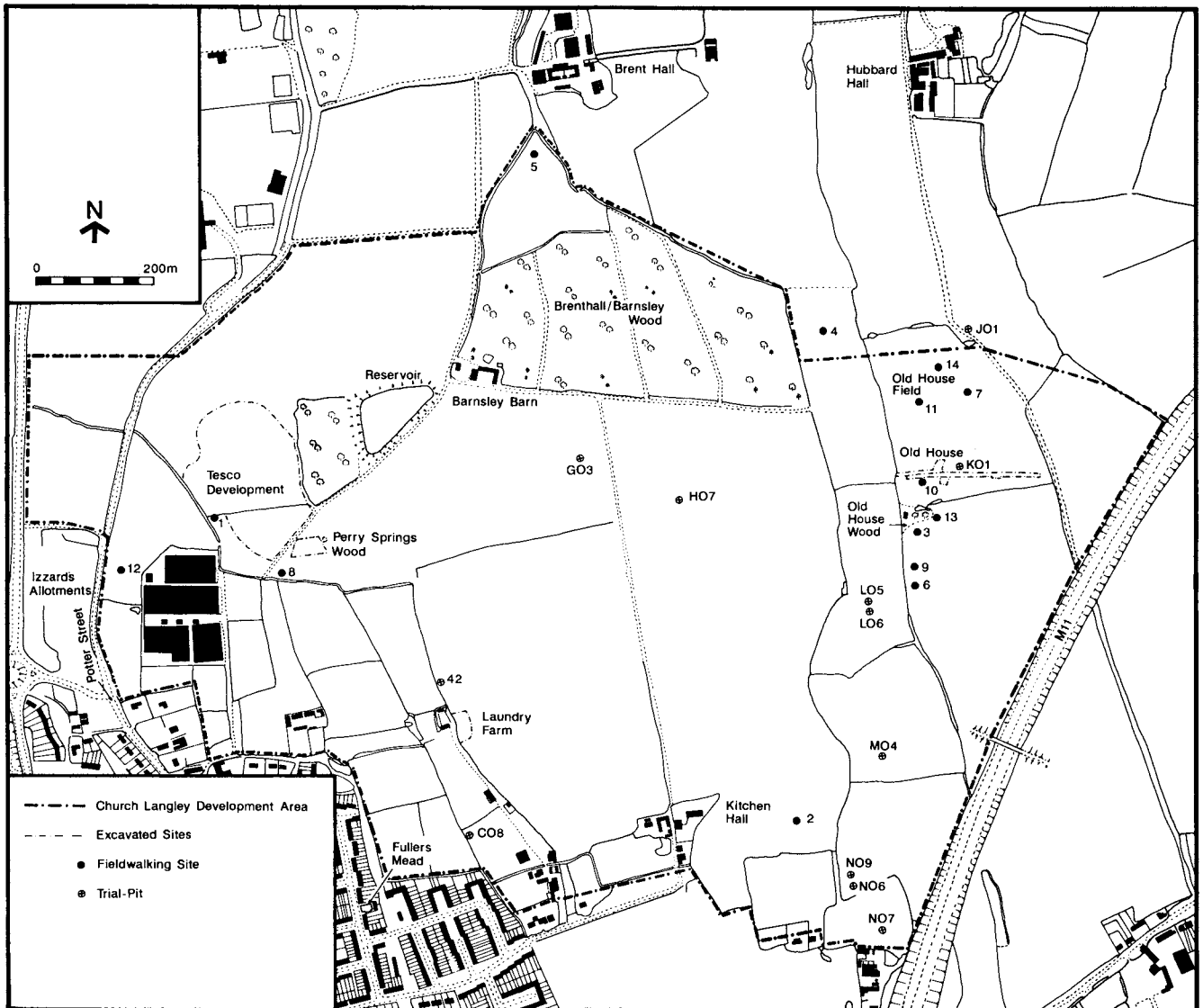


Fig. 2 Church Langley: archaeological sites (The numbering of the trial pits is an arbitrary one deriving from the on-site contractors) (Reproduced by kind permission of Ordnance Survey. © Crown copyright NC/01/154)

*Roman period*

227 sherds of Roman pottery and 18563g of Roman tile were recovered during the survey. The Roman finds are concentrated in the eastern half of the survey area, in the vicinity of Old House. The dense concentration of Roman pottery and tile, in and to the south of the wood (Site 6, TL 4832 0960), probably indicate the presence of Roman building remains in that area. The tile spread was approximately 140 x 60m in extent, on a broadly north-south alignment. The distribution of Roman finds in this area is discussed in more detail in relation to the excavations on Old House Site. There is a second major concentration of Roman finds at Site 7, c. 250m to the north of Old House Wood (TL 4842 0988), possibly representing further Roman building remains. A smaller concentration of Roman pottery, but not tile, was identified in the area of the Old House site; subsequent excavation suggested that this was the site of a substantial timber-framed building, interpreted as a barn.

*Saxon period*

There was no evidence for Saxon activity, a situation common to fieldwalking surveys both within Essex and nationwide. It has been suggested that the Saxon pottery was possibly too friable to survive repeated ploughing; it is also possible that agricultural practices did not include the spreading of domestic refuse on the fields in any quantity. The absence of Saxon remains in the fieldwalking record does not therefore necessarily mean that the survey area was not occupied at that time.

*Medieval period*

A total of 497 sherds of medieval pottery was recovered. Four sites were identified as concentrations of medieval pottery. Three of these, sites 9 (TL 4832 0956), 10 (TL 4836 0974) and 11 (TL 4835 0988), correspond closely with the Roman sites described above in the vicinity of Old House Wood. All three can probably be associated with the documented medieval farmstead at Old House (Harlow Cartulary 1294), since they all fall within the 21-acre plot assigned to the farmstead in the post-medieval period. However, surprisingly few medieval features were identified during the 1991-93 excavations to the north of Old House Wood.

Site 8 was located on the western side of the survey area, to the south of Perry Springs Wood (TL 4726 0958). It was identified by a small scatter of pottery, possibly associated with a medieval feature discovered at the same location during a watching brief.

*Post-medieval period*

A total of 7695 sherds of post-medieval pottery, 219kg of post-medieval tile and 1794 saggars were recovered (saggars are a type of kiln furniture). It had been hoped that the saggars' distribution might pinpoint the location of the kilns from which they derived (however, this proved not to be the case). The survey area is on the edge of the known focus of pottery production in Harlow, at Potter Street which forms the

western boundary of the development (Fig. 2). Overall, the survey recovered an exceptionally high quantity of both tile and pottery of this period. However, the finds were relatively evenly spread across the survey area and are probably indicative of manuring practices; only three significant clusters of finds were identified (Sites 12, 13 and 14).

Site 12 (TL 4702 0958), bordering Potter Street, included a large quantity of sherds, 1043 in all, and 88 saggars. It is possible that it represents a dwelling-place beside the road or a kiln, or kiln dump. Site 13 (TL 4832 0962) consisted of a dense scatter of tile and a number of post-medieval pottery sherds, probably deriving from the well-documented post-medieval farmstead at Old House. Site 14 (TL 4836 0988) is a cluster of tile and pottery c. 220m north of Old House Wood, perhaps representing another group of post-medieval buildings. It is interesting to note the close correspondence between Roman, medieval and post-medieval find scatters here as well as at Old House, where the presence of a medieval and post-medieval settlement is well-documented, and Roman settlement has been demonstrated by excavation. This suggests that the sites to the north (7, 11 and 14) may genuinely reflect multi-period use of the same site.

**Field-walking survey specialist reports**

(Author's note: due to limited resources, the only artefact-class from the fieldwalking to be assessed was the flintwork)

*Worked flint artefacts: the field-walking survey*  
by Hazel Martingell

A total of 302 pieces of worked flint was recovered during the fieldwalking survey. The assemblage included 185 flakes, 4 of which were patinated. There were 53 bashed lumps (rough cores?) and waste pieces, 12 good cores, and 12 flakes and thermally split pieces, which had areas of retouch on them. There were also 10 blades, 1 of which was patinated, 9 scrapers, 7 notched pieces, 3 flake blades and 2 blade flakes, 3 piercer/borers, 2 'pick' like fragments, 1 rough wedge shaped piece, 1 obliquely truncated blade, 1 pressure flaked knife fragment and 1 naturally pointed piece, with possible areas of retouch.

The overall appearance of this material from the surface is rough, due to plough damage over fairly random flaking and knapping techniques. There is a small amount of good quality dark flint, but about 90% of the raw material consists of frost shattered nodules from the clay. It is probable that many of the flaked, bashed and frost shattered blocks and lumps, recovered from the surface during the field survey are of fairly recent work. Similar roughly trimmed stones are used for making rubble walls.

The irregular appearance of most of the artefacts suggests a later prehistoric utilisation of the area; this is in marked contrast to the material recovered from the gravel terraces that border the river Stort and from sites adjacent to the river, where stone artefacts of all prehistoric periods are well represented.

**PERRY SPRINGS WOOD****Introduction**

Archaeological features were discovered at Perry Springs Wood (TL 4733 0955; Fig. 3, PSW91) by Richard Bartlett of Harlow Museum, during a watching-brief on a sewer-trench in 1991. The upcast from the trench contained Early Iron Age pottery, and



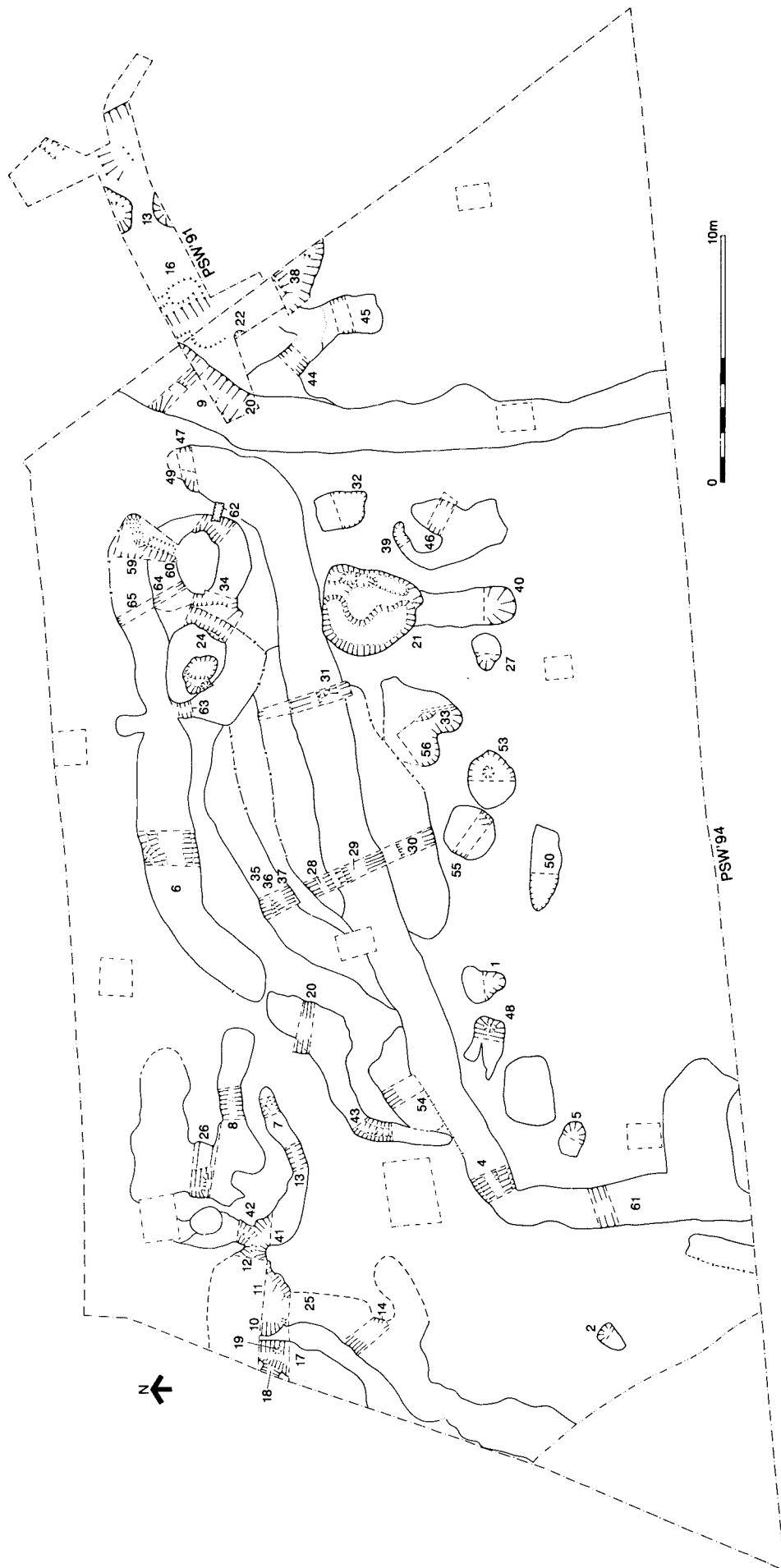
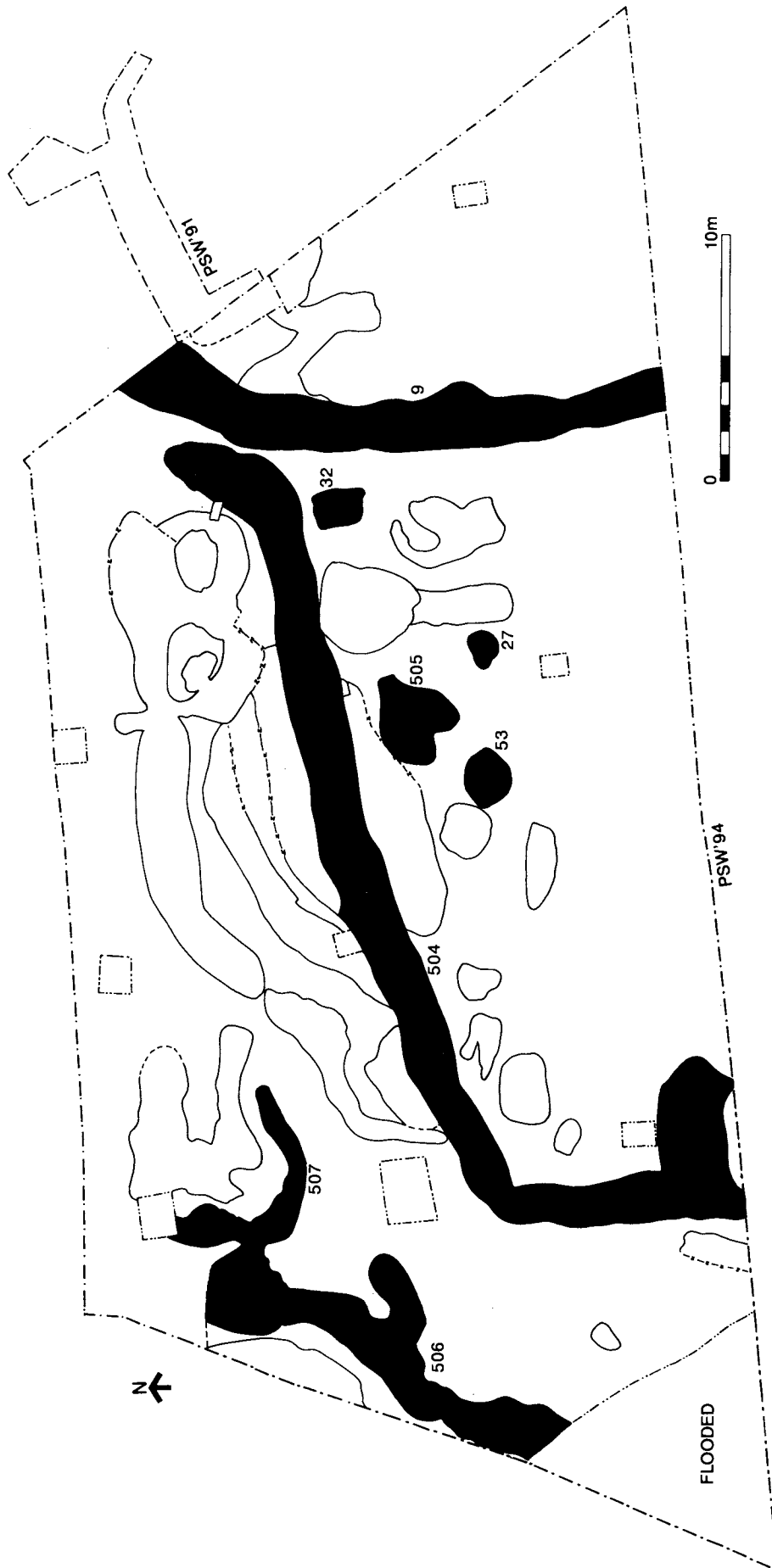


Fig. 3 Church Langley, Perry Springs Wood site: overall site plan

PERRY SPRINGS WOOD  
POST MEDIEVAL FEATURES



■ POST MEDIEVAL FEATURES

Fig. 4 Church Langley, Perry Springs Wood site: Post-medieval features

PERRY SPRINGS WOOD  
THE EARLY IRON AGE FEATURES

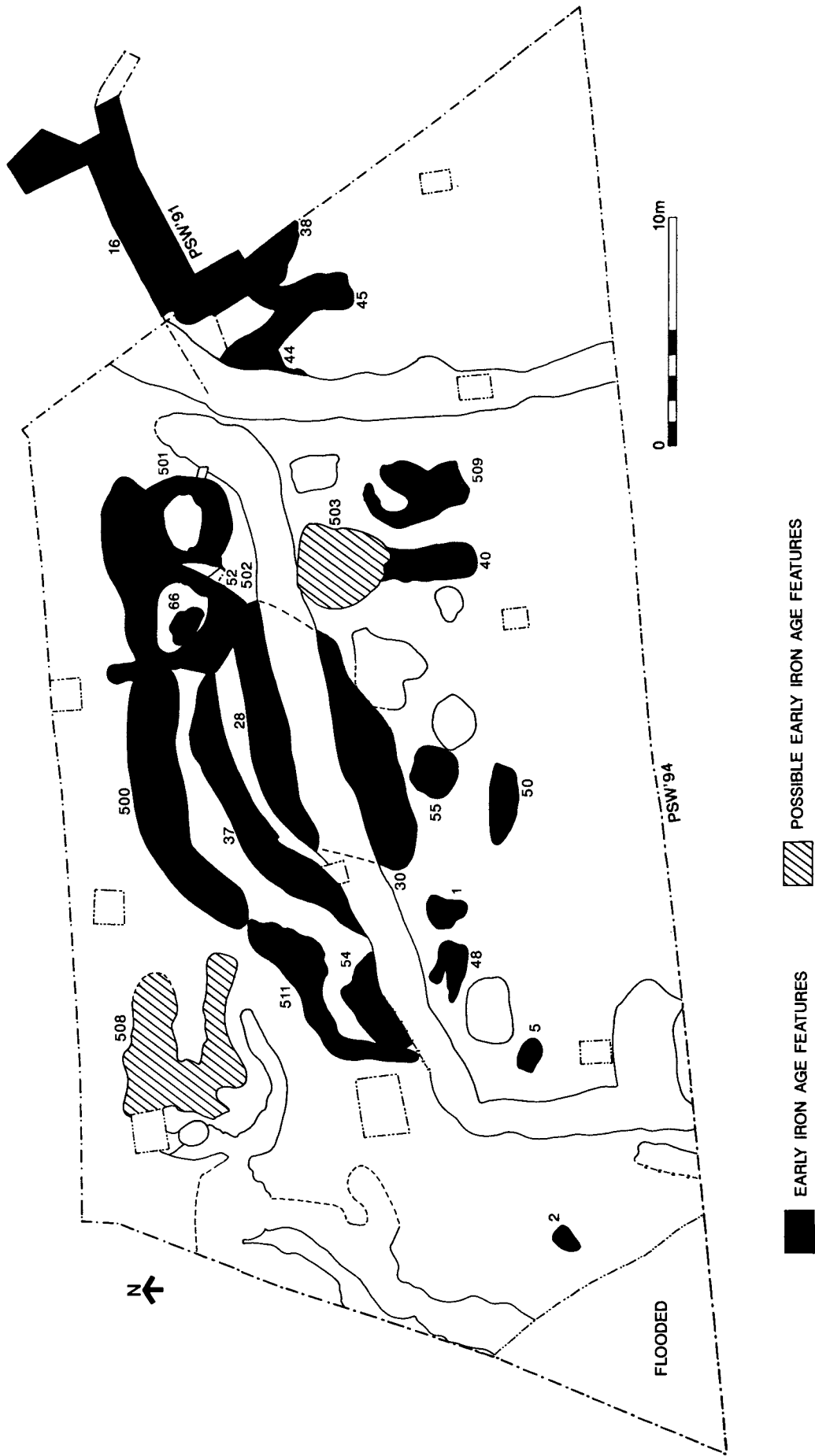


Fig. 5 Church Langley. Perry Springs Wood site: Early Iron Age features

archaeological features survived in the base of the trench. Rescue excavation was carried out from November 1991 - January 1992, followed by a sampling exercise in order to define the extent of the site.

A total of 41 test pits were dug north, west and south of the sewer-trench. It was not possible to sample the area to the east due to the construction of a road; however a watching brief on trenches for this road failed to locate any eastern extension of the site. One construction worker did indicate that he had seen similar archaeological deposits immediately north of the site during the road construction. Evidence from the test pits suggested that the site extended over *c.* 2000m<sup>2</sup>. This area was excavated (PSW94) by Essex County Council Field Archaeology Unit, under the direction of the author in June 1994.

### Topography

The site is 50m south of Perry Springs Wood (Fig. 2), overlooking gently sloping ground to the west which forms the edge of the Todd Brook valley. The geology consists of gravel pockets in sandy clay with angular flints, overlying glacial boulder clay: the subsoil is acidic. Fieldwalking had failed to locate the site, possibly because the covering layer of re-deposited clay shielded the prehistoric deposits from the plough.

### Excavation

This is divided into two sections: PSW91, which was the original watching-brief, and PSW94, which was the subsequent open-area excavation. PSW94 cut features are numbered from 1-99; fills and layers are numbered 100-499. For both PSW91 and PSW94 groups of cuts and fills which form a single feature are described for ease of reference by a group number (500+). Pressure of time means that some of the features shown on the plans (Figs 3 - 5) are ill-defined or incomplete.

#### PSW91

Examination of the sides of the sewer-trench revealed a sequence of layers: directly underlying the topsoil (1) was a slightly lighter coloured layer (2), probably corresponding to layer 101 of PSW94. Underneath layer 2 was a dark organic clay-loam layer (context 510), which contained a large quantity of prehistoric pottery and flint. This layer lay beneath the reach of the plough, explaining why no traces of prehistoric activity were found during the fieldwalking programme in 1989. Context 510 was cut by post-medieval ditch (20), equivalent to ditch 9 in PSW94. Layer 510 overlay a post-hole (22) and two shallow depressions (11 and 13).

#### PSW94

##### Post-medieval and modern contexts (Fig. 4)

The topsoil (100), a clay loam, *c.* 0.20m deep, was removed by machine. Beneath it was a layer of yellowish-brown silty clay (101), 0.10m thick, which

contained post-medieval pottery. It had clear ploughmarks on its upper surface and appeared to have been deliberately dumped and spread over the site. In the absence of evidence for a buried topsoil layer beneath 101, it appears that the original topsoil must have been removed, layer 101 spread over the subsoil and the topsoil replaced. The origin or purpose of layer 101 is unclear, but it is tentatively suggested that it may derive from the spreading of the upcast from the clay extraction pits associated with the Harlow pottery industry. Layer 101 was removed by machine after sampling by hand, in order to reveal the underlying features.

Ditch 9 is probably post-medieval or modern; 5 cast-iron tines (not thought to be older than the mid 19th century) were found in its topmost fill. Other major features were the ditches 504, 506 and 507, plus shallow depressions 27, 32, 53 and 505.

##### Early Iron Age contexts (Fig. 5)

Contexts 1 and 2 were shallow, bowl-shaped depressions. Ditch 500 (contexts 6, 57, 59 and 65) ran east-west along the northern side of the site. It cut ring-ditch 501 (contexts 34, 51, 60, 62 and 64); the latter had an external diameter of 3.5m and internal diameter of 1.5-2.5m. Ring-ditch 501 cut ring-ditch 502 (contexts 24 and 63), external diameter 4.5m and internal diameter 2.5-3m, which contained and cut an internal pit (66). On its southern side 502 also cut 28, a gully aligned east-west.

Ring-ditch 503 contained 53 sherds of Early Iron Age pottery, 53 pieces of worked flint and two sherds of Roman grog-tempered ware. Although it is possible that this feature is indeed Roman in date, it is thought that it is more probable that the Roman sherds are intrusive and that the feature is of Early Iron Age date. Ring-ditch 503 cut context 40, a shallow irregular gully dated to the Early Iron Age.

Early Iron Age ditch 37 was the final re-cut of earlier versions, 35 and 36. Irregular gully 511 (contexts 20 and 43) cut oval depression (54).

To the east of post-medieval ditch 9 is a shallow depression (38), which was capped by a layer of black clay-loam (143), which can be equated to layer 510 in PSW91. Both ditch 9 and depression 38 cut a shallow gully (44) which ran north-west/south-east, and in turn cut a second gully (45) which ran north-south. These features have been dated to the Early Iron Age.

Gully 508, in the north-west corner, (contexts 8 and 26) was a very irregular shallow gully, roughly forming three sides of a rectangle 5 x 6m in area; it contained both Roman and Early Iron Age pot. Context 5 was a shallow bowl-shaped depression, as were contexts 48, 50 and 55. Feature 509 (contexts 39 and 46) was also a depression, but very irregular in plan.

**Finds reports**

**Worked Flint**

by H. Martingell (PSW91) and Dr. T. Reynolds (PSW94)

*PSW91*

A total of 131 worked flint artefacts were recovered. These included cores, scrapers, waste flakes, borers and piercers, denticulates and blades. The blades are patinated and are probably residual Neolithic, but the rest of the material is of Late Bronze Age date (c.800 BC). The predominance of flakes, indicates large-scale flint knapping on this site.

*PSW94*

The assemblage comprised 99 pieces of struck flint or shatter with a total weight of 819g from 26 contexts. Burnt flint was also recovered but not seen by the author. It derived from 24 contexts and had a total weight of 790g. The composition of the unburnt assemblage is presented in Table 1.

The assemblage is distributed amongst most of the feature groups on site but is predominantly in upper fills. This implies that the bulk of the assemblage is not *in situ* in behavioural terms and a high element of residuality is present. In terms of horizontal distribution, struck flint occurs across the site with no clear "activity areas" discernible.

**Table 1. Assemblage composition**

Context	Wt (in g.)	% of total wt	No. of pieces	% total pieces	Feature type
128*	450	55	40	40.4	Ring-ditch
102*	84	10	5	5.1	Gully
127	40	4.8	6	6.1	Ring-ditch
148*	37	4.5	3	3	Ditch
108*	22	2.7	2	2	Gully
138*	21	2.6	4	4	Ditch
104	19	2.3	2	2	Ditch
161*	18	2.2	2	2	Ditch
131	15	1.8	4	4	Ring-ditch
182*	14	1.7	1	1	Ditch
139*	13	1.6	2	2	Cut
122*	12	1.5	7	7.1	Cut
173*	11	1.3	1	1	Ditch
107*	10	1.2	2	2	Depression
130*	8	1	1	1	Ditch
140*	8	1	1	1	Ditch
168*	7	0.9	2	2	Pit
170*	7	0.9	2	2	Depression
172	6	0.7	2	2	Pit
158*	5	0.6	1	1	Depression
150*	3	0.4	3	3	Ring-ditch
176*	3	0.4	2	2	Depression
194*	3	0.4	1	1	Gully
110*	1	0.1	1	1	Gully
112*	1	0.1	1	1	Ditch
115	1	0.1	1	1	Ditch

\* indicates an upper fill

**Typology**

There are only nine retouched pieces, these being:

Type	Context
Scraper	128 (x2), 168
Burin	128, 131
Knife	138, 139
Notched flake	104
Misc.	194

Of the scrapers, all are on flakes and informally made and so not particularly diagnostic with the exception of a heavily burnt round scraper of Bronze Age (Beaker) type made on a chunky flake from 128). There are two burins; one is multiple and made on a chunky secondary flake (128), the other (131) is on a blade fragment. One of the knives (138) is on a proximal flake fragment which has had the bulb removed by retouch. The other is naturally backed with retouch straightening the cutting edge. The notched flake is only partially retouched with nibbling on the dorsal edge of the platform and a small lateral notch. The miscellaneous piece from (194) is a flake fragment unifacially worked on three sides. It may be a tang from a projectile point but is too fragmentary for full interpretation.

**Technology**

The bulk of the assemblage recovered comprises flake or flake fragments, 77 in total. There are seven blades or bladelets and seven shatter fragments, two cores, five potlids or natural fragments and a single fragment with no working on it (probably the result of plough or machine action). The two cores are different; The first is a unidirectional, single platform core made on a shatter piece, from context 128, used for flake production. The second is a two platform flake core on a river cobble, one of the platforms of which is cortical. It comes from context 148. Among the flakes, technological characteristics are as follows:

**Table 2. Blank Characters**

Flakes	Whole	Frag.	Blade/let	Whole	Frag.
Primary	3	0	Primary	0	0
Secondary	46	8	Secondary	1	0
Tertiary	13	7	Tertiary	1	5
Platform types:	Cortex	20			
	Crushed	8			
	Plain	38			
	Prepared	0			

This breakdown of information on the technology shows that such knapping as took place was directed at flake production, with little or no use of prepared cores. Heavy hammers were being used with direct percussion, as indicated by the frequency of the crushed platforms. The number of fragments in the assemblage is not unusual and there is no evidence of deliberate snapping, to create further blanks. Most pieces are of small size and no selection of larger pieces is obvious in the blanks that bear retouch. The general size of the pieces within the assemblage would best be explained by the nature of the raw material being used. The presence of blade/bladelets is best explained as a residual presence of human activity predating the cut features.

**Raw Material**

The bulk of the material is made on river gravel-derived flint cobbles and chunks. Cortex when present is worn and no fresh chalk cortex is present in the assemblage. It does not seem that good flint sources were particularly sought after, local resources proving adequate. There are a number of different coloured flints ranging from a blue/black variety to brown and honey coloured. No differential selection amongst these can be identified and their proportions probably result from their frequencies in the natural gravels. A variety of patination exists but with no distinctive patterning.

**Edge conditions**

The assemblage lacks any numbers of fresh and sharp pieces, indicating that there is a high proportion of residual in the assemblage. Generally the edges are not fresh but rolled. Very worn pieces are also absent. This pattern suggests that there has been movement of pieces over the site, but that this has not been over any great distance. The only two pieces that show plough damage are both from context 102, the fill of a shallow gully. Half moon snaps on the edges indicate trampling and heavy soil movements and are present on two pieces each from contexts 122 and 150, while contexts 112, 140, and 176 all have a single example. Once again these are from upper fills and are

not informative about trample zones on the site.

Six pieces show signs of utilisation: Contexts 161, 172, 173, 170, and 131 (x2). The utilisation takes the form of patterned microflaking and wear, parallel to the edges of the piece. This wear is just visible to the naked eye and suggests a cutting function.

Most burnt material had been removed from the collection before the author received it, but the scraper from 128 showed deep crazing and discolouration as a result of heating. The degree of crazing suggests a combination of high temperature and rapid temperature change.

#### Distributional data

Struck flint occurs in all feature types except for postholes and is widely distributed across the site. The only concentration is the collection of 40 pieces (450g of material) from context 128. This material derives from the upper fill of a small possible ring ditch (21). The material from this concentration does not refit and is not in fresh condition. It has been concentrated by deposition rather than any identifiable human action. The context also yielded 53g of burnt flint.

There does not seem to be any significant size sorting of material, nor does anything appear to be missing from the assemblage and so recovery can be assumed to be good.

Comparison between the distributions of burnt and unburnt flint shows that 10 samples were exclusively burnt (121, 123, 143, 149, 160, 163, 171, 177, 178, 180) while 12 samples have struck but no burnt flint (102, 104, 107, 110, 112, 131, 140, 150, 161, 172, 173, 194). However no clear patterns in distribution can be isolated.

#### Conclusions

The assemblage is a small collection from cut features, it lacks primary context material and no clear distributional patterns are present. It is typologically and technologically indistinct, probably as a result of high residuality. A single artefact, a scraper, suggests a Bronze Age date whilst the presence of blades and bladelets hints at earlier occupation of the excavation area.

The assemblage as a whole shows that knapping of local gravel-derived flint was taking place on or near the site, but activity areas cannot be isolated. It is likely that two phases of knapping were present, an early prehistoric one and a early first millennium one. This assemblage is unremarkable and resembles other assemblages from the excavation of prehistoric cut features such as identified in work at Wicken (Reynolds forthcoming) and Barrington (Way 1993) in Cambridgeshire, whilst similar situations are published in flint reports for sites in Essex (Healey 1987) and Norfolk (Wymer 1991).

#### **Prehistoric Pottery**

by Nigel Brown

The pottery has been recorded using a system devised for prehistoric pottery in Essex (details in archive). Where percentages are given these refer to sherd weight.

A total of 2379 sherds weighing 14.32kg were recovered. The great majority of the pottery (88%) derived from the 1991 season; two contexts in particular, 3 and 16, each produced around one-third of the total assemblage (by sherd weight).

The fabrics are dominated by a range of flint, flint and sand, and sandy fabrics, typical of Early Iron Age assemblages (Brown 1988). The pottery recovered in 1994 lacks any pieces of diagnostic form or decoration. However, such sherds occur amongst the material from the 1991 work; they include jar sherds with finger-impressed shoulders and cabled rims, together with shoulders of tripartite carinated bowls, again typical of the Early Iron Age. The material is comparable to the small group from the Sheering Church (Andrews and Priddy 1990) and the large quantity of pottery from Stansted SCS/CIS (Brown unpublished).

The bowl sherds include one with an applied strip forming the carination. There is another unusual sherd from, context 3, in a largely temperless fabric, it appears to derive from a small bipartite bowl or cup, possibly slightly distorted.

The assemblage has a high degree of abrasion (65%), whilst there are no large pieces, a few fragments are of moderate size, however the

assemblage as a whole is comprised of small sherds. There is no indication of deliberate deposition or formal rubbish disposal, it is likely that the pottery was incidentally incorporated into the features and deposits. In view of this it seems reasonable to suppose that the site was a peripheral area of a larger settlement.

The disproportionate occurrence of pottery between the small area examined in 1991 and the larger area investigated in 1994 is remarkable. The density of material from the 1991 area is typical of what would be expected from a surface intact site.

#### **The Late Iron Age and Roman pottery**

by T.S. Martin

A total of 16 sherds (130g) of Late Iron Age and Roman pottery was recovered from seven contexts. Most of the sherds are small and very abraded with few diagnostic pieces. The fabrics identified (including both fine and coarse wares) comprised Samian (possibly South Gaulish), South Spanish amphora (Dressel 20), Unspecified Buff Ware (Fabric 31), and Grog-tempered ware (Fabric 53) - in both reduced and oxidised fabrics - which formed the bulk of the pottery examined (68.7% by sherd count and 88.8% by weight) and provided the only rim sherd. Because of the size and condition of the pottery only a broad date range can be provided. Overall, the group is consistent with a broad 1st-century AD date.

#### **Medieval and later pottery**

by Helen Walker

1055g of medieval and later pottery was excavated, and was recorded at assessment level only.

The earliest pottery comprises sherds of early medieval ware, a coarse sand-tempered fabric produced throughout the 10th to 13th centuries, although examples from the earlier end of this date range are rare. Three sherds of early medieval ware occurred in prehistoric features and another sherd was residual in post-medieval dumping layer 101.

Most of the medieval and post-medieval pottery, almost 1kg, comes from post-medieval dumping layer 101. Medieval examples comprise four sherds of abraded medieval Harlow ware, including a possible spouted rim. There was also a late medieval sandy orange ware jug rim, showing a bead below the rim and traces of slip-painting. This may also be a Harlow product, dating from the 15th and 16th centuries. For descriptions of sandy orange ware and medieval Harlow ware see the Tesco site and Laundry Farm site medieval pottery reports.

The remaining pottery from layer 101 comprises fragments from saggars, and sherds of post-medieval red earthenware. Saggars are ceramic containers in which delicate vessels, especially black-glazed wares, were placed during firing, and their presence indicates that post-medieval kilns are located somewhere in the vicinity. Diagnostic or featured post-medieval red earthenware sherds include a jug handle, three sherds exhibiting slip-painted decoration characteristic of the 15th to 16th centuries, a flanged bowl rim and a second flanged rim showing a trace of incised zig-zag decoration on the inside of the flange. In addition, there are two sherds from Metropolitan slipware dishes and a sherd of black-glazed ware, providing a 17th to early 18th-century date for this context. Only one kiln waster was noted, a sherd showing glaze on the breaks.

A second small group of eight sherds of post-medieval red earthenware was found in feature 27, where finds of interest comprise a hollowed, everted flanged bowl rim and three wasters including a black-glazed sherd fused to a piece of sagger. Very small amounts of post-medieval red earthenware, sagger fragments and a single sherd of medieval Harlow ware occurred as intrusive material in earlier features.

In conclusion, the bulk of the pottery probably dates to the 17th to earlier 18th centuries and there is evidence of a production site somewhere in the area, although it is conceivable that waster material could be redeposited some distance from its original site.

**Daub**

by R. Bartlett

Fragments of daub, weighing a total of 813g, were found in all the features in the PSW91 excavation area. The material is in good condition and has suffered little from abrasion or weathering. The heaviest concentration was from layer 3 which produced approximately half the recorded total.

**Metalwork**

by R. Bartlett

No recognisable metal artefacts were found in the PSW94 area, but one piece of copper-alloy slag and several iron nodules were recovered in the PSW91 area.

**Discussion**

The site can be sub-divided into three main phases of activity, the Early Iron Age occupation phase, the post-medieval ditches and the post-medieval dumping layer.

The Early Iron Age phase consists of the three 'ring-ditches', a number of shallow gullies and ditches, and irregular depressions. The function of the 'ring-ditches' remains unknown, indeed it is possible that they are not man-made features as such, but the product of tree-root disturbance. The majority of the finds, 88% of the pottery and 57% of the worked flint, came from the area excavated in 1991. The evidence suggests that the main focus of Early Iron Age activity was to the east of the open area excavation (an area disturbed by the construction works). The excavated site probably lies on the edge of the prehistoric activity area.

In the post-medieval period, two large ditches (contexts 9 and 504) were dug, as well as a number of shallow bowl-like depressions and two shallow gullies. These features probably date to the 17th-18th centuries. The saggar sherds suggest that pottery was produced nearby.

Also in the 17th-18th century, a layer of re-deposited clay (containing 88% of the post-medieval pottery found on the site) was dumped, sealing the underlying features. This pottery included one kiln waster sherd. It is suggested that this layer derived from the dumping of waste material from the clay-extraction pits dug for the Harlow pottery industry, possibly from the pits excavated at nearby Fullers Mead (below).

**OLD HOUSE SITE**

by S. Foreman

**Introduction**

Archaeological investigation was carried out in three phases. A watching brief during the cutting of a 220m long haulage road uncovered extensive archaeological deposits, including traces of Late Iron Age activity, but mainly peripheral features of a Roman farm. The resulting rescue excavation was carried out over three weeks in August and September 1991 (OH91). In November 1993, widening of the haulage road necessitated a watching brief (OH93) to plan newly

exposed archaeological features (Germany 1993). In May and June 1994, a further 5 weeks were allowed by the developers for limited excavation (OH94) and recording work on a further 220m long stripped area, running parallel to the haulage road.

**Topography**

The Old House site lies at 90m OD, the highest point of the Church Langley survey area, with a plateau to the south and east. To the north and west the ground slopes gradually down into the valley of a small stream. The excavated trenches ran from the top of the plateau for a distance of 220m towards the stream, dropping c. 3 metres. A former tributary of the stream was visible both in the excavated trenches and on the ground surface, as a slight linear dip, leading towards the stream in a north-westerly direction. The subsoil at Old House consists of boulder clay and chalky boulder clay.

**Archaeological and documentary background**

Although no excavation had been carried out in the area of Old House Wood before 1991, the site was well known to local metal-detector users, who had recorded numerous finds of Iron Age and Romano-British artefacts from the surrounding fields. In addition, ploughing regularly turned up pottery sherds and quantities of brick and tile.

The earliest records relating to the area of Old House relate to Hubbard's Hall, immediately to the north of the project area (i.e. just north of the area shown in Fig. 2). Indenture XXX of the Harlow Cartulary (Fisher 1939), shows a villein holding in the position of the present Old House, with a note that "*Huberd exchanges with villein Andrew le Yerdling...Huberds Reden*". The entry dates from between 1290 and 1300. A *Yerdling* is the Old English for a ploughman, and a *Reden* is the Old English for cleared land, suggesting that the medieval Old House farm began as a small-holding, brought into cultivation from waste-land on the southern edge of the Huberd estate, during the late 13th century.

Within Old House Wood were the visible remains of a group of post-medieval farm buildings, presumably built on the original site of the 13th-century farmstead. The buildings are shown on the 1st edition 6" Ordnance Survey map (1878) as a group of three buildings located on the east, south and west sides of a courtyard, with a pond on the northern side. The southern building has two chimney-stacks and is presumably the dwelling house. The others were probably barns.

**Fieldwalking Survey**

The fieldwalking survey carried out in autumn 1991 identified three distinct concentrations of Roman and medieval pottery, brick and tile (Fig. 2; sites 6, 7 and 10; finds identified by W. Davey). The largest of these (site 6) extended from the southern edge of Old House Wood. This almost certainly represents a group of tiled buildings, and was probably the main Roman settlement area. A second concentration was located on either side of the haulage road, coinciding with the location of the

excavated building A (Fig. 6). It included a much lower proportion of brick and tile than the other two sites, but significant quantities of both Roman and medieval pottery. The third concentration is located c. 200m north of Old House Wood and again included both Roman and medieval pottery, brick and tile. This site may represent a group of subsidiary farm buildings or another settlement site.

**Excavation**

*OH91 (Area A)*

An area 220m long and 7m wide was stripped by machine to create an east-west aligned haulage road (Fig. 6). The topsoil was removed to a depth of c. 0.4m. A watching brief identified archaeological features containing Romano-British pottery, tile and metalwork. Three weeks were available for rescue excavation, conducted by Harlow Museum and ECC Field Archaeology Unit. The excavation was limited to recovering dating evidence from stratified contexts and obtaining a plan of the site. The fieldwalking survey of Old House Field immediately followed this stage of work.

*OH93 (Area B)*

In November 1993, there was a further watching brief when the western section of the haulage road was widened. An area 3 to 5m wide and 80m long was stripped by a machine, to the north of the haulage road. Topsoil from two additional areas, each c. 14m square and located immediately north and south of the haulage road was then removed by bulldozer (Fig. 6).

The site was disturbed by the marks of tracked vehicles, and in places the topsoil had not been completely removed. It is therefore likely that some features remained undetected. A number of linear features planned in 1991 were identified and planned. One sample section was excavated and surface finds were recovered from the top fills of the remaining features. A metal-detector survey located a number of small finds.

*OH94 (Area C)*

In May and June 1994 a further five weeks work was carried out on an area 9m wide and 220m long. The site was stripped to archaeological standards to the north of the haulage road, in advance of building works (Fig. 6). The aims of the excavation were limited to producing a

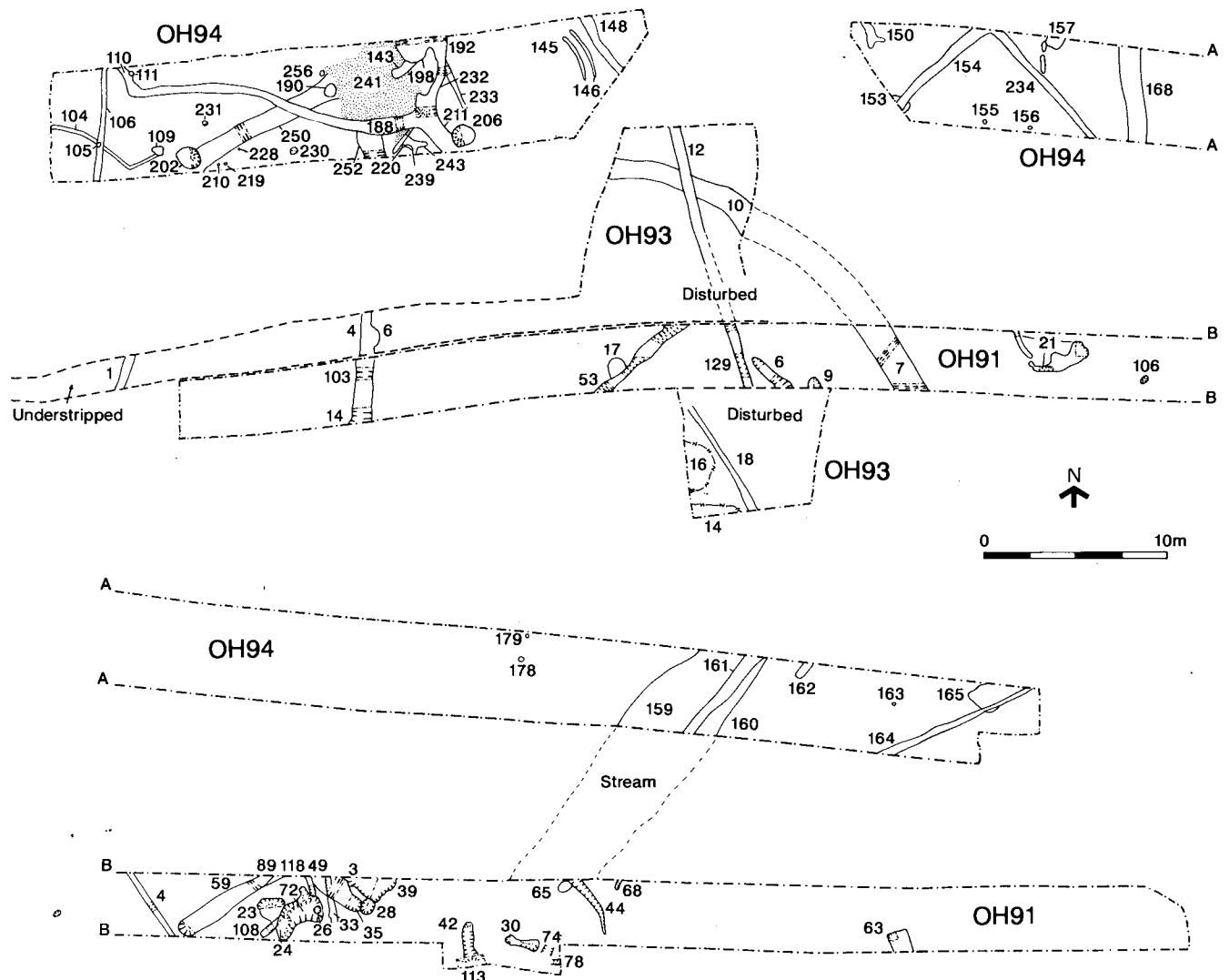


Fig 6. Church Langley. Old House site: overall site plan



site plan and recovering finds from selected stratified contexts. Surface finds were taken from the top fills of unexcavated features. In addition a metal-detector survey was conducted, recovering several small finds. A number of copper-alloy objects found in the surrounding fields were reported by local metal-detector users during the course of the excavation.

[In order to avoid confusion where context numbers have been duplicated over the three excavation seasons, OH91 context numbers are prefixed with an 'A', OH93 numbers with a 'B' and OH94 numbers with a 'C']

**Phase I - 1st - mid 2nd century A.D.** (Fig.7)

*Ditches: B1, Ditch A14/ B4/ A103*

The only stratified prehistoric material came from ditches B1, A14 and A7, which are almost certainly of Late Iron Age origin. Ditch B1 contained both Late

Iron Age and Roman (Flavian) pottery, whilst the upper fills of A14 and A7 contained Roman pot, indicating that they continued in use into the Roman period. Ditch A7 was probably not completely backfilled until the later 2nd century (see phase IIa below).

Ditch A14 was a steep-sided ditch, 0.70m deep, on a north-south alignment, containing pottery consistent with a 1st to early 2nd-century date. Other stratified finds of Late Iron Age date included a fragment from a triangular loomweight from ditch A7, and a gold Gallo-Belgic quarter stater dated 60-50 BC from the bottom fill of ditch A14. Four unstratified Late Iron Age coins were found during the metal-detector survey.

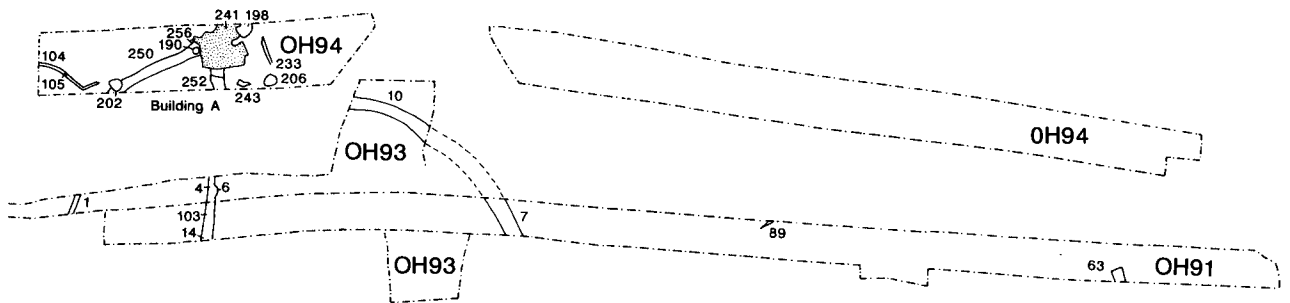
*Building A* (Fig. 8)

*Post-holes: C198, C202, C206, C190, C256, C239*

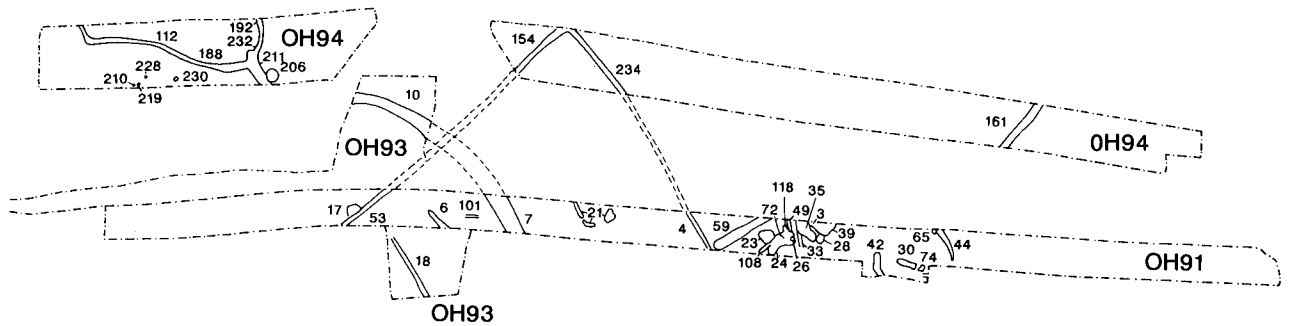
*Foundation trenches: C250, C252, Gravel floor: C241,*

*Eavesdrip gully: C233 Drainage gullies: C220, C232,*

PHASE I



PHASE II



PHASE III

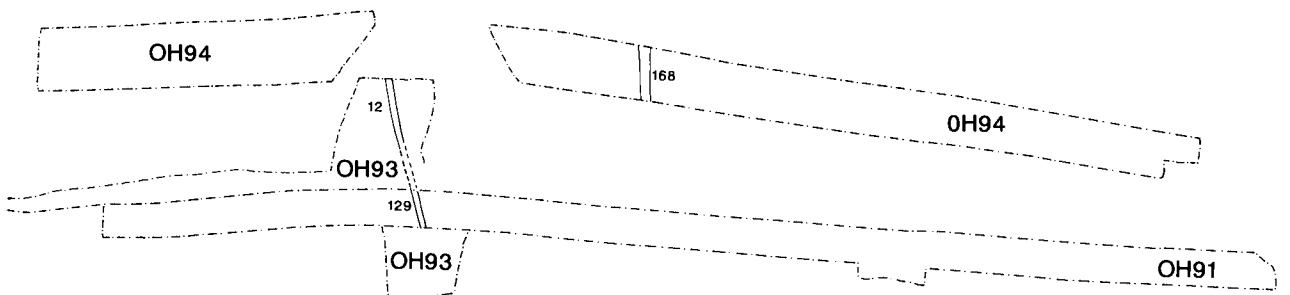


Fig 7. Church Langley. Old House site: phase plan

C243

The foundations of a large building of early Roman date were identified *c.* 50m north of Old House Wood. It was a very large structure (26.6m x 10.3m internally) (90 x 35 Roman feet) which seems to have been solid-walled for two thirds of its total internal length (17.74m, 60 Roman feet), and an open shelter for the remaining third. These dimensions assume that the posts were positioned centrally in their respective post-pits and that the posts were *c.* 0.5m in diameter. There is evidence that this was the case for pit C206. The building is tentatively interpreted as a timber barn.

A roughly square floor of densely packed gravel (C241), 8.75m long and at least 8m wide, occupied the north-east corner of the building. The southern part of the floor was cut away by a later ditch (C188 in Fig. 6, top)), but the presence of small patches of gravel on the south side of C188 may indicate that the floor originally extended across the full width of the building. The gravel floor filled the gap between post-pits C190 and C198 indicating that this part of the building was not walled. The gravel was covered by a layer of black silty loam with a maximum thickness of *c.* 0.15m (134/133).

This layer appeared to fill a slight depression, perhaps caused by long-term wear of the gravel floor, but possibly indicating that the flooring material was laid in a shallow cut. The gravel surface may have been used as a threshing floor or as an area of hard-standing protecting the entrance into the enclosed part of the building.

The foundations of the solid-walled part of the building consisted of a substantial, flat-based rectilinear trench (C250, C252) *c.* 0.5m deep, possibly housing a large cill-beam. Additional structural support was provided by earth-fast corner posts, C202 and C190, set in post pits 0.7m and 0.2m deep respectively. The north-east, open-sided section of the barn was supported by two more corner posts embedded in much deeper pits. C206 was *c.* 1.3m deep; C198 was more than 1.2m deep, but could not be bottomed for safety reasons. The depth of these features in comparison to C202 and C190 suggests that they formed the main structural support for the north-west third of the building. The absence of any sort of structural features between the two north-eastern post-holes, even though the eavesdrip gully survived, indicates that this side of

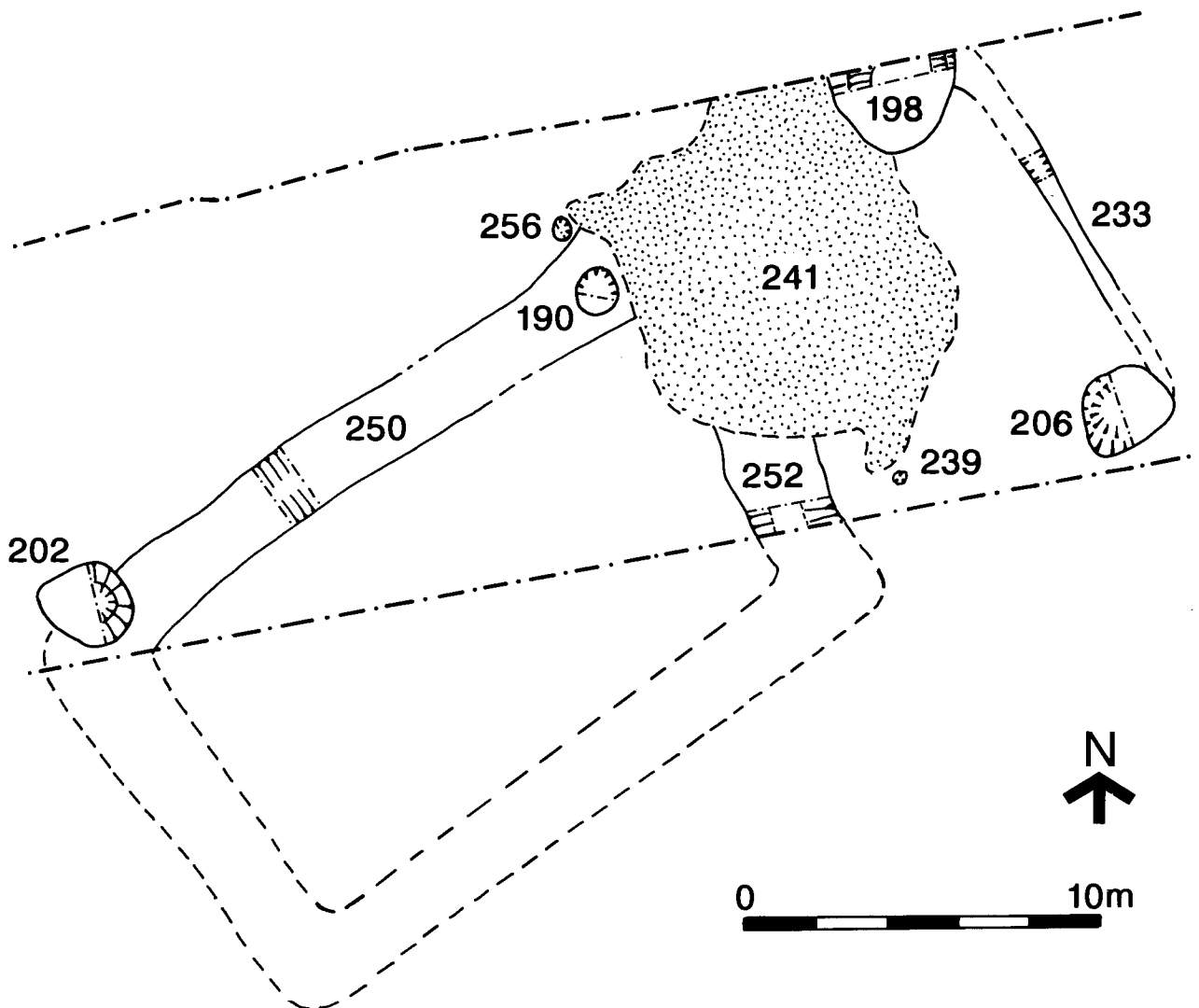


Fig 8. Church Langley. Old House site: Building A

the shelter was open. (The construction of the south-east and south-west walls is conjectural, but they are assumed to match the opposing walls). The post pits were clearly defined and all contained substantial pottery groups, of which all but C206 fell within a late 1st to mid 2nd-century date range. The largest group came from post pit C192, which produced 378 sherds, in spite of its very shallow profile.

It can be shown stratigraphically that post pit C206 was left *in situ* after the demolition of the building, and the pottery dating evidence suggests that it was not finally backfilled until the 4th century. However the primary fills of this feature (C235 and C237) contained early 2nd-century pottery, suggesting that they may well be undisturbed post-packing material, indicating a possible construction date for the building. The angles at which the primary fills of C206 were lying indicates the presence of a centrally placed post pipe. This is confirmed by a deposit of animal bones (see phase IIIb) that appears to have been placed in the post pipe after the final removal of the post in the early 3rd century. This post apparently had a diameter of *c.* 0.5m, though the late date at which the pit was backfilled suggests that it may not have been the original corner-post of the building.

Post hole C256 was situated 1m north of C190. It was 0.45m in diameter, 0.17m deep and may represent a bracing timber associated with post hole 190, or perhaps a support for a porch.

Gully C233 marked the north-east end of the structure. It was much less substantial than the foundation trenches and must be an eavesdrip gully as it lies outside the line of the building's north-east wall. The presence of an eavesdrip gully indicates that the structure had a hipped roof. The small quantity of Roman tile recovered from the site during both the fieldwalking and excavation, in contrast to the large quantities recovered from the main settlement area, suggests either that the roof was thatched, or that any roof tiles were removed prior to demolition.

Gullies C220, C243 and post-hole C239 (Fig. 6, top left) were internal features of building A. Gully C220, which was 0.1m deep and produced 47 sherds of late 1st to mid 2nd-century pottery, may represent a drain, intended to carry surface water from the gravel floor to the terminal of ditch C192.

*Associated features: gullies C104 and C110*

Gully C104 was a small feature that was not excavated, but could represent a foundation gully for a fence line, perhaps delineating a trackway giving access to the building.

The alignment and location of gully 110 suggest that it was laid out in relation to building A. Although 110 links up with ditch 188, which was clearly dug after the building was demolished, there was a distinct gap, *c.* 0.1m wide, separating the two features. This suggests that 110 continued in use as a boundary for some time after the demolition of the building, having been incorporated into a wider boundary system.

**Phase II - mid-2nd to late 4th century** (Fig. 7)

*Phase IIa - mid to late-2nd century boundary system*

*Ditches: C192, C188/ C211 = B10 = A7*

This sub-division of phase II includes a group of boundary ditches, cutting across building A shortly after its demolition and linking up with the pre-existing (phase I) boundary system. All these ditches were backfilled by the late 2nd century, though the alignment of A7 was subsequently preserved by a recut (A82, phase IIb).

Feature C192 was 0.67m deep, with a steep-sided V-shaped profile. Two small drainage gullies associated with building A (C233 and C220) emptied into the feature, which suggests that it may be the terminal of a drainage ditch originally contemporary with building A. It produced a small group of early-mid 2nd century pottery, but its location in relation to the phase IIa ditches indicates that it formed part of the same boundary system, suggesting that it may not have been back-filled until the later 2nd century.

Ditch C211, which formed part of a substantial, curvilinear boundary including ditches A7 and B10, had a depth of 0.7m and a broad, V-shaped profile. The ditch must have been dug shortly after the demolition of building A in the mid-2nd century, since it cut across the eastern corner of building A but had been completely back-filled by the later 2nd century. Along with ditch C188, C211 was apparently intended to fill a gap in the boundary system created by the demolition of building A, by linking a number of pre-existing boundary elements (A7/B10, C110, C192). This suggests that building A had been located at a key junction of the local boundary system, and may explain the retention of the building's eastern corner post as a boundary marker (C206). Five fills were recognised in the excavated segment, mostly consisting of dark grey clayey silt and including large quantities of pottery, bone and shell.

Ditch C188 was a relatively shallow, V-shaped ditch with a depth of 0.38m, linking ditch C211 with an earlier gully C110. It contained dark grey and black clayey silt fills which were rich in finds and indistinguishable from those of C211. It is clear that C188 and C211 formed part of the same boundary system and were back-filled at the same time.

Ditch A7/ B10 may have been first laid out as early as the Late Iron Age. It had a broad, steep-sided, V-shaped profile, with a depth of 1.2m. At its south-western end it was on a perpendicular alignment to a natural palaeochannel (C161), which seems to have been an open stream in the Roman period. At its north-eastern end the ditch curved towards building A. The ditch contained a large pottery group suggesting an early 2nd-century date, but the equation of this feature with ditch C211 suggests that it may not have been completely back-filled until the later 2nd century.

**Phase IIb - Late 2nd to late 4th century boundaries**

*Ditches A82 (recut of A7); A6, B18, A4/C234 and*

*A53/C154, A59;*

This phase sub-division includes a group of narrow linear ditches, of which the earliest originated in the later 2nd century and the latest originated in the late 3rd/early 4th century. The ditches formed a series of rectilinear enclosures laid out perpendicular to the natural stream (C161). The close spacing of some of the ditches, and the pottery dating, suggests that not all were in use at the same time. The ditches varied in depth from 0.25m to 0.40m and in width from 0.7m to 1.2m. They were typically steep-sided and had either flat-bottomed or U-shaped profiles.

Ditch A82 was a recut of the phase II ditch A7, but was only dug after the earlier ditch had been completely filled in. It contained a large group of 2nd-century pottery, indicating that it is the earliest of this group of boundaries. The latest pottery from ditches A6 (primary fill), A53/C154 (upper fill) and A4/C234 (primary fill) was of late 3rd/4th-century date.

Ditch A59 ran parallel to, and *c.* 7m north of the palaeo-channel, on an alignment that suggests that it forms part of the phase IIb boundary system.. It was wider than the other ditches comprising the system, and only 0.27m deep. The fills contained a small amount of Roman pottery that was not closely datable.

*Stream channel C161*

This was not excavated but was clearly visible in both OH91 and OH94 as a 9m wide band of dark brown and grey silts, occupying a linear depression aligned north-west to south-east. The system of small rectilinear enclosures comprising phase IIb was laid out perpendicular to this natural drainage feature. Cut C161 appears to have been artificial, indicating that the stream was an open channel in the Roman period.

*Depression A17; Curvilinear gully A21; Gully A101; Upper fills of C206 (see phase I above): C207, C185*

As described above, it can be shown stratigraphically that the eastern corner post of building A remained in place until after the back-filling of ditch 211 in the late 2nd century, even though the demolition of building A as a whole is securely dated to the mid-second century (Phase I). This sequence is supported and partly explained by the ceramic evidence: The lower fills, although not securely dated, contained pottery consistent with an early 2nd-century date, suggesting that they represent undisturbed post-packing associated with the construction of building A. The upper fills, by contrast, produced a large group of later 3rd to 4th-century pottery, accompanied by a deposit of animal bone including the jaw bone and articulated spinal column of a young dog, and two unrelated fragments of worked red deer antler. The deposit had apparently been placed centrally in the pit (in the post-pipe) after the final removal of the post. This sequence suggests that the corner post (C206) had been left standing after the demolition of building A, perhaps as a boundary marker, and was not finally removed until the late 3rd or 4th century (over a hundred years after it was first put

in position). The ritual deposit may represent a rite of termination, marking the final removal of the post. The proximity of the four cremations and the chicken bone deposit, supports the impression that the post had some symbolic significance.

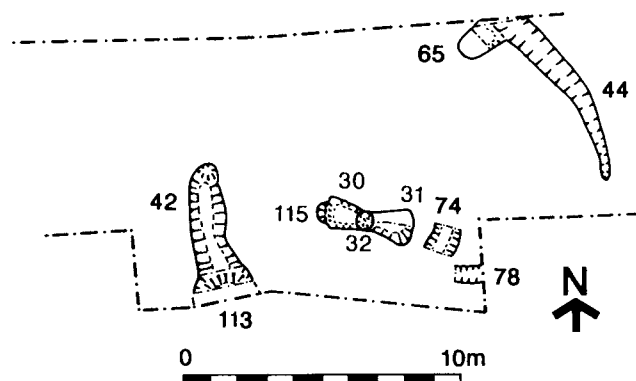


Fig. 9 Church Langley. Old House site: Kiln area

**Phase IIc - (2nd?- later 4th-century kiln and associated features)**

*Kiln and associated structure: flue A30, Stokehole A115, gullies A32, A65, A74, A44, A78 A42 (Fill A43 contained infant burial); Possible well A113; (Figs 6, 7 and 9)*

Adjacent to the south-east side of the stream was a bowl kiln (32 in Fig. 9), aligned east-west, with an ash-filled flue (30). The natural clay in the area of the kiln had been subjected to intense heat and mixed with ash, turning it a range of colours from orange and dark reddish brown, to grey brown. The structure was 3.38m long and 0.60m wide externally, with a 0.4m deep, squarish flue pit at the western end. The stokehole (115) was a shallow, elongated feature, 0.25m deep and *c.* 0.6m wide, extending 2.67m from the west of the flue pit and filled with a dense black deposit of charcoal and ash (31). A group of fairly large, irregular sandstone blocks (not shown in plan), located beside the stokehole, may have formed part of the kiln superstructure. The latest pottery associated with the structure was later 4th-century from the stoke-hole fill, indicating abandonment by that date.

The kiln was placed centrally between two curvilinear gullies (42, 44), which may represent the foundations of a shelter with an internal diameter of *c.* 13.5m. Context 44 was 0.75m deep, with steep to vertical sides and a flat base. Its upper fill (45) was black, with charcoal inclusions, and contained mid 3rd-century pottery. Context 42 was 0.52m deep, with a shallow, flat-based profile, containing a black clay loam fill (43) with much charcoal. Within the fill was the skull

of a human child (estimated as being 2.5 to 4 years old), accompanied by 2nd-century pottery and perhaps representing a ritual deposit. The absence of 4th-century pottery from the gullies, even though there was 4th-century material in the kiln itself, perhaps indicates that the gully fills may be undisturbed foundation deposits. This would suggest a mid 3rd-century *terminus post quem* for construction of the structure. However, gully 42 contained only 2nd-century pottery, supporting an earlier date.

Gully 42 cut across the top of a steep-sided pit (F113) which may have been a well. It was *c.* 2.6m in diameter but was only partially excavated and contained no datable pottery. Contexts 74 and 78 were small irregular gullies, of indeterminate function and date, located in the vicinity of the kiln, inside the area enclosed by gullies 42 and 44.

*Feature complex on the north-western side of the natural stream (C161): hearth: A23; Pits: A24, A3, A39, A28, A72, A26, A35; Gullies: A108, A118, A49, A33;*

North-west of the buried stream, directly opposite the kiln, was a complex of inter-cutting pits and gullies, with a wide range of dates between the 2nd and 4th centuries.

Pit A35, stratigraphically among the earliest of these features, was 0.75m deep and contained pottery consistent with a 2nd-century date. One of the fills (127) was a layer of black silty clay with dense charcoal inclusions. Other features in this group which are early in the stratigraphic sequence but contained no datable pottery included feature A3, an irregular 0.5m deep pit, and gully terminal A118. The latter feature was 0.35m deep and had a lining of burnt clay (A121) which appeared in section to form a vertical-sided slot.

Pit A39 was a wide, shallow depression whose black clay loam fill (A40) contained burnt clay, pot and bone. The pottery could not be closely dated, other than to say it was 2nd century or later. A72 was a broad, shallow pit, 2.63m wide, with an irregular shape and a maximum depth of 0.75m, containing later 4th-century pottery. Pit A24, which was 0.83m deep, may be a recut of A72. Feature A23, an area of dark brown and black clay loam with pot, bone and fired clay inclusions, immediately adjacent to pit A72 was identified as a hearth but could equally be a compacted layer of debris deriving from the kiln.

Cutting the tops of the pit complex were three small, shallow gullies (A108, A49, A33). All three were aligned roughly perpendicularly to the buried stream (A161) but there is no indication of their function. Pit A26 was filled with a charcoal-rich deposit (27) and may be a hearth. The location of this group of features close to the kiln site and the stream channel (C161), and the presence of charcoal-rich deposits, animal bones and pottery filling some features, suggests that they represent rubbish pits and ancillary structures associated with a craft or industrial activity.

Pit A28 was an oval pit located on the north-west edge of the buried stream, between the kiln and pit

complex. It was 1.8m long and 0.4m deep and contained 91 dog bones, representing two adult individuals. Most elements were present, but with fewer of the more fragile or smaller parts of the skeleton. The mottled orange and grey clay upper fill (29), which included the burials, also contained mid-3rd century pottery, charcoal fragments and a rectangular slab of millstone grit quern, cut from a large lower stone and showing no signs of wear. The lower fill (37), was a black, charcoal-rich clay loam containing large mid-3rd century pottery fragments and a lava quern fragment. This deposit is probably ritual in nature (see discussion below).

### **Phase II d - (late 2nd+ - late 4th century cremation group)**

*Cremations: C210, C219, C228 and C230*

A group of four cremations was identified (C210, C219, C228 and C230), towards the west end of OH94. Each was contained within a small cut and all were within 8m of one another. C210 was oval in plan, with almost vertical sides, a maximum breadth of 0.4m and a depth of 0.15m. The fill (117) was a dark grey clayey silt fill with burnt clay, charcoal, chalk flecks and gravel inclusions, as well as burnt bone and a bead-rimmed globular bowl with a zone of 'Romano-Saxon' style decoration around the belly. These vessels are commonly dated to the later 4th century. The remaining three cremations contained similar fills, but lacked associated pottery, though C228, 0.13m deep and 0.12m in diameter, was lined with burnt clay. All four cremations must post-date the demolition of building A in the later 2nd century. The burnt bone identified in the features was too fragmentary to determine whether it was animal or human.

A Nene valley colour-coat beaker base, filled with chicken bones and inserted into the fill of pit C190, was found *c.* 6m north of the cremation group. If it is associated with the cremations it would suggest that the cemetery was in use by at least the mid-3rd century.

### **Phase III - 4th century+ (Fig. 7)**

*Ditches: A129/B12 and C168*

These are parallel, north-south aligned, ditches. A129 had a V-shaped profile and steeply sloping sides, with a width of 0.75m and a depth of 0.48m. It contained late 3rd to 4th-century pottery, and may have cut ditch A53/C154. C168 was not excavated, but probably cut ditch C234.

The alignment of the ditches is almost perpendicular to a post-medieval field boundary that runs from east to west *c.* 50m south of the excavated area and drains into the stream at the foot of the slope to west of the site. The establishment of this boundary must post-date the silting of the natural stream channel (C161), whose line it crosses. Ditches C168 and A129/B12 therefore probably post-date the abandonment of the phase II b boundary system, which is aligned on the stream channel. The ceramic evidence indicates that the

realignment must have taken place in the late 4th century or later. There is some place-name evidence implying that this area was cleared in the early 13th century which would perhaps support a medieval date for the ditches.

**Unphased features**

- Ditches:* C106, C148, C150, C164, C165;
- Post-holes:* C105, C111, C155, C156, A106, C231, C163;
- Pits:* A63, A9
- Ploughmarks?:* C145, C146
- Inadequately recorded features:* A12, A19
- Stream deposits:* C159, C160

**Finds reports**

**The prehistoric pottery**

by Nigel Brown

The pottery has been recorded using a system devised for prehistoric pottery in Essex (details in archive). Where percentages are given, these refer to sherd weight.

Only 29 sherds weighing 139g were recovered from Old House, residual in later contexts. Where identifiable the fabric is flint gritted, with one exception, a rim with finger-nail impressed decoration, in a sand and flint-tempered fabric; this is likely to be contemporary with the material from Perry Spring Wood. The remaining flint-gritted material is not closely dateable within the prehistoric period. However, one rim with a single row of cord-impressed decoration (Fig. 10), is likely to be of Late Neolithic or Early Bronze Age date. This small group of material thus appears to belong to more than one period.

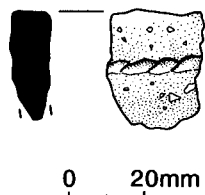


Fig. 10 Church Langley. Old House site: Prehistoric pottery

**The Late Iron Age and Roman pottery**

by T. S. Martin

*Introduction*

The three phases of archaeological investigation yielded a total of 5,884 sherds (58.5 kg) of pottery from 115 contexts, the bulk of which was derived from feature-fills. The quantities of pottery from each campaign are compared in Table 1, below.

Quantitative details	Site			Totals
	OH91	OH93	OH94	
Sherd Count	3,125	180	2,579	5,884
Weight (g)	26,709	1,877	29,941	58,527
No. of contexts with Roman pottery	54	8	53	115

Table 1 Comparison of the pottery from the three areas.

Form identifications follow the Chelmsford typology (Going 1987, 13-54); and fabrics are recorded using mnemonic codes which are

then cross-referenced to the Chelmsford codes where they are common to both sites. Although Going's Chelmsford typology has been used as the main work of reference, the site's location outside central Essex means that other published typologies and site reports have been used to classify forms which are not present in Going. Where fitting, reference is also made to Young's Oxfordshire corpus (Young 1977), Monaghan's north Kent volume (Monaghan 1987), Thompson's survey of 'Belgic' Grog-tempered wares (Thompson 1982), Roberts' study of Romano-Saxon pottery (Roberts 1982) and the *Camulodunum*-type series (Hawkes and Hull 1947, 215-73; Hull 1958; 1963). Further parallels for vessel forms have also been sought in the Verulamium volumes (Wilson 1972; 1983) and Harlow temple (Wilkinson and Clark 1985), while use has also been made of Going's unpublished Hadham corpus. Where the latter has been used, this is simply referred to as 'Hadham corpus'.

All pottery was quantified by sherd count and weight by fabric. Analysis was concerned with identifying the variety of fabrics and forms, and providing dating evidence for feature-fills. A selection of the pottery from contexts dating to the Hadrianic-early Antonine period was also quantified by EVEs to provide extra information on assemblage characteristics and pottery supply. The data is presented as a composite group below.

The following fabrics were identified (numbers after Going 1987 in bold): -

ASS	South Spanish amphorae	55
BB1	Black-burnished ware 1	40
BB2	Black-burnished ware 2	41
BUF	Unspecified buff wares	31
COLB	Colchester buff ware	27
COLC	Colchester colour-coat	1
ESH	Early shell-tempered wares	50
FWCS	Misc. fine white- or cream-slipped wares	16
GLZ	South East English glazed ware	10
GRF	Fine grey wares	39
GROG	Grog-tempered wares	53
GRS	Sandy grey wares	47
HAR	Hadham grey wares	36
HAWG	Hadham white-slipped grey wares	
HAWO	Hadham white-slipped oxidised wares	14
HAX	Hadham oxidised red wares	4
LSH	Late shell-tempered wares	51
NKG	?North Kent grey wares	32
NVC	Nene Valley colour-coat	2
OCC	Unspecified colour-coats	7
OXRC	Oxfordshire red colour-coat	3
OXW	Oxfordshire white wares	25
RED	Miscellaneous red wares	21
RET	Rettendon wares	48
RHN [CG]	Central Gaulish Rhenish ware	8
RHN [EG]	East Gaulish Rhenish ware	9
BSW	Black-surfaced wares	
STOR	Storage jar fabrics	44
STV [LE]	'London-Essex' stamped wares	19
STV [NE]	'North Essex' stamped wares	20
TSG	Samian	60
VRW	Verulamium Region white ware	26
WCS	Misc. white- or cream-slipped sandy red wares	15

*Forms:* jars, dishes, beakers, cups, platters, flagons, bowls, bowl-jars, lids, miniatures and mortaria were all represented. Of these, jars and dishes were the main vessel classes and were present in a wide variety of fabrics. Jars were identified in groups of all periods except Period 1. No vessel forms were identified in contexts of this period. Platters, bowls and beakers were also noted in significant quantities. The only cup form to be identified was the samian Drag. 27. A single hand-made 'feeding-bottle' type vessel is discussed in detail below because of its rarity.

*Site chronology and dating evidence*

Because so few coins and relatively little samian was present, site chronology rests chiefly on the coarse pottery. The concept behind

## PREHISTORIC, ROMAN AND POST-MEDIEVAL MATERIAL FROM HARLOW

this is that the pottery from features infilled at the same time will differ from those whose infilling is further apart in time (Millet and Graham 1986, 7). The method used has been to take the spot-dating data and group together contexts containing similar ranges of vessel forms and fabrics, which can be considered well or reasonably well dated. These groups are then used to construct a chronological sequence. The validity of these groups is then checked against the small number of stratigraphic relationships. While there were several important large, well-dated groups, the date ranges that could be assigned to the majority of the feature-fills were quite wide. In several instances, especially where groups were small and undiagnostic, no close dating proved possible. However, some refinement was possible using stratigraphic relationships within features, but rarely from inter-cutting features.

All contexts are dated by the latest pottery present unless these sherds can reasonably be assumed to be intrusive, i.e. tiny abraded pieces that are likely to have found their way into the context via root or worm holes. In several instances contexts are grouped by their stratigraphic relationships to well-dated contexts. However, this is only the case where the range of fabrics present allows a reasonably educated guess. Assemblages containing little or no diagnostic pottery and where stratigraphic relationships are non-existent or at best uncertain are classified as ungrouped.

Contexts	Site Phase	Pottery period with site phase added
Pit F63 upper fill	unphased	1-I
Gully F89	?	1-I
Ditch F7 primary fill	IIa	1-I
Ditch F7 secondary fills	IIa	2-I
Ditch F35 primary fills	IIc	2-I
Ditch F1	I	2-I
Ditch F252 upper fill	I	2-I
Gully F243	I	2-I
Pit F24	IIc	3-I
Gully F220	I	3-I
Ditch F192 upper fill	IIa	3-I
Ditch F7 upper fill	IIa	3-I
Pit F202	I	3-I
Pit F190	I	3-I
Ditch F198 upper fills	I	3-I
Ditch F188/211	IIa	3-I
Gully F82	IIb	3-I
Ditch F35 upper fills	IIc	3-I
Ditch F44 upper fill	IIc	4-II
Ditch F42 upper fill	IIc	4-II
Pit F19	unphased	4-II
Pit F28	IIb	4-II
Gully F33	IIc	4-II
Pit 206	I (IIb (upper fill))	4-II
Gully F4	IIb	5-II
Ditch F6	IIb	5-II
Ditch F53 upper fill	IIb	5-II
Misc. Feature F17	IIb	6-III
Corn drier/oven F30 (disuse)	IIc	6-III
Cremation F210	IIc	6-III
Pit F72	IIc	6-III
Gully F21	IIb	6-III

Table 2 Site phase/ceramic period correspondence by feature

Six ceramic date-bands are discernible:- (i) Late Pre-Roman Iron Age/?pre-Flavian, (ii) late 1st to early 2nd century (Flavian to Trajanic), (iii) mid-2nd century (Hadriatic to early Antonine), (iv)

early to mid-3rd century, (v) late 3rd to mid-4th century and (vi) later 4th century plus (Table 3). However, most dated features and thus the bulk of the site's pottery belong to the Hadriatic to early Antonine period. Late Iron Age and latest Roman material is barely represented. It is worth noting that there is little correspondence between site phasing and the established pottery periods (Table 2). The reasons for this will become apparent from the detailed discussion of the dating evidence below.

Period	S.P.	Contexts
<i>Pre-Flavian</i>	I	Pit F63 upper fill; Gully F89; Ditch F7 primary fill.
<i>Flavian to Trajanic</i>	I	Ditch F7 secondary fills; Ditch F35 primary fills; Ditch F1; Ditch F252 upper fill; Gully F243
<i>Hadriatic to early Antonine</i>	I	Pit F24; Gully F220; Ditch F192 upper fill; Ditch F7 upper fill; Pit F202; Pit F190; Ditch 198 upper fills; Ditch F188/211; Gully F82; Ditch F35 upper fills.
<i>Late 2nd to Mid 3rd century</i>	II	Ditch F44 upper fill; Ditch F42 upper fill; Pit F19; Pit F28; Gully F33; Pit 206.
<i>Late 3rd to Mid 4th century</i>	II	Gully F4; Ditch F6; Ditch F53 upper fill.
<i>Late 4th century</i>	III	Misc. Feature F17; corn drier/oven F30 (disuse); Cremation F210; Pit F72; Gully F21.

Table 3: Summary of the dating evidence ("well-dated" contexts only)

### Period 1: LPRIA - Pre-Flavian (Table 4)

Evidence for pre-conquest or conquest period activity is slight: three contexts, all in OH91, contained nothing but very small quantities of Early shell-tempered ware and/or Grog-tempered ware. Pottery of this type was found in the secondary fill of ditch F7 (context 87), the shallow fill of gully F89 (context 90) and the top fill of pit F63 (context 64). None of these contexts produced any identifiable forms. This points to some activity in the LPRIA or very early in the post-conquest period. Ditch F14 also probably belongs to this period. Although no pottery was recovered from the primary fill (context 57), a gold stater dated c. 60-50 BC was recovered from the secondary fill (context 16) alongside residual Middle Iron Age pottery. The presence of quantities of pottery of this period in later contexts indicates that activity in this period may have more intense than the data from surviving feature-fills suggests.

Site	Feature	Fill	Dated by
OH91	Ditch F7 (primary fill)	87	Misc. pottery: Fabric GROG.
	Pit F63 (upper fill)	64	Misc. pottery: Fabrics ESH & GROG.
	Gully F89 (single fill)	90	Misc. pottery: Fabric GROG.

Table 4 Summary of pottery dating evidence

### Period 2: Early Roman (Flavian-Trajanic) (Table 5)

In OH91, two features may be assigned to this period with some confidence. Ditch F7 clearly remained open into the early Roman period. The LPRIA secondary fill was sealed by a number of contexts containing fully Romanised fabrics (contexts 83/84 and 85/86). Although this ditch was probably not completely infilled before the mid 2nd century, the absence of any identifiable forms in the lowest fills means that the exact date of the feature is not well established. More definitely of this period, judging by the range of fabrics present, is the primary fill of F35 (context 38/126). Identifiable forms included a rather small and squat 'Braughing type' jar (G21) in Hadham grey ware and a fine grey ware shallow bowl with convex sides and drooping flange (C2), neither of which are out of place in Flavian contexts.

In OH93, ditch F1 can be assigned to this period. Contexts 2 and 3 contained a range of fabrics and forms suggesting that the process of silting and back-filling took place sometime in the Flavian period. The absence of samian makes closer dating impossible. This is perhaps the earliest feature assigned to this period, however.

The initial phase of activity represented in OH94 can be tentatively placed in the Flavian period. Contexts exclusively with Early shell-tempered and Grog-tempered wares are absent, nor are

these fabrics present in any quantity in contrast to the 'early' contexts encountered in OH91. Only two feature in OH94 are securely dated to this period, F252 and F243.

Ditches F250 and F252 may represent some form of boundary, perhaps a small enclosure or paddock. These are the earliest in the stratigraphic sequence, although their date is not well established as no pottery was recovered from the primary fills of either feature. A small group of undiagnostic sherds was retrieved from the upper fill of F250 (116) ruling out close dating, but the upper fill of F252 (253) contained a more sizeable group, dated by the presence of a squat 'Braughing type jar' (G21) in Sandy grey ware resembling that recovered from the primary fill of F35 in OH91, and a Fine grey ware body sherd from a plain, almost biconical jar (G18). The G18 jar form belongs roughly to the 1st to early 2nd century, while the 'Braughing type jar' is an early version of the type, as indicated by its size and uneven rilling. Comparable vessels have been recorded at Skeleton Green, Hertfordshire, (Partridge 1981, fig. 44.15) and at *Verulamium* (Wilson 1972, fig. 100.50) in pre-Flavian horizons. The rim of a Hadham grey ware small jar with an everted rim was also found in this context. The fill of gully F243 produced a C2 bowl form that is typically Flavian or Trajanic in association with a Flavian South Gaulish samian f18 platter.

Site	Feature	Fill	Dated by
OH91	Ditch F7* <i>(intermediate fills)</i>	83/8	Misc. pottery: Fabrics RED, GRF, BSW, ESH & GROG.
		85/8	Misc. pottery: Fabrics BSW & GROG.
	Ditch F35 <i>(primary fills)</i>	38	Misc. pottery: bowl C2 (GRF); jar G21.1(HAR); Fabrics STOR, BSW, GRS, ESH & GROG.
		126	Misc. pottery: Fabrics ESH, GRF, GRS & GROG.
OH93	Ditch F1	2	Misc. pottery: jars G4.1 (GROG), G [necked] (GRS), G (HAR & GRF), G [Thompson 1982, type C1-4] (ESH); Fabrics STOR & BSW.
		3	Misc. pottery: jars G44 (STOR), G4.1 (GROG), G [necked] (GRF); Fabrics HAR, BSW & ESH.
OH94	Ditch F252 <i>(upper fill)</i>	253	Misc. pottery: jars G21.1 (GRS), G [necked] (HAR), G18 (b/s in GRF), G44.1 (STOR); ?tankard with everted rim or small jar (cf. Hadham corpus No. 80) – new form (HAR)
	Gully F243	183	Samian: f18, S.G. Misc. pottery: bowl C2.1, C [Marsh and Tyers 1978, type V.C.1] (BSW); jars G [necked] (HAR), G4.1 (ESH), G44.1 (STOR); flagon J (COLB); Fabric GRF

(\*on stratigraphic grounds only)

Table 5 Summary of the pottery dating evidence

Period 3: Mid-2nd century (Hadrianic-early Antonine) (Table 6)

Contexts with mid 2nd-century AD pottery are fairly well represented in OH91. The upper fill of ditch F7 (context 1) contained Hadrianic to early Antonine material, including a Fine grey ware bead-rim dish (exact form uncertain), a BB2 jar (G9.1) and a Hadham oxidised red ware flagon (exact type unclear), suggesting that this boundary ceased to function around this time. Confirmation of this comes from the pottery recovered from the fill of the shallow gully F82 (context 81) which cuts F7 and may represent some form of re-cutting of this feature. It contained a BB2 dish (B2.5) that is typically Hadrianic-Antonine in date.

The upper fills of F35 (contexts 36, 124) also contained pottery similar in character to the material recovered from the top fills of F7. This included a Fine grey ware bead-rim dish B4.2 and a 'Braughing type' jar (G21.1) in Sandy grey ware, suggesting that it too went out of use in this period. The primary fill of F24 (47) produced a significant quantity of pottery, including a rather fragmentary B2/B4 type bead rimmed dish in Romanising grey ware. On the whole, there was little that would be out of place in a Hadrianic/Antonine context.

In OH94, boundary ditches F250 and F252 are superseded by

Site	Feature	Fill	Dated by	
OH91	Ditch F24	47	Misc. pottery: dish B2/B4 (BSW); Fabrics HAR & STOR	
	Ditch F7 <i>(upper fill)</i>	1	Misc. pottery: dish B2/B4 (GRF); jars G4 (ESH); G9.1 (BB2); ?G17 (GRF); Fabrics HAX, RED, COLB, VRW, HAR, STOR, BSW, GRS & GROG	
	Ditch F35 <i>(upper fills)</i>	36	Misc. pottery: Fabrics HAX, GRF, GROG & BUF	
		124	Misc. pottery: dish B4.2 (GRF); jar G21 (GRS); Fabrics RED, BSW, HAR & GROG.	
	Gully F82	81	Misc. pottery: dish B2.5 (BB2); jars G19.5(GRF); G9 (BB2), G4 (ESH); Fabrics HAX, HAWO, BUF, HAR, STOR, GRS & GROG.	
OH94	Ditch F118/211	110	Misc. pottery: Fabrics HAX & BSW.	
		112	Misc. pottery: jar G new form [cf. Wilkinson and Clark 1985, fig. 57.101] (ESH); Fabric BSW.	
		113	Misc. pottery: Fabrics BSW & ESH.	
		182	Misc. pottery: dishes B1.3 (GRF), B4.2 (GRF), B2/B4 (BB2); jars G5.4 (GRS); Fabric HAX, VRW, BSW, ESH & GROG.	
		189	Misc. pottery: Fabrics VRW & HAR.	
		138	Misc. pottery: dishes B2/B4 (GRF), B4.2 (GRF); bowl C23 (GRF); jars G21 (GRF); Fabrics HAX HAR & BB1	
		195	Samian: f37 C.G. f31 E.G; Misc. pottery: dish B4.2 (GRS); jars G19.4 (GRF), G44.5 (STOR), G5.4 (GRS), G5.5 (GRS), G23 (GRS); Fabrics HAR, VRW & HAR.	
		196	Misc. pottery: dish B2/B4 (GRF); jar G5.4 (GRS)	
		208	Misc. pottery: bowl C12 (GRS), B– new form [Young 1977 Type R57] (GRF); jar G21 (GRF); J – new form – double handled flagon, [cf Tyers 1983, Fig. 2.310147] (VRW).	
		Ditch F192 <i>(upper fill)</i>	194	Samian: f33, C.G.; Misc. pottery: jars G4.1 (ESH); Fabric HAR.
		Ditch F198	187	Misc. pottery: jar G5.4 (GRS); Fabrics HAX & HAR
			200	Misc. pottery: platter A1.1 (GRF); dish B4 (BB1); bowl C4.1 with six-pronged stabbed decoration on the rim (GRF); jar G21 (GRS); Fabrics VRW, HAR & ESH.
	203		Samian: f37, C.G.; Misc. pottery: Fabrics BUF, GRF & GRS.	
	204		Misc. pottery: Fabrics GRF & STOR.	
	205		Misc. pottery: Fabric GRS.	
	227		Misc. pottery: flagon J3 (VRW).	
	Pit F190	129	Samian: f27 (x2) S.G, f18 S.G, f18/31 C.G. Misc. Pottery: dishes B2/B4 (BB1), B4.2 (BB2); bowl – new form [cf. Wilson 1972, fig. 108.323] (RED), C2.2 (GRF); jars G9 (GRF), G4 (ESH); miniature R7–new variation (HAR); beaker H33/34 (NVC); Fabrics HAX, GLZ, HAWO, VRW & HAWG.	
		191	Samian: f27 S.G; f18 S.G. Misc. pottery: bowl C12 (STV[LE]); miniature R7–new variation (HAR).	
	Pit F202	115	Misc. pottery: dishes B2/B4 (RED & HAR); Fabrics HAX & NKG.	
201		Misc. pottery: Bowls–new form–Young 1977, R57 (GRF), vessel imitating samian f29 or f37 (GRF) jar G44.4 STOR); Fabrics VRW, NKG, HAR & ESH.		
Gully F220	184	Samian: f18/31, C.G. Misc. pottery: dish–new form –[cf. Monaghan 1987, type 5B2.4]] (BSW); bowl C16 (VRW); jar G5.3 (ESH); Fabrics HAR & HAWG		

Table 6 Summary of the pottery dating evidence



PREHISTORIC, ROMAN AND POST-MEDIEVAL MATERIAL FROM HARLOW

ditches F188 and F211 as part of a radical transformation in the site's layout. The earlier, more regular arrangement is replaced by a very irregular system comprising an enclosure or paddock. F188, which cuts F250, contained a substantial amount of pottery including two Fine grey ware dish types that first appear in the Hadrianic (B1.3) and at the beginning of the Antonine (B4.2). F211 contained pottery of ?mid 2nd century in its primary fills (208 and 196), while the upper fills (138 and 195) produced Antonine samian and dish types in Fine grey ware (B4.2) as well as several Sandy grey ware lid-seated jars, G5.4 and G5.5, which were current throughout the 2nd and the first half of the 3rd century AD. Ditch F198 is also likely to be associated with this enclosure; it is separated by a gap of c. 5m from F211 and is suggestive of an entrance. Even though the primary fills were not excavated, the upper fills of F198 produced a substantial quantity of datable pottery. The Central Gaulish form 37 bowl in context 203 attributable to the period c. 125-50 places the back-filling/silting sequence in the mid-2nd century AD. Pottery recovered from the layer above, context 200, included a BB1 B4 type dish (Hadrianic/Antonine in date) as well as more than a few obviously residual pieces (e.g. platter A1.1), which confirms this. The topmost fill, 187, contained a lid-seated jar type (G5.4) datable to the 2nd to early/mid 3rd century as well as some Hadham oxidised red ware. However, the absence of exclusively 3rd-century forms argues for an Antonine date for the final backfilling.

Also within this sequence are the upper fills of ditch F192 and pits F190 and F202. Although not producing particularly good dating evidence, the upper fill of ditch F192 (context 194) did have Hadrianic-Antonine samian in association with residual Early shell-tempered ware. The shallow F190 contained a fairly large amount of pottery, including a Hadham grey ware miniature, a BB2 bead-rimmed dish (B4.2) and the base of a Nene Valley colour-coat (2) beaker which contained a ?ritual deposit of small bones. The regular break suggests that this may have been deliberately shaped after it became detached from the rest of the vessel. While the remaining pottery belongs to the second half of the 2nd century, this vessel is typically early to mid-3rd century (Howe *et al.* fig. 3.27; fig. 4.42). The wide time lag between this vessel and the rest of the pottery suggests that the beaker is a later insertion whose cut was unnoticed during excavation. The other pit, F202, is not so well dated. It produced a fairly small group with few readily datable pieces. The presence of dish types in Miscellaneous oxidised red wares and Hadham grey ware (B2/B4) dating from the Hadrianic or the beginning of the Antonine onwards, and the absence of entirely later forms, suggests that the group also belongs to the mid 2nd century AD.

Period 4: Late 2nd to mid-3rd century (Table 7)

In OH91 the upper fills of ditches F42 and F44 contained pottery which suggests these were no longer maintained after the mid 3rd century AD. Close dating of F42 is difficult because of the lack of recognisable dish forms and a large amount of residual period 1 pottery. The range of fabrics present does, however, point to a 3rd-century AD date. F44 is much better dated. It contained a Fine grey ware incipient bead and flanged dish (B5) in its upper fill (45). Two pits, F19 and F28, and a gully F33, may be assigned to this period. The primary fill of F28 (37) contained a Hadham grey ware incipient bead and flanged dish (B5.1), while the upper fill (29) also had a vessel of this type and fabric along with an Oxidised red ware 'feeding bottle' or 'lamp-filler'. Given that both fills contained pottery of the same date, it seems that this feature was not left open for any length of time. Although much is residual, the latest vessel type recovered from F19 is a Hadham grey ware folded beaker that probably dates from the early/mid 3rd century. The fill of F33 had little in the way of diagnostic pottery except for a body sherd of a Nene Valley colour-coat folded beaker of early 3rd-century plus date. F118 may belong to this or the previous phase; the pottery recovered from its fill was not closely datable.

By the mid 3rd century, the second enclosure in OH94 had gone out of use as demonstrated by the insertion of a pit, F206, into the edge of the back-filled ditch F211. It contained pottery typical of mid 3rd-century horizons, including an East Gaulish samian mortarium from Trier, a Hadham oxidised red ware pedestal-based jar (Toller 1986, fig. 15.101) and a handled jar (Toller 1986, fig. 15.105). Also

present were the body sherds of a slit-folded beaker in Nene Valley colour-coat (Howe *et al.* 1980, fig. 5.53) and an incipient flanged dish in Hadham grey ware (B5.1). The ritual deposition from F190 belongs to this period or the next. It is tempting to speculate that this may have formed part of a termination rite associated with the abandonment of the Group 2 enclosure.

Site	Feature	Fill	Dated by
OH91	Ditch F42 (upper fill)	43	Misc. pottery: bowl [Thompson 1982, type C7-1] (GROG); bowl-jar E2.3 (GRF); jars G34.1 (BUF), G [necked] (GRS); beaker base (OCC); Fabrics HAX, HAR, VRW, BSW & MICW.
	Ditch F44 (upper fill)	45	Misc. pottery: dishes B4 (GRF), B5 (GRF); bowl-jar E2 (GRF); jars G21 (GRF & GRS), G24 (GRS), G28 (GRS); Fabrics HAX, RED, VRW, HAR, BSW & GROG.
	Pit F19	20	Misc. pottery: platter A4.6 (HAR); jars ?G21 (BSW), G21 (GRS), G [necked] (GRF), G4 (ESH); beaker H33/H35 (HAR); flagon J (HAWO); Fabrics HAWG, RED, VRW, STOR, GROG & MICW.
	Pit F28	29	Misc. pottery: dish B5.1 (HAR); bowl-jar E2 (GRF); jars G [necked] (GRS), G24 (BUF); feeding bottle/lamp filler (RED); Fabric GROG.
		37	Samian: TSG. Misc. pottery: dish ?B5.1 (HAR); Fabrics HAX, GRF, GRS & BUF.
Gully F33	34	Misc. pottery: beaker H33/H35 (NVC); Fabrics HAR & GRF	
OH94	Pit F206	185	Samian: f45, E.G. Misc. pottery: dishes B5.1 (HAR), ?B9 (HAX), B4.2 (GRS); bowl-jar E2.3 (GRF); jars G21 (HAR, BSW, GRS), G5.5 (HAR), G19.5 (GRF), G9 (BB1), G44.5 (STOR); handled jar [Cam. 290] (HAX), pedestal base of narrow-necked jar [Cam. 296] (HAX); beakers ?H25 (RHN[CG]), ?H23 (NVC) slit-folded beaker ?H39 type (NVC). Fabrics OCC, OXW & VRW.
		207	Misc. pottery: jar ?G21 (HAR); Fabrics RHN [EG] & VRW.
		235	Misc. pottery: Fabrics HAR, GRF, GRS & GROG.
		237	Misc. pottery: jar G4 (ESH); Fabric HAR.

Table 7: Summary of the pottery dating evidence

Period 5: Late 3rd to mid-4th century (Table 8)

This period is represented by ditches or gullies F4 (which aligns with F234/F154 [unexcavated] in OH94), F6 and F53. The pottery from all three features is characterised by the presence of fully bead and flanged dish types (B6) in a variety of fabrics, including Hadham oxidised red ware and Fine grey ware. Absent are the typically late wares like Late shell-tempered ware, Oxfordshire red colour-coat, Portchester D and Alice Holt grey ware. This suggests that these features do not extend past the mid 4th century AD. Gully F4, a single fill feature, contained a largely undiagnostic group apart from a Hadham oxidised red ware bead and flanged dish. None of the remaining sherds are obviously residual.

The upper fill of the shallow ditch F53, provided a Fine grey ware bead and flanged dish, a Hadham grey ware bowl-jar (E6.1), and a Hadham oxidised red ware handled jar (Drury and Pratt 1976, fig. 23.51) as well as several residual pieces, placing it securely in the late Roman period. The primary fill of F6 (8) contained a bead and flanged dish and a bowl-jar (E6.1) in Fine grey ware in association with much that was clearly residual. All the pottery from the upper fill (2) is also likely to be residual. The lower fills of gully F118 (120 and 121) produced no pottery, while the top fill (119) contained a small group of largely undiagnostic sherds except for a Hadham oxidised

red ware jar. The form is typical of the early to mid 4th century and suggests that this feature was backfilled in this period. Residual 1st-century Grog-tempered ware was also present in small quantities.

Ditch F129, a single fill feature, contained much that is obviously residual as well as material of late 3rd to 4th-century date. There is nothing to suggest continuation into the late 4th century. Gully F21, also belongs to this period. Leaving aside a small sherd of Late shell-tempered ware which may be intrusive, the remaining material points to a late 3rd to 4th-century date.

Site	Feature	Fill	Dated by
OH91	Gully F4 (single fill)	5	Misc. pottery: dish B6.2 (HAX); Fabrics RED, HAR, GRF & GRS.
	Ditch F6 (primary fill)	8	Samian: TSG. Misc. pottery: dish B1 (HAX); B6.2 (GRF), B2/B4 (GRF); bowl-jar E6.1 (GRF); jars [cf. Wilson 1983, fig. 125.1307] (VRW), G [necked] (GRS), G19.4 (HAR); flagon J3 (HAR); Fabrics RED, HAWO, HAWG, STOR & ESH.
	Gully F21 (Single fill)	22	Misc. pottery: dishes B1.2 (BLK & GRF), B6.2 (GRF), B1 (HAX); jars G40 (HAR), G [necked] (HAX), G24 (GRS), G22.1 (GRS); Fabrics RET, LSH, COLC, NVC, MHM, RED, BB2, STOR & BSW.
	Ditch F53 (Upper fill)	54	Misc. pottery: dish B6.2 (GRF); bowl-jar E6.1 (HAR); jars G handled type (HAX), G4 (ESH & GROG); beaker ?H6 (GRF); Fabrics HAWG, NVC, STV[LE], BB2, COLB, VRW, BUF, BSW & STOR.
	Gully F118 (top fill)	119	Misc. pottery: jar G35.2 (HAX); Fabrics GRF, GRS & GROG.
	Ditch F129 (single fill)	130	Samian: TSG. Misc. pottery: dishes B6.2 (GRS & GRF), B2/B4 (GRF); mortaria D (HAX & OXW); jars G4.1 (ESH), G24 (GRF); Fabrics STOR, RED & HAR.

Table 8 Summary of the pottery dating evidence

*Period 6: Later 4th century (Table 9)*

The final activity in OH91 comprises the back filling of a possible corn-drier/malting oven F30, the digging of a shallow pit F72 and the construction of a possible circular structure F21. Also likely to be part of this sequence is F17, which contained quantities of 4th-century pottery as well as residual early Roman material. This group is characterised by the appearance of Late shell-tempered wares that are usually dated to the period after c. 360/370 (Going 1987, 10). Wallace (1993, 123-6) suggested that there was tentative evidence for the occurrence of this fabric in the region prior to c. AD 360. At Braintree, Drury and Platt (1976, 45) also note this phenomenon, but considered its appearance in early 4th-century contexts as a rarity. On balance, it seems not impossible that these features belong to the period immediately after c. AD 300 and that the absence of other 'late' fabrics suggests that activity probably did not continue much after c. AD 350 on this part of the site.

In OH91 the latest Roman period is represented by the deposition of a cremation associated with a Fine grey ware bowl decorated in a Romano-Saxon style motif. Parallels for this vessel are fairly widespread in the region with examples from Caister-on-Sea, Norfolk (Darling 1993, fig. 144.241) and Baldock, Hertfordshire (Rigby 1986, fig. 103.9). The form was also produced by the Oxfordshire industry (Young 1977, Type R2 2.1). The presence of burials on the site represents a major change of use in the late 4th century AD.

*Pottery supply and assemblage composition*

The assemblage comprises a substantial group of material from an area previously poorly endowed with stratified and well-dated groups. Moreover, as the site lies close to the Hadham kilns, the assemblage is

Site	Feature	Fill	Dated by
OH91	Misc. Cut F17	18	Misc. pottery: dish B6.2 (HAR & GRS); mortarium D9.1 (OXW), jars G[necked] (HAX), G new form (RED); G24.1 (GRS), G27.1 (LSH); Fabrics NVC, COLB, GRF, STOR, GROG & ESH.
	Gully F21	22	Misc. pottery: dishes B1.2 (BLK & GRF), B6.2 B1 (HAX); mortarium D(MHM); jars G40 (HAR), G [necked] (HAX), G24 (GRS), G22.1 (GRS); Fabrics RET, LSH, COLC, NVC, RED, BB2, STOR & BSW.
	Corn drier/ malting oven (in-filling)	31 32	Misc. pottery: Fabrics BSW, HAR, GRF & GRS. Misc. pottery: jar G27.2 (LSH); Fabrics HAX, COLB, HAR, GRF, BSW, & GRS.
	Pit F72	73	Misc. pottery: Platter A1.1 (GRF); bowl-jar E2 (GRF); jars G27.1 (LSH), G35.1 (GRS), G36.1 (GRF); Fabrics COLC, HAX, RED, HAR, GROG & BB2.
OH94	Cremation F210	117	Misc. pottery: a bead-rimmed globular bowl-jar with a zone of 'Romano-Saxon' style decoration around the belly (GRF).

Table 9 Summary of the pottery dating evidence

important to our understanding of the chronology of this industry. Pottery supply and assemblage composition are discussed with reference to the six pottery date bands identified above. However, detailed comment and fully quantified analysis is only possible for the Hadrianic-early Antonine period. Comparison with pottery from previous archaeological investigations around Harlow, most notably the temple site (France and Gobel 1985), the Holbrooks area (Conlon 1973) and in the vicinity of Stafford House (Burnham and Wachter 1990) is difficult, because the pottery from these has been analysed and classified differently.

Period 1: LPRIA - Pre-Flavian

The presence of Grog-tempered wares and Early shell-tempered pottery are to be expected in contexts of this date, although the latter suggests trade links with the Thames estuary had been established for this part of Essex in the Late Pre-Roman Iron Age. Evidence from later contexts suggests that nearly all the forms reaching the site in this period were neckless bead-rimmed jars. There is a marked absence of Gallo-Belgic imports, but given the small size of the assemblage and the few contexts of this period identified, the significance of this is difficult to interpret.

Period 2: Early Roman (Flavian-Trajanic)

The pottery of this period is broadly comparable to ceramic phases 1 and 2 at Chelmsford with locally produced wares dominating the assemblage. However, a large proportion of this material is almost certainly derived from the Hadham kilns. The range of fabrics reaching the site from this source are largely confined to grey and white- or cream-slipped wares. Early shell-tempered wares form the main traded wares, which attests to the strength of the trade links established with the Thames estuary in the Late Pre-Roman Iron Age. Other traded wares are rare and are represented by a very small quantity of *Verulamium* region white ware and Colchester buff ware. Grey wares form a minor assemblage element, as do the black-surfaced fabrics. The only imports are small quantities of South Gaulish samian. Assemblages of this period are dominated by jars, with the 'Braughing type jar' being much in evidence.

Period 3: Mid-2nd century (Hadrianic-early Antonine)

The pottery of this period is broadly comparable to ceramic phase 3 at Chelmsford. Although the assemblage from Old House is fairly large, there are few groups of sufficient size and quality to merit detailed analysis and publication. Thus, while all the pottery was analysed for dating and phasing purposes, only the best Hadrianic-early Antonine groups from OH94 were quantified by EVEs and are

presented below as a composite group. These comprise the fills of ditches F188/211 and F198 (upper fills); pits F190 and F202 and gully F220. The total amount of pottery from these features was 11.6kg (10.66 EVE). Although containing much that is visibly residual, this group does nonetheless, afford a sound basis for a synthesis of pottery supply in the period c. AD 120/5 to 150/60. This will serve as an interim model for the Harlow area.

In the site-phasing scheme, these features are divided among two separate phases, with ditch F188/211 in phase IIa and the rest in phase I. In pottery terms, there is nothing to suggest that these features are anything other than contemporary. The dating evidence includes the universal presence of B2 and B4 pie dishes. Other closely datable pottery comprises mid 2nd-century Central Gaulish samian and Hadham oxidised red ware. The common late dish forms like incipient or fully flange-rimmed dishes (Types B5-6) and any specifically late jar forms are absent. The presence of a Nene Valley colour-coat beaker base in the top fill of pit F190 (context 129) is a little out of place, as the shape of the base corresponds to the tall funnel-necked types that are dated to the early to mid 3rd century. Then again, this is the only piece of this date recovered from the feature.

Fabric	Sherd Count	Weight (g)	% Weight	Eve	% Eve
ASS	2	66	0.56	—	—
BB1	4	44	0.37	0.07	0.65
BB2	4	79	0.67	0.11	1.03
BSW	9	55	0.47	0.12	1.12
BUF	1	8	0.06	—	—
COLB	7	112	0.96	0.70	6.56
ESH	87	1129	9.69	0.56	5.25
GLZ	3	20	0.17	—	—
GRF	359	3373	28.98	3.89	36.49
GROG	8	76	0.65	0.10	0.93
GRS	222	2856	24.52	1.81	16.97
HAR	188	1535	13.18	1.76	16.51
HAWG	7	70	0.60	—	—
HAWO	1	8	0.06	—	—
HAX	19	51	0.43	0.01	0.09
NKG	4	35	0.30	—	—
NVC	1	100	0.85	—	—
RED	22	116	0.99	0.14	1.31
STOR	56	1357	11.65	0.44	4.12
STV[LE]	3	6	0.05	—	—
TSG	19	142	1.21	0.80	7.50
VRW	23	393	3.37	0.42	3.93
WCS	2	11	0.09	—	—
<b>Totals</b>	<b>1053</b>	<b>11645</b>	<b>—</b>	<b>10.66</b>	<b>—</b>

Table 10 Old House, Church Langley, Harlow: Pottery supply (Hadrianic-early Antonine)

*Fabrics and trade* (Table 10)

The pottery reaching Old House in the Hadrianic/early Antonine period exhibits a number of significant differences when compared with Chelmsford ceramic phase 3 (Going 1987, table 9), probably reflecting geographical location and differing trade links rather than status. In this period pottery supply is dominated by a range of presumably locally made Fine and Sandy grey wares derived from a number of unspecified sources, although Hadham is a strong possibility for much of this material. Sandy grey wares account for fewer than 29% of the assemblage while Fine grey wares represent about 25% measured by weight. Storage jar fabrics are also strongly represented and account for just over 11%. Black-surfaced or Romanising grey wares are poorly represented and account for less than 1%. At Chelmsford, while Sandy grey wares dominate the assemblage, Fine grey wares are of much less importance and form

only a relatively minor assemblage component. Furthermore, Black-surfaced wares are also more important compared with Old House. This implies much weaker links with the Colchester/Ardleigh region at Old House compared with Chelmsford.

While locally produced wares predominate, Romano-British traded wares are present only in small quantities but are derived from a variety of sources. The most common are Hadham grey wares (13%) followed by Verulamium region white wares (3%). At Chelmsford, Hadham grey wares are not present until the 4th century, while the volume of Verulamium region white wares is about half the total seen at Old House. Other traded wares include BB1, BB2, Colchester buff ware, and North Kent grey wares, but each of these fabrics account for less than 1% of the total assemblage. This is generally comparable with the situation at Chelmsford although Colchester buff ware is much better represented. The full range of Hadham wares present includes small quantities of Oxidised red wares and White-slipped wares, but again, each fabric represents less than 1%. At Chelmsford, Hadham oxidised red wares are not present until the 3rd century and then in only very small quantities until the 4th century, while Hadham white-slipped wares are very rare in late Roman horizons. It is notable that South Essex shell-tempered wares, which are presumably residual by this time, represent over 9% of the assemblage, while Grog-tempered pottery accounts for less than 1%. The poor showing of Colchester buff wares is further confirmation of the much weaker links with the Colchester/Ardleigh region at Old House compared with Chelmsford.

Small quantities of South-East English glazed ware and London-Essex stamped ware were also present. Both of these fabrics collectively represent well below 1% of the total assemblage. The London-Essex stamped ware is probably a Hadham product, while the glazed ware comes from an indefinite source. Imports are barely present but include minimal amounts of Dressel 20 amphorae from southern Spain and Central and East Gaulish samian. Residual south Gaulish samian was also present. This is also chiefly true of Chelmsford in this period, even if samian forms a much higher percentage of the total assemblage.

*Assemblage composition*

This period sees the advent of straight-sided bead-rimmed (B2/B4) and plain-rimmed (B1) dish types. The B2/B4 group is by far the most prevalent and occurs in a variety of fabrics, including BB1, BB2, Hadham grey ware, Fine grey ware and Sandy grey ware. B1 types were only recorded in Fine grey ware. These forms had replaced the platter as a class. A wide array of bowl forms was present, although most were represented by single examples only. Most were in samian and grey ware. Samian vessels comprised Central Gaulish f37s and the odd East Gaulish f31. The coarse ware types included bead-rimmed C23 with low carination, the shallow C4 with six-pronged stabbing on the flange and the shallow, convex-sided C2 with drooping flange. The most notable vessel was a London-Essex stamped ware deep bead-rimmed bowl with convex side-walls (C12). These vessels are usually Flavian in date and so residual in this group. Other types comprised a flanged segmental bowl that corresponds to Wilson (1972, fig. 108.323) in a miscellaneous oxidised red ware and a Verulamium region white ware segmental bowls with mid-body carination (C16). Mortaria were not present in this group.

The most important vessel class was the jar. A number of types first introduced in this period are present, including the everted G9, while types like the high shouldered G19 are being superseded by the oval bodied G23-4. Lid-seated grey ware jars (G5.4-5) are much in evidence as are the necked 'Braughing types' (G21) with their distinctive shoulder rilling. These vessels were mainly present in Sandy grey wares. The only storage jar types are the heavy bead-rimmed G44. Drinking vessels of any type are rare at Old House. Cup forms are restricted to Central Gaulish samian f33s with the odd residual South Gaulish f27. Flagons are almost exclusive to the Verulamium region and include large two-handled vessels (cf. Tyers 1983, fig. 2.31014) and smaller single handled ring-necked types (J3). The only other vessel class identified was a R7 type miniature in Hadham grey ware.

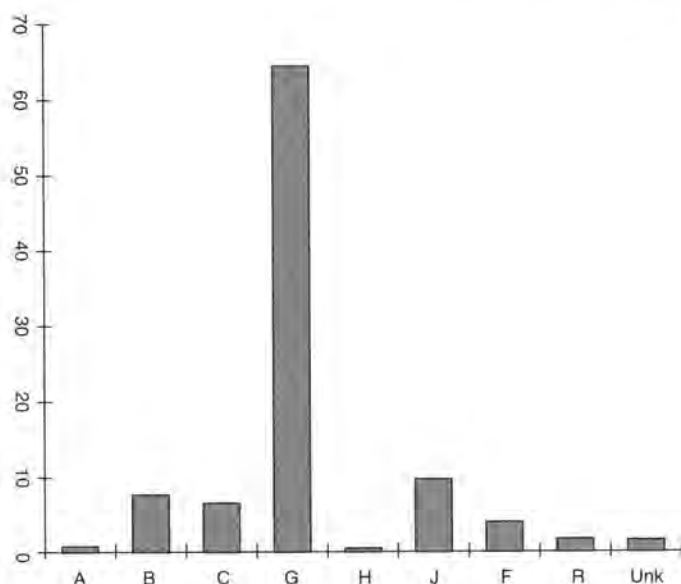


Fig. 11 Church Langley, Old House site: Roman potter assemblage composition

#### Period 4: Late 2nd to mid-3rd century

The array of fabrics reaching the site shows little overall difference to period 3. However, Nene Valley colour-coat is present for the first time, while the amount of Hadham oxidised red ware increases considerably. The main differences lie in assemblage composition, as the range of vessel forms now includes those typical of late Roman horizons. In mid 3rd-century contexts, straight-sided bead-rimmed dishes (B2/B4) occur alongside incipient bead and flanged types (B5). Lid-seated bowl-jars (E2) are current from the later 2nd century onwards, although lid-seated jar types (G5.4-5) are still arriving in the 3rd century. Both of these types occur in a range of grey ware fabrics. The range of jar forms shows considerable diversity, especially in Hadham fabrics. Handled jars corresponding to *Cam.* 290, and narrow-necked jars of *Cam.* 296 type occur in Hadham oxidised red ware. The range of beaker types includes folded Nene Valley colour-coat vessels (H33/35) as well as comparable vessels in Hadham grey ware. The only unusual form, a feeding-bottle or lamp-filler comes from a context of this date and is discussed in more detail below.

#### Period 5: Late 3rd to mid-4th century

Pottery supply from the 3rd to 4th centuries shows very little change, although this must be, in part at least, a reflection of the small size of the assemblages existing for study. The main differences again lie in assemblage composition. Fully bead and flanged dishes occur for the first time. It is present in a range of fabrics including Hadham oxidised red ware and a variety of grey wares. This form continues right to the end of the Roman period. Oxfordshire white ware mortaria are present for the first time beside small amounts of possible Mancetter-Hartshill vessels. The range of jar forms shows little alteration from the mid-3rd century.

#### Period 6: Later 4th century

While the presence of Late shell-tempered ware characterises many of the groups assigned to this period, it is notable that other typically late wares such as Portchester D, Alice Holt grey wares and Oxfordshire red colour-coat are absent. Late shell-tempered ware was produced at a number of kiln sites including Harrold, Bedfordshire and the Nene Valley. The only other vessel that is typically latest Roman is the bowl-jar associated with cremation F210. With so little material that is obviously of this period, nothing further can be said about pottery supply.

#### Concluding remarks

Occupation at Old House may be placed firmly in the period between the mid/late 1st and the later 4th century. The level of activity appears to have varied through time but there is a marked intensity of pottery deposition within periods 2-4. Moreover, it is also in this period that

the putative barn may be assigned even though the constituent features are associated with pottery of two quite distinct periods. After the mid-3rd century, if the level of pottery deposition is an accurate guide, the nature of the site changes. There is also a marked decline in the number of identifiable contexts. By the later 4th century, part of the site at least was used as a cemetery. The large number of jars present would suggest that occupation was largely of a domestic nature, while burials and ritual deposits are well attested on Romano-British rural domestic sites, in an age when beliefs and superstitions would have pervaded all aspects of daily life to a powerful extent. The proximity of the site to the Hadham industry kilns provides an ideal opportunity to study the distribution and dating of its products. These kilns appear to have been the site's principal supplier throughout. The evidence seems to indicate localised distribution of fabrics like Hadham oxidised red ware in the 2nd century that were not generally traded until the 3rd century.

#### Catalogue of illustrated pottery (Figs 12-13)

- 1 Nene Valley colour-coat (2) Base of a beaker in dull reddish-brown fabric with a patchy blue-grey slip. This is a typical early to mid 3rd-century type (cf. Howe *et al.* 1980; fig 3, no. 27 and fig. 4, no. 42) which contained a deposit of small animal bones (?fowl) suggesting that it may have been part of a ritual deposit. **F190; context 29.**
- 2 Hadham oxidised ware (4) base of a narrow-necked jar with slip and burnish in relatively good condition (cf. Going's Hadham corpus No. 177). New form. At Great Chesterford vessels of this type are found associated with 3rd and 4th-century pottery and were dated to the period after c.350 (Toller 1986; Fig. 15, No.101) The Harlow evidence indicates that this vessel belongs to the later 3rd-century+. **F206; context 185.**
- 3 Hadham oxidised ware (4) hemispherical bowl with straight neck and cordon (cf. Going's Hadham corpus No. 8). This vessel is almost complete although the base is missing. New form. **U/S; context 153.**
- 4 Hadham oxidised ware (34) handled bowl with frilled cordon under the rim (cf. Going's Hadham corpus No. 324). At Great Chesterford this form was dated to the period after c.350 (Toller 1986). **F206; context 185.**
- 5 'London-Essex' stamped ware (19) bowl form C23.2 loosely based on samian form Drag. 30-31 decorated with alternating zones ring and rectangular block stamps. The vessel falls within Rodwell's Group 2C (1978; Fig. 7.6, No.31). At Chelmsford the form dates from the Flavian to the early 2nd century. **F190; context 191 and U/S (context 101).** Sherds from the same vessel but not linking.
- 6 Misc. oxidised red ware (21) bodysherd, possibly from a beaker, decorated with a diagonal linear stamp motif. **F211; context 208.**
- 7 Verulamium Region ware (26) Double-handled flagon in orange fabric coated in a white slip (cf. Tyers' Verulamium Region corpus No. 31014) 2nd century. **F211; context 208.**
- 8 Hadham grey ware (36) jar with short narrow neck and zone of acute-angled lattice within unburnished zone. Traces of self-slip running on interior surface, exterior lightly burnished. Distorted, possibly a second or a ?waster, New form. **F211, contexts 138 and 195.**
- 9 Hadham grey ware (36) necked jar. Self-slipped fabric with traces of slip running on interior surface. Exterior surface has light all-over horizontal burnishing (Going's Hadham corpus No.7). **F198; context 200.**
- 10 Hadham grey ware (36) Carinated necked jar with faint cordon marking the point where the shoulder meets the neck. Self-slipped and light all-over burnish on exterior surface (Going's Hadham corpus No. 2). **F211; context 195.**
- 11 Hadham grey ware (36) Type R7 miniature (Going's Hadham corpus No.64), new variation. A very fragmentary vessel, composed of small, slightly sherds. Part of a base and sherds from the lower body of this vessel, abraded but not joining, were present in the same context. **F190; context 129.**
- 12 Hadham grey ware (36) Type B5. I dish with grooved rim or minimal incipient flange. **F206; context 185.**
- 13 Fine grey ware (39) Plain carinated necked jar with the

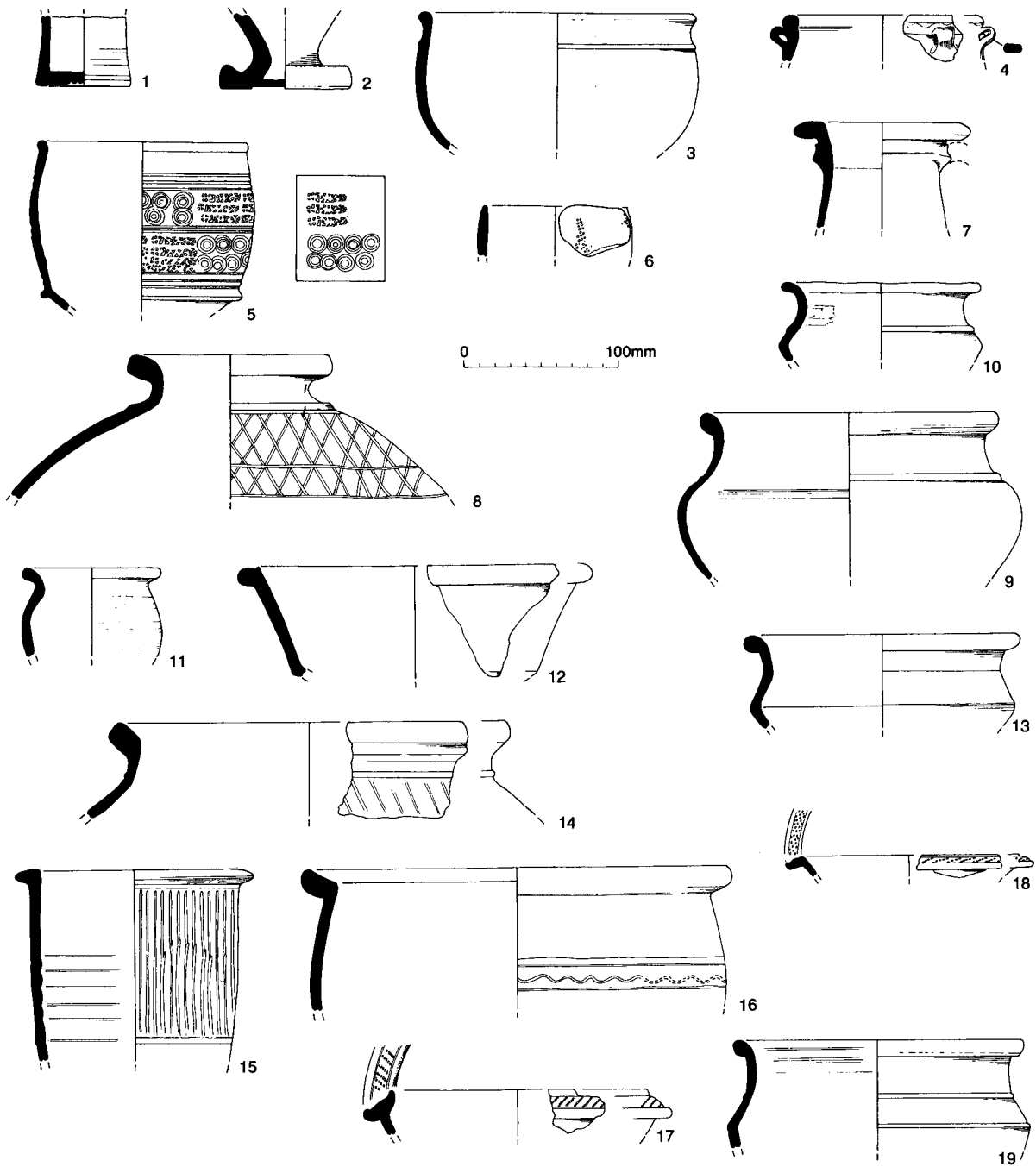


Fig.12 Church Langley. Old House site: Roman pottery (1-19)

characteristic 'straight' neck profile that is a feature of many of the vessels of this form at Harlow. **U/S (context 101).**

- 14 Fine grey ware (39) Necked jar or bowl-jar with traces of acute lattice below cordon. Abraded. **F206; context 185.**
- 15 Fine grey ware (39) Bowl with vertical burnishing. New form (cf Young 1977; Type R57). Another sherd (not illustrated; context 195), from this vessel but not linking, appears to have broken off just above a lower body carination. **F211; contexts 195 and 208 and F202; context 201.**
- 16 Fine grey ware (39) Bowl-jar form E2.3 with lightly burnished zone immediately below rim followed by an unburnished zone containing decoration consisting of a single wavy line set between a horizontal line above and below. The scheme is set entirely within the unburnished area. At Chelmsford this form is dated late 2nd to 4th century. **F206; context 185.**
- 17 Fine grey ware (39) Bowl form C4. 1 with drooping flange (cf Wilkinson and Clark 1985; Fig. 58, No. 109), black surface, and six-pronged decoration. Traces of soot blackening on the rim. At

Great Dunmow (Going and Ford 1988; Fig.56, Nos. 44-5) bowls of this type are dated Flavian to early 2nd century. **F198; context 200.**

- 18 Fine grey ware (39) Bowl form C2.2/1 with rouletted decoration on the rim. At Chelmsford this form is dated Flavian to early 2nd century. **F198; context 200.**
- 19 Fine grey ware (39) Necked jar with triangular rim, new form (cf Wilson 1984; Fig. 86, No.2106). At *Verulamium* this form belongs to the late 1st to early 2nd century. **F190; context 129.**
- 20 Fine grey ware (39) Bowl form C12.2 with ?compass inscribed decoration. The form is loosely based on samian form Drag. 30 and dates to the Trajanic/Hadrianic at Chelmsford. **Context 134.**
- 21 Romanising grey ware (45) New bowl form loosely resembling C2. 1 at Chelmsford (late 1st to early 2nd-century date range). **F243; context 183 and F220; context 184** (same vessel but not linking sherds).
- 22 Romanising grey ware (45) New bowl form. Abraded. **F206; context 185.**

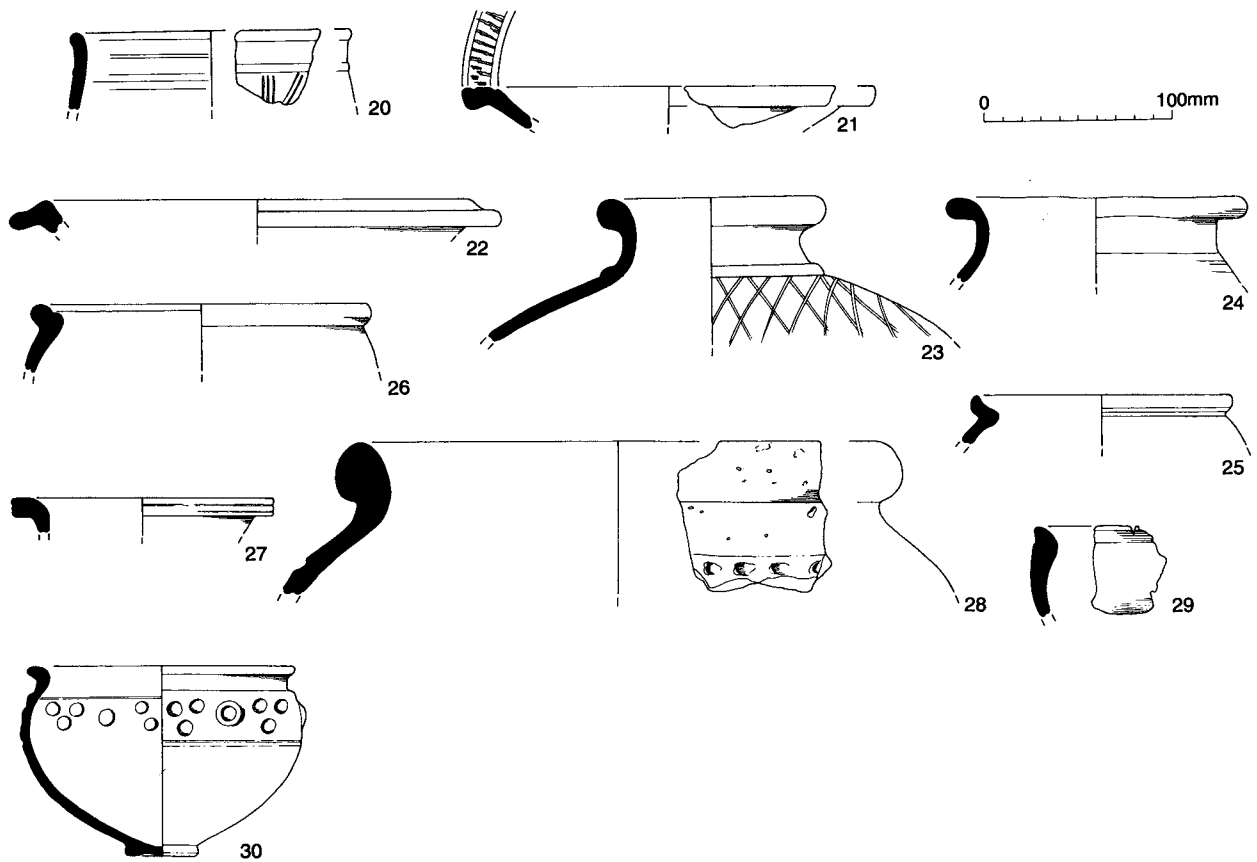


Fig.13 Church Langley. Old House site: Roman pottery (20–30)

- 23 Romanising grey ware (45) Narrow-necked jar form G36.2/1 with zone of acute lattice below a cordon. **F190; context 129.**
- 24 Sandy grey ware (47) Braughing type jar (G2 1) with faint rilling on the shoulder. The rim is slightly distorted suggesting a second. **F206; context 185.**
- 25 Sandy grey ware (47) Lid-seated jar form GS.4/1. **F211; context 195.**
- 26 Sandy grey ware (47) Lid-seated jar form GS.5/1. Similar jars were produced at Orsett 'Cock' (Rodwell 1974; fig. 7, nos. 28-34) and at Mucking (Type F). **F211; context 195.**
- 27 Sandy grey ware (47) Necked jar with squared rim. **F211; context 195.**
- 28 Storage jar fabric (44) Storage jar with stabbed decoration on the shoulder. **F206; context 185.**
- 29 Late shell-tempered ware (50) A jar or bowl form (cf Wilson 1972; fig 105, no.197). This is the main form in this fabric at Harlow. **F1 98; context 200.**
- 30 Fine grey ware (39) Bowl (CAM 338) with Romano-Saxon' style decoration consisting of a series of dimples arranged in alternate groups of three and one. The single dimple being slightly raised. Late 4th century. **F210; context 117.**

their function, and a summary of other published vessels, both in Britain and the continent. The most recent study of feeding-bottles is Webster (1981). This work, while taking a more analytical approach was, nonetheless confined to Samian vessels, but is of considerable importance as it provides a typology.

*The spouted beaker or feeding-bottle*

The spouted beaker or feeding-bottle (Fig. 14) is one of a number of unusual vessel forms found on Romano-British sites. It occurs in a wide range of fabrics, including samian (Webster 1981), but is most commonly a coarse-ware form with about 70 examples currently known to the author. Of these, 18 are known from Essex, including the Church Langley vessel. Most have been recorded at Colchester (May 1930, 250; Crummy 1993, 273), although at least two are known from Great Chesterford. Other examples are known from Dagenham (now Greater London) and Ugley Green (Martin 1997). The earliest study of feeding-bottles is Smith (1873). He provided a description of two vessels that had been recently presented to the Society of Antiquaries of Scotland, a discussion of the evidence for

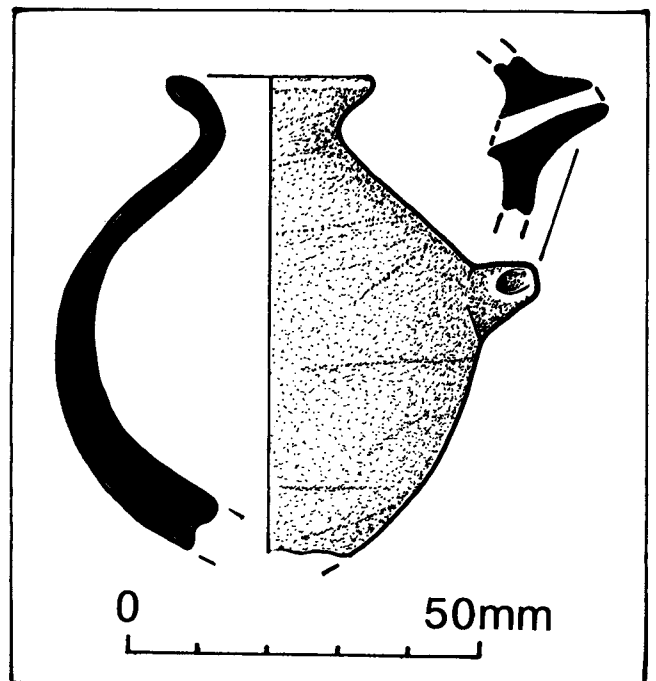


Fig. 14 Church Langley. Old House site: The 'feeding-bottle'

### Vessel form

While this is relatively rare vessel class, it nevertheless appears in a wide variety of shapes, sizes (although all are comparatively small compared with flagons, for example) and fabrics. Essentially there are a number common of distinguishing features: flat base, a bulbous or strongly carinated profile, and a characteristic narrow-bore spout, described variously as a 'nipple' or 'nozzle', which are universal. Considerable variation occurs at the rim, which can be either wide- or narrow-mouthed. Vessels may have tall narrow necks or one that is short and constricted. Neckless vessels are also known as are examples with (one or two) or without handles. The size and position of the spout also varies. Some are fairly long, while others are short and stubby, and it may be positioned high above the shoulder, or on the lower half of the body. The angle of the spout frequently points upwards at around 45 degrees, although examples are known where it is horizontal. The Church Langley vessel is most unusual in that it is not only hand-made but is also very small.

### Distribution

The spouted beaker or feeding-bottle is most commonly found on cemetery sites with large numbers recorded from the large suburban cemeteries at Chichester (Down and Rule 1971, fig. 5.21), Colchester (May 1930, 250; Crummy 1993, 273) and Welwyn, Hertfordshire (Rook 1973, nos 13, 15 and 86), for example. In Kent they have been recorded on a number of cemetery sites including Canterbury (Brent 1861, no. 15), Dover (Willson 1981, 243), Ospringe (Whiting, Hawley and May 1931, no. 542) and Preston (Dowker 1893, no. 24). Leaving aside Colchester, two cemeteries in Essex, Dagenham (P. Greenwood, pers. comm.) and Great Chesterford (Martin 1997), have also produced examples. Elsewhere they have also been recorded at Chester (Philpott 1991, 291), Lidington, Cambridgeshire (Kempe 1836) and Wall, Staffordshire (Hodgkinson 1930, 309).

While the form is well known on cemetery sites, its presence on rural and lower order settlements, like Church Langley, is a rarity. The few sites in this category to produce them include Chalk, Kent (Johnson 1972, fig. 10.52), Enfield, Middlesex (Webster 1977, type B), Portway, Gloucestershire (Rawes 1985, fig. 10) and Topsham, Devon (Holbrook and Bidwell 1991, fig. 74). The form is more common on military sites and has been recorded at Barcombe Hill, Northumberland (Woodfield 1966, Fig. 3), Chesterholm, Northumberland (Bidwell 1985, fig. 75.239), Mumrills, Stirlingshire (Gillam 1960, fig. 14.69), South Shields (Allason-Jones 1989, fig. 14) and Usk, Gwent (Darling 1977, Usk type 18), for example.

### Dating

The comparative rarity of these vessels means that their dating and chronology have not been established in detail. Some idea of their general date range can, however, be gleaned from a discussion of their known examples that are from dated contexts. The bulk of the dated vessels appear to fall into the early Roman period, i.e. 1st to 2nd century. There are, however, several examples that appear to be 3rd and 4th century, but these are rare. The Church Langley vessel came from a context that cannot be closely dated.

The earliest examples are, perhaps not surprisingly, from Colchester. However, these are from the Joslin Collection, which has become dispersed, making detailed reassessment of their dating based on associated objects problematical. Greene (1979, 95-6) nonetheless has identified a vessel in Central Gaulish glazed ware with 'freehand' decoration which was included in his corpus of pre-Flavian fine wares. On fabric grounds alone this vessel is securely dated to the Claudio-Neronian period. The Derby Racecourse vessel came from the stoke-hole of kiln 7 which Brassington (1980, 39) dated to the 1st century. However, this feature also contained BB1, and, moreover, is unlikely to have been open for any great length of time considering that it was situated within an industrial complex on the edge of a 'small town'. A date in the Hadrianic is more likely on balance. The example from Chalk, Kent, was recovered from a context dated c. 300 AD, but this vessel is very fragmentary - being represented by a spout only - and is, therefore more likely to be residual than of this date.

### Function

The suggestion that these vessels were feeding bottles is one with a

long pedigree. As far back as 1861, John Brent described a samian vessel recovered from Canterbury's St. Sepulchre Roman cemetery. This is the favoured function amongst medical historians (Fildes 1986). The finding of several vessels in what has been described as child burials, particularly at Colchester (May 1930, 250; Crummy 1993, 273), has led to them being identified as feeding bottles or *tettine*. This is the most favoured use for spouted beakers (Webster 1981). The glass versions (Isings Form 99) too have been thought of as feeding bottles; Isings (1957) however, thought that this use was impractical and even dangerous. Certainly, the spout of a glass vessel would have been too fragile to place into a small child's mouth even under the supervision of a vigilant nanny or mother! Use exclusively as child's feeding bottles can probably be discounted as several examples have been found in the graves of adults at Colchester (Crummy 1993, 271-2) and at Welwyn (Wells in Rook 1973, 19). The latter was considered to be that of an adult or adolescent. Indeed if these vessels were child's feeding bottles one would expect them to be very common in burial contexts. This, however, does not appear to be the case. Philpott (1991, 35) considered them to be too rare to be of any use for comparing cremation burial practices compared with jars, flagons, beakers and dishes.

A related, but alternative, function is that they may be invalid cups, with the narrow spout acting as a 'drip-feed'. This may be supported by the presence of several examples in the graves of adults and or adolescents. However, since these are recorded from cremation burials, there are few pathological indications surviving to indicate any invalidity. Even in inhumations, evidence for strokes would not survive. In the case of the glass vessels, the same problems outlined above regarding use as feeding bottles would also apply. Moreover the same applies to their rarity in burial contexts as it does regarding child's feeding bottles.

A function as lamp-fillers has also been proposed, although this has sometimes been discounted on the grounds that the very narrow spout would have inhibited the flow of liquid through a combination of surface tension and viscosity (Dannell 1987). An experiment by the author using a complete example from Great Chesterford has shown this to be untrue. Far from preventing regular flow, it actually regulates it. Indeed, this is perhaps a more likely function in view of the fact that even in the so called 'child's burial' at Colchester, a *terra cotta* lamp was also placed in the grave (May 1930, 252). However, no lamps were recovered from the Church Langley site and the form is rarely associated with lamps generally, even in graves. A number of vessels from Trier, Germany, have been described as *lampenfüller* (Goethert 1991, 202-14), but these are unlike the spouted vessels that are currently under investigation. Lamps are generally much more common in burials than *tettines*; if they were lamp fillers one would expect them to be commonly found in association with lamps.

Comparable glass vessels are still being made today, for use, as an oil or vinegar bottle; could the Roman vessels also have had a culinary use? It is the view of the author that, while it is not possible to rule out for definite any of the other proposed functions, their most likely use would have been in the kitchen or at the table. The fact that they are uncommon should suggest that they are very unlikely to be either child's feeding bottles/cups, invalid cups, or lamp-fillers.

### Conclusions

The study of unusual ceramic forms can add significant detail to our understanding of life, culture and customs in Roman Britain. Moreover, study of the distribution of these vessels can also bolster our understanding of Romanisation. The presence of this type of vessel at Church Langley is unexpected given the nature of the site. It nevertheless adds another dot on the distribution map that already shows a strong bias towards the south and south east of England. The general absence of this form from lower order and rural settlements should not allow us to fall into the trap of seeing this as evidence of cultural poverty among the inhabitants of these sites. It simply shows that these consumers seldom thought it necessary to acquire these vessels. The inhabitants of Church Langley were evidently exceptions to this rule.

**Miscellaneous Finds**

by R. Bartlett, Hilary Major, R. Tyrell, with contributions by Phil McMichael

This report summarises the objects from the 1991, 1993 and 1994 seasons of work on the Old House site and finds made by metal detector users in the neighbouring field in 1994 (catalogue in the archive).

*Coins*

Celtic

- |                                    |                    |
|------------------------------------|--------------------|
| 1. AV ? stater Gallo Belgic VA69/3 | OH91, A14, con.57  |
| 2. AR ? stater                     | OH91, Unstratified |
| 3. AE coin, Cunobelin M244         | OH91, Unstratified |
| 4. AE coin, Cunobelin M248         | OH91, Unstratified |
| 5. AE coin, Kentish VA 154/1       | OH91, Unstratified |

Roman (46 Roman coins were found, all are copper alloy and in fairly good condition, unless otherwise stated.)

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| 1. Early 2nd century (surface powdery).             | OH94 134 SF20.<br>Unstratified           |
| 2. 3rd century, minim.                              | OH94 112 SF17.<br>Ditch C188. Phase IIa. |
| 3. 3rd century.                                     | OH94 134 SF19.<br>Unstratified           |
| 4. Late 3rd, Rev. – genio? Radiate                  | OH94 181 SF25.<br>Unstratified.          |
| 5. Late 3rd-4th century, radiate (poor condition).  | OH94 181 SF24.<br>Unstratified.          |
| 6. c.313-330, Constantine with arch.                | OH94 181 SF23.<br>Unstratified.          |
| 7. First half of 4th century.                       | OH94 115 SF18. Pit C202. Phase I.        |
| 8. Early 4th century.                               | OH94 134 SF21.<br>Unstratified.          |
| 9. 4th century, Constantine, 'Soli Invicto Comiti'. | OH94 154 SF22.<br>Unstratified           |
| 10. Radiate.  | OH94 106 SF15.<br>Unstratified           |

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| 11. Radiate.                                | OH94 112 SF16.<br>Ditch C188. Phase IIa. |
| 12. 3 coins of Hadrian (117-138)            | OH91, unstratified                       |
| 13. 4 coins, 2nd century (illegible)        | OH91, unstratified                       |
| 14. Gallienus (253-268)                     | OH91, unstratified                       |
| 15. 4 radiates, 270-280s                    | OH91, unstratified                       |
| 16. Carausius (287-393)                     | OH91, unstratified                       |
| 17. 4 coins, Urbs Roma (330-337)            | OH91, unstratified                       |
| 18. 2 coins, Constantine (309-337)          | OH91, unstratified                       |
| 19. Constans (337-350)                      | OH91, unstratified                       |
| 20. Constantius (337-361)                   | OH91, unstratified                       |
| 21. 13 coins of House of Constantine (350s) | OH91, unstratified                       |
| 22. Valentinian (364-375)                   | OH91, unstratified                       |

**Medieval** (All are of silver)

- |   |                                   |
|---|-----------------------------------|
| 1. Penny of Henry VII, London mint              | Old House Field by metal-detector |
| 2. 4 short cross penny, illegible               | Old House Field by metal-detector |
| 3. Penny, long cross, folded in half, illegible | Old House Field by metal-detector |

*Copper Alloy* (Fig. 15)

- Cosmetic pestle, end looped (Jackson 1985, 180); D-shaped section. The loop is decorated with transverse and herringbone lines. In good condition. L 64mm. OH93 5 SF1. Gully B4 Phase IIb.
- Seal box lid, lozenge shaped, with a solid knob at each apex and hollow knobs at each side. It is decorated with alternate lozenges of yellow and pale green enamel (much of which is now missing). The date of these enamelled seal boxes is 2nd to 3rd century. OH94 129 SF26. Pit C190. Phase IIa.
- Hoop fragment, possibly a harness fitting, with a square plaque on outer face. This had four squares of enamel. The surviving one is light blue. Hoop dia: 60mm. Plaque; 14mm square. OH94 134 SF27. Unstratified.
- Colchester brooch, surface undecorated, condition fair. It has short side wings, apparently plain. The pin and most of the catch plate are missing, and the foot is distorted. L 68mm. Early 1st cent. AD. OH93 15 SF8. Ditch B14. Phase II.

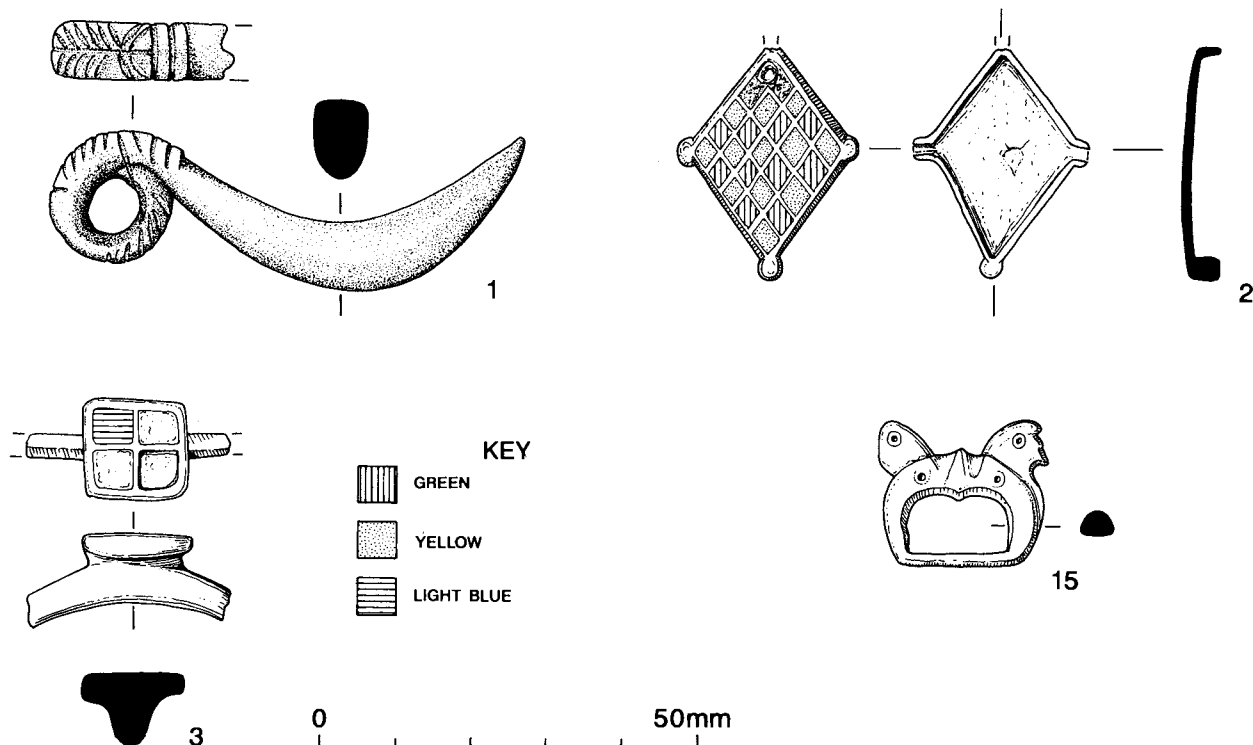


Fig. 15 Church Langley. Old House site: Copper-alloy finds



## PREHISTORIC, ROMAN AND POST-MEDIEVAL MATERIAL FROM HARLOW

- n. ill. Tweezers, in two pieces, and with a line down each edge. L 44mm. OH94 133 SF1. Unstratified.
- n. ill. Colchester-type brooch, Large example. Spring of 6 coils, pin missing, plain wings, high but flattened undecorated central ridge between deep marginal grooves down bow. One circular perforation in catch-plate (hook or lug?). OH91, unstratified.
- n.ill. Brooch spring of 6 coils with cord axis bar and pin extant but broken. Double perforated head lug on bow, small plain wings, narrow bow with central groove decorated with zig-zag pattern ends with three lightly incised cross grooves. Plain leg-foot ends in cross ridge and groove above well defined moulded foot-knob, catch-plate with large triangular perforation. OH91, unstratified.
- n. ill. Head stud brooch (Lamberton Moor), fixed head-loop type, small wings with 2 incised vertical grooves, lozenge triangular pattern down bow, enamel missing, moulded foot-knob with flat bottomed raised head stud with incised circle, doubtful if enamelled solid catchplate. Hattatt II – pg.103, No. 421, late 2nd century. OH91, unstratified.
- n. ill. Knee brooch, head and bow only, foot missing. Solid plain bow with raised ridge across top and bottom. Hattatt I pg. 115, No.92. OH91, unstratified.
- n. ill. Lozenge shaped plate-brooch. Top half missing, flat base plate with raised lozenge on it, hollow cylindrical central boss standing on two steps filled with decayed white enamel, knurling round edges of lozenge and second step. Back of brooch has a hemispherical lathe-turned hollow. Hattatt II pg. 157, No.568A. OH91, unstratified.
- n. ill. Colchester-type brooch. Two piece with springs of 8 turns with cord and axis bar extant but with pin missing, doubly perforated head-lug. Plain wings, zig-zag decoration on crest, raised central ridge between two marginal grooves down bow, large triangular perforation in catchplate. OH91, unstratified.
- n. ill. Foot only of Colchester-type brooch. OH91, unstratified.
- n. ill. Large example of Colchester-type brooch. Double perforated head-lug, spring, cord, axis bar and pin missing. Large wings decorated with three deep grooves. Plain crest reaching nearly halfway down bow on flattened central ridge with marginal grooves, elaborate perforations in catch-plate. OH91, unstratified
- n. ill. Dolphin brooch. Spring of 7 coils one side of central pin. Right-hand side has cast skewamorphic? Spring of 5+ coils broken, cord and axis bar extant. Large wings with moulded grooves and double ridges raised central ridge down bow, catch-plate broken off. OH91, unstratified.
- n. ill. Pin. Strip of rectangular section, incomplete, length 31mm. OH91, unstratified.
- n. ill. Ring. Finger-ring fragment with remains of setting for an intaglio. Length 12mm. OH91, unstratified.
- n. ill. Pin. Hair pin with tip missing, circular section reel, bead, spool and with flattened sphere. 3rd century. Length 67mm. OH91, unstratified.

Other objects not illustrated consist of a post-medieval four-hole button, a rivet, three sheet fragments, one tinned fragment and four unidentified objects. The button was found with Roman pottery in the fill of ditch C250; the remainder were unstratified.

### Shale

Fragment of shale bangle, with chamfered over edge. Length 17mm (OH91, A21).

### Iron Objects

There are 28 iron objects from the Old House excavations. If a bias can be detected in so small a sample then the identifiable object types tend towards the agricultural. The identifiable objects are listed below:-

- n. ill. Ox goad, Rees type II (1979, 76) L 28mm, diam. 12mm. OH94 185 SF10. Pit C206. Phase I.
- n. ill. Rectangular sectioned bar, incomplete with one end missing. Length 179mm, width 11mm, breadth 4mm. OH91
- n. ill. Blade fragment? The 'edge' may have a notch out of it. 38x25mm. OH94 187. Pit C198. Phase I.
- n. ill. Rectangular perforated plate, fragment with nail hole in one corner. Curved undersurface with mineralised wood surviving.

Length 48mm, width 39mm. OH91

- n. ill. D-shaped buckle with only the loop of the tongue surviving. L 30mm, W 28mm. OH93 15 SF7. Ditch B14. Phase II.
- n. ill. Handle, bar of rectangular section with splayed terminal, broken, perforated by nail hole. Possibly a loop-headed pin? Length 125mm, width (bar) 10mm, width (terminal) 25mm, cf. Manning 5137, p.144, pl.70. OH91
- n. ill. Pin, rectangular sectioned bar with loop head. Length 134mm. Width (bar) 10mm, width (head) 25mm. OH91
- n. ill. Fitting. Reinforcing strip with a sub-circular pierced plate at one end, and traces of probable similar plate at opposing end, cf. Manning, p.142, pl.69, 5128. Length 48mm, width 26mm. OH91.
- n. ill. Joiners Dog. One arm of joiner's dog, broken at base. Length 62mm, max. width 20mm. OH91
- n. ill. Ring of circular section, diam. 49mm. OH91
- n. ill. Ring or collar of rectangular section, diam. 56mm. OH91
- n. ill. Bucket handle mount, rectangular strap with looped terminal, most of strap missing, cf. Manning p.102, p.11, pl. 47, length 36mm, width 25mm. OH91
- n. ill. Large curved knife or pruning hook with square sectioned handle. Length 194mm, width 30mm max. (cf. Manning 1981, 57, pl.24.) OH91, F54

### Iron Nails

Nineteen nails were recovered, of which only six were complete. There is some doubt as to whether all the nails are contemporary with their contexts. The clasp nails are likely to be post-medieval (OH94 134 and 180 unstratified), and the horseshoe nail from OH94 134 certainly is. However, the most common nail types are undatable. All the nails were found around the possible building A.

### Slag

One fragment of lightweight, vesicular non-metallurgical slag. (18g). OH93 B9.

### Lead

Four fragments were found all in unstratified contexts. The objects were an oval fragment, a rough disc, an irregular scrap and a solidified puddle.

### Glass

Two fragments of pale green vessel glass were found in unstratified contexts

### Stone (Fig. 16)

The amount of millstone grit quern is notable. While there are only five fragments of lava quern there are nine of millstone grit. This stone was generally used from the late 2nd century onwards, although it can occur in earlier contexts.

4. Millstone grit quern. A re-used fragment of a quern lower stone. The edge of the central hole is present, but not the full diameter. The original grinding surface was probably pecked, but most of the pecking has been worn away, either by the original use, or by the re-use. There are two deep grooves (7mm deep) cut into the 'outer' edge of the quern, no doubt caused by tool sharpening, and two shallower grooves on the adjacent edge, which may have been smoothed after breakage. The underside is smooth, but undulating, and has probably been used as a rubbing or grinding stone. This stone has thus been used for three different purposes during its useful 'life'. Max. thickness 38mm, original diameter greater than 440mm. 1475g. OH94 185. Pit C206. Phase I.

In addition to the whetstone described below the excavations produced another fragment of sandstone whetstone, two fragments of shelly limestone with signs of working, a fragment of calcite and a quartzitic sandstone, from OH94 129 Pit C190 Phase IIa, with wear patterns suggesting its possible use as a rubbing stone. Detailed descriptions may be found in the archive.

5. Whetstone. Quartzitic sandstone, possibly greensand series. Sub-rectangular section, all surfaces smooth. L 123mm, section c 35 x 20mm. 180g. OH94 129. Pit C190 Phase IIa

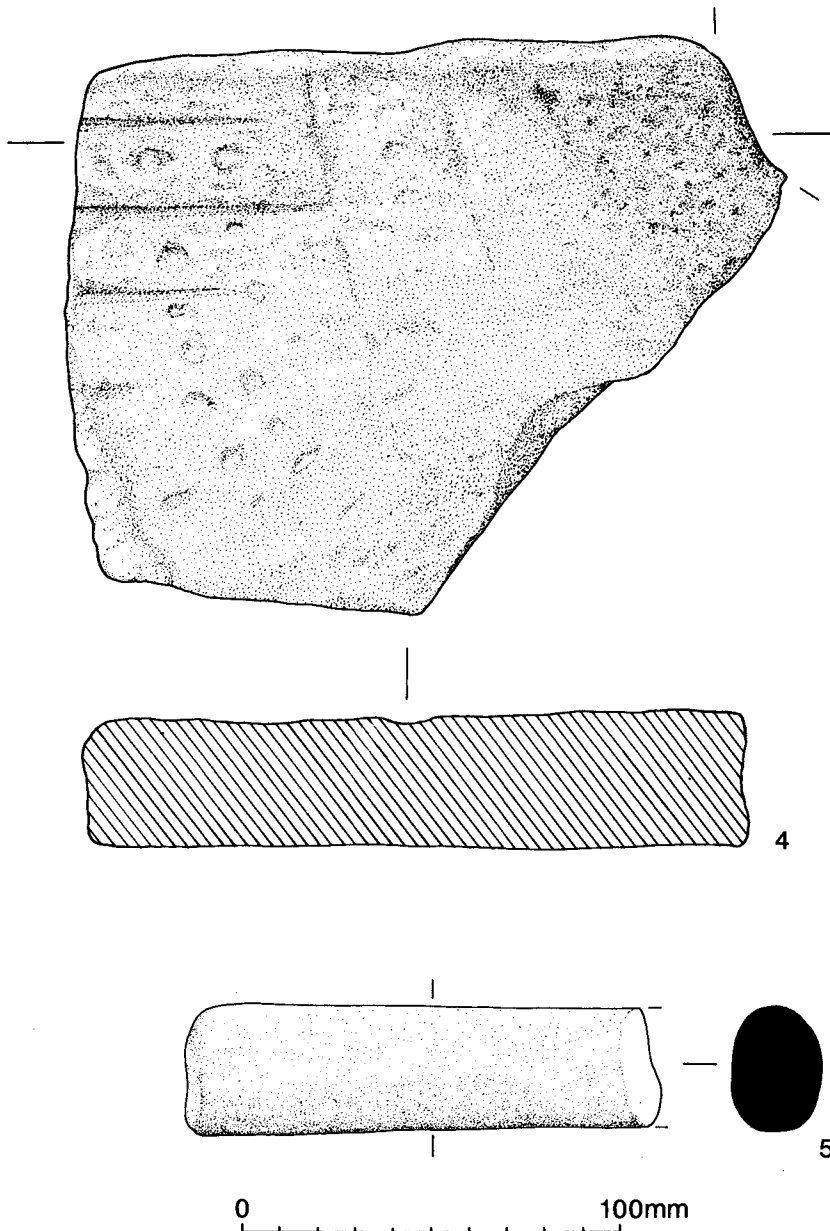


Fig. 16 Church Langley. Old House site: Stone finds

*Brick and tile*

A small amount of brick and tile was collected, a total of 105 sherds, weighing 5886g. The material, which included a small amount of post-Roman brick and tile, was recorded on standard ECC *pro formas*. The fabrics were not recorded in detail, but most sherds were shades of orange-brown, well fired, with sparse sand and sparse iron-rich flecks. Only two pieces were in noticeably different fabrics, an *imbrex* sherd from OH94 134 in a fabric containing finely crushed chalk, and a fragment from 200 in a buff fabric.

The material was predominantly very fragmented, a feature which can be due to the presence of fabrics which flake easily, but such fabrics were not present here. The average weight per sherd was only 58g, the lowest average weight recorded by the writer out of 12 Essex sites processed in recent years (Chelmsford Bath-house, CF20, had the highest average weight of 283g). Half of the material, by number, was spall, fragments with no full thickness. The excessive fragmentation suggests that the material reaching this site was not from a nearby building.

Two pieces of combed box flue tile came from OH91 17 and 22 (Fill of a depression A17 and fill of gully A21. Phase IIb). The piece from 22 is fairly unusual, as it is combed on a side with a cut-out.

*Baked Clay*

2.38kg were recovered from the site. Two fabrics, chalky and non-

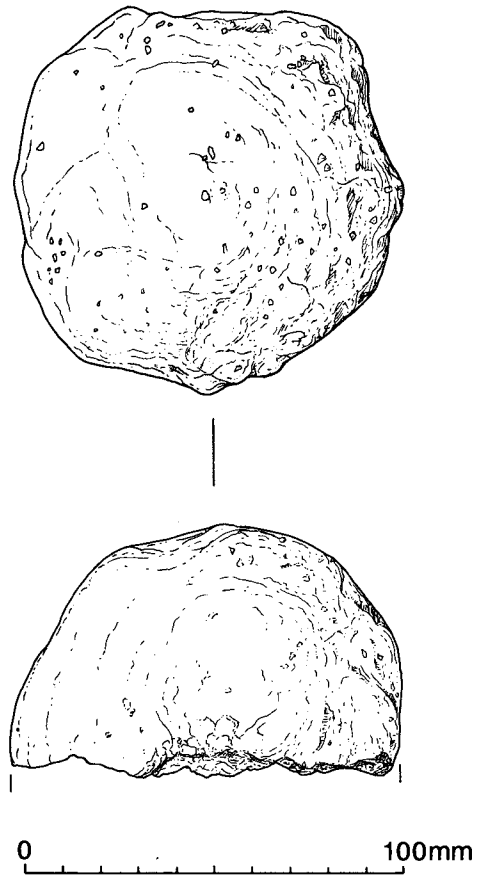


Fig. 17 Church Langley. Old House site: Baked clay finds

chalky, were found to be present. Some of the pieces have roughly flattened surfaces, but there are no wattle impressions. It is possible that the chalky baked clay is from structural daub, by comparison with other sites in N.W. Essex, whereas the baked clay from the mid to late 2nd-century corn drier/malting kiln (A30) is non-chalky and related to the function of the kiln.

*Baked Clay Objects (Fig. 17)*

The 1.639kg (47 fragments of at least six objects) of the Iron Age form of triangular loomweights were all in the chalky baked clay fabric.

6. A possible apex from a loomweight. The object is rather rounded for a triangular loomweight apex. It could perhaps be some other form – perhaps one of the rare Roman cylindrical loomweights with a rounded top. There is also the possibility that it is a Bronze Age type. OH91 104. Fill of ditch A211. Unstratified.

*Metal Detector Finds from Old House Field (Fig. 14)*

(All are copper alloy unless otherwise specified.)

*Roman*

n. ill. Colchester A brooch in poor condition. Spring, pin and foot missing. Tiberian-Neronian.

n. ill. Hod Hill brooch, in poor condition. Head and catchplate

## PREHISTORIC, ROMAN AND POST-MEDIEVAL MATERIAL FROM HARLOW

missing. For the general shape see Crummy 1983, 10, no. 23. The bow has a groove down the middle, with transverse lines either side, and probably transverse lines on the foot.

- n. ill. Decorative knife handle encasing the blade and tang of an iron knife. Both blade and tang largely missing. Decorated with two raised ridges net to the blade and a curved finger grip. At the tang end, the decoration is formed by a thickened square sectioned incised moulding, with a triangular pattern separated from the tang by a square washer, itself decorated by an incised lateral line.
15. Propeller belt-stiffener. The central roundel has a central ring-and-dot with a circle of nine ring-and-dots round it. The projections are perforated at the corners, have a line round the edge and a ring-and-dot in each corner. In Britain, this is a military type of the 4th century (Bishop and Coulston 1993, 173). L 38mm.
- n. ill. Buckle with zoomorphic (horse head) terminals each with ring/dot eye. Late 4th century AD (375+) (type in Evison 1961).

### Post Roman or Undated

- n. ill. Spectacle buckle. Rumbler bell. Two crude sheet discs. Rod fragment. Ring, with a groove round one face; possibly a weight. Vessel rim, probably from a dish; possibly Roman. Button or stud head; probably post-Roman. Unidentified fragment with traces of gilding. Strip fragment, distorted, with two lugs on side. Fragment from the corner of a moulded hollow object; possibly Roman. Lead alloy bale seal; post-medieval. Lead fragment. Lead shot.

### Animal Bone (OH91)

by J. Lovett

A total of 1961 bones were recovered by hand-excavation from the 1991 excavations. Due to the movement of heavy plant on the site and the fragile nature of the bone, c. 20% of the sample was derived from modern breakage. The material has been divided into identifiable (both species and element) and unidentifiable (Table 9).

Period	Identifiable	Unidentifiable	Ribs
Iron Age	6	6	1
Roman	693	1181	74
<b>Total</b>	<b>699</b>	<b>1187</b>	<b>75</b>

Table 9 Calculations of population size have been compiled using the Total Fragment method; for sheep read sheep/goat.

### The Iron Age sample

The Iron Age material came from one context only (Ditch A14, fill 16).

Specis	Total Fragments	Element	Age by fusion
Cattle	2	Humerus P	<3.5-4Y
		Tibia D	>2-2.5Y
Sheep	2	Tibia S	-
		Tooth	-
Horse	2	Scapula D	>1Y
		Tooth	-

Table 10 MNI, representation of elements and epiphyseal fusion ages for the Iron Age animal bone.

### The Roman sample

Specis	Total Fragments
Cattle	353
Sheep	121
Dog	97
Red Deer	79
Horse	25
Pig	18

Table 11 Species identified for the Roman animal bone

Cattle is the best represented species, followed by sheep, whilst pig is very poorly represented and presumably did not play a large role in the site's economy. Horse represents about 4% of the total, which although low is not abnormal for Romano-British sites. Dog is well represented, but this primarily because 91 of the 97 dog bones came from a dog burial in pit F28, which appears to have contained two adult dogs.

The only wild source of food is the red deer. The proportion of this species is relatively high due to the fragmentation of the antler in context 71 (Ditch A70). One of the antlers was at stage E/5 (10 points) of growth with a bez tine which had been partially sawn and then snapped way. Similarly the trez tine of a second antler had been sawn off, and the crown of a third, of the more developed stage of F/6 (12 points) had been completely sawn away. There was one shed antler fragment in the sample (pit fill 20), which also produced a portion of a main branch which had evidence of the sawing at the intersection with the lower tine. The evidence certainly points to antler-working.

A broad range of elements are present with regard to cattle and sheep, including waste (such as skull and phalanges) and prime meat elements (humerus and pelvis), suggesting that the animals were butchered on site. Evidence of butchery was discovered on 14 cattle elements, taking the form of breakage with a blunt instrument on elements such as the scapula and pelvis, as well as sharp cut marks associated with skinning and flensing, two elements had been chopped and one long bone split for marrow extraction. There were only three examples of gnawing.

The age range of the species represented suggest that the cattle were largely mature animals, with only 14% being immature. Amongst the sheep there is a more equal proportion of immature and mature animals, suggesting that meat and wool production were equally important in the sites economy. The pig sample comprised largely immature animals, and were kept for meat production.

### Animal Bone Report (OH94)

by Alec Wade

The 1994 excavations produced 1187 pieces of animal and bird bone weighing 12.61 kg. All the material was recovered by hand and was in fair condition.

Identification	No. of Pieces	Weight (kg)
Identified	350	7.619
Unidentified	837	4.987
<b>Total</b>	<b>1187</b>	<b>12.606</b>

Table 12 Identification of assemblage by number of pieces and weight (g).

Over 35% of the bone (419 pieces) could not be attributed to a datable phase. The remaining material all came from Roman contexts. The division of the assemblage is shown by the following table, along with the number of bone fragments which had been cut, dog gnawed or burnt in each group.

Site Phase	Period	No. of Pieces	No. Cut*	No. Gnawed	No. Burnt	Weight (kg)
Unphased	-	419	21	4	4	5.157
1	Period 2 Early Roman	9	0	0	0	0.146
1	Period 3 Mid 2nd century	311	2	2	5	3.819
2	Period 4 Late 2nd to mid 3rd century	428	13	4	1	3.484
	<b>Total</b>	<b>1187</b>	<b>36</b>	<b>10</b>	<b>10</b>	<b>12.606</b>

\*Includes both butchered and worked material.

Table 13 Division of the Assemblage by Phase or Period, Number of Pieces and Weight (g).

Most of the bone came from mid 2nd-century contexts (period 3) to the mid third century (period 4). Certain factors (such as dog gnawing and recovery by hand) will have biased the assemblage in favour of the larger species; smaller species are thus under-represented. The following table shows the composition by species, number of pieces, weight in grams and period.

As with the OH91 assemblage, cattle bone was the most common, followed by sheep/goat. Other domestic species included chicken, dog, horse and pig. The minimum number of individual animals represented by the assemblage is 1 in each site period except for cattle in phase 1 period 3 (mid 2nd century) where it was 2. This is based upon skeletal element, side of body and epiphysis fusion state.

Only ten bones displayed signs of gnawing by dogs, less than 1% of the assemblage. Excluding those from undated features most were recovered from late 2nd to mid 3rd-century contexts.

Also in common with the OH91 assemblage, red deer was the only wild species positively identified, with most of a shed antler, indicating the presence of nearby woodland in the historic environment. The remaining unidentified bone included large sized (typically cattle, horse and the larger deer breeds such as red deer) and medium sized mammal bone (mainly sheep and goat).

Evidence of antler working and a tool or object was found in pit C206, dating to the late 2nd to mid 3rd centuries AD. The tool/object consisted of 6 joining fragments, which together formed most of a shed 10 point left red deer antler. Red deer commonly shed their antlers in early spring or summer. The brow and bez tines were present along with most of the adjoining beam which had been worn smooth along its back edge by frequent handling. Other than the existing breaks there was no obvious sign of repetitive percussion damage to either of the tines which would have suggested that the object had been used in a pick-like fashion. This absence of use-related damage contrasted with the smooth and worn appearance of the main beam may suggest the object had some other significance or function, perhaps ritual. Seven other pieces of antler bore saw marks including one which had had two elliptical sections of antler cut from it by slicing pieces from the curved outside edge of the beam fragments arc.

Two pieces of bone also displayed evidence of working; both were from unphased contexts. A small piece of large mammal limb bone had been carved into a flattened rectangular shape measuring 21mm by 12mm (context C133). The other piece (context C134) was the distal end of a horse tibia which had been cut flat on its anterior and posterior faces as well as horizontally through the joint. Marks up the anterior face may be score lines indicating intended working.

Twenty seven other fragments had cut marks resulting from butchery. Most were from undated features but 6 were from late 2nd

to mid 3rd-century AD contexts. These were mainly cattle or large mammal bones and included both prime meat elements and waste.

Two deposits of bone may have ritual significance and are worthy of further note. Post hole (C190) was located near several cremations and contained a trimmed vessel base into which the bones of a chicken were placed. Pit C206, in addition to the worked red deer antler fragments and the near complete antler object or tool described above also contained the articulated vertebrae of a young adult dog and several elements belonging to the rear legs of a sheep or goat. The pit also contained cattle, horse and pig bone.

#### Human bone

One fragment of the diaphysis of a human humerus was discovered from the Roman top fill (context 15) of Iron Age ditch A14. Large fragments of a human infant's cranium (estimated between 2.5-4 years of age) were found in ditch A42.

A group of four cremations was identified (C210, C219, C228 and C230). The burnt bone identified in the features was too fragmentary to determine whether it was animal or human, although the latter is more probable.

## Discussion

### Prehistoric

The earliest find from the Old House site was part of a Palaeolithic hand-axe. However there is no evidence that the site was in regular use or cultivation until the late pre-Roman Iron Age, although the small number of residual worked flint objects recovered hint at earlier utilisation of the area.

The buried natural stream (C160) seems to have partly dictated the alignment of the Late Iron Age and Roman field system. It was a small tributary of a larger brook that drains northwards into the River Stort from the high ground near Foster Street.

Three ditches (B1, A7 and A14) produced Late Iron Age pottery, but it is clear that these features continued in use into the early Roman period. Ditch A7, which was in use from the Late Iron Age until the 2nd-century A.D., was aligned perpendicular to the stream, on a

Species	Early Roman	Mid 2nd Century	Late 2nd to mid 3rd Century	Unphased	Species Total
<b>Domestic</b>					
Cattle	6 @ 87g	85 @ 1643g	12 @ 2557g	63 @ 2557g	166 @ 5081g
Chicken	0	11 @ 5g	0	0	11 @ 5g
Dog	0	1 @ 7g	26 @ 142g	3 @ 22g	30 @ 171g
Horse	0	5 @ 295g	1 @ 152g	6 @ 408g	12 @ 855g
Sheep or Goat	0	10 @ 72g	40 @ 206g	36 @ 245g	86 @ 523g
Pig	0	1 @ 2g	3 @ 16g	3 @ 28g	7 @ 46g
<b>Wild</b>					
Bird (indeterminate species)	0	1 @ 2g	0	2 @ 4g	3 @ 6g
Deer (indeterminate species)	0	0	7 @ 60g	0	7 @ 60g
Red Deer	0	0	38 @ 939g	0	38 @ 939g
<b>Unidentified</b>					
Large sized mammal	3 @ 60g	158 @ 1571g	118 @ 937g	168 @ 1561g	447 @ 4129g
Medium sized mammal	0	19 @ 87g	55 @ 118g	34 @ 82g	108 @ 287g
Unidentified	0	40 @ 135g	128 @ 120g	104 @ 249g	272 @ 504g
<b>Period Total</b>	<b>9 @ 147g</b>	<b>331 @ 3819g</b>	<b>428 @ 3484g</b>	<b>419 @ 5156g</b>	<b>1187 @ 12606g</b>

Table 14: Division of the Assemblage by Phase or Period, Species, Number of Pieces, and Weight (g).

north-west to south-east alignment, suggesting that the local Roman field system evolved from an Iron Age or earlier precursor

#### *Roman settlement*

Fieldwalking finds in the vicinity of Old House Wood included large quantities of fine imported pottery, metalwork and roof tiles, suggesting that the excavated features comprised the ancillary buildings, paddocks and part of the burial site of a wealthy Romanised farmstead or villa. The settlement was occupied from the mid-first to late 4th or 5th century A.D and included large, Romanised buildings (i.e. building A) from the early 2nd century at the latest. A second dense concentration of fieldwalking finds at the north end of the same field may represent either a group of subsidiary buildings or a separate farmstead.

The major north-south modern boundary and trackway to the west of the site, known as Langley Lane, may be of Roman or earlier origin. It existed at least as early as the late 13th century, when it formed a locally important route linking the church at Old Harlow with Foster Street, taking in the medieval farm sites of Hubbards Hall and Old House en route (Fisher 1939). The section of the track linking Old House with Hubbards Hall no longer exists, but early maps of the Hubbards Hall estate show the track crossing the fields attached to Old House along an east-west aligned field boundary. However, this is certainly a later diversion, post-dating a realignment of the field system at some time after the 4th century. The distribution of fieldwalking finds indicates that there may have been a Roman trackway which took a more direct route, running parallel to and c.150m north-west of the buried stream channel (C161). The 2nd-century Roman barn seems to have been sited to allow access onto this postulated trackway. The boundary also runs parallel to the Late Iron Age/ early Roman ditches B1 and A14, indicating that it may have been in existence before the Roman conquest.

Building A was probably built in the early 2nd century and was certainly demolished by the mid-2nd century. The open-sided north-east end is reminiscent of a modern Dutch barn, and suggests an agricultural function. Although no close parallels for the open-sided north-east end of the barn have been identified, several British examples of partially open agricultural buildings of Roman date are known or suspected (Morris 1979). A building at Great Casterton (Leicestershire), which was interpreted as a cart shed, may have been similar to a Dutch barn in its first phase. In a later phase, the same building had one side left open for 5.8m of its 10m length. At Brading (Isle of Wight), a large aisled building had one side walled and two sides in which the post-bases seem to have been free-standing, suggesting a hay barn or shelter shed.

There was no evidence for aisle posts supporting the roof of building A, although this was the normal construction method used in Roman buildings of comparable proportions, or even of a central line of

ridge posts, but it is difficult to see how such a wide roof span (10.3m) could otherwise be supported. Morris's survey of Roman agricultural buildings (Morris 1979) suggests an upper limit of 8 – 8.5m for a single span building. However the nave of an aisled building forming part of the Rivenhall villa in Essex was 10.1m wide, and the suggested upper limit for a ridge post building is 11.84m (based on a possible reconstruction of a longhouse at Iwerne, Dorset). It is possible that a central line of ridge posts existed in the building, dividing it into three equal bays. If this is the case, two of the internal posts would have been obliterated by the later 2nd-century boundary ditches (C188, C211), and one would lie outside the excavated area. An alternative possibility is that posts were supported on pad-stones, which would leave no archaeological trace. However, the massive scale of the cill-beam trenches indicate that the outer walls carried most of the weight of the structure. The fieldwalking plot in the area of the building showed a tight concentration of Roman pottery, but had a much lower proportion of tile than the other two fieldwalking sites, indicating that the building was thatched, or that its roof-tiles were removed intact for re-use.

The open-sided north-east section of the building would have been suitable for a number of activities connected with agricultural production and crop processing. It included a roughly square area of compacted gravel which would have provided a firm, well-drained access route into the enclosed part of the building and may well have served as a threshing floor. The slightly sunken level of the floor may support this interpretation, since purpose-built threshing floors, where they can be identified, are often cut at a lower level than the natural ground surface or have a curb, presumably to prevent grain from escaping during the threshing process (Morris 1979). The shelter could equally have been used for storing hay.

Access to the solid-walled section of the barn was via a doorway situated under the open sheltered section. The door, which was situated in the north-east corner of the solid-walled section, was c.3.5m wide and therefore capable of accommodating large wagons or livestock. However, Roman agricultural writers such as Vitruvius favour open-sided shelters for livestock accommodation. In addition, the possible identification of the gravel surface as a threshing floor suggests that grain storage may have been the primary function of the solid-walled section. It may be significant that the barn is situated to the north of the presumed main settlement site, a location favoured by classical writers for granaries (Morris 1979). There was no evidence for a raised floor, but the cill-beams would certainly have been of sufficient size to support one.

Close comparisons are difficult to identify, largely because Roman timber buildings on this scale have rarely been excavated except on military sites. The size of the structure is certainly comparable with that of timber granaries of military type, but lacks the characteristic post-in-slot construction of such

buildings. The size of the structure suggests that it was a collection and storage point for produce from a substantial estate, or perhaps from more than one land-holding. The latter possibility is raised by the location of the building midway between two probable Roman settlement sites (represented by fieldwalking concentrations of Roman tile). In addition, the north-east corner of the structure (C206) seems to have been an important reference point in the local boundary system after the demolition of the building, perhaps suggesting that the building itself had previously marked the boundary between two land-holdings.

The large size of the barn suggests that the settlements it served were producing a substantial agricultural surplus in the first half of the 2nd century. The demolition of the barn in the mid 2nd century, and the sub-division of the land beside the stream channel (C161) into small rectilinear fields in the later 2nd century, may indicate a shift in emphasis from arable to pastoral farming. The bone assemblage is dominated by cattle.

A single kiln of 'bowl furnace' type (Morris 1979) was identified immediately adjacent to the buried stream. It consisted of a long, shallow stoke hole and a somewhat deeper, squarish flue pit. Very little of the structure survived, either because it was made of sandstone blocks which were mostly robbed out at a later date, or because poorly baked clay was used, which has not survived. Kilns of this type are most commonly interpreted as corn-dryers or bakers ovens when found on rural settlement sites such as this. There is good justification for this at sites such as Star (Avon), where burnt barley was found scattered all around the end room of a small house in which such a kiln was situated (Branigan 1977), or Wendons Ambo (Essex) where a dumb-bell shaped furnace of the late 2nd century was associated with a slightly later oven containing corn (Hodder 1975). The latter example had a short flue and a tile-lined oven. However, kilns might have been used for any number of purposes without adaptation, particularly if they are of this simple type.

The proximity of the Old House kiln to the buried stream might indicate that it was used in a manufacturing process requiring a source of water, such as pottery-making, metal-working or malting. The latter explanation is the most likely, given that there were no obvious examples of pottery wasters or metal-working debris among the finds from the site. The presence of tanks associated with the kiln, in which to steep grain, would be an indication that malting was taking place. There were no obvious examples present, but the complex of pits on the opposite side of the stream could have had this function, as could the enigmatic rectangular pit identified 40m to the east (A63).

The construction date of the kiln is uncertain. If the pit complex on the opposite side of the stream is connected with it, a date in the 2nd century is possible. However, it is perhaps more likely that this area, being at a convenient stream-side location, was used for a variety of craft industries between the 2nd and 4th centuries

and that the kiln represents only one phase of that activity. The kiln itself was probably in use up until the late 4th century. Simple bowl and hearth kilns seem to have been in common use from the 1st to 4th century, though they, and the more complex types, become more common later in the period.

The curvilinear gullies enclosing the kiln are best interpreted as the foundations of a circular building or shelter, located beside the stream (C161) and used as a workshop. For at least part of that period the structure seems to have sheltered the kiln, though the gullies might equally represent some form of wind-break, or simply drainage features. Morris's survey of corn-dryers and other hearths indicates that the majority are found inside barns or, less often, houses. A minority have been found inside purpose-built structures, and in other cases there is no structural evidence at all (Morris 1979). Purpose-built shelters have usually been identified on very slight evidence. At Hambleden (Bucks), the evidence consisted of fragments of daub with wattle impressions, and the grouping of the many furnaces suggested that they were arranged inside buildings. At Flitwick (Beds), a structure with wattle and daub walls and a central roof support was indicated.

Other activities carried out in this vicinity may have involved the production of objects using antler. Fragmented parts of several antlers, some showing signs of working, were found in gully A70, adjacent to the kiln.

The Old House site was particularly rich in deposits of a suspected ritual nature. Two such deposits are associated with the phase IIc kiln and pit complex. The infant's skull found in the foundation gully of the kiln 'shelter', a 2nd-century context (A42), may represent a foundation deposit. Although only the skull was found, the fragile nature of infant bones suggests that the complete skeleton might originally have been present.

The burial of two dogs in a pit, accompanied by quernstone fragments and mid 3rd-century pottery, is also likely to be a ritual deposit, rather than a rubbish pit or a pet burial. The position of the burial between the kiln and the pit complex, on the edge of the stream (C161), suggests that it may be associated with the domestic/industrial activity carried out there. The mid 3rd-century date of the accompanying pottery agrees closely with the date of back-filling of one of the gullies comprising the kiln shelter (44), perhaps indicating that the burial was a termination rite. A possible parallel may be the pottery factory at Upchurch, in Kent, where rows of puppies were buried in pots across the site when it was abandoned in the late 2nd century (Hutton 1991). However, the kiln flue contained later 4th-century pottery, suggesting a somewhat later date for the end of this activity. There are numerous examples of dog burials in Romano-Celtic ritual contexts, both in Britain and on the continent, associated with the back-filling of boundary ditches and the abandonment of sites, accompanying human burials or included in building foundations. They occur in pits, wells or ritual shafts on their own or, more commonly, in pairs, sometimes

whole and sometimes dismembered, a practice possibly reflecting the mythological connection of dogs with entrances to the underworld. For example at Southwark, 2 dogs were placed together in a well, and at Godmanchester, several pits each contained a pair of dogs (Hutton 1991). Pre-Roman examples of animal burials, such as the dogs and other animals buried in storage pits at Danebury Camp (Hampshire) in the Early Iron Age, may indicate that such Romano-Celtic religious or superstitious practises represent a synthesis of classical and pre-Roman Iron Age beliefs (Cunliffe 1986; Green 1986).

Two deliberately placed animal bone deposits were located close to the cremation cemetery. A deposit of chicken bones, placed in a trimmed vessel base in the early to mid 3rd-century date and inserted into the top fill of post hole (C190), lay within 15m of all four of the identified cremations and may therefore be associated with the cemetery.

A large post (C206) that had formed the eastern corner of the early 2nd-century Building A, was finally removed in the late 3rd or 4th century. A deposit, including the jawbone and articulated spinal column from a young dog, two pieces of worked red deer antler and large fragments of late 3rd to mid 4th-century pottery, was placed in the post pipe immediately after the post had been removed. The composition of this deposit is of great interest. Worked antler was also encountered in a gully associated with the kiln (70) and it has been suggested that it might be the waste product of some form of craft production. However, the occurrence of a complete antler in a ritual context may indicate some symbolic association. The widespread occurrence of dog burials in ritual contexts has been discussed above, but a parallel for the use of a spinal column from a dismembered dog is known from the Lankhills cemetery at Winchester, where coffin containing a handful of coins had the decapitated body of a young man placed over it, with the head at the knees and a coin in the mouth, and was accompanied by the complete skeleton of one dog and the backbone of a second with the ends bent over and tied together (Green 1986). The symbolic connection of the dog burials with death and the underworld seems inescapable in this case.

Post pit C206 seems to have occupied a nodal position in the later 2nd-century boundary system and remained in place until the mid 4th century or later. In this context the ritual deposit is likely to represent a rite of termination, marking the removal of a long-standing landmark that had acquired symbolic associations, perhaps because of its function as a boundary marker, but more likely as a result of its proximity to the late Roman cremation cemetery.

The cremation cemetery, from which four burials were identified, must have been established after the demolition of building A in the mid 2nd century. The chicken bone deposit inserted into post hole C190 in the mid 3rd century suggests that the cemetery may have been in use by that time. A date of establishment in the

later 2nd or early 3rd century, after the back-filling of the phase IIa ditches, is perhaps most likely.

Only one cremation was accompanied by grave goods: C210 contained a fragmentary bowl with 'Romano-Saxon' style decoration, indicating that the cemetery continued in use until at least the late 4th or early 5th century. Up until the mid 2nd century, the predominant burial practise in Essex was cremation. After this date there was a gradual movement towards inhumation, and by the later 3rd century, inhumation had largely superseded cremation. However, cremation did not die out altogether: at Kelvedon both forms of burial were practised concurrently from the late 2nd to 4th century (Rodwell 1988). The Old House example is only the second late 4th-century cremation to be associated with Romano-Saxon style pottery in Essex. The other, from Billericay, was contained in a jar with a colour-coated jar with rosette stamp decoration acting as a lid (Weller 1974). The origins of 'Romano-Saxon' style pottery have been much debated (Roberts 1982). It now seems likely that the origins of this style lie within a Romano-British context, rather than being inspired by a ceramic tradition brought from the continent by Germanic immigrants. The Harlow cremation is best viewed as a survival of earlier Romano-British burial practice in Essex, rather than as the beginning of a new practice.

The location of the cemetery may be significant. It is c. 65m north of the main settlement area, c. 25m east of the postulated Roman trackway following Langley Lane, and c. 20m west of post-pit C206, which appears to have been a boundary marker of some significance between the mid-2nd and mid 4th century+. This position suggests that the cemetery was placed on the boundary of the settlement area, along the line of the main trackway serving the site. This may be a rural variation of the practice observed in Roman towns of burying the dead outside the settlement area, normally along the line of the main approach roads (Drewett *et al.* 1988).

The cremation cemetery and the other ritual deposits from the Old House settlement, indicate that pagan Romano-Celtic beliefs were flourishing in the area in the late 4th century and probably into the early 5th century.

#### *Post-Roman settlement*

There was no evidence for Saxon activity on the site, and the documentary and the place-name evidence suggests that the Old House land went out of cultivation at some time between the end of the Roman period and the 13th century (Fisher 1939; Reaney 1935).

No features of definite medieval date were excavated but two north-south aligned field ditches (A129/B12, C168) are probably post-Roman and could be medieval. They are perpendicular to a post-medieval boundary c. 50m south of the site which appears to represent a diversion of the buried stream (C161). Perhaps the most likely context for this boundary realignment is the medieval clearance episode suggested

by the documentary evidence.

The absence of medieval features is difficult to explain, given the proximity of the site to the documented medieval and post-medieval Old House farmstead. A medieval fieldwalking concentration (Site 10) which coincided with the excavated area, proved not to reflect the presence of medieval features, unless they had been ploughed out, which seems unlikely given the survival of Roman features. Similarly, the documented site of the Old House farmstead produced the smallest fieldwalking concentration of medieval pottery (Site 9) out of the three medieval sites, but the largest concentration of Roman material (Site 6). Perhaps the most likely explanation for the close correlation between Roman and medieval sites is that traces of the Roman settlement survived as earthworks to influence the location of the medieval settlement activity.

## THE TESCO DEVELOPMENT

by Joanna Ecclestone

### Introduction

An evaluation by trial trenching (Figs 2 and 18, Trenches A-P) of the Tesco development site (TL 472 096) in June 1992 identified features of prehistoric, Roman and post-medieval date. As a result a watching brief was maintained during topsoil stripping over the two areas with the most intensive activity. Area A covered the location of a series of possible Late Bronze Age/Early Iron Age features, which may have been structural, and Area B investigated the environs of a pit containing post-medieval waste pottery and kiln furniture. The site is immediately adjacent to the Perry Springs Wood Site.

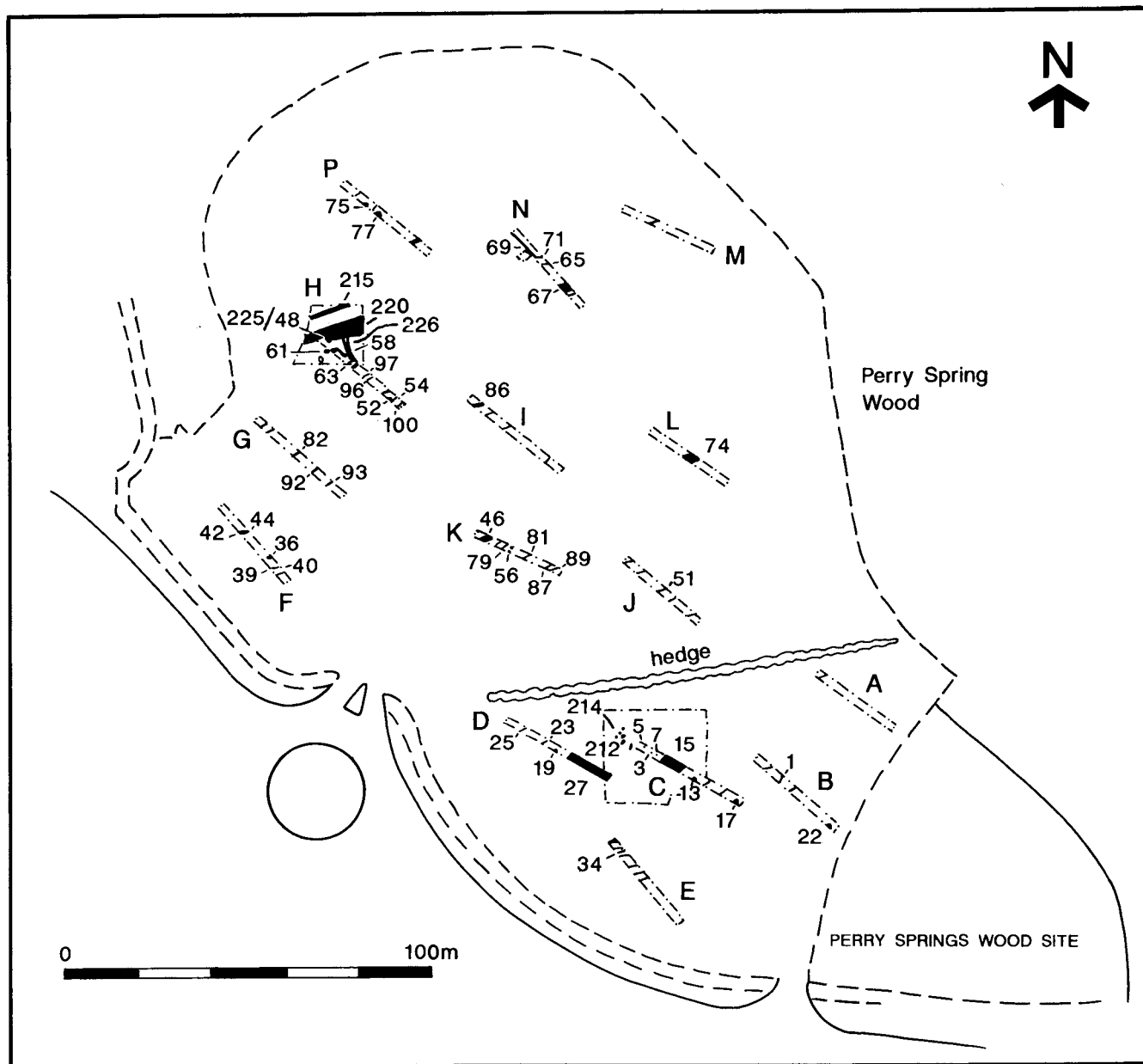


Fig. 18 Church Langley. Tesco site; overall site plan



## Geology and topography

The geology of this area consists of London Clay which is overlain with Anglian glaciation drift deposits. These consist of mixed areas of sand and gravel, and boulder clay which has a high level of chalk inclusions. The site sloped gently towards the south west, 77-73m OD.

## Excavation

### *The evaluation*

The results of the evaluation identified at least two, and possibly three, distinct phases of activity.

The first phase was of Late Bronze Age/Early Iron Age date with a scatter of post holes and pits across Trenches B (F22), C (F3, 5, 11, 13 and 17) and D marking the periphery of the Perry Springs Wood site immediately to the east. It was thought that the line of post holes in Trench C might represent part of a structure. The presence of worked flints and pottery of this date found in the fills of later features, though residual, as far away as Trenches I, J and K attest to activity beyond the area actually defined by the presence of cut features. Two apparent 'ring-ditches' (75 and 77) were located along the middle of the southern limit of excavation, apparently similar in nature to those excavated at Perry Springs Wood which were of Early Iron Age date.

A second, less definite phase was Roman in date. A scatter of Roman pottery and tile was noted in many of the trenches with a possible, albeit slight, concentration in Trenches C (F15) and D. Feature 15 may have in fact been two or more features dating to the prehistoric and Roman periods respectively, and the lack of material later than the Roman period may also suggest such a date for the large quarry-like feature, 27, in Trench D.

Although a scatter of medieval pottery was collected no features of this date were identified. However, the fieldwalking survey did identify a concentration of medieval material on the western side of the site, presumably derived from a medieval site nearby.

The third phase is post-medieval. The evaluation revealed a system of features aligned east-west, parallel to a well established hedge and ditch, which had obviously been a field boundary, and meeting the edge of Perry Springs Wood at right angles. This suggests that the positioning of these features has been influenced by the field boundaries. When the topography of the area is considered, it is clear that the features all run down hill away from the wood and toward Todd Brook. These roughly parallel, linear features may be the remains of a post-medieval field drainage system, possibly predating the use of ceramic pipes (with the exception of 67), intended to carry excess water off the clay subsoil towards Todd Brook.

The various features tentatively interpreted as pits of this date are difficult to interpret further as only the bases survived truncation by the plough. In trench H pit F48 (same as Watching-brief Area B F225), measured 1.05m in diameter and 0.47m deep. Its single, mid-brown silty clay fill yielded a total of 33kg of ceramic

material, including vitrified brick, saggars and abundant 17th-century pottery sherds. This feature was interpreted as the remains of a waster dump associated with nearby post-medieval pottery manufacture.

### *The watching brief*

Area A revealed a cluster of seven small post-holes, only one of which contained datable material (5 small sherds of Roman shelly ware).

The evidence from Area B suggests that this area was occupied agriculturally during the post-medieval period. The intercutting ditches would have formed a system of field boundaries and/or drainage systems. The various other features recorded are difficult to interpret. Because of the similarity between fill and surrounding natural their extent was in cases hard to ascertain, and their relatively sterile fills mean lack of information regarding use.

Feature 225, which produced a large assemblage of post-medieval kiln wasters, is unfortunately the most recent in the stratigraphical sequence (truncating a late 20th-century pipe-trench), being dug sometime in the second half of this century. Therefore the material within it constitutes a redeposited dump and cannot be interpreted as a reliable or complete assemblage. It is still of typological interest, however, and reflects the high level of activity in pottery manufacture in Harlow during this period, although probably not within the bounds of this site.

## Finds reports

### **The prehistoric pottery**

by N. Brown

Prehistoric pottery was found in a total of 8 contexts, concentrated in the south-eastern corner of the development area, in trenches B to D. All 23 sherds were coarse, flint-tempered wares, small in size and impossible to identify in terms of form. However, the fabrics indicate a Late Bronze Age/Early Iron Age date (1000-600BC).

Only three fills contain such material in secure enough contexts to directly date features; 14 and 17, the fills of truncated pits and 16, a large cut of undetermined size and nature. The Bronze Age pottery in pit fills 8 and 31, and in ditch fills 26, 59 and 85, would appear to be residual. It is probable that a light scatter of such material exists across the whole of the field and so it is understandable for some of it to find its way into features such as ditches or pits during silting or backfilling, especially at the south end of the evaluation area, just beyond which a Early Iron Age site is known to exist.

### *Prehistoric pottery from the watching brief*

One sherd of prehistoric pottery was found in feature 204.

### **The worked flint**

by M. Atkinson

The incidence of worked flint across the evaluated area was low, most of the material collected was from the topsoil, which indicates a light scatter across the surface. The majority of the unstratified material was waste flakes derived from tool manufacture, although two examples of retouched flakes and a blade have been identified.

A total of 23 pieces of worked flint were collected from 5 stratified contexts. 10 waste flakes were retrieved from context 16, the fill of a probable Late Bronze Age/Early Iron Age feature (15), and a blade

and 5 flakes from the base of feature 28. In context 29, the fill of a large quarry (27) in Trench D, and in ditch fills 60 and 73, the worked flint appears to be residual.

**The Roman pottery**

by Katherine Horsley

Almost all of the pottery dated to the Roman period seems to be either residual or intrusive, with a Samian sherd being retrieved from a mole drain (1), a fine grey ware sherd from a probable pit (58), along with part of a post-medieval horseshoe and another grey ware sherd from a prehistoric pit base (13). Only one context contained securely stratified Roman material (29), the upper fill of a probable quarry (27).

*Roman pottery from the watching brief*

Feature 205 produced five sherds of 4th-century Roman shelly ware.

**The medieval and post-medieval pottery**

by Helen Walker (Figs 19 and 20)

*Introduction*

A total of 1263 sherds weighing 33kg was excavated, comprising mainly redeposited material from a post-medieval kiln dump. Fragments from saggars form the main component of the assemblage and other finds comprise Metropolitan slipware, black-glazed ware, and post-medieval red earthenware. A small amount of other pottery, including medieval Harlow ware, was found. The published pottery includes all the material from the 1993 excavation (CLT93), and pottery from pit 48, dug the previous year (CLT92), the equivalent of CLT93 pit 225. A decorated sherd of intrinsic interest from the 1992

excavation is also published. The pottery has been recorded using Cunningham's typology (Cunningham 1985a, 1-4) and Brears' typology is used for black-glazed wares (Brears 1971, 37-9). The pottery present from each context is summarised on Table 15 giving sherd count by fabric and the total weight of pottery within each context. Even though no kiln was found and the main group is redeposited, this assemblage merits a fairly thorough investigation as so little Harlow material has been published. For this reason all fragments of any size have been illustrated and compared to the kiln material that has been published from the Potter Street area of Harlow (Newton and Bibbings 1960; Gaimster 1997).

*Contexts predating the kiln dump*

Ditch 228 (fills 229 and 230) produced only sandy orange ware (Fabric 21), this is a general category for any locally made quartz and-tempered oxidised fabric dating from the 13th to 16th centuries. Featured sandy orange ware sherds comprise a thumbled jug base from fill 229, and a slip-painted sherd from fill 230, along with a second sherd containing sparse chalk flecks as well as sand. These appear to be late medieval in date, belonging to the 14th to 16th centuries.

The fill of ditch 231 (context 232) produced small amounts of sandy orange ware including another sherd with sparse chalk inclusions. A second dull red sherd, tempered with moderate sub-rounded sands with a red or amber sheen, has been identified as medieval Harlow ware (see Walker 1991 and the Laundry Farm medieval pottery report in this publication for a discussion of Harlow ware). Also found were two very small black-glazed sherds showing an over-fired blistered glaze which may be intrusive.

*Pottery from kiln dump contexts*

Relatively large amounts of kiln material first appear in the sequence

Tr	Feature and type	Fill	Metropolitan Slipware	Black-glazed ware	PMRE	Saggars	Sandy orange ware	Medieval Harlow ware	Pre-kiln PMRE	English stoneware	Ironstone	Weight (g)
A	U/S 203	-			6							45
	U/S 204	-			13		1					86
	Ditch? 209	-		2	1				3			45
	Pit 212	21 1	3	8	8	59			4			2787
B	U/S202	-				2						396
	Topsoil 201	-	4	14	23	91	4		7			4070
	Topsoil 210	-	2	11	15	64	2		3			1692
	Topsoil 223	-	1	2	5	33			8		1	762
	Pit 225	22 4	11	42	33	170	3		9			5184
	Pit 48 (=225)	47	12	58	90	367						16924
	Ditch 220	21 9	3	2	7	37	3	2	1	1		619
	Ditch 231	23 2		2			2	1				6
	Ditch 228	22 9					4					92
	Ditch 228	23 0					2					9
	Ditch/drain 54	55			1							15
<b>Totals</b>			36	141	202	823	21	3	35	1	1	32732

Table 15 Quantification of pottery from the Tesco site by ware, context and sherd count

in ditch 220 (fill 219). Also found here is a sherd of English salt-glazed stoneware, dating from the late 17th century onwards. The remaining pottery, with the possible exception of that from F203 and F204, is nearly all kiln dump material. The greatest amount of kiln material was found redeposited in pit 225/48 at the top of the sequence, where sherds are relatively large and unabraded. Cross-fits between this feature, topsoil contexts 201, 210 and Trench A pit 212, indicate that probably all the material is part of the same dump which has been disturbed after deposition.

#### Metropolitan slipware

About 3% by sherd count of the total assemblage is Metropolitan slipware; this is a type of post-medieval red earthenware decorated with trailed white pipe clay designs and covered in a clear lead glaze, typically giving a bright ginger-brown surface and yellow slip decoration. As well as Harlow, it was also made at Stock and Loughton, in Essex (Cunningham 1985b, 83-8 and Ashdown 1970, 96-7). Metropolitan slipware is principally a 17th-century type, with importation into London and America reaching its peak in the mid 17th century (Jacqui Pearce pers. comm.; Noël Hume 1970). In addition, previous excavations at Harlow indicate the years c. 1635-70 to be the principal period of output (Gaimster 1997). However it appears Metropolitan slipware was made for local consumption over a much longer period of time, as Metropolitan slipware (perhaps from Stock) was reaching Chelmsford during the last decades of the 16th century (Cunningham 1985c, 64). Excavations at Chingford show that Metropolitan slipware was still current in the early 18th century (Ponsford 1991, 130).

Vessels found during this excavation comprise flanged-rim dishes (Nos 1-2), fragments from mugs or jugs (No. 3), one or two small strainers (Nos 4-5), and a bell-shaped fragment and ?associated finial (Nos 6a, b). Nos 4-6 are somewhat unusual vessel types.

- 1 Dish rim: Metropolitan slipware; orange fabric, partial grey core with thin red outer margin, darker surfaces; lustrous internal glaze with patches of glaze on exterior; part of slip-trailed pattern corresponds to Newton and Bibbings motif c. *Fill 224 (pit 225)*
- 2 Dish rim: Metropolitan slipware; Fabric as No.1; dull powdery internal glaze possibly a waster. *Fill 211 (pit 212)*
- 3 Base of jug or ovoid mug: Metropolitan slipware; red-brown fabric; slip-trailed decoration resembles writing, but closer inspection reveals the design is decorative; handle scar; lustrous, but slightly crazed ginger-brown glaze; patch of bubbled glaze just above base; glaze has also flowed on to underside of vessel; arc-shaped scar on underside where it has stuck to another vessel. Inside the base the glaze has pooled slightly at one side, suggesting that the jug was fired in a tilted position. *Fill 224 (pit 225)*
- 4 Pierced bowl: Metropolitan slipware; pierced with skewer-like tool; fabric orange throughout; slip-trailed decoration on outer and inner surface that curves around perforations (Newton and Bibbings motif g); the decoration does not show up well against the background of lustrous gingery glaze; rather small for a colander, similar sized strainers were made in Surrey-Hampshire white ware (Pearce 1992, fig.46.450-1). *Fill 47 (pit 48)*
- 5 Pierced bowl: Metropolitan slipware; similar to No.4; may be part of No.4 or as decoration is different may be from a second pierced bowl (part of Newton and Bibbings motif c). *Fill 224 (pit 225)*
- 6a, b Sherds of Metropolitan slipware; red-brown fabric where visible; slip-trailed pattern; lustrous all over glaze: a) Part of bell-shaped vessel; glaze covered scar at top with hole in centre; ?handed attachment scar just below top (not shown on drawing); b) Finial with attachment scar on underside, ?for attachment to the top of a) but sherds do not fit; perhaps from ornamental lid or cover. *Fill 47 (pit 48)*

#### Black-glazed ware

This is a type of post-medieval red earthenware with an all over glossy black glaze. Drinking vessels usually fired in saggars are the principal form, although jugs were also produced. Black-glazed ware is contemporary with Metropolitan slipware and was current by the early 17th century (Brears 1971, 37). It was also made at Stock and Loughton and elsewhere, most notably in the Midlands and Yorkshire.

Black-glazed ware accounts for 11% by sherd count of the total assemblage; unfortunately most of the pottery is very fragmented with only a few rim and handle fragments surviving. The rims are plain or slightly everted, sometimes with a slight carination about 2cm below the top, and are probably from tygs or mugs. Handles are oval (Smartie-shaped) in section, and the sides of vessels are often rilled. Bases are of thickened or pad type, these are quite robust and have survived well. Part of a jug was also found.

Base diameters vary between 60mm and 120mm; the smallest probably belong to tygs and the largest to cylindrical mugs. On the inside of several bases the glaze has collected at one side (e.g. No. 10); this effect was far more pronounced than on Metropolitan slipware vessel (No.3), and as well as indicating that vessels were fired in a tilted position, it shows an excessive amount of glaze was used. Glazing faults on black-glazed wares are common and glaze has often flowed on to the undersides of the bases leaving scars where the vessels have fused to kiln furniture or other vessels. Pitting of the glaze is also quite common.

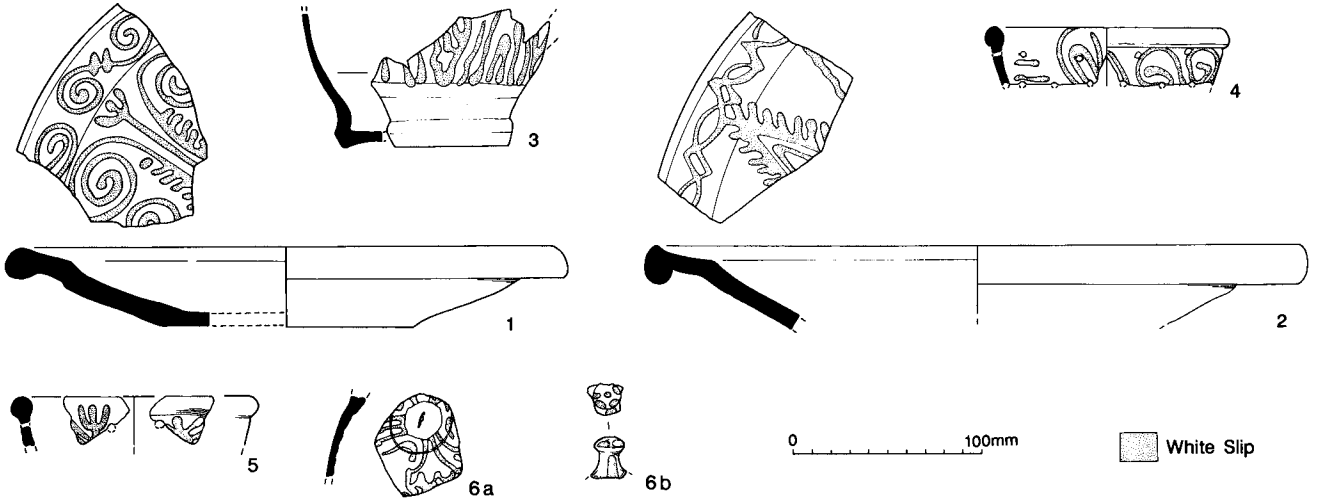
The fabric of the black-glazed sherds is usually a dull red-brown rather than the brighter oxidised orange of most post-medieval red earthenware, and where the black-glazed examples do have a brighter red colour the glaze is dark green rather than black. It was also observed that the margins of the glaze, especially where it has accidentally flowed on to the underside of the base, is often dark green. This indicates the colour is due to iron, rather than manganese which gives a purple colour, and that the black colour would have been partially achieved by reducing the amount of oxygen available, as would be the case if a saggar was used.

- 7 Mug rim: black-glazed ware; dull red-brown fabric; slightly distorted rim; all over black-glaze with bare patch on handle; some pitting of glaze; perhaps from an ovoid mug, the shape being a copy of contemporary tin-glazed earthenware mugs; this form is also made in Midlands blackware and corresponds to Brears' type 6. *Fill 47 (pit 48)*
- 8 Base of tyg: black-glazed ware; dull red-brown fabric, all over black glaze which has turned to a powdery yellow towards the base; perhaps from a two-handed tyg of Brears' type 1. It is also similar to an example found at Potter Street, (Newton and Bibbings 1960, fig.8 top left). *Fill 224 (pit 225)*
- Not illus. Base and sides of ?jug: black-glazed ware; thick-walled; rilling on internal surface; orange fabric; all over very dark green-glaze which has flowed on to underside of base; adhesion scars on underside. The colour of the glaze and fabric suggests this vessel was not fired in a saggar (see above). *Fill 47 (pit 48)*
- 9 Base of large cylindrical mug: black-glazed ware; dull red-brown fabric and thick all over black glaze which has flowed onto the underside; similar to one found at Potter Street (Newton and Bibbings 1960, fig.10 bottom right); the base has fused to the underside of a saggar. *Fill 224 (pit 225)*
- 10 Base of cylindrical mug: black-glazed ware; dull red-brown fabric; all over black glaze which has flowed on to the underside of the base where it appears dark green; pool of glaze has collected to one side of base interior; excess glaze has fused side of base to an inverted saggar rim; saggar rim fissured and so distorted that the beaded rim appears to be on the inside of the vessel; remains of cut-out hole just below saggar rim. *Fill 47 (pit 48)*

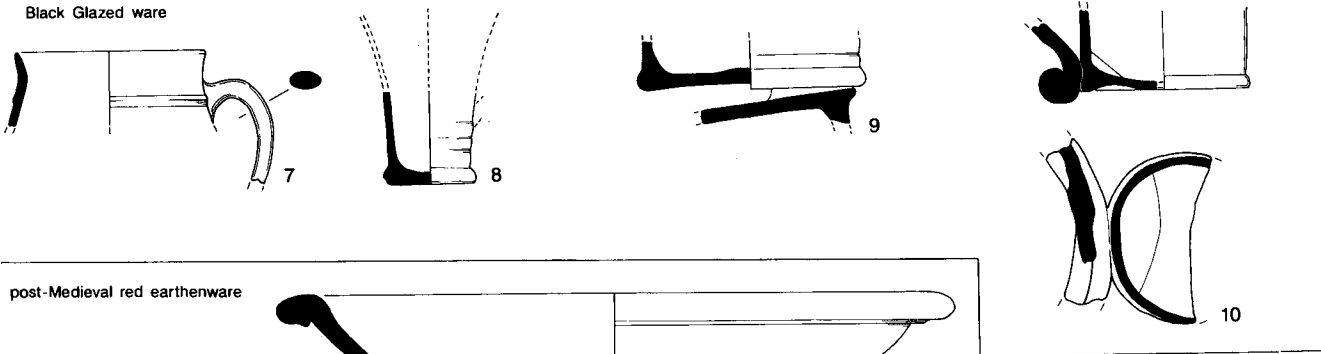
#### Post-medieval red earthenware (PMRE)

This constitutes c. 16% by sherd count, and is probably contemporary with the Metropolitan slipware and black-glazed ware (for a fabric description of post-medieval red earthenware see the Laundry Farm report). Most of the pottery is fragmented but all the identifiable forms have been drawn in order to show the range of types in production at Harlow and determine whether there might be any features characteristic of post-medieval red earthenware made in Harlow. Several sherds were kiln rejects or wasters; for example some are over-fired or have a powdery glaze. Other faults include distortion, pieces of extraneous clay fused to vessel and adhesion scars. In addition, some sherds show glaze on the breaks and may have been reused in the kiln as kiln props etc. (e.g. Nos 14, 19). Forms comprise large bowls (Nos 11-13), jars with beaded rims (Nos 14-

Metropolitan Slipware



Black Glazed ware



post-Medieval red earthenware

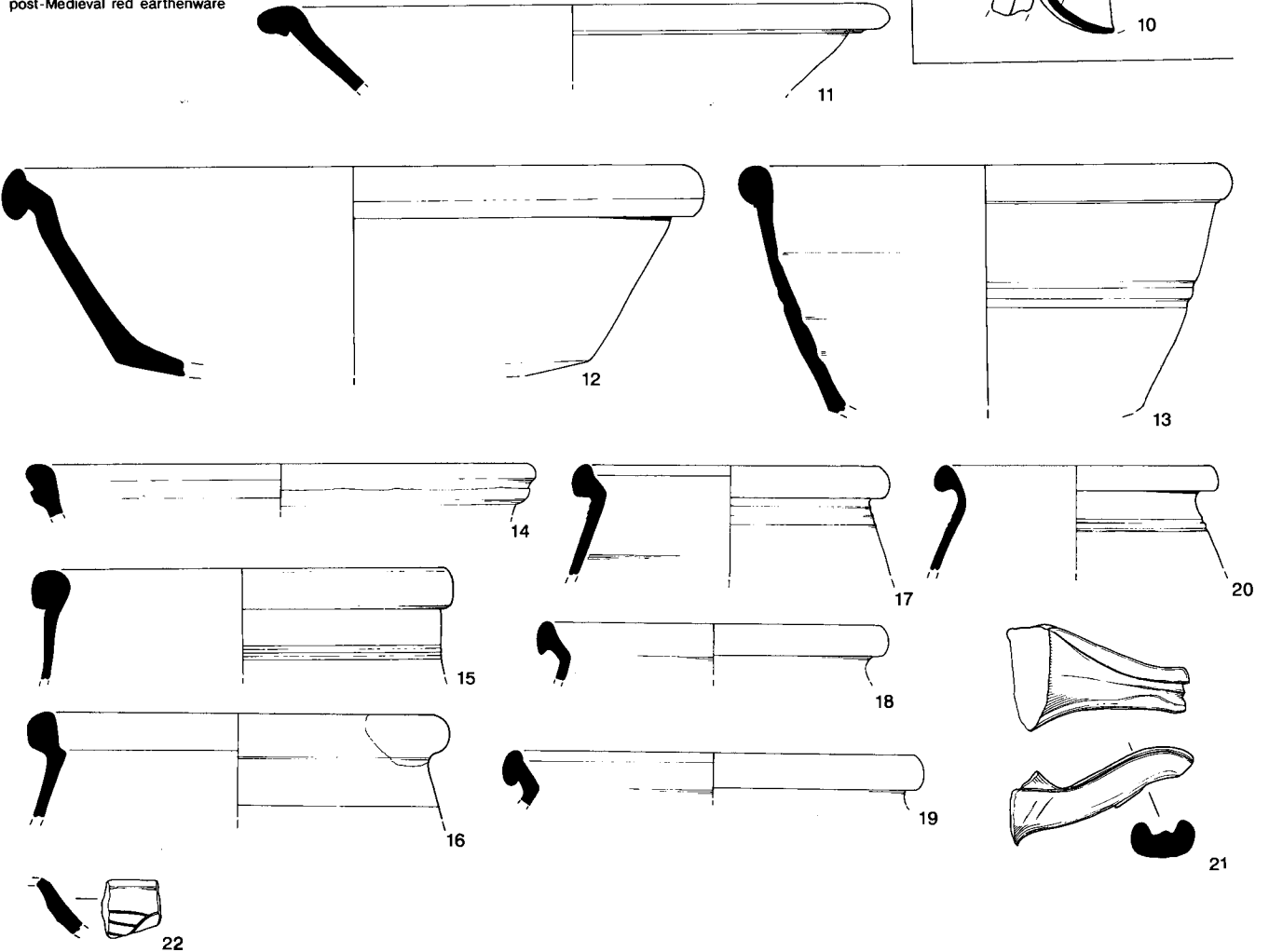


Fig.19 Church Langley, Tesco site: post-medieval pottery

15), and jars with lid-seated or everted rims (Nos 16-20). Also found were pipkin handles (No.21) and detached feet from the tripod bases of pipkins (small cooking vessels). Some of the lid-seated jar rims may be from pipkins. Also illustrated in this section is a dish fragment showing sgraffito decoration (No. 22). To the author's knowledge sgraffito wares are not part of the output of the Harlow (or other post-medieval red earthenware kilns in the area), although its fabric appears consistent with that of Harlow post-medieval red earthenware.

As for identifying characteristics, a flanged or everted rim with a bead at the edge is present on several bowls and jars, and on the Metropolitan slipware dishes. In addition, many of the jars (Nos 15-17, 20) show horizontal grooves beneath the rim. However, these features are not necessarily unique to Harlow products. In contrast, jar No.14, with its grooved beaded rim can be paralleled at Stock (Cunningham 1985b, fig. 50.6).

- 11 Large flared bowl: post-medieval red earthenware; orange fabric, grey core within rim and darker external surfaces; partial internal plain lead glaze. *Topsoil 201*
- 12 Large flared bowl: post-medieval red earthenware; orange fabric, red outer margin and narrow grey core, darker surfaces; internal glaze with patches of accidental glaze on exterior. *Fill 47 (pit 48)*
- 13 Large rounded bowl: post-medieval red earthenware; dull red fabric, orange margins and grey core (similar coloration to medieval Harlow ware); all over decomposed powdery yellow glaze. *Fill 47 (pit 48)*
- 14 Jar rim with grooved bead: post-medieval red earthenware; orange fabric where visible; all over lustrous honey coloured glaze also on breaks indicating it was reused in the kiln; the lower bead has been applied separately. *Fill 224 (pit 225)*
- 15 Bead rim jar: post-medieval red earthenware; orange fabric with grey core only at interior of bead, darker surfaces; internal glossy apparent brown glaze. *Fill 47 (pit 48)*
- 16 Rim of one-handed jar: post-medieval red earthenware; internal lid-seating; scar of handle attachment; uniform orange fabric with grey core only at interior of beaded rim, reduced surfaces; partial internal glaze with ?accidental splashes on rim and exterior; a glaze run under the rim suggests this vessel was fired upside down; extraneous piece of clay adhering to patch of glaze on rim; rim distorted; probably a waster; perhaps from similar vessel to an example from Potter Street described as a grain holder (Newton and Bibbings 1960, fig. 6). *Fill 47 (pit 48)*
- 17 Jar rim: post-medieval red earthenware; orange fabric with darker surfaces where visible; all over apparent glossy brown glaze;

- adhesion scar around top of rim. *Fill 47 (pit 48)*
- 18 Jar rim: post-medieval red earthenware ware; orange fabric except for grey core at interior of rim, reduced purplish surfaces; internal plain lead glaze. *Fill 224 (pit 225)*
- 19 Jar rim: post-medieval red earthenware; similar to No. 18 but with glaze on break indicating reuse in the kiln. *Fill 219 (ditch 220)*
- 20 Jar rim: post-medieval red earthenware; orange fabric with reduced, grey external surface; internal glaze which appears yellowish at the margins; accidental splashes of glaze on rim. *Fill 47 (pit 48)*
- 21 Pipkin handle: post-medieval red earthenware; brick-red fabric where visible, grey at attachment scar; deeply grooved handle with central ridge; apparent dark green glaze with patches of yellow, perhaps due to decomposition of the glaze; handle slightly distorted; scar where handle has come away from body of vessel; end of handle poorly finished; extraneous piece of clay adhering to underside; patch of glaze on break; perhaps reused as a kiln prop. *Fill 47 (pit 48)*
- 22 Body sherd ?from dish: post-medieval red earthenware; orange fabric with thick grey core; internal cream slip-coating with pattern scored through slip (known as sgraffito decoration); an internal plain lead glaze gives a yellow colour; abraded. *Ditch/drain 54*

The saggars

Saggars are ceramic containers in which black-glazed wares were placed during firing to protect them from the fierce heat of the kiln. They also enabled stacking of these delicate vessels and prevented them fusing together (Moorhouse and Slowikowski 1992). The saggars found here comprise 65% of the total by sherd count; no complete saggars were found, but the largest fragments have been illustrated (Nos 23-7). They are wheel-thrown cylindrical vessels with flat, slightly concave untrimmed bases and beaded rims. The shape of the bead varies, some are more pronounced than others and some beads are slightly undercut while others are more rounded. Holes have been cut through the sagger walls below rims and above the basal angle, prior to their firing to allow the circulation of air. It was noted that some of the bases turn sharply inward above the basal angle, this may be warping due to repeated firings. Alternatively these vessels may actually be mushroom props used for creating a raised floor at the base of the kiln (Moorhouse and Slowikowski 1992, 104-5, figs 48, 78). However, no rims were found belonging to mushroom props. The fabric of the saggars appears to similar to the other Harlow products, apart from occasional large white quartz inclusions poking

Saggars

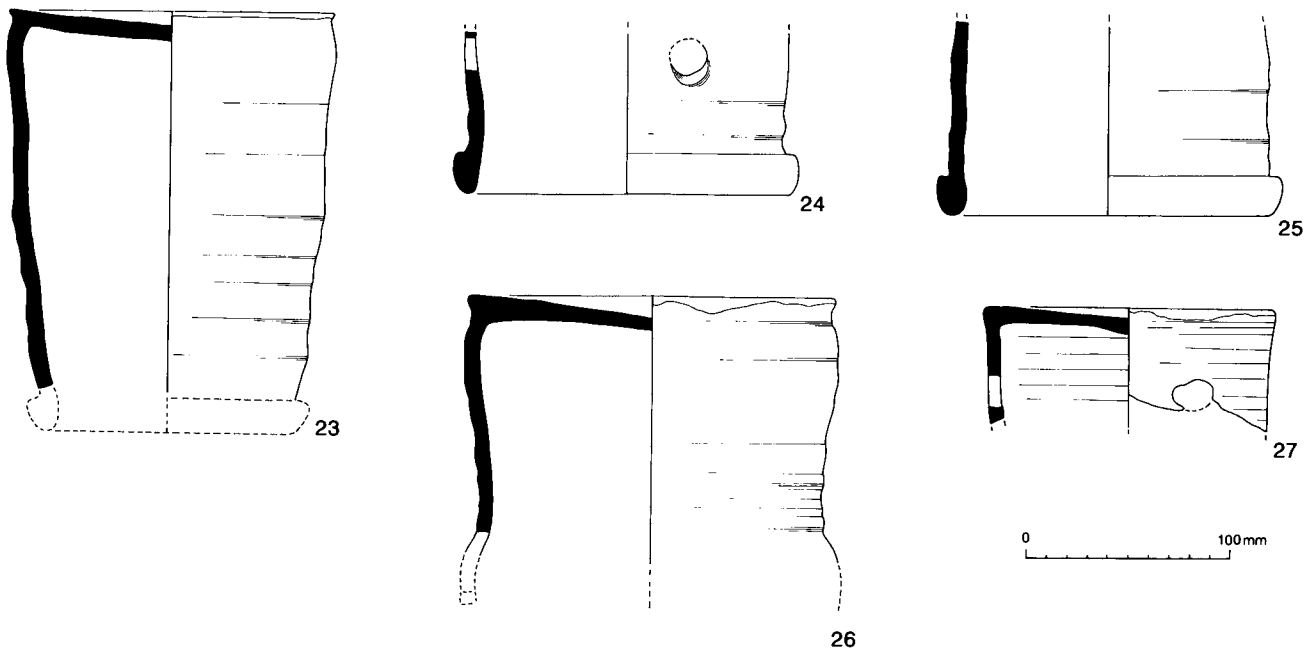


Fig.20 Church Langley. Tesco site: post-medieval pottery: The saggars

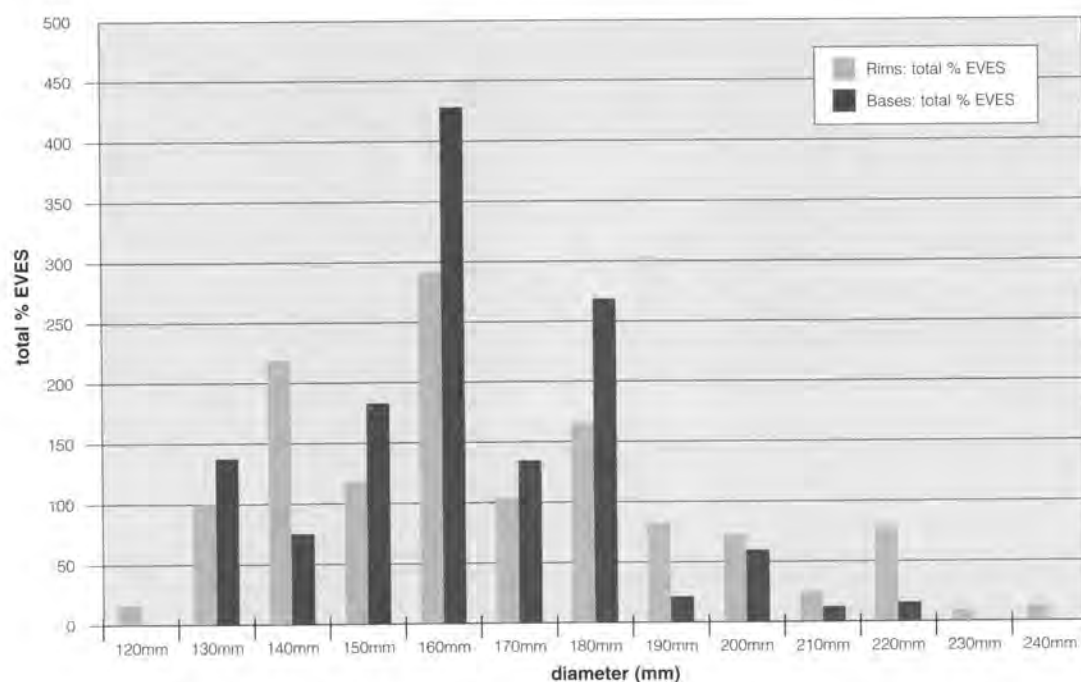


Fig. 21 Church Langley, Tesco site: graph of saggars: frequency of rim and base diameters

through the surface. Colour varies from brick-red to purplish, and some saggars have reduced surfaces.

The diameters of the saggarr rims have been measured at 10mm intervals and quantified by estimated vessel equivalent (EVES) obtained by measuring the percentage of vessel rim present and then adding together all the rim percentages. As the bases are quite robust and have survived better than the rims, the base diameter of the saggars has also been measured and quantified in the same way. The results are shown on a graph (Fig. 21). The total rim EVES is 1316% and the total base EVES is 1357%. The diameters range from 120mm to 240mm, but only rims occur at the extreme ends of the range, which may be explained by the fact that rims are more likely to be warped and give an inaccurate reading. It is also possible that some of the saggars are not entirely cylindrical, indeed, No. 23 appears to taper towards the rim. The majority of saggarr diameters fall between 130mm and 180mm; only a few are over 190mm in diameter. By far the commonest size is 160mm, followed by 180mm. (The apparent emphasis on even numbers may be due to the fact that the rim chart is measured out at 20mm intervals). The saggars seem quite narrow if used for the cylindrical mugs which are up to 120mm in diameter. The smaller saggars may have been used for the much narrower tygs.

The size and shapes of the saggars found here have been compared to saggars from other post-medieval production centres. The single saggarr illustrated from Stock has a base diameter of 150mm (Cunningham 1985b, 87), while those illustrated from Fulmodeston, Norfolk range between 150mm and 190mm (Wade-Martins 1983, fig. 32). Further afield, at Wrenthorpe in Yorkshire, bases range from 120mm-280mm (Moorhouse and Slowikowski 1992). Saggars were also found at Potter Street and are c. 180mm in diameter (Newton and Bibbings 1960, 370), so it would seem that the saggars found here fall within the average size range. The shapes are also comparable; all are cylindrical with beaded rims, although elsewhere the holes are often larger and have been bored after firing. Not surprisingly the example from Stock is the most similar (none of the Potter Street saggars have been illustrated and so cannot be compared).

The saggars were examined for evidence of how they were used in the kiln. Saggars sometimes have a slightly vesicular or pumice like appearance, probably due to over-firing or repeated firings. In addition many sherds are extremely warped and rims often show surface cracks or fissures, and some have glaze on the breaks indicating that they were reused after breakage, perhaps as kiln props and supports. Indeed at Wrenthorpe, broken saggars had many uses

such as cobbling and for soak-aways (Moorhouse and Slowikowski 1992).

Many saggarr fragments are glazed, presumably accidentally. They are glazed mainly on the inside but sometimes on the outside and typically show a thin powdery yellow glaze. However, sometimes there is a dark green or black glaze, further evidence that they contained black-glazed wares. Indeed one saggarr shows a fragment of black-glazed vessel fused to the side. As with some of the kiln products, the glaze can appear yellowy at the edges. A few fragments show a plain lead glaze indicating that other types of wares may have been fired in saggars.

Because the saggarr diameters are fairly narrow in comparison the size of the black-glazed ware vessels, only one vessel per saggarr would have been used. No. 9 shows a black-glazed ware base adhering to a saggarr base, and No. 10 shows a black-glazed ware base fused to the rim of a saggarr, inferring that the saggars were inverted over the vessel and stacked one on top of the other. However as the saggars are broken they could have been broken in antiquity and used in these instances as kiln props, not as saggars.

Two examples show the base of a saggarr adhering to a piece of glazed peg tile, indicating the tiles may have been used as shelving. The best evidence for method of stacking is the occasional instance (five examples) of an arc-shaped scar on the underside of the saggarr base, consistent with the vessel to be fired being placed on top of an inverted saggarr and another saggarr inverted over it. This method was used at Fulmodeston and Wrenthorpe but not at neighbouring Stock, where it is thought that the saggars were stacked rim uppermost with a tile in between (Cunningham 1985b, 87).

- 23 Saggarr: brick-red with darker surfaces; smooth internal surface, rougher tile like outer surface; both surfaces have glaze, the internal surface shows a partial sheen of glaze accompanied by a single splash of black glaze; the outer surface shows traces of a powdery yellow glaze; glaze on underside of base. *Fill 224 (pit 225) and fill 211 (pit 212)*
- 24 Saggarr rim: red with darker internal surfaces; partial powdery yellow glaze on inside accompanied by a splash of black glaze; cut out hole. *Fill 211 (pit 212)*
- 25 Saggarr rim: red fabric but with darker internal surface; partial powdery yellow glaze on both surfaces. *Fill 211 (pit 212)*
- 26 Saggarr: dark red fabric with smooth, reduced internal surface; rough tile like external surface; partial internal powdery yellow glaze; hole in side. *Fill 224 (pit 225)*

PREHISTORIC, ROMAN AND POST-MEDIEVAL MATERIAL FROM HARLOW

27 Saggars base: red with smooth reduced internal surface; traces of powdery yellow glaze on underside of base; cut out hole. *Topsoil 201*

Non-kiln pottery

Non-kiln pottery in features predating the kiln dump material has already been discussed above. Small amounts of earlier pottery were also found with kiln material, comprising further sherds of sandy orange ware and medieval Harlow ware. In addition, there are several examples of small and abraded post-medieval red earthenware which are probably earlier than those from the kiln dump. Most are sparsely glazed if at all, and some are slip-painted, a characteristic of 15th to 16th-century pottery. A couple of these sherds, like the sandy orange ware mentioned above, show sparse inclusions of chalk. The only form present is a bead-rim bowl from pit 212 and topsoil contexts 201, 210, showing deposits of limescale. The latest pottery found is a sherd of ironstone from topsoil 223 showing mauve transfer-printed decoration and dating from the mid 19th to 20th centuries.

*Discussion of pottery*

The abundance of saggars and the presence of sherds that are kiln wasters, or that may have been reused in the kiln is good evidence that this is all material from a production site. There is also evidence from the brick and tile for the presence of a kiln (Ryan, below).

These findings show that the black-glazed vessels were most likely stacked in the kiln by placing a single vessel beneath an inverted saggars, with different size saggars to fit different sized tygs and mugs. It is also possible that other types of vessel were fired in saggars, the smaller Metropolitan slipwares being likely candidates. There is also evidence that some of the black-glazed wares and Metropolitan slipwares were fired in a tilted position and would have been propped at an angle, perhaps using broken sherds (or tile fragments) known as 'bobs', as at Wrenthorpe (Moorhouse and Slowikowski 1992). This was done to facilitate removal of the pot if the glaze had run and fused pot to saggars. There is little evidence as to how the post-medieval red earthenware vessels were fired, although jar No. 16 was probably stacked in an inverted position.

The sherd with sgraffito decoration (No.22) provides very tentative evidence that post-medieval sgraffito ware was made at

Harlow. This style of decoration is normally associated with the late medieval period, but a post-medieval red earthenware jug/cistern with sgraffito decoration has been found at Chelmsford (Cunningham 1985c, fig.40.9, 64).

Studying how the potters actually produced their wares, as well as the wares themselves, can show how the different industries are related. They may have copied each others products but they probably developed their own methods of manufacture including methods of stacking, or the type of saggars used, and any similarities between production centres suggests there was some kind of association between them. For example they may have shared common ownership or there may have been migration of potters from one production centre to another.

The dating of this industry has been discussed above, with black-glazed ware and Metropolitan slipware dating principally to the 17th century and the industry reaching its zenith during the middle of the century. None of the vessels are closely datable, although as Surrey-Hampshire white ware colanders are found in London in mid to late 17th-century contexts (Pearce 1992, 15), the Metropolitan slipware strainer/colander(s), may also have been current at this time. The only other dating evidence is the sherd of salt-glazed English stoneware, which cannot date to before 1672 (when stoneware production started in this country; Hildyard 1985, 11), and could easily be 18th century. Unfortunately, as this sherd came from a feature cut by a modern pipe trench, it is not from a secure context.

**Brick and Tile**

by Pat Ryan

*Tile*

A total of 145 fragments of pegtile were examined; of these 128 came from context 47. The remainder were small fragments and flakes from contexts 16, 54, 64, 73 and 91, or were unstratified. One abraded fragment of possible Roman tile came from context 29.

Most of the tile from context 47 shows signs of over-heating, either a darkening of colour and/or some degree of warping and in some cases clinkering. Much of it has drips or runs of slip and/or glaze or some vitrification. Over 12% of the total bear some degree of scarring from pots.

Medieval and post-medieval tile				
CLT92 U/S	2 frags	70g		
	3 flakes	5g		One with circular peghole
CLT 92 16	1 frag	5g		
CLT92 47	1 pt tile	320g	130+ x 150 x 12	Circular peghole; circular impression c 55mm diameter; traces of dripped glaze
	2 frags	240g	12-13mm	Fused together; circular peghole; traces of vitrification or dripped glaze
	2 frags	400g	12-13mm	Fused together; circular peghole; traces of vitrification or dripped glaze
	9 frags	560g	10-13mm	Circular pegholes; some with traces of dripped glaze
	52 frags	2975g	10-15mm	Many are warped and dark grey in colour from over heating; some have signs of dripped glaze or vitrification
	19 frags	825g		Very warped and some over-heated with circular peghole; three with dripped glaze or vitrification
	7 frags	675g	9-14mm	Circular pegholes, traces of slip and/or glaze
	22 frags	1580g	9-13mm	Traces of slip and/or glaze
	16 frags	1500g	10-13mm	Traces of slip and/or glaze; scars from pots
CLT92 54	1 frag	10g	10mm	
	1 flake	5g		
CLT92 64	1 frag	50g	13mm	
CLT92 73	1 frag	20g	15mm	From curved tile
	1 frag	20g	13mm	
	3 flakes	5g		
CLT92 91	3 flakes	5g		
?Roman tile				
CLT92 29	1 frag	95g	25mm	Abraded; ?Roman

Table 16 The tile from the Tesco site

Brick

CLT92 16	1 frag	15g	Orange
CLT92 47	3 frags	60g	Abraded; orange
The remainder of the brick from this context shows the characteristic signs of over-heating i.e. purple in colour, cracking. Where the various faces of the fragments survive striations occur on some of the upper faces, the bases are rough and the stretcher and header faces are creased. The fabric contains some small flint inclusions.			
	7 frags with parts of 4 faces	580g	Wedge-shaped; 65–80mm thick at the widest end of the brick and 45mm wide at the narrowest end; traces of vitrification.
	21 frags	1670g	Traces of vitrification
	25 frags	1040g	
CLT92 91	1 frag	5g	Orange

Table 17 The brick from the Tesco site

Two small fragments of brick occur in contexts 16 and 19; the remaining 56 fragments come from context 47. All except 3 small fragments showed signs of overheating, that is purple colour and cracking. Features such as pebble inclusions, striation of the upper surface, roughness of the base, creasing of the stretcher and header faces, all resulting from the brickmaking process, indicate a date in the 16th or 17th centuries. In most cases it would appear that it is slight traces of mortar attached to the brick which have vitrified, rather than the brick itself.

Discussion

The evidence from the brick and tile finds from CLT92 suggest that they are from a 16th or 17th-century pottery kiln. The tiles probably formed the floor of the oven chamber and the wedge-shaped bricks, the arch of the firing tunnels.

The metal objects

by Hilary Major

Copper Alloy

U/S Thimble, probably brass. A heavy duty thimble with a slightly domed, unpitted top. Part of the rim has split in a way that suggests that this was hammered, rather than cast. There is also a small notch out of the rim which is a frequent feature of late medieval thimbles, and was possibly used to hold the object in place while being finished on the lathe (Holmes 1988, 1). This thimble probably dates from somewhere between 1350 and 1550. T. 23mm, original diam. c.20mm

Iron

U/S A ring, external diam. 55mm, on an attachment pin. Probably from modern farm machinery.

- 1 Iron object obscured by corrosion. Probably a stud with a short shaft and thick rectangular head. Possibly from a boot and likely to be of post-medieval date.
- 2 Iron object obscured by corrosion. Probably a stud with a short shaft and thick rectangular head. Possibly from a boot and likely to be of post-medieval date.

LAUNDRY FARM

by Richard Havis

Archaeological background

Laundry Farm (TL 47550 09310) is depicted on the 1848 tithe map (ERO D/CT 164) as the property of Rev. Arkwright and Thomas Glasscock. The map

indicates the presence of the remains of a possible moat around the house and garden, but this is uncertain. The site of Laundry Farm House is currently under the northernmost of the two areas known as The Piggeries.

In 1983 a drainage ditch was cut along the eastern edge of Laundry Farm, uncovering the footings of an earlier building, consisting of at least four mortared courses of unfrogged bricks. An eyewitness described masses of brick tile and pottery being scooped out of this ditch and dumped on the field surface. In 1986 W. Davey of the Harlow Archaeological Society noted a heavy concentration of brick and kiln waste while fieldwalking. A new drainage channel had been dug, which revealed saggars and pot sherds buried under the dumped material from the 1983 ditch.

In 1988 a resistivity survey was undertaken of this area by Roy Harold for Harlow Museum, the results of which were interpreted as indicating the presence of structures associated with pottery production.

Description

A small excavation (Fig. 22) was undertaken by the author in 1989 in order to investigate areas highlighted by the resistivity survey. A series of trenches (A-G) were

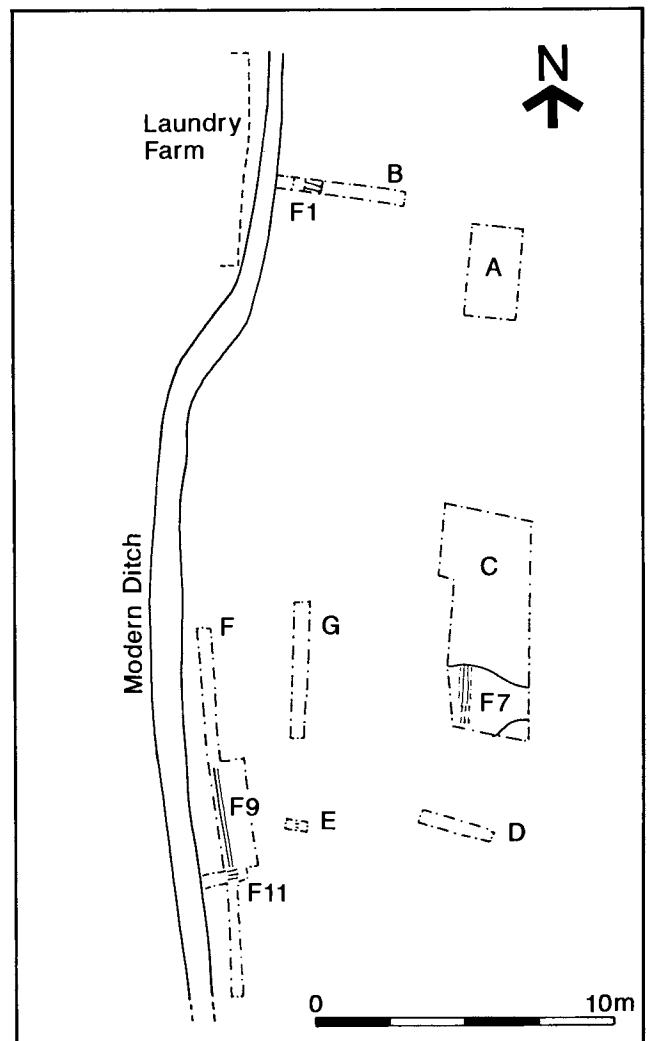


Fig. 22 Church Langley. Laundry Farm: Site plan



PREHISTORIC, ROMAN AND POST-MEDIEVAL MATERIAL FROM HARLOW

excavated; all were 2m wide and varied in length from 3.5-50m. Trenches B and F revealed a ditch (F1/11) which was 1.4m deep and 3m wide. F1/11 ran parallel to the modern field ditch which had been re-cut in 1983. The second lowest fill of F1 (context 5) contained 13 to 14th-century Harlow Ware. In Trench C, a field boundary formed by a shallow ditch and hedge line (F7) was found. In trenches B and F, a feature (F1 and 11), was found which ran parallel to the modern ditch. Also in trench F, a shallow linear gully (F9) was found, containing a large amount of post-medieval pottery. This feature however, cut layer 13, which contained both nylon string and paper, indicating that F9 was modern in date.

**The medieval and post-medieval pottery**

by Helen Walker (Fig. 23)

*Introduction*

A total of 388 sherds weighing 8.6kg was excavated from various linear features or was found unstratified. Nearly all the pottery (93% by sherd count) consists of post-medieval kiln dump material comprising fragments from saggars, post-medieval red earthenware and black-glazed ware. No Metropolitan slipware was found. The remaining 7% comprises mainly medieval Harlow ware. The pottery was analysed as for the Tesco site, and is summarised on Table 18. As so much is unstratified and there is evidence that some of the pottery has been re-deposited, it has been considered as a single group.

*Medieval pottery*

Medieval Harlow ware

This is a type of sandy orange ware tempered with well-sorted, rounded sands 0.25 – 0.50mm in size, often with a red or amber sheen. It is micaceous, also containing sparse chalk flecks and red oxides. The texture is pimply and it has a hackly fracture. Colour is typically orange-brown, sometimes with a pale creamy-orange core or margins. No definite production site has been found at Harlow but there is documentary evidence of potters from 1254 (Newton and Bibbings 1960). Medieval Harlow ware has been found associated with fine wares of the mid-13th century at Molehill Green, near

**Finds reports**

**The Roman pottery**

by Katherine Horsley

One base sherd of reduced Hadham ware was found in context 10.

Area	Feature and type	Fill	Relationship	Black-glazed ware	PMRE	Saggars	Medieval coarse ware	Medieval Harlow ware	Ironstone	Weight (g)
-	U/S			7	77	88	1	1	1	4298
B	Ditch 1	3	above 5	2	9	4	1			368
		5			6	7		13		328
C	Ditch 7	8			1					46
D	U/S					1		8		201
F	Gully 9	10	?above 9	5	79	69		3		3280
	Ditch 11	12			2	3				44
<b>Totals</b>				<b>14</b>	<b>174</b>	<b>172</b>	<b>2</b>	<b>25</b>	<b>1</b>	<b>8565</b>

Table 18 Quantification of pottery from Laundry Farm by ware, context and sherd count

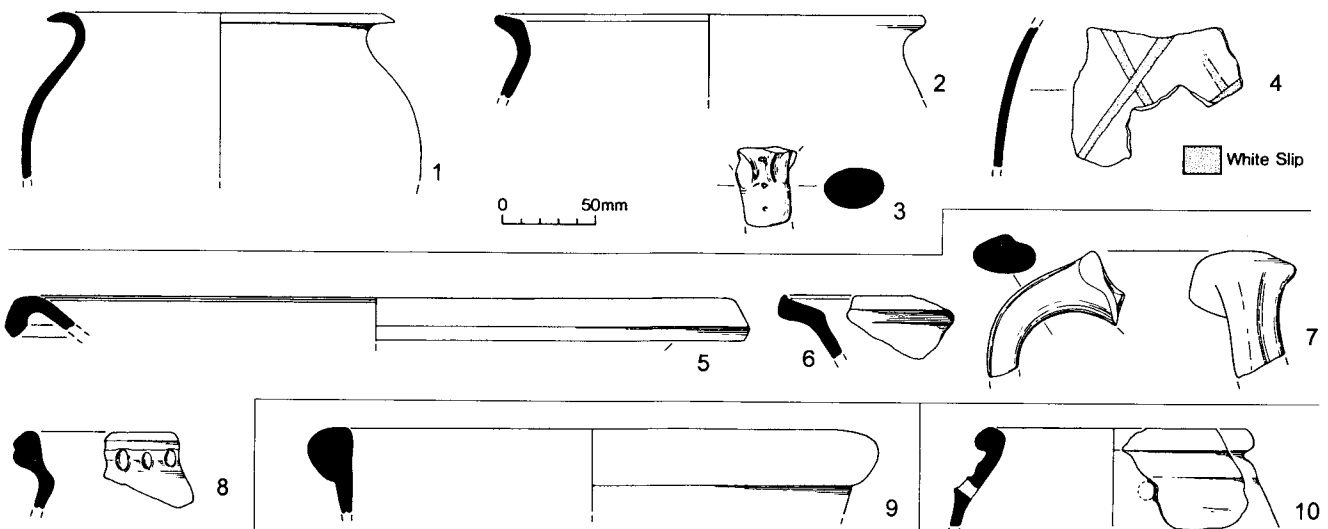


Fig.23 Church Langley. Laundry Farm: Medieval and post-medieval pottery

Stansted (Walker forthcoming). It is therefore likely that production began in the 13th century and may have continued throughout the Middle Ages eventually evolving into the better-known post-medieval industry.

None of the medieval Harlow ware found here shows evidence that it is from a production site as there are no wasters. In addition vessel No. 1 shows signs of sooting from a domestic hearth and has therefore been used. Forms comprise cooking pots, three of which have slightly turned-down flanged rims (e.g. No. 1), a typical medieval Harlow ware shape, and one has a slightly everted flanged rim (No. 2). Also found was a jug handle (No. 3), and part of the body of a jug showing slip-painting in a diagonal lattice pattern (No.4). There are 12 slip-painted sherds in all; each has a partial or all-over plain lead glaze.

- 1 Cooking-pot rim: medieval Harlow ware; dull orange fabric; very occasional splashes of plain lead glaze; sooting on sides and beneath rim. *Fill 5 (ditch 1)*
- 2 Cooking-pot rim: medieval Harlow ware; orange internal surface, orange buff external surface and grey core; splash of plain lead glaze on rim. *Area D unstratified*
- 3 Upper handle attachment from jug: medieval Harlow ware; dull orange; abraded; unglazed; pinched 'ears'; stab marks. *Area D unstratified*
- 4 Fragment from body of vessel: medieval Harlow ware; probably from a jug; cream slip-painting; splashes of plain lead glaze. *Fill 5 (ditch 1)*

#### Medieval coarse ware

This is a grey-firing sand-tempered fabric made at various production centres throughout the county from the 12th to 14th centuries. Two sherds were found, a flanged bowl rim and the strap handle from a jug showing a trace of slip painting. Both could be reduced samples of medieval Harlow ware.

#### *The ?kiln dump material*

#### Black-glazed ware

This makes up a very small component of the assemblage, comprising 4% by sherd count. Tygs are the only form; no rims were found but there are several handle fragments and thickened tyg bases with rilled sides. None are illustrated. Sherds have a thick, black all-over glaze, similar to that from the Tesco site. One ?tyg base is adhered by its glaze to a piece of peg tile; this is interesting because it contrasts with the findings at the Tesco site where black-glazed bases were found stuck to the undersides of saggars. This could mean that this particular tyg was stacked in the bottom layer of the kiln, on a floor made out of pegtiles. However, it is possible that a different method of stacking pottery in the kiln was used.

#### Post-medieval red earthenware

This accounts for 45% of the total by sherd count. The fabric is fine, hard, and micaceous with abundant inclusions of very fine angular quartz. Sparse red oxides are also present and there is no obvious added temper. The fabric has no distinguishing features and is very similar to other local post-medieval red earthenwares examined by the author, for example from Purleigh and Stock; it also fits Cunningham's description of post-medieval red earthenware (Cunningham 1985a, 1-2). Most sherds have a plain lead glaze and an all-over internal covering of glaze is most common. Other glaze combinations comprise an all-over glaze on both surfaces; a partial glaze on the external surface only; or an all-over internal glaze with a partial external glaze. A few examples exhibit a dark green glaze; this always occurs on wasters or on sherds with reduced surfaces and is probably the result of iron reduction, rather than the addition of copper to the glaze. Several wasters are present and types of fault include extraneous bits of clay adhering to rims, and blistering of the glaze. Glaze on breaks indicates some sherds may have been reused in the kiln as props etc (Tesco site pottery report, above).

No complete or even partially complete vessels were excavated but several rims, handles and bases were found. Forms comprise; bowls with curved over rims and flanged everted rims (Nos 5-6), with the addition of jars with beaded rims, a one-handled jar (No. 7), jars with hollowed everted rims (No. 8) and the rim of a storage jar (No.

9). Other forms are the base of a tripod pipkin and a solid pedestal base perhaps from a candlestick. The only example of decoration is the row of indentations on jar rim No. 8.

- 5 Bowl rim: post-medieval red earthenware; splashes of plain lead glaze on rim, otherwise unglazed; incised horizontal lines around inside of rim. *Fill 10 (gully 9)*
- 6 Bowl rim: post-medieval red earthenware; all-over dark green glaze with glaze also on breaks, perhaps reused as a kiln prop. *Fill 10 (gully 9)*
- 7 Handle from one-handled jar: post-medieval red earthenware; all-over internal plain lead glaze; partially glazed externally. *Fill 10 (gully 9)*
- 8 Jar rim: post-medieval red earthenware; all-over internal and partial external dark green glaze; row of indentations on outside of rim. *Fill 10 (gully 9)*
- 9 Storage-jar rim: post-medieval red earthenware; all-over external plain lead glaze, external splashes. *Unstratified*

#### The saggars

These make up 44% of the total by sherd count. They appear to be of the same type as those from the Tesco site (see that pottery report for a discussion of saggars). The remains are very fragmentary and only one is illustrated (No. 10), as it appears to be more jar shaped than those from the Tesco site (although this may be the result of distortion due to repeated firings). Many of the saggag fragments are distorted sometimes to the point of being totally misshapen, and like those from the Tesco site they often show a powdery yellow glaze.

- 10 Saggag rim: red fabric, reduced surfaces; sparse covering of powdery yellowish glaze; hole made during manufacture pushed out from inside. *Fill 10 (gully 9)*

#### *Discussion*

As mentioned above, there is no evidence that the medieval Harlow ware is from a kiln site, but a near monopoly of a particular ware at a settlement site may indicate the production centre was nearby. The pinched 'ears' of medieval Harlow ware jug No. 3 are a long-lived decorative element that appears on several other wares in this region. They occur on London-type ware jugs of the early to mid-13th century (Pearce *et al.* 1985, 27), Kingston-type ware jugs of the mid-to late 13th century (Pearce and Vince 1988, 33), and Mill Green ware jugs of the later 13th to mid-14th century (Pearce *et al.* 1982, 282). The lattice decoration on jug fragment No. 4 is also comparable to that found on London-type ware early rounded jugs of the late 12th century (Pearce *et al.* 1985, 28, pl.1a) and on Mill Green ware jugs of the later 13th to mid-14th century (Meddens and Redknap 1992, fig. 23. 132-3, 136). The dating of this collection of medieval Harlow ware by style of decoration is rather inconclusive, but a 13th to 14th-century date is most likely.

The post-medieval material is dated to the 17th to early 18th century by the presence of black-glazed ware. It is difficult to compare post-medieval red earthenware vessels with those from the Tesco site because of the small amount of pottery involved, although both sites were producing similar types of vessel, for example, one-handled jars and beaded jar rims were found at both excavations.

#### Discussion

The excavation revealed that the geophysical survey results were misleading. However, on the 1848 tithe map it is evident that Laundry Farm house used to extend further (at least 5-10m) into the field immediately to the east of the buildings now known as The Piggeries. The brick footings and other post-medieval debris uncovered in 1983 were therefore the remains of the post-medieval building. Ditch F1/11 found in the 1988 excavation is therefore the original boundary ditch around the house, as illustrated on the 1848 tithe map.

## FULLERS MEAD

by K. Reidy

A watching brief (Fig. 24) at Fullers Mead (TL 473 093) monitored the removal of concrete and hard-core

in advance of the rebuilding of garages which had subsided. Although the site does not actually fall within the development area of Church Langley, it is immediately adjacent to it, and has hence been included in this report.

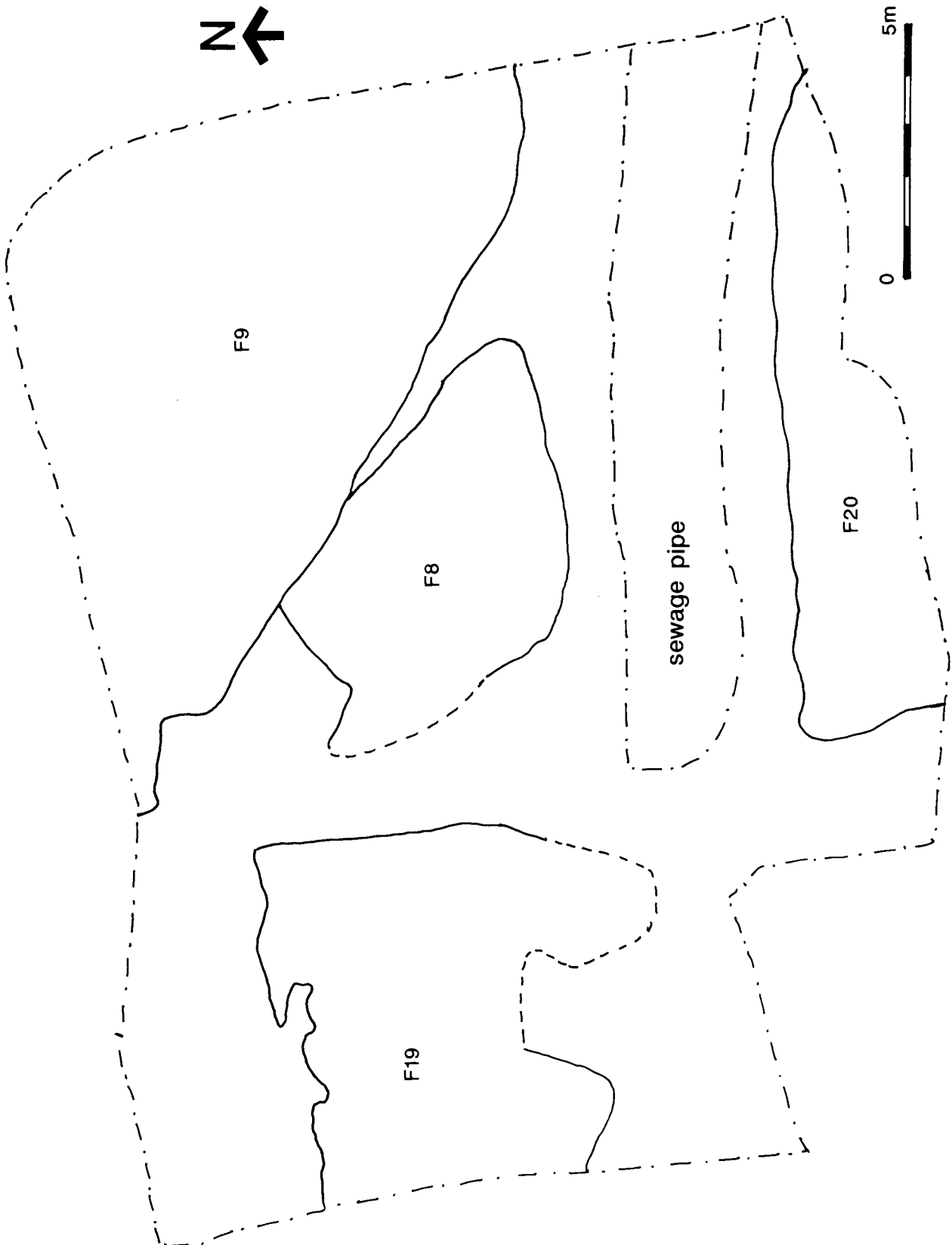


Fig. 24 Church Langley. Fullers Mead: Site plan

## Site description

Overlying the eastern half of the site was a layer of clay (1), which varied in thickness from 0.05m to 0.25m and was deepest in the north-east corner of the site. It contained 13th/14th century – 20th-century pottery, and is interpreted as modern make-up. Sealed below layer 1, cuts 8 and 9, visible on the cleaned surface, were investigated by means of a machine trench. Cut 8 proved to be a modern disturbance. In section, cut 9 was seen to be about 0.6m deep, with a flat bottom and steep sides. It contained three fills: the primary fill (14) was a clean gravelly clay which produced no finds; the secondary fill (4) produced medieval and post-medieval pottery; the top layer (3) was heavily mineralised and contained most of the pottery. This assemblage consists of 13th/14th century – early 18th-century material, and two 20th-century sherds which are considered intrusive. Cut 9 is interpreted as a clay extraction feature, backfilled in the mid 18th century. An area at the western edge of 9 was allocated separate cut (13) and fill (12) numbers, but was contaminated by modern cess-like seepage; it may therefore be a part of 9, the apparent distinction being a result of staining due to modern contamination. Other areas of the site were similarly stained.

Two other cuts (19, 20) with fills similar to the upper fill of 9 were also recorded. Although not excavated, it seems likely that these are also clay extraction features.

## Finds reports

### Medieval and later pottery

by Helen Walker

A total of 2.7kg of pottery was recovered and was recorded at assessment level only. Context 4, the lower fill of pit 9, produced ten sherds of medieval Harlow ware including a cooking-pot fragment with a typical down-turned flanged rim, dating to the 13th or 14th centuries (see the Laundry Farm pottery report for a description of this ware). Three sherds of post-medieval red earthenware were also found, dating from the 16th century onwards.

Rather more pottery, over 1kg, was excavated from context 3, the main fill of pit 9. A very mixed assemblage was excavated, comprising more medieval Harlow ware, including a strap handle and glazed, slip-painted sherds from jugs. Late medieval Harlow ware forms, perhaps dating to the 15th century, are also present, these include lid-seated jar rims, a skillet handle and a lug handle probably from a bowl or storage jar. Post-medieval wares include sherds of black-glazed ware and Metropolitan slipware dishes. Plain post-medieval red earthenware forms include pedestal-bases from cups dating to the 16th century and a beaded jar rim perhaps dating from the 17th century. All of the above were most likely made at Harlow, one kiln waster was found, a sherd with a powdery glaze and a small lump of clay adhering to the surface. A few sherds of modern pottery were also recovered, comprising one sherd of Staffordshire-type white salt-glazed stoneware belonging to the 18th century and two sherds of modern stoneware belonging to the 19th/20th century.

A similar mixture of Harlow medieval, late-medieval and post-medieval earthenwares were excavated from contexts 1 and 2. Forms of interest comprise more sherds from medieval Harlow ware cooking pots and jugs. There are slip-painted post-medieval red earthenware sherds dating to the 15th/16th century and two sherds of Metropolitan slipware. Four sherds of 19th/20th-century Staffordshire-type ironstone were also present in context 1.

In conclusion, the one example of a kiln waster cannot be taken as evidence of a kiln in the vicinity. However the heterogeneous mixture of medieval, late medieval and post-medieval pottery suggests that the assemblage may represent an accumulation of centuries of kiln debris back-filled as a single group into pit 9. This find is important because it demonstrates continuity between the Harlow medieval and post-medieval industries.

### Discussion

The only pre-modern features on the site are probably the result of clay extraction, probably for the pottery industry which was based in and around Potter Street. The quantity of pottery recovered suggests that the site is adjacent to an area occupied from the 13th/14th centuries.

## IZZARDS ALLOTMENTS

By A. Garwood

### Introduction

Trial-trenching (Fig. 25) was undertaken in March 1996 on the site of Izzards allotments (TL 4468 0965) immediately to the west of London Road and to the north of Potter Street, on the western edge of the Church Langley development. The predominant geology on site was boulder clay becoming gravel at the northern end of the site.

### Site description

Eleven linear trenches were excavated (Trenches A-K), which identified archaeological remains spread over the area. Prehistoric activity on site comprised a small ditch (F8), producing a single sherd of prehistoric pottery which could not be closely dated, and some small fragments of daub. Other possible prehistoric features include shallow pits (F6, 43 and 48) all of which produced waste flakes and burnt flint. Residual prehistoric pottery and flint waste was also present in a later Roman feature, pit 45. The presence of these features and general spread of flint waste across the site indicates that some activity was present, but the intensity and nature of the features suggest that the focus of this activity lies outside the development area and possibly further towards Perry Springs Wood.

The only feature dated to the Roman period was a small pit (F45), which produced ten sherds of Roman greyware.

A field boundary ditch (F10) was dated to the medieval period, by a single sherd of medieval Harlow ware (13th-14th century). Residual medieval pottery was also recovered from the modern layers in quarry pit 25.

Post-medieval activity on site was represented by two field boundary ditches (F12 and F28) and a large quarry pit (F25). The pottery from F25 suggests that the feature was backfilled in the late post-medieval period before being finally levelled in the modern period, possibly to make way for the allotments.

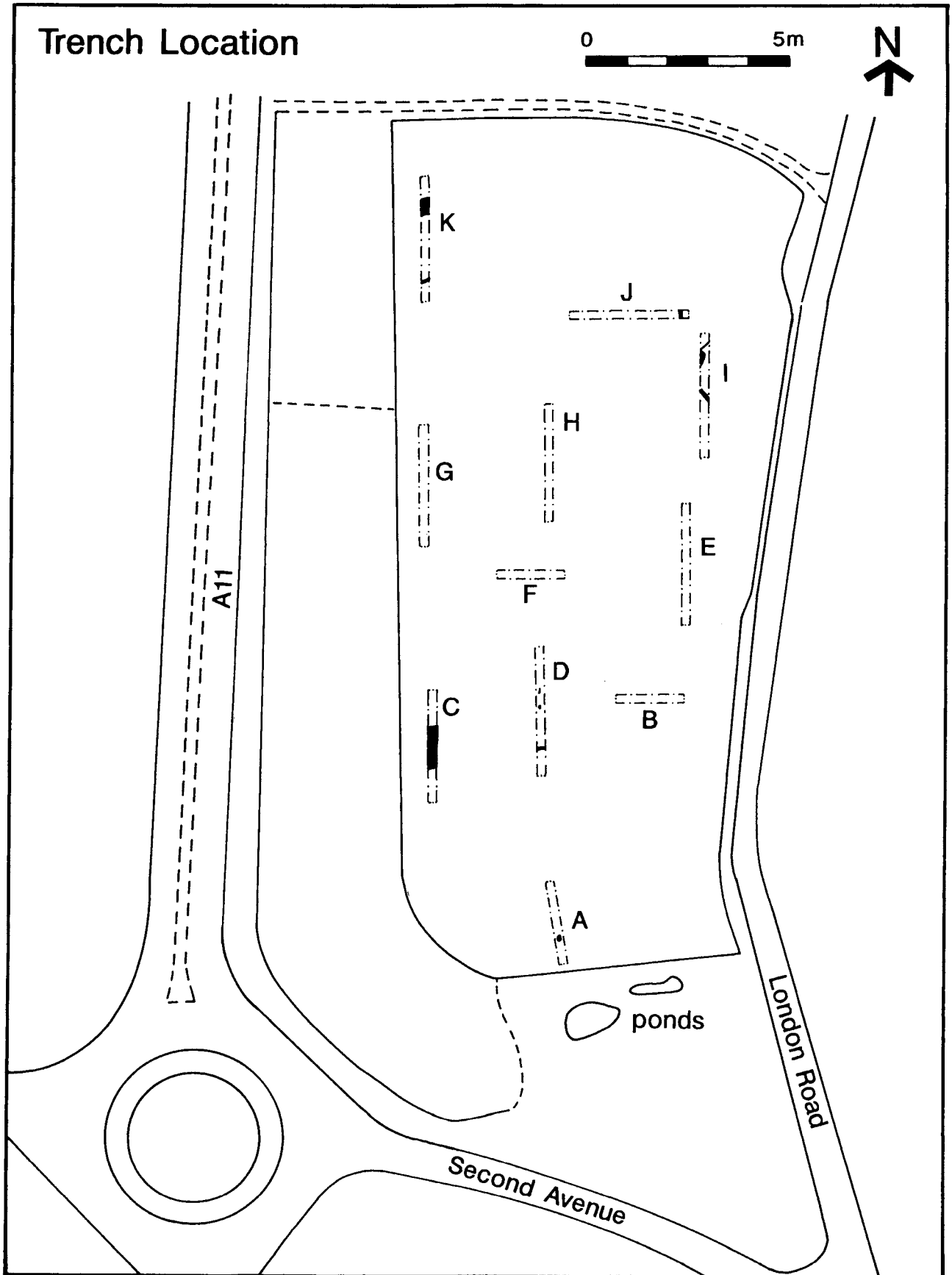


Fig.25 Church Langley, Izzards Allotments: Site plan

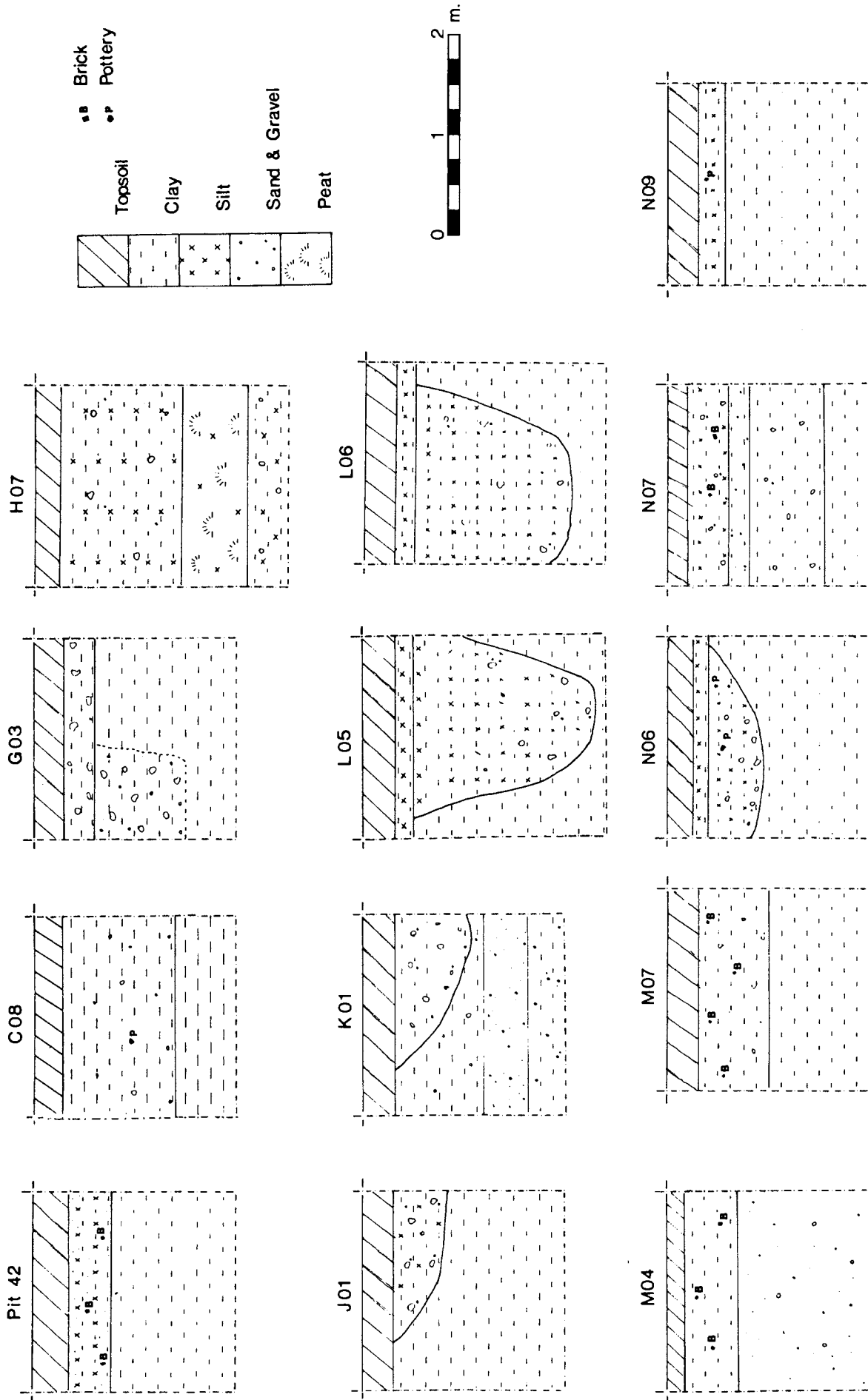


Fig. 26 Church Langley. Trial-pit sections

**Find reports**

**Summary of the pottery**

by H. Walker

A small amount of pottery (27 sherds weighing 298g) was recovered and was recorded at assessment level. The earliest pottery is a single small prehistoric sherd from context 7, the fill of ditch 8. Pit 45 produced ten sherds of Roman pottery, identified by T.S. Martin and comprising examples of Romanising grey ware, fine grey ware and sandy grey ware; all would have been current throughout the Roman period. The top fill of pit 45 (context 44) also produced two residual prehistoric sherds.

The remaining pottery is medieval and post-medieval. The fill of quarry 25 (context 24) produced a black-glazed ware base, with a small diameter suggesting that it is from a tyg or mug. Stratified above deposit 24 (context 22) were residual sherds of sandy orange ware, post-medieval red earthenware, and a large thick base, almost certainly from a saggar. The upper fill of ditch 28 (context 26) produced a residual sherd of medieval Harlow ware, showing traces of slip and glaze, and a sherd of post-medieval red earthenware. A base sherd of medieval Harlow ware was also found in the fill of ditch 10 (context 9). Finally two sherds of late medieval unglazed sandy orange ware, dating from the 14th to 16th centuries, was found unstratified in trench C.

None of the post-medieval red earthenware sherds appear to be wasters so the only evidence for post-medieval pottery manufacture is the ?saggar base (used in the production of post-medieval pottery) recovered from a modern deposit in F25.

**WATCHING BRIEFS AND METAL-DETECTING EVIDENCE**

**Trial Pits**

A watching-brief was maintained on the trial pits for the developer's ground survey. Thirteen pits produced archaeological features or finds (Location of pits Fig. 2; sections Fig. 26); finds were dated on site by the excavators. Pit 42 contained a layer of silty back-fill containing brick fragments, probably the remnants of the post-medieval field-ditch. There were 5 sherds of post-medieval pottery and 2 medieval from Pit C08. G03 sectioned a ditch, 90cm deep. H07 sectioned a 65cm thick, peat layer, buried beneath 120cm of back-fill, probably the remains of a pond that was filled in since 1950. J01 also sectioned the edge of a silted-up pond. K01 cut through a

ditch 80cm deep, possibly it represents the remains of a ditch running parallel to the existing field-ditch. L05 and L06 both revealed a deep ditch, 150-180cm deep, almost certainly the same one. M04 and M07 both contained a disturbed layer containing post-medieval brick fragments. N06 contained 4 medieval sherds and 10 post-medieval sherds; N07 contained 3 medieval sherds; N09 contained 2 medieval sherds.

**Metal-detecting evidence**

*Site adjacent to Potter Street*

A collection of metal-detected finds were reported to Harlow Museum by the finder, including several 1st-century brooches, a single silver Roman Republican coin and several 3rd to 4th-century coins. A watching-brief on the area where these finds were said to be from (TL 4700 0943), an area of land bordering Potter Street. No features were visible; a number of metal-detecting holes were however evident.

**Late Bronze Age spear-tip from vicinity of Old House**

by Nigel Brown

A small fragment of the tip of a spear (Fig. 27) was recovered from the vicinity of Old House. There is a prominent rounded central mid-rib, with a marked step between the midrib and edge bevel. There is some damage to blade edges, and the object has been slightly bent, probably in antiquity. The piece is of Late Bronze Age type, but its small size precludes attribution to a particular type.

**ARCHAEOLOGICAL SEQUENCE AT CHURCH LANGLEY**

by Maria Medlycott

As will have been apparent from the above reports on the various episodes of fieldwork, only a partial exploration of the archaeological potential of the development area was possible. What follows is therefore only a tentative account of the archaeological sequence.

**Prehistoric period (Fig. 28)**

Eight prehistoric sites were identified within the survey area, of which the Perry Springs Wood, Tesco and Old House sites were partly excavated; the remaining five sites were all fieldwalking clusters (FW 1-5). That averages 1 prehistoric site for every 16 hectares; for Essex as a whole the average density is one prehistoric site for every 21 hectares fieldwalked (Medlycott and Germany 1994). The sites are widely dispersed within the survey area, with no obvious siting preferences.

The Harlow area has been occupied since the Late Palaeolithic period (c. 12,000 – 10,000 BC). However, the evidence from the Palaeolithic, Mesolithic (10,000 – 3,500 BC) and Neolithic (3,500 – 2,000 BC) periods consists only of scattered flint flakes and tools. The evidence from Church Langley follows this pattern, with the earliest find being a portion of a Palaeolithic hand-axe recovered during the 1991 excavations at Old House. There are also a small number of bladelets/blades from the Old House and Perry Springs Wood sites, possibly attributable to the Mesolithic/Early Neolithic periods.

Most of the fieldwalking flintwork dates to the later Bronze Age, as does the spearhead tip found near the

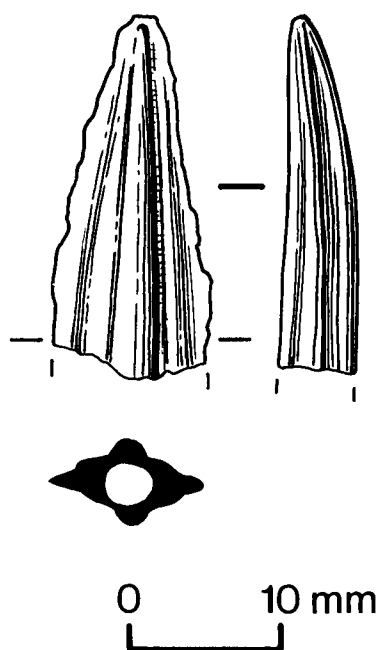


Fig. 27 Church Langley. Bronze Age spear-tip

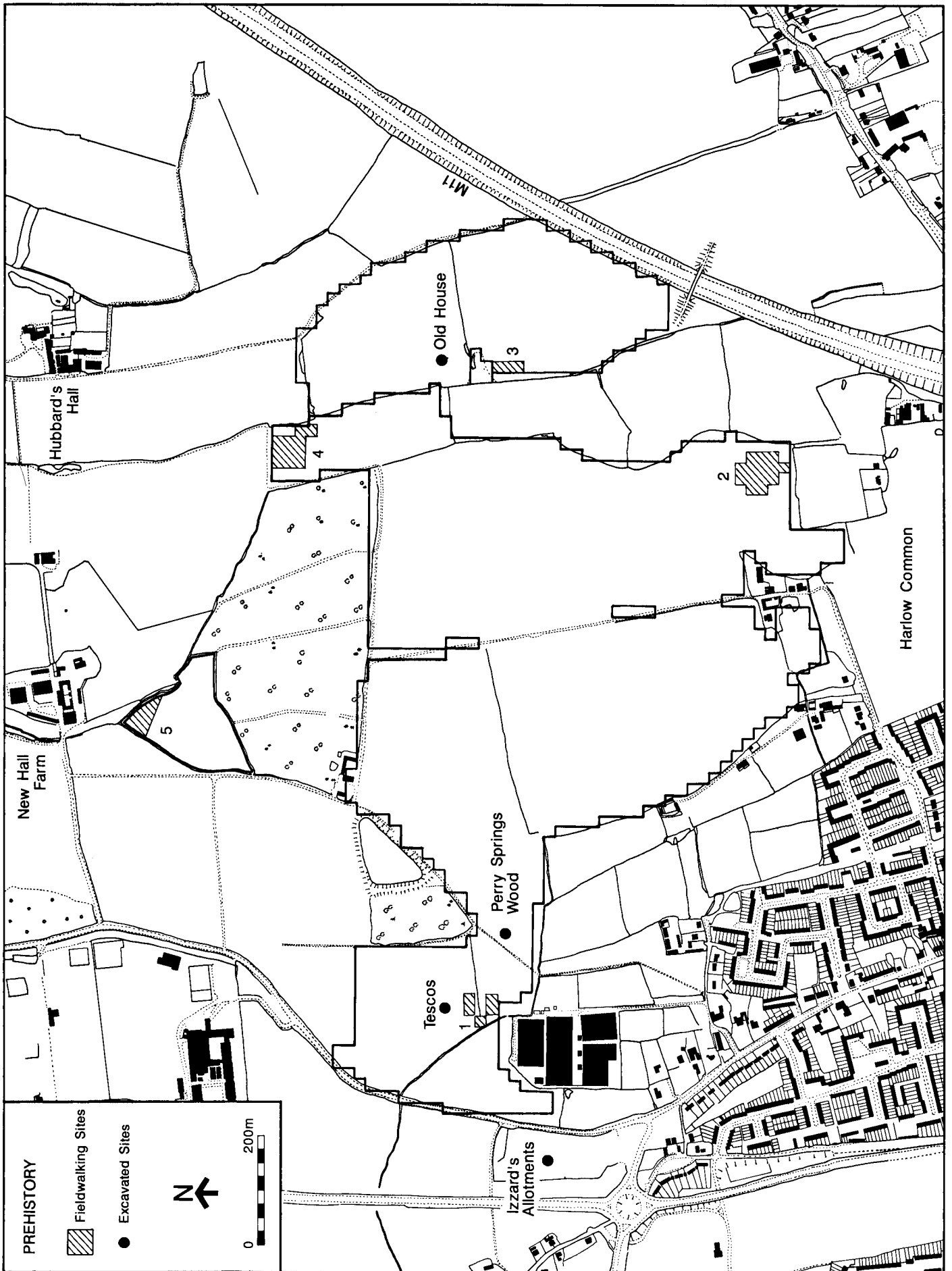


Fig. 28 Church Langley. Prehistoric (Reproduced by kind permission of Ordnance Survey. © Crown copyright NC/01/154)



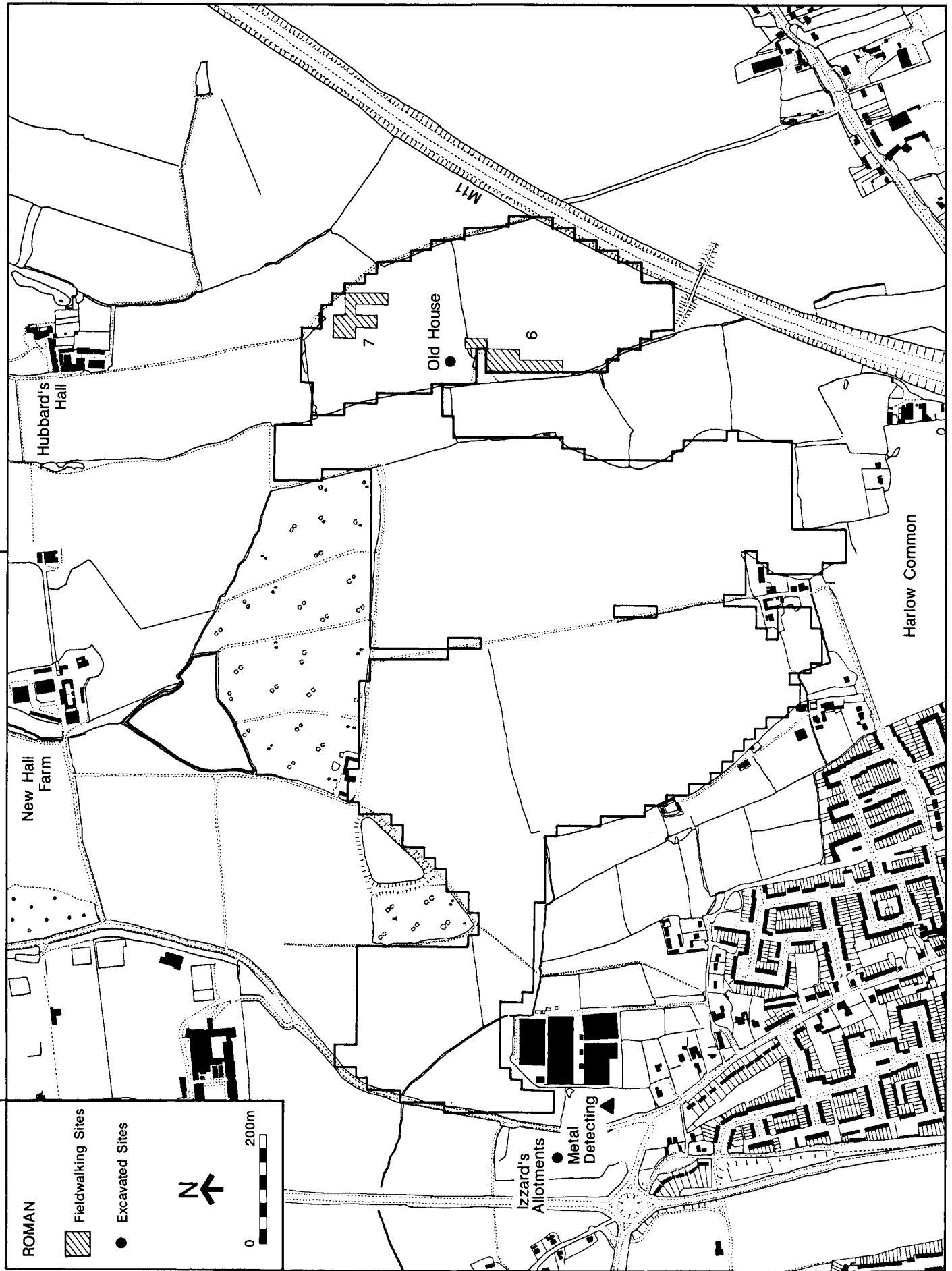


Fig. 29 Church Langley, Roman (Reproduced by kind permission of Ordnance Survey. © Crown copyright NC/01/154)

Old House site. Although the burnt flint scatters are not in themselves datable, recent studies in Britain and Ireland have shown that the majority of burnt stone mounds and scatters are attributable to the second millennium BC (Buckley 1990), and it is probable that the Church Langley groups fall within this time-span. Within the wider Harlow area there is a line of Bronze Age burial sites along the southern bank of the River Stort, including a group of eight burial urns at the later Roman temple site.

Early Iron Age features at Perry Springs Wood appear to be on the periphery of a settlement. At Old House, the earliest features were back-filled in the late 1st century but produced Late Iron Age grog-tempered pottery, a baked clay loom weight and a gold Gallo-Belgic quarter stater dated 60-50 BC.

On the site of the later Roman temple to the north-west of Church Langley were two roundhouses of mid to late Iron Age date and numerous Iron Age coins, small finds and animal bones were excavated. The quantity and pattern of distribution of the coins, coupled with what appears to have been deliberate damage to the small finds suggests that this site had a religious rather than domestic function. The discovery of coins of a late Iron Age date in the Holbrooks area close to the temple suggests that the Roman town occupied a pre-existing Late Iron Age site.

In conclusion, it appears that the Church Langley area was used sporadically during the Palaeolithic, Mesolithic and Neolithic periods. The earliest possible settlements identified are Bronze Age in date, and the first definite settlement site is the Early Iron Age site at Perry Springs Wood. There is also evidence for Late Iron Age occupation in the vicinity of Old House.

### **Roman period** (Fig. 29)

Five sites of Roman activity were identified, three fieldwalking clusters, one of which coincided with the Old House excavation, metal-detecting finds adjacent to Potter Street and one small pit on the Izzards Allotments site on the western edge of the development.

The site of a Romanised farmstead or villa was identified in the vicinity of Old House Wood. Fieldwalking scatters of pottery, metalwork and roof tile, in combination with the excavated evidence suggested that the main settlement area was located in and to the south of Old House Wood, in the angle formed by the junction of a small stream (diverted in the post-Roman period) with Langley Lane. Langley Lane, which in the medieval period formed an important local route between Foster Street and Old Harlow, linking the medieval farms at Old House and Hubbards Hall, as well as acting as the parish boundary, may have its origins in the Late Iron Age or early Roman period.

The Old House Roman settlement was occupied from the mid 1st to the late 4th or early 5th century A.D. It included large, Romanised buildings from the early 2nd century at the latest. A second fieldwalking site, c.180m north of Old House Wood, may represent a group of ancillary buildings or a second settlement site.

Midway between these two sites, a very large barn was built in the early 2nd century. It was probably used for crop processing and storage, and may have served as a central collection point for the agricultural surplus of a substantial estate or perhaps a group of farmsteads. The barn was demolished in the mid-late 2nd century and from the later 2nd century the north-west side of the stream valley was divided into a series of small rectilinear fields or paddocks. The demolition of the barn and establishment of the enclosure system may perhaps reflect a change in emphasis from arable to pastoral farming, though numerous quern fragments recovered from later contexts suggest that arable production continued throughout the Roman period. The bone assemblage suggests that cattle were the main livestock animal.

The picture of a mixed farming economy is complemented by evidence for small-scale industrial activity. There is some suggestion of a craft involving the production of objects made from red deer antler, which incidentally suggests that hunting played a part in the subsistence economy. A kiln, housed inside a shelter or workshop, and situated beside the stream, may have been used for malting or corn drying.

The Old House site included several deposits thought to be of a religious/superstitious character, including the burial of a child's skull, a double dog burial, a chicken-bone deposit and the burial of the jawbone and backbone of a dog, together with worked antler and broken pottery. Four cremations, only one accompanied by grave-goods, were also recovered.

Old House was the only definite Roman settlement identified, though small amounts of Roman material recovered from the Tesco site may derive from a nearby settlement. Two kilometres north-west of Church Langley was a Roman temple, which replaced a Late Iron Age temple. There was a widespread area of occupation, interpreted as urban in nature, to the north and east of the temple (France and Gobel 1985). Within the town there is evidence for both masonry and timber buildings, an internal road-pattern and manufacturing areas, as well as a masonry building which has been variously interpreted as a second temple and a public building. Evidence from the finds suggests that at least some of the manufacturing activity was directed towards the production of religious goods for the temple.

### **Saxon period**

No evidence for Saxon activity was found either by fieldwalking or excavation within the survey area. However, evidence from elsewhere in Harlow is sufficient to indicate settlement. There is an early Saxon structure set within the ruins of the Roman Temple, interpreted as a pagan shrine by R. Bartlett (pers. comm.). Saxon pottery and metalwork have also been recovered from the Harlow area.

The documentary and placename evidence demonstrates that the Harlow area was occupied during the later Saxon period and that Harlow itself was the

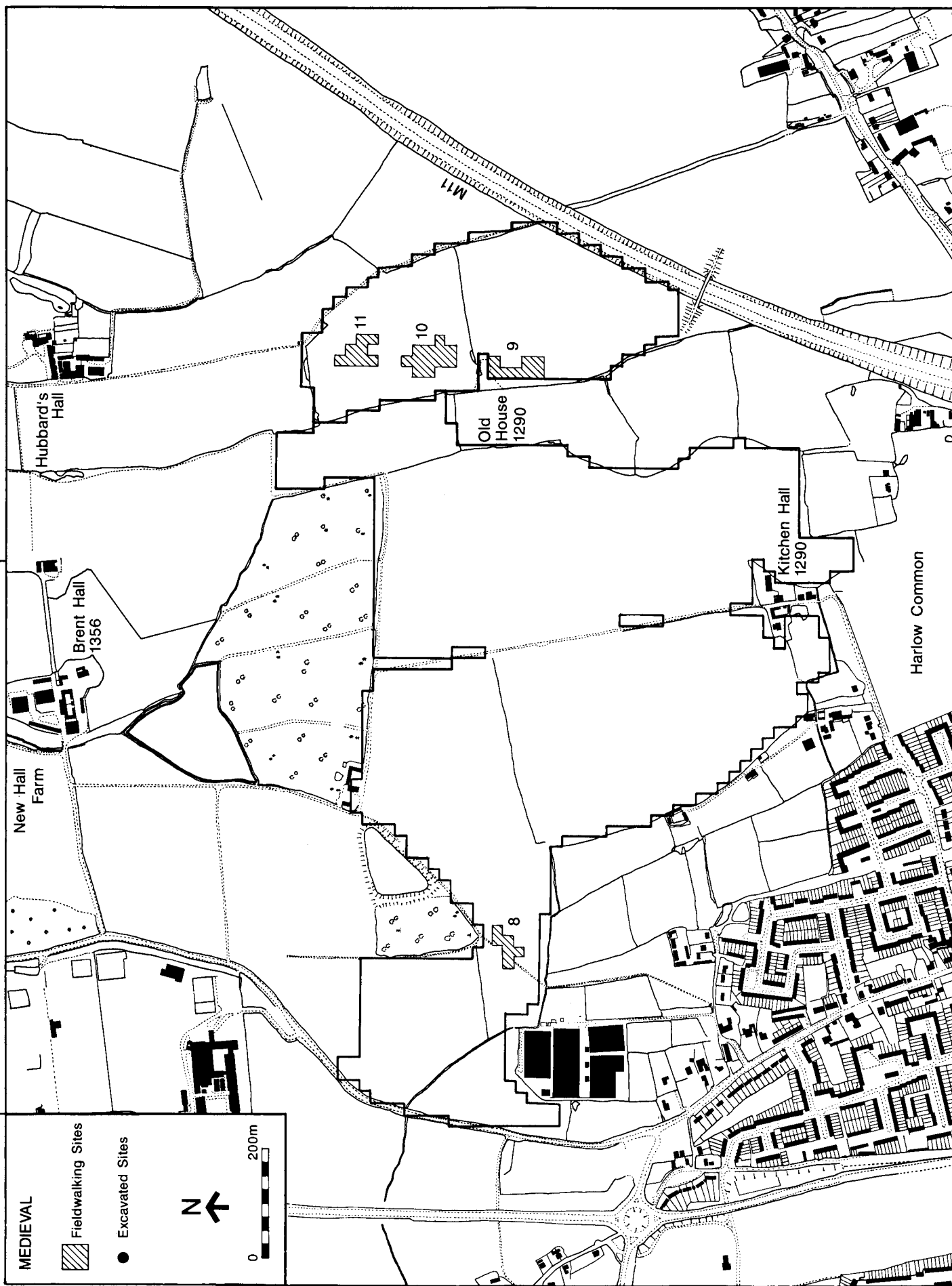


Fig. 30 Church Langley, Medieval (Reproduced by kind permission of Ordnance Survey. © Crown copyright NC/01/154)

administration centre of the Harlow Hundred, which stretched from Roydon to Hallingbury. In 1041 Thurstan, son of Wine, a Saxon Thane with considerable estates in Norfolk, Cambridgeshire and Essex, left in his will his land at Harlow to the Abbey of St Edmunds in Suffolk (Bateman 1969). Some of Church Langley, particularly that part that was Hubbard's Hall Farm, fell within this area.

The Domesday Book (Rumble 1985) provides further information on the locality immediately prior to the Norman Conquest. The area known as Harlow was 12 hides (1440-1800 acres) in extent, and included Church Langley as well as Old Harlow. The land-owners in 1066 were St Edmund's Abbey, Brictrmer, Godwin, Ingvar and 10 free men. The landscape depicted in the Domesday Book is that of a settled rural community, there were in addition to the land-owners and their dependents, the households of 20 villagers, 28 small-holders and 11 slaves. Cattle, sheep and pigs were reared. The holdings appear to have consisted of long strips of land running back from the River Stort, ensuring that each landholder had access to a mix of water-meadow, arable land and woodland. There was one mill attached to the main manor of the Abbey of St Edmund's; in addition the Abbey kept horses and beehives.

### Medieval period (Fig. 30)

The earliest medieval documentary evidence for the Harlow area, including Church Langley, is again the Domesday Book (Rumble 1983). By 1086 all the Saxon land-owners, with the exception of St. Edmund's Abbey, had been replaced by three Norman tenants-in-chief, Count Eustace, Eudo the Steward and Ranulf, who leased the land to tenants. The number of villager households dropped from 20 to 15, that of small-holders rose from 28 to 32 and the number of slaves dropped from 11 to 9. The quantity of woodland and meadow remained the same as in the Saxon period, but the number of plough-teams dropped by 2; this possible decline in the amount of land under arable cultivation is echoed by a rise in the number of livestock kept.

Within the project area St. Edmund's Abbey held Hubbard's Hall, which it leased out. In the first half of the 12th century Hubbard's Hall was held by Maurice de Harlow, who was also granted special privileges and sporting rights over the Abbey lands. Maurice's grandson Hubert de Harlow gave Hubbard's Hall its name. At some point between 1290 and 1300, the Harlow Cartulary (Fisher 1939), notes that "*Huberd exchanges with villein Andrew le Yerdling (ploughman) ... Huberds Reden (cleared land)*". Huberds Reden has been identified with the medieval farmstead at Old House, which appears to have begun as a small-holding, brought into cultivation from waste-land on the southern edge of the Huberd Estate, during the late 13th century. Hubbard's Hall remained part of the Abbey lands until the Dissolution of the Monasteries in 1536.

It has been suggested that Kitchen Hall derived its name from supplying the Abbey's kitchens (Fisher

1922). However Bateman (1969) argues that it formed part of Count Eustace's estates in 1086. It was held by a family named Fucher from the second half of the twelfth century until about 1260, when it was seized by the Earl of Gloucester. Kitchen Hall is shown as a distinct manor between 1290 and 1300 in the Harlow Cartulary (Fisher 1939) and was leased to a succession of tenants.

Brent Hall (New Hall Farm) may have been part of Eudo the Steward's holding in 1086. It subsequently passed the hands of several overlords until the estate escheated to the crown and became part of the Duchy of Lancaster, which in turn sub-let it. The timber-framed aisled barn to the south of the hall at Barnsley Cottage is medieval in origin, though the surviving structure is essentially 16th century in date, with some later rebuilding of walls and roof.

The tithe map of 1848 shows Laundry Farmhouse as having a possible moated enclosure, suggesting a medieval origin. The discovery of residual 13th/14th-century pottery in the original boundary ditch supports this possibility.

Four medieval sites were identified by fieldwalking in the development area. Fieldwalking site 8 is near the western edge of the development, at Perry Springs Wood. The remaining three (9, 10 and 11) are all in Old House Field. Site 9 is immediately south of Old House Wood, and is certainly associated with the medieval farmstead. The Old House excavation coincided with Site 10, but uncovered no medieval features. It is notable that all three of the medieval fieldwalking sites in Old House Field coincide with Roman fieldwalking concentrations. It is possible that the Roman boundaries and house plots survived as earthworks to influence the siting of the medieval farmstead. The absence of medieval features in the excavated trench is more difficult to explain, but may indicate that the Roman earthworks were the focus of some form of medieval activity on the periphery of the Old House farmstead.

In conclusion, the survey area in the medieval period was mixed agricultural land divided between five farmsteads: Kitchen Hall, Hubbards Hall, Brent Hall, Laundry Farm and Old House, of which only Old House fell wholly within the survey area.

### The post-medieval period (Fig. 31)

With the Dissolution of the Monasteries in 1536, the Abbey of St Edmund's ceased to be the major landholder in the area. There appears to have been a period of depression in the post-medieval period, with the market being held only sporadically; this coincides with a period of encroachment on, and further infilling of, the market area in Old Harlow. However, in contrast to the fortunes of the market, it was during the post-medieval period that Harlow rose to archaeological prominence due to its pottery industry, which was based around Potter Street, Latton Street, and towards Harlow Common, which supplied the bulk of the slipware pottery found in London. Examples of Harlow Metropolitan ware have also been found as far afield as

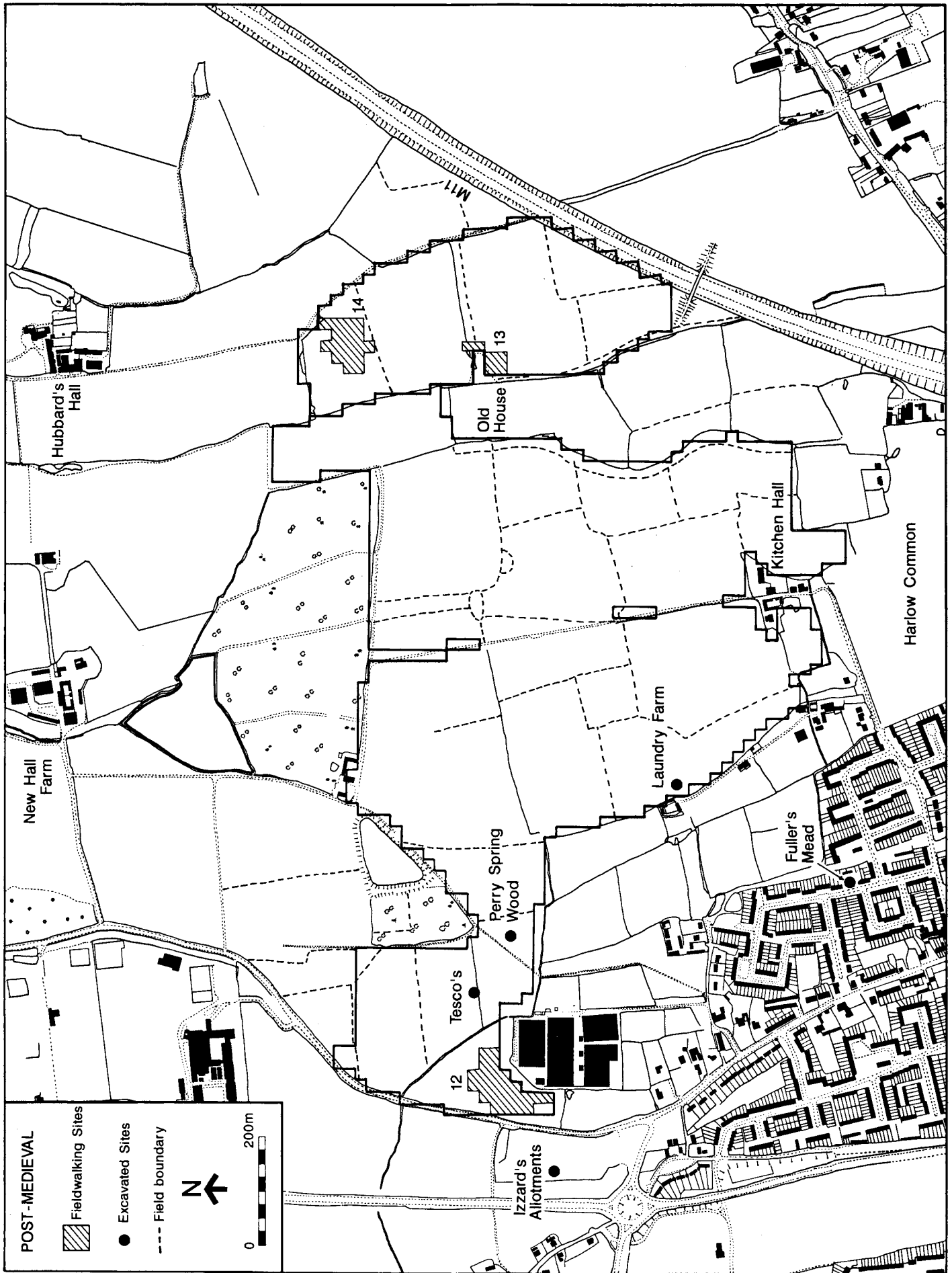


Fig. 31 Church Langley. Post-medieval (Reproduced by kind permission of Ordnance Survey. © Crown copyright NC/01/154)

New England and Virginia (Noel Hume 1969 and 1970).

The Dissolution had an affect on the land-ownership in the Church Langley area. Following the Reformation, the Bugges held Kitchen Hall and New Hall, whilst Hubbard's Hall was owned first by the Shaa's and then by the Reeves.

The field names recorded in the 1819 estate map for the area (Essex Record Office D/DAR T33) and the 1848 tithe map (Essex Record Office D/CT 164), give some indications of the land-use; those referred to as 'mead' or 'ley' were once pasture or meadowland. Others record the existence of cottages, as in 'croft' or 'cottage field'. The documentary evidence demonstrates that the major landscape elements were already in place by the early 16th century, including the division of the area between three main estates (Kitchen Hall, Hubbard's Hall and Brent Hall/New Hall), and three smaller farms (Old House, Laundry Farm and Barnsley Cottage). The tithe maps show an area subdivided into a patchwork of small fields, drove ways, with the original roadways from the moot mound at Mulberry Green down to Harlow Common and from Churchgate Street to Harlow Common.

The post-medieval period is represented in the fieldwalking record by three sites (12, 13 and 14). The largest of these was site 12, a concentration of pottery and saggar sherds bordering Potter Street. Its location suggests that it either represents a kiln dump or kiln site or a dwelling-place beside the road. The other two fieldwalking sites are on the eastern side of the development area in Old House Field, probably associated with the post-medieval dwelling of Old House.

An important aspect of the Church Langley project is the information it has provided on the on the pottery industry in Harlow which was based around Potter Street, Latton Street, and towards Harlow Common, evidenced by kiln sites and clay extraction pits (Newton and Bibbings 1960) which produced Metropolitan slipware, black-glazed ware and plain post-medieval red earthenware. Fieldwalking identified a concentration of kiln furniture and pottery of post-medieval date (Site 12) just to the south west of the Tesco development area which may represent a kiln site or dump.

At Perry Springs Wood, two large field-ditches as well as a number of shallow bowl-like depressions and a couple of gullies were dug in the 17th to 18th centuries. Over these features was then dumped a layer of re-deposited clay, also containing 17th to 18th-century pottery, including one kiln waster sherd. It is suggested that this re-deposited layer of mixed Boulder and London Clay is a waste product of the clay extraction pits dug for the pottery industry.

The evaluations and excavations at the Tesco site, adjacent to the Perry Springs Wood site, revealed a regular pattern of post-medieval field boundaries and/or drainage ditches running on an east-west alignment. F225 (Excavation Area B) produced a large quantity of post-medieval kiln wasters; however the feature itself

was the result of modern disturbance (probably post-1960). The finds therefore must derive from a kiln-waster dump located elsewhere, possibly from the pottery concentration immediately to the south-west at Fieldwalking Site 12 or maybe from the kiln sites to the south of the development area in Potter Street.

The Fullers Mead site contained a single large post-medieval feature, interpreted as a clay-extraction pit for the pottery industry. The pottery ranged in date from the 13th to the early 18th centuries, and included one kiln waster. The suggestion has been made that it represents centuries of accumulated debris from the pottery industry, which was back-filled as a single group into the quarry pit, in the 18th century.

The evidence for the Harlow post-medieval pottery industry at Church Langley is that the development is on the periphery of the main production centre, based at Potter Street. The features are either clay-extraction pits or dumps of unwanted clay debris. The finds also demonstrate the presence of pottery production dating to the 17th to 18th centuries, however the evidence is that the pottery has been introduced to the sites from elsewhere, rather than having been produced on site.

The excavation and watching-brief at Laundry Farm revealed the brick footings and original boundary ditch of the post-medieval farmhouse. The pottery suggests a 17th to 18th-century date.

### Acknowledgements

Thanks are due to the considerable practical and financial assistance given to this survey by the development consortium of Countryside Properties PLC, Croudace Homes, Woolwich Homes and Lovell Homes. Thanks are also due to Harlow Museum, especially Mr R. Bartlett for assistance and advice. D.D. Andrews, then of the ECC Archaeology Section was responsible for the inception of this project. Roy Harold supervised the 1989 programme of fieldwalking, his post was funded by Harlow District Council. Mr W. Davey provided much information on the post-medieval pottery industry. Illustrations are by I. Bell and N. Nethercoat.

*Author:* Maria Medlycott, Essex County Council Planning Division, County Hall, Chelmsford CM1 1LF

### APPENDIX 1

#### Summary of medieval and post-medieval pottery from Church Langley

By Helen Walker

A total of 45kg of pottery (including saggars) was recovered from five sites. The pottery from Laundry Farm and the Tesco development was fully reported on and includes illustrations. However, the Perry Springs Wood, Fullers Mead and Izzards allotments sites were assessments, and the pottery reports comprise only summaries of the spot-dated material.

All these excavations produced similar pottery consisting of small amounts of medieval Harlow ware, and quantities of post-medieval

red earthenware including examples of black-glazed ware and Metropolitan slipware. No kiln or associated features or structures were excavated, but the presence of kiln wasters and large quantities of saggar fragments (a type of kiln furniture) demonstrates that the pottery derives from production sites. Most of the pottery is probably re-deposited waster dump material. At the Tesco site, fragments from what appears to be part of a kiln structure were found.

Vessel types in medieval Harlow ware comprise cooking pots with flanged rims, and fragments from jugs, which are often slip-painted. It is most common at the Laundry Farm and Fullers Mead sites, but there is no evidence, apart from its relative concentration, that the medieval Harlow ware is from a production site. At the Fullers Mead site, there appear to be some examples of late medieval Harlow ware including 15th-century type lid-seated jar rims. Small amounts of other medieval wares were present at some sites, most notably sandy orange ware.

Saggars formed a very large component of some groups, and at the Tesco site, the size ranges of the saggars were determined and there was some evidence to show how the pots and the saggars were stacked inside the kiln. As would be expected, plain post-medieval red earthenware formed a large component of the assemblage, but there were few complete profiles and there was not enough material to characterise the output from the Harlow industry. Forms comprise mainly large bowls, and jar forms, including storage jars and tripod pipkins.

Metropolitan slipware and black-glazed ware is much less common. Metropolitan slipware forms comprise mainly sherds from dishes, with some more unusual vessel types from the Tesco site. The remains of tygs and cylindrical mugs are the most common black-glazed ware products.

#### Bibliography

- Allason-Jones, L. 1989 *Women in Roman Britain*, London
- Andrews, D. D. and Priddy, D. 1990 'Sheering', in Gilman, P. and Bennett, A. (eds) 'Work of the Essex County Council Archaeology Section, 1989' *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* 21, 118-25
- Ashdown, J. H., 1970 'A seventeenth-century pottery group and associated finds from a well at Potters Bar: part II: The pottery and other finds', *Hertfordshire Archaeol.* 2, 92-104
- Atkinson, M. 1992 *The Tesco Site, Church Langley, Harlow*, Archaeological Assessment Report. ECC Field Archaeology Unit
- Bateman, L.H. (ed.) 1969 *History of Harlow*, Harlow Development Corporation.
- Bedwin, O. and Bedwin, M. 1999 *A Roman Rural Malt House: Excavations at Stebbing Green, 1988*, East Anglian Archaeol. Occ. Paper. 6
- Bidwell, P.T. 1985 *The Roman Fort of Vindolanda at Chesterholm, Northumberland*, HBMCE Archaeol Rep 1
- Binford, L.R. 1981. *Bones: Ancient Men and Modern Myths*
- Bishop, M.C. and Coulston, J.C.N. 1993 *Roman Military Equipment*, London
- Branigan, K. 1977 *The Roman Villa in south-west England*, London
- Brassington, M. 1980 'Derby Racecourse kiln excavations 1972-3', *Antiquaries Journal* 60, 8-47.
- Bray, S. in prep. *Bronze Age Features at Dimmcoates, Cote Road, Wicken*, Cambridgeshire Archaeology Report.
- Brears, P.C.D. 1971 *The English Country Pottery Its History and techniques*, David & Charles: Newton Abbot
- Brent, J. 1861 'Roman cemeteries in Canterbury, with some conjectures concerning its earliest inhabitants', *Archaeol. Cantiana* 4, 27-42
- British Geological Survey 1987 *Geology of the country around Epping*, Sheet, memoir 240 (England and Wales). HMSO
- Brown, N. 1988 'A Late Bronze Age Enclosure at Lofts Farm, Essex', *Proc. Prehist. Soc.* 54, 249-303.
- Buckley, D.G. 1980 *Archaeology in Essex to AD 1500*, CBA Research Report No.34
- Buckley, V. (ed.) 1990 *Burnt offerings – International contributions to Burnt Mound Archaeology*, Wordwell Ltd.
- Burnham, B.C. and Wachter, J. 1990 *The 'Small Towns' of Roman Britain*, Batsford: London
- Collis, J. 1978 *Winchester excavations: Excavations in the suburbs and western parts of the town, Vol. II 1949-60*, Winchester City Museum, 70
- Conlon, R.F.B. 1973 'Holbrooks - an Iron Age and Romano-British Settlement', *Essex J.* 8 (2), 30-50
- Crummy, N. 1983 *The Roman small finds from excavations in Colchester 1971-9*. Colchester Archaeol. Rep. 3
- Crummy, P. 1993 'The cemeteries of Roman Colchester' in N. Crummy, P. Crummy & C. Crossan, *Excavations of Roman and later cemeteries, churches and monastic sites in Colchester, 1971-88* Colchester Archaeol. Rep. 9, 257-75
- Cunliffe, B. 1986 *Danebury. Anatomy of an Iron Age Hillfort*, Batsford: London
- Cunningham, C.M. 1985a 'A typology for post-Roman pottery in Essex', in Cunningham C.M. and Drury P.J., *Post-Medieval sites and their pottery: Moulsham Street, Chelmsford*, Chelmsford Archaeol. Trust Rep. 5, 1-16
- Cunningham, C.M. 1985b 'The Stock pottery', in Cunningham C.M. and Drury P.J. *Post-Medieval sites and their Pottery: Moulsham Street, Chelmsford*, Chelmsford Archaeol. Trust Rep. 5, 83-8
- Cunningham, C.M. 1985c 'The pottery', in Cunningham, C. M. and Drury, P. J., *Post-medieval sites and their pottery: Moulsham Street, Chelmsford*, Chelmsford Archaeol. Trust Rep.5, CBA Res. Rep. 54, 63-78
- Dannell, G.B and Wild, J.P. 1987 *Longthorpe II: The military works-depot: An episode in landscape history*, Britannia Mono. Ser. No. 8, 142-3
- Dannell, G.B. 1987 'Coarse pottery', in G.B. Dannell and J.P. Wild, *Longthorpe II, the military works depot: an episode in landscape history*, Britannia Monograph Series 8, London, 133-68.
- Darling, M.J. 1977 'Pottery from early military sites in western Britain' in J. Dore and K. Greene (eds.), *Roman Pottery Studies in Britain and Beyond: papers presented to John Gillam*, BAR Suppl. Series 30. Oxford
- Darling, M.J. 1993 *Caister-on-Sea excavations by Charles Green 1951-1955*, E. Anglian Archaeol. 60
- Davey, W. 1966 'Potteries of Latton, Essex', *Broadsheet of post-medieval Ceramics Research Group*, 3
- Davis, S.J.M. 1987 *The Archaeology of Animal Bones*, Batsford
- Dowker, G. 1893 'On "Romano-British" fictile vessels from Preston near Wingham', *Arch. Cant.* 20, 49-53
- Down, A. and Rule, M. 1971 *Chichester Excavations 1*, Chichester
- Drewett, P., Rudling, D. and Gardiner M. 1988 *The South-east to AD 1000. A Regional History of England*, Longman: London
- Drury, P.J. and Pratt, G.D. 1976 'The coarse pottery' in Drury, P.J. 'Braintree: Excavations and research, 1971-76', *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* 8, 1-143
- Ecclestone, J. 1993 *The Tesco site, Church Langley, Harlow, Essex: Archaeological Excavation*, ECC Field Archaeology Group report.
- Evison, V.I 1961 'Angles, Saxons and Jutes', *Med. Arch.* 5
- Fildes, V. 1986 *Breasts, bottles and babies: A history of infant feeding*, Edinburgh: University Press
- Fisher, J.L. 1939 'The Harlow Cartulary', *Trans. Essex Arch. Soc.* XXII 2, 239-71
- France, N.E and Gobel, B.M 1985 *The Romano-British Temple at Harlow*, West Essex Archaeol. Group
- Gaimster, D. 1997 'Regional decorative traditions in English post-medieval slipware' in Freestone, I., and Gaimster, D. (eds), *Pottery in the Making: World Ceramic Traditions* (British Museum Press, London), 128-33
- Germany, M. 1993 *Old House, Harlow, Essex: Watching-brief report*. ECC Field Archaeol. Group Report
- Gillam, J.P. 1963 'The coarse pottery' in K.A. Steer, 'Excavations at Mumrills Roman fort 1958-60', *Proc. Soc. Antiq. Scot.* 94 (1960-1), 86-132
- Goethert, K. 1991 'Die figürlichen Lampen, Statuettenlampen und Lampenfüller aus Ton nebst Kerzenhalter im Rhenischen Landesmuseum Trier', *Trierer Zeitschrift* 54, 117-215
- Going, C.J. unpub. *Hadham Wares form corpus*, 1992 version
- Going, C.J. 1987 *The Mansio and other sites in the south-eastern sector*

- of *Caesaromagus: The Roman pottery*, CBA Res. Rep. **62**
- Going, C.J. and Ford, B. 1988 'Romano-British pottery' in Wickenden, N.P., *Excavations at Great Dunmow, Essex: A Romano-British Small Town in the Trinovantian Civitas*, E. Anglian Archaeol. **41**, 60-76
- Green, M. 1986 *The Gods of the Celts*, Alan Sutton
- Greene, K. 1979 *Report on the Excavations at Usk, 1965-1976: The Pre-Flavian Fine wares*, Cardiff.
- Hawkes, C.F.C. and Hull, M. R. 1947 *Camulodunum: First report on the excavations at Colchester 1930-1939*, Rep. Res. Comm. Soc. Antiq. London, **14**
- Hayfield, C. (ed.) 1980 *Fieldwalking as a method of archaeological research*, London: Dept. of Environment
- Healey, E. 1987 'Flint' in Buckley D.G. et al, *Excavation of a Cropmark Enclosure Complex at Woodham Walter, Essex, 1976*, E. Anglian Archaeol. **33**
- Hildyard, R., 1985 *Browne Mugs: English Brown Stoneware*, London: Victoria and Albert Museum
- Hodder, I. 1975 *Wendens Ambo*, Britannia **6**, 265
- Hodgkinson, H.R. 1930 'Note on excavations in the Roman Cemetery at Wall, October 1927', *Trans. Birmingham Warwickshire Archaeol. Soc.* **52**, 308-11
- Holbrook, N. and Bidwell, P.T. 1991 *Roman Finds from Exeter*, Exeter Archaeol. Rep. **4**
- Holmes, E.F. 1988 *Sewing Thimbles 700-1700*, Finds Research Group Datasheet **9**
- Howe, M.D., Perrin, J.R. and Mackreth, D.F. 1980 *Roman pottery from the Nene Valley: a guide*, Peterborough Museum Occ. Pap. **2**
- Hull, M.R. 1958 *Roman Colchester*, Rep. Res. Comm. Soc. Antiq. **20**, London
- Hutton, R. 1991 *The Pagan Religions of the Ancient British Isles: Their Nature and Legacy*, BCA
- Isings, C. 1957 *Roman Glass from dated finds*, Groningen
- Jackson, R. 1985 'Cosmetic Sets from Late Iron Age and Roman Britain', *Britannia* **XVI**, 165-92
- Johnston, D.E. 1972 'A Roman Building at Chalk, near Gravesend', *Britannia* **3**, 112-48
- Jones, D.M. and Rhodes, M. 1980 *Excavations at Billingsgate Buildings Triangle, Lower Thames Street, London, 1974*
- Kempe, A.J. 1836 'Account of the collection of sepulchral Vessels found in 1821, in a Roman Ustrinum, at Litlington, near Royston', *Archaeologia* **26**, 368-76
- Luff, R.M. 1994 *Animal Remains in Archaeology*, Shire Archaeology
- MacGregor, A. 1985 *Bone, Antler, Ivory and Horn*, Croom Helm
- Manning, W.H. 1981 *Usk: The Fortress excavations 1968-71*, University of Wales Press, 206
- Martin, T.S. 1997 'Two Roman ceramic spouted vessels from Essex', *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* **28**, 281-2
- May, T. 1930 *Catalogue of the Roman Pottery in the Colchester and Essex Museum*, Cambridge
- Meddens, F.M. and Redknap, M. 1992 'A group of kiln waste from Harding's Farm, Mill Green, Essex', *Medieval Ceramics*, 11-43
- Medlycott, M. and Bartlett, R. 1992 *Church Langley: Fieldwalking and watching-briefs*, ECC Field Arch. Group Report.
- Medlycott, M. and Germany M. 1994 'Archaeological fieldwalking in Essex, 1985-93: Interim results'. *Essex Archaeol. And Hist.* **25**, 14-27
- Millett, M. and Graham, D. 1986 *Excavations on the Romano-British Small Town at Neatham, Hampshire, 1969-79*, Hampshire Field Club Monog. **3**
- Monaghan, J. 1987 *Upchurch and Thameside Roman Pottery: A ceramic typology for northern Kent, first to third centuries AD*, Brit. Archaeol. Rep. **173**
- Moorhouse, S. and Slowikowski, A. 1992 'The pottery' in Moorhouse, S. and Roberts, I., *Wrenthorpe Potteries: Excavations of 16<sup>th</sup> and 17<sup>th</sup>-century Potting Tenements near Wakefield, 1983-86*, Yorkshire Archaeology Service
- Morant, P. 1768 *The History and Antiquities of the County of Essex*, reprint by EP Publishing 1978
- Morris, P. 1979 *Agricultural Buildings in Roman Britain*. BAR British Series **70**
- Newton, E.F. and Bibbings, E. 1960 'Seventeenth-century pottery sites at Harlow, Essex', *Trans. Essex Archaeol. Soc.* **25**, 358-77
- Noel Hume, I. 1969 *Pottery and Porcelain in Colonial Williamsburg's Archaeological Collections*. Williamsburg, Virginia. The Williamsburg Foundation
- Noël Hume, I., 1970 *Artifacts of Colonial America* (New York, Alfred A. Knopf)
- Pearce, J.E. and Vince, A.G. 1988 *A dated Type-Series of London Medieval Pottery Part 4: Surrey Whitewares*, Trans. London Middlesex Archaeol. Soc. Special paper no. 10
- Pearce J.E., Vince, A.G. and Jenner, M.A. 1985 'A dated type series of London medieval pottery, part two: London-type ware'. *Trans. London Middlesex Archaeol. Soc.* Special paper No. **6**
- Pearce J.E., Vince, A.G. and White, R. 1982 'A dated type-series of London medieval pottery, part one: Mill Green ware' *Trans. London Middlesex Archaeol. Soc.* **33**, 266-98
- Pearce, J. E. 1992 *Post-Medieval Pottery in London, 1500 - 1700 Volume 1 Border Wares*, London: HMSO
- Philpott, R. 1991 *Burial Practices in Roman Britain: A survey of grave treatment and furnishing. A.D.43-410*, BAR **219**, Oxford
- Philpott, R. 1991 *Burial Practices in Roman Britain: A survey of grave treatment and furnishing A.D. 43 - 410*, B.A.R. British Ser. **219**
- Ponsford, M. 1991 'Post-medieval Britain & Ireland in 1990', *Post-medieval Archaeol.* **25**, 115-69
- Rackham, J. 1994 *Animal Bones*, British Museum Press
- Rawes, B. 1985 'The Romano-British Site on the Portway, near Gloucester', *Trans Bristol Gloucestershire Archaeol. Soc.* **102**, 23-72
- Reaney, P.H. 1935 *The Place-names of Essex*, English Place-name Society, Cambridge: University Press.
- Rees, S. 1979 *Agricultural Implements in Prehistoric and Roman Britain*, BAR **69**
- Reidy, K. 1993 *Fullers Mead, Harlow: An archaeological watching-brief*, ECC Field Archaeol. Group Report.
- Rigby, V. 1986 'The stratified groups of Late Iron Age and Roman pottery' in Stead, I.M. and Rigby, V., *Baldock: The excavation of a Roman and pre-Roman settlement, 1968-72*, Britannia Monogr. Ser. **7**, 257-379
- Roberts, W.I. 1982 *Romano-Saxon Pottery*, BAR **106**
- Rodwell, K.A. 1988 *The prehistoric and Roman settlement at Kelvedon, Essex* CBA Res. Rep. **63**, London
- Rodwell, W.J. 1974 'The Orsett 'Cock' Cropmark Site', *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* **6**, 13-39
- Rodwell, W.J. 1978 'Stamp-decorated pottery of the early Roman period in Eastern England' in Arthur, P. and Marsh, G. (eds) *Early Fine Wares in Roman Britain*, BAR **57**, 225-92
- Rook, A.G. 1973 'Excavations at the Grange Romano-British Cemetery, Welwyn, 1967', *Hertfordshire Archaeology* **3**, 1-30
- Schmid, E. 1972 *Atlas of Animal Bones/Knochenatlas*, Elsevier
- Smith, J.A. 1873 'Notice of Ancient Feeding Bottles for Infants', *Proc. Soc. Antiq. Scot.* **9**, 106-16
- Stead, I.M. and Rigby, V. 1989 *Verulamium: The King Harry Lane site*, English Heritage Archaeol. Rep. No. **12**
- Thompson, I. 1982 *Grog-tempered 'Belgic' pottery of south-eastern England*, BAR British Series **108**, i-iii
- Toller, H. 1986 'Other pottery' in Draper, J., 'Excavations at Great Chesterford, Essex, 1953-5', *Proc. Cambridge Antiq. Soc.* **75**, 3-41
- Tyers, P. 1983 *Verulamium Region type white-ware fabrics from London: Early Roman pottery from the City of London: 4*, Dept. of Urban Archaeology, Museum of London
- Wade-Martins, P. 1983 'Two Post-Medieval Earthenware Pottery groups from Fulmodeston', *E. Anglian Archaeol.* **19**
- Walker, H. 1991 'The medieval and later pottery', in Andrews, D.D., 'An archaeological sequence at edge of Harlow marketplace', *Essex Archaeol. Hist.*, **22**, 107-12
- Walker, H. forthcoming 'Medieval and post-medieval pottery, in Havis R. and Brooks H., *Excavations at Stansted Airport*, E. Anglian Archaeol.
- Way, T. 1993 Archive Report on flints from evaluations at Barrington.
- Webster, P.V. 1981 'The Feeding Cup, an unusual samian form' in A.C. and A.S Anderson (eds), *Roman Pottery Research in Britain*



- and North-West Europe*, B.A.R. **S123**, 249-55
- Weller, S.G.P. 1974 'A late fourth-century cremation from Billericay, Essex.', *Antiquaries J.* **54**, 282-5
- Whiting, the late W., Hawley, Lieut.-Col. W, and May, T. 1931  
*Report on the Excavation of the Roman Cemetery at Ospringe, Kent*, Rep. Res. Comm. Soc. Antiquaries of London, **8**. Oxford.
- Wickenden, N.P. 1988 *Excavations at Great Dunmow, Essex*, E. Anglian Archaeol. **41**
- Wilkinson, P.M. and Clark, F.R. 1985 'The Coarse Pottery' in France, N.E. and Gobel, B.M. 'The Romano-British Temple at Harlow', West Essex Archaeological Group
- Willson, J. 1981 'Catalogue of the Coarse Pottery', in Philp, B., *The Excavation of the Roman Forts of the Classis Britannica at Dover, 1970-1977*, Kent Monograph Ser **3**, 207-49
- Wilson, M.G. 1972 'The Other Pottery', in Frere, S. *Vérolanium Excavations I*, Res. Rep. Comm. Soc. Antiq. London **28**, 263-370
- Wilson, M.G. 1984 'The Other Pottery', in Frere, S. *Vérolanium Excavations, III*, Oxford Univ. Comm. Archaeol. Monograph **1**, 200-63
- Woodfield, P. 1966 'Barcombe Hill, Thorngrifton' *Archaeol. Aeliana 4 ser 44*, 71-7
- Wymer, J. 1991 'Flint' in Davies, J.A, Gregory, T., Lawson, A.J., Rickett, R. and Rodgerson, A., *The Iron Age Forts of Norfolk*, E. Anglian Archaeol. **54**
- Young, C.J. 1977 *The Roman Pottery Industry of the Oxford Region*, BAR **43**

*The Society is extremely grateful to Essex County Council for a generous grant towards the cost of publishing this report*

## Late Iron Age and Roman sites at Grenville Road and College Road, Braintree

by A Garwood and N. J. Lavender

with contributions by H. Major, T.S. Martin, P. McMichael, A.J. Wade, H. Walker and S. Willis

*The archaeological evaluation and subsequent watching briefs on the Grenville Road and College Road sites revealed evidence of Late Iron Age (LIA) occupation and a successive Roman settlement sharing an area to the west of London Road and near the intersection with Roman Stane Street. Although LIA pottery and features, dating to the 1<sup>st</sup> century BC occurred at both sites, the bulk of the evidence dates from the early Roman period, including the remnants of two possible buildings (one aisled), a well, and a metalled road surface. The evidence points towards a Roman settlement with origins in 1st century AD, that enjoyed a sustained period of activity during 2nd to early 3rd century, and which by the middle of the 3rd century AD, appears to have fallen into decline.*

### Introduction

This report describes and integrates the results of a series of archaeological evaluations and watching briefs, undertaken by the Essex County Council Field Archaeology Unit in 1995 and 1997, on two distinct sites within the historic core of Braintree (Fig. 1). Both sites were situated to the south of Rayne Road, a thoroughfare thought to be the principal western approach to the Roman town (Havis 1993, 63), and to the west of London Road, formerly the Roman road to Chelmsford and London. Lying on a clay-capped ridge between the rivers Brain and Pant (or Blackwater) and at a height of *c.* 70m OD, the underlying geology comprised mixed clay and gravel, suggestive of inter-riverine glacio-fluvial deposition. The College Road site (TL 7528 2304), which had remained largely unbuilt, was formerly an orchard and garden, while the Grenville Road site (TL7538 2289) comprised a single bungalow standing centrally within a large corner plot.

The expansion and development of Braintree during the 19th century yielded sparse archaeological evidence of Early Iron Age occupation but more abundant evidence of settlement in the Late Iron Age. A large Late Iron Age earthwork, which was apparently avoided by both Roman Stane Street (A 120) and London Road (A 131), was thought to be a small *oppidum* or proto-urban centre (Eddy 1983). However, excavations within the earthwork have found little evidence of domestic occupation, while recent discoveries in Braintree suggest that the Late Iron Age settlement was more likely to be centred to the north and west of London Road (Havis 1993, 61).

Late Iron Age settlement was succeeded by a small

Roman town at the intersection of the two principal roads. This settlement continued in use throughout the Roman period, spreading along the main road arteries, particularly to the south and west. Evidence suggests that the early Roman town lay in the area of Iron Age settlement between London Road and Rayne Road, where the remains of 1st-century timber-framed buildings were recorded at the Fountain and Boars Head sites (Hope 1983; 1987). Extensive archaeological remains, including occupation evidence of Roman as well as prehistoric and Saxon periods, were identified prior to the construction of Pierrefitte Way. Excavations by the Brain Valley Archaeological Society (BVAS) at 65 Rayne Road (EHCR 16356, 16357) identified sequences of Roman buildings parallel to both the Roman roads represented by Rayne Road and London Road. An area of industrial activity was excavated by Braintree District Council (BDC), at College House, London Road (Bakewell 1988), and by the BVAS at Letch's Yard. Further Roman activity was recorded in the area of Sandpit Road (Smoothy 1988), and during the construction of houses on Rayne Road (EHCR 6336, 6337). As a result of excavations during the early 1970s, one of the cemeteries serving the Roman town (consisting exclusively of cremation burials), was identified in the area of Grenville Road and College Roads (EHCR 6302, 6322; Drury 1976).

### Grenville Road (BT26)

#### *The Site*

Four evaluation trenches (A-D in Fig. 2) were excavated across the site in order to identify and date Roman and Late Iron Age settlement activity, and to establish whether these sites lay within the town or its postulated cemeteries. The evaluation not only uncovered archaeological deposits from the expected periods, including LIA and Roman boundaries, it also identified part of a large Roman aisled building. Modern pockets of disturbance in the form of 19th/ 20th-century quarrying activity, were present across the site, appearing in both evaluation trench C and in building plot 2. No archaeological features were recognised in trench D. Due primarily to the positive results uncovered in trenches A-C, it was recommended that an archaeological watching brief on the subsequent groundworks should be undertaken. This further work identified some associated archaeological features, but was mainly unproductive.

IRON AGE AND ROMAN OCCUPATION AT BRAINTREE

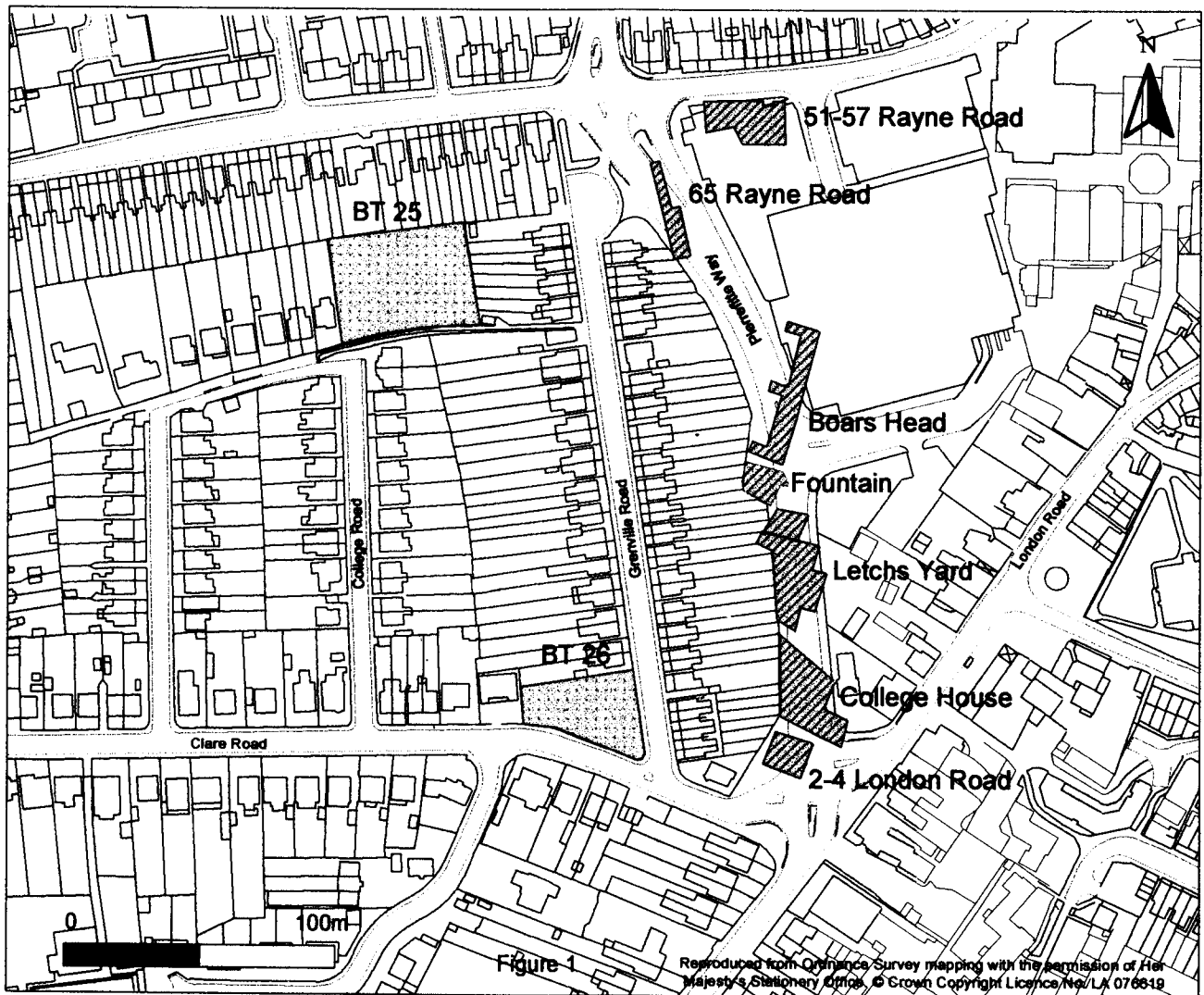
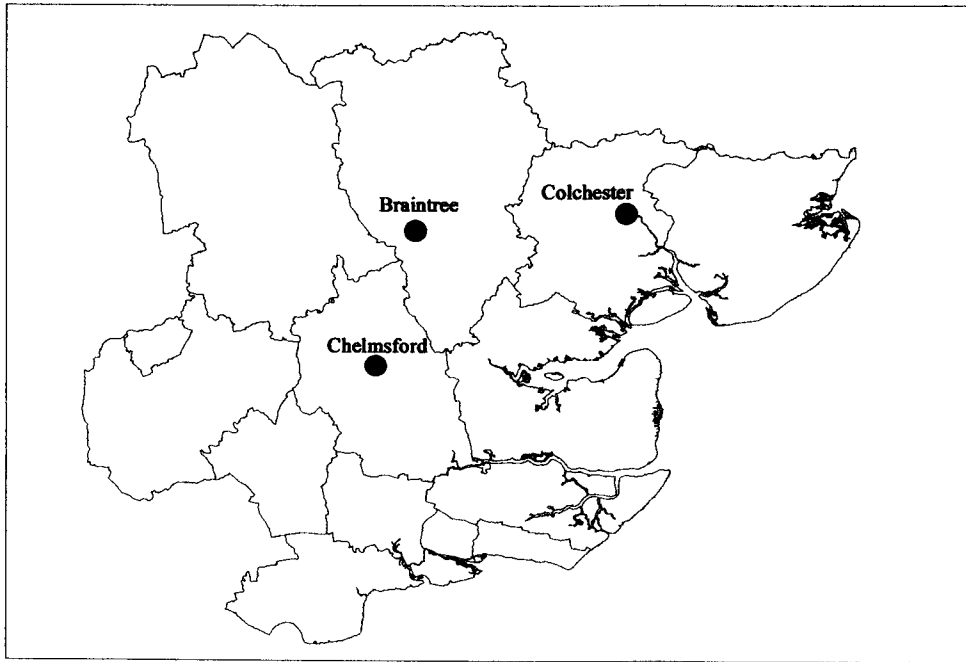


Fig. 1 Location of Grenville Road and College Road sites.  
(Reproduced by kind permission of Ordnance Survey. © Crown copyright NC/01/154)

*Late Iron Age (1st century BC)*

Located at the southern end of the trench A and aligned north-east to south-west (Fig. 2), was a small shallow-sided ditch (5) that was truncated on its southern side by a modern feature (3). Excavation revealed a single dark silty fill (6) which produced a large diagnostic assemblage of pottery that firmly dates the ditch to the Late Iron Age, and specifically to the 1st century BC.

*Early-Mid Roman (1st – late 2nd/early 3rd century)*

A boundary ditch aligned north-west to south-east was uncovered in both trenches B and C (Figs 2, 3). The two sections recorded in trench B revealed distinctly different profiles. The upper portion of ditch (7) had been disturbed by modern groundworks, which left only the base of the ditch intact. Although pottery was present, the high probability of contamination renders it unreliable. A more accurate representation survives to the east in section (20). Here the ditch was larger, measuring 0.8m in depth with moderately steep sides, and a single fill (21) producing Roman tile and residual Late Iron Age pottery. Only a small length of this ditch continued into trench C as most of the feature lay beyond the southern limits of the trench. This is reflected in two further segments (14) and (24), both of which were shallow in profile and depth, but contained similar fills and Romanised pottery. Contamination by disturbance and the paucity of finds presents problems when attempting to date the feature, but from the assemblage recovered and from its relationship to surrounding features, it can be attributed an early Roman date. Appearing to cut the ditch to its north, but only seen in section, was a small, steep-sided rubbish

pit, (29). Containing only two contexts, its basal fill (28) yielded an assemblage of pottery that suggested it was filled and out of use by mid-late 2nd century AD.

Set 6.8m apart and to the northern side of the boundary ditch in trench C, were two large post-pits (18) and (35). Measuring 1.54m wide and 0.94m deep, post-pit (18) was circular in plan, with near vertical-sides and a flat base. It contained four fills, of which contexts (15) and (17) produced post-conquest pottery. Dumped in the base was an insubstantial deposit of organic material, fill (17), which yielded small amounts of Romanised pottery, while above was a compact soil, context (16), used as packing for the base of a post. Located approximately centrally was a vertical sided post-pipe (10) that contained fill (9). This produced some undiagnostic Roman pottery and large amounts of scorched building materials, such as *imbrex*, *tegulae*, tile *tesserae*, and mortar.

Post-pit 35 was of similar size and form as pit 18. It measured 1.62m wide, 1.02m deep and contained three fills, contexts (33), (34) and (36). The upper fill (33) produced pottery that can be firmly dated to the Roman period. Lying at its base was a sandy weathering deposit, context (36), whose occurrence, as with the organic deposit in pit (18), suggests both pits were left open before the introduction of their posts. Above lay packing material (34 = 16). Central to the pit was a post-pipe (31), which measured 0.6m in diameter and produced, as (9), large amounts of building debris and some Romanised pottery. Lying centrally between the post-pits was a small moderately steep-sided circular post-hole (12), which from its location, may have also been associated with the building's construction. As both

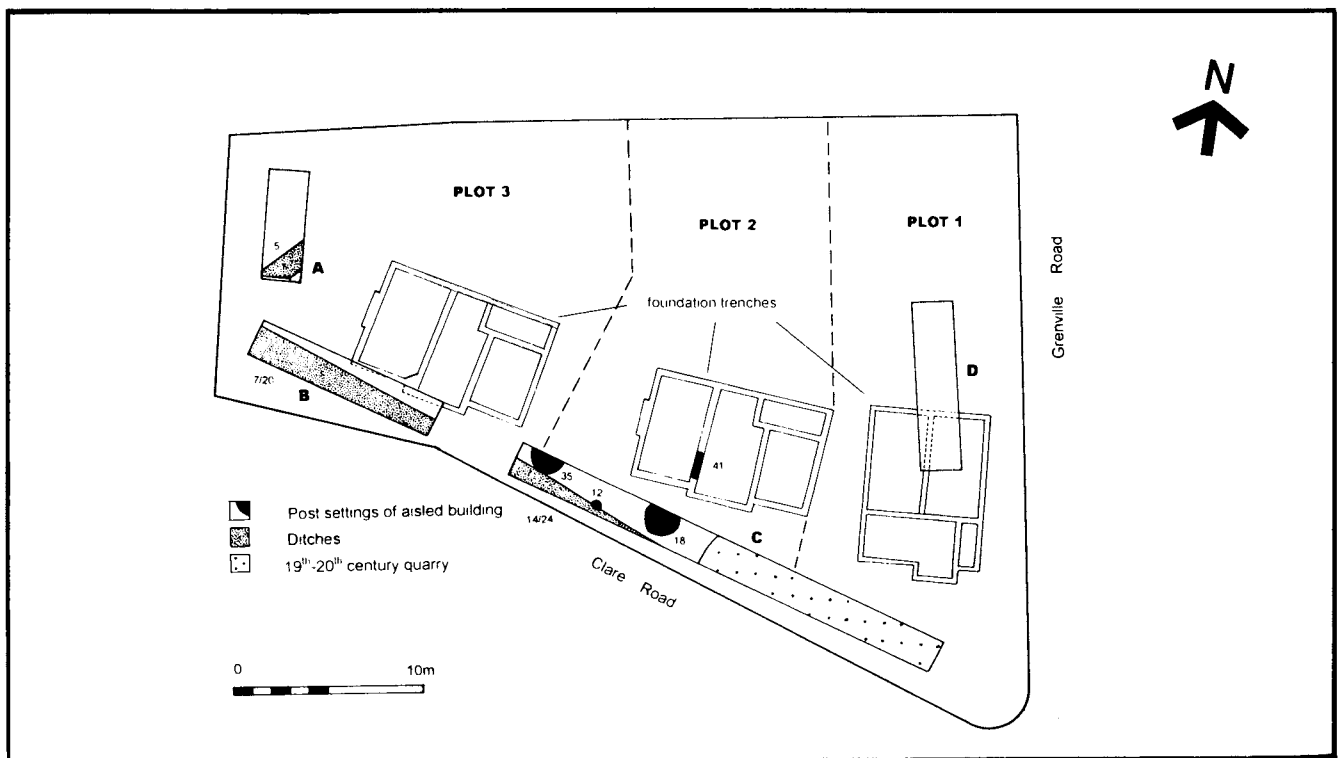


Fig. 2 Grenville Road, Braintree. Trench and plot location

**Trench C**

Plan and Sections

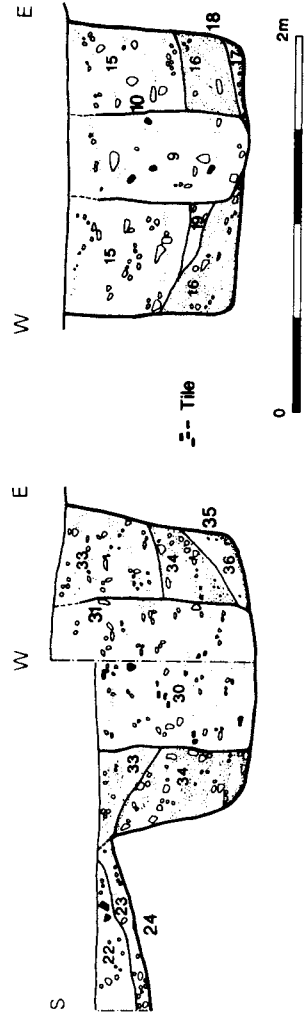
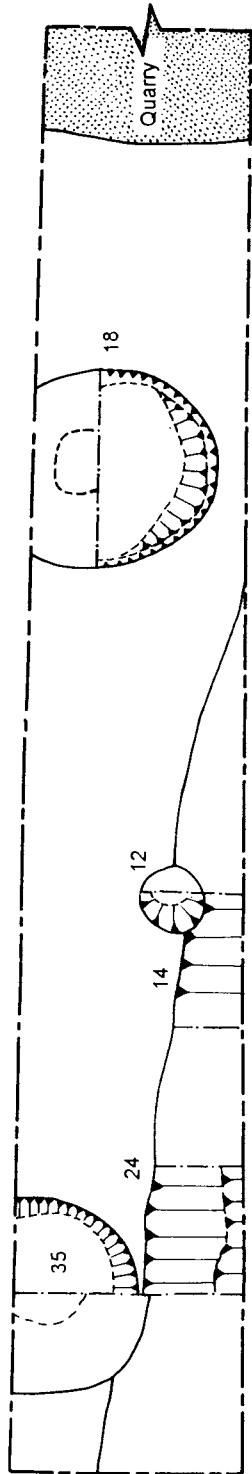


Fig. 3 Grenville Road, Braintree. Trench C; plan and sections

post-pipes contained no *in situ* wood or charcoal concentrations, showed no evidence of removal through excavation, and were filled with the same character fills and materials, it seems likely that the posts were pulled out simultaneously, after the mid 3rd century. This, from scorched nature of the materials recovered, may have occurred after it, or a neighbouring building, was destroyed by fire.

Further evidence of this building was revealed during the excavation of the foundation trenches, monitored as part of a watching brief (Fig. 2). Another large circular post pit (41) of comparable dimensions appeared *c.* 3 metres to the north of pit (18), and in a north-south aligned foundation trench of building plot 2. Although it remained unexcavated its position within the trench suggest it was integral to a line of earth-fast posts that formed the eastern nave wall.

**Discussion**

The recovery of a substantial group of unabraded LIA pottery from ditch (5) suggests that this feature was not merely an outlying field boundary on the fringe of settlement, but may have formed part of a network of ditched enclosures within an active 1st-century BC settlement.

The position and orientation of ditch (7), lying

perpendicular to London Road and parallel to a minor road previously uncovered to the north (Havis 1993, 63) suggests that the ditch may have served as a roadside ditch or property boundary delineating the southern limits of a settlement area.

The two large post-pits, which both appear to respect this boundary, were excavated to receive the nave posts of a large aisled building. The distance between the pits measured 6.8m, with posts set the length of the long walls at *c.*3m intervals. These dimensions compare favourably with recognised dimensions of known aisled buildings, of which the majority have naves between 5m and 7m wide (Morris 1979). Although the actual length of this building remains unknown, 30% of a sample of fifty-three aisled buildings that were studied, were twice as long as wide (Morris 1979). Therefore the nave may measure between 12-14m in length. Furthermore, there are similarities between the remains of this building and that of a late 3rd-century aisled building (368) recently excavated at Great Hолts Farm, Boreham (Germany in prep). The nave of this building (368) was *c.* 6.3m wide with posts set into post-pits measuring up to 1.58m in diameter and 0.6m in depth (Fig. 4). Although these pits were shallower due to truncation, the dimensions and characteristics of the post-pits, their spacing and the size

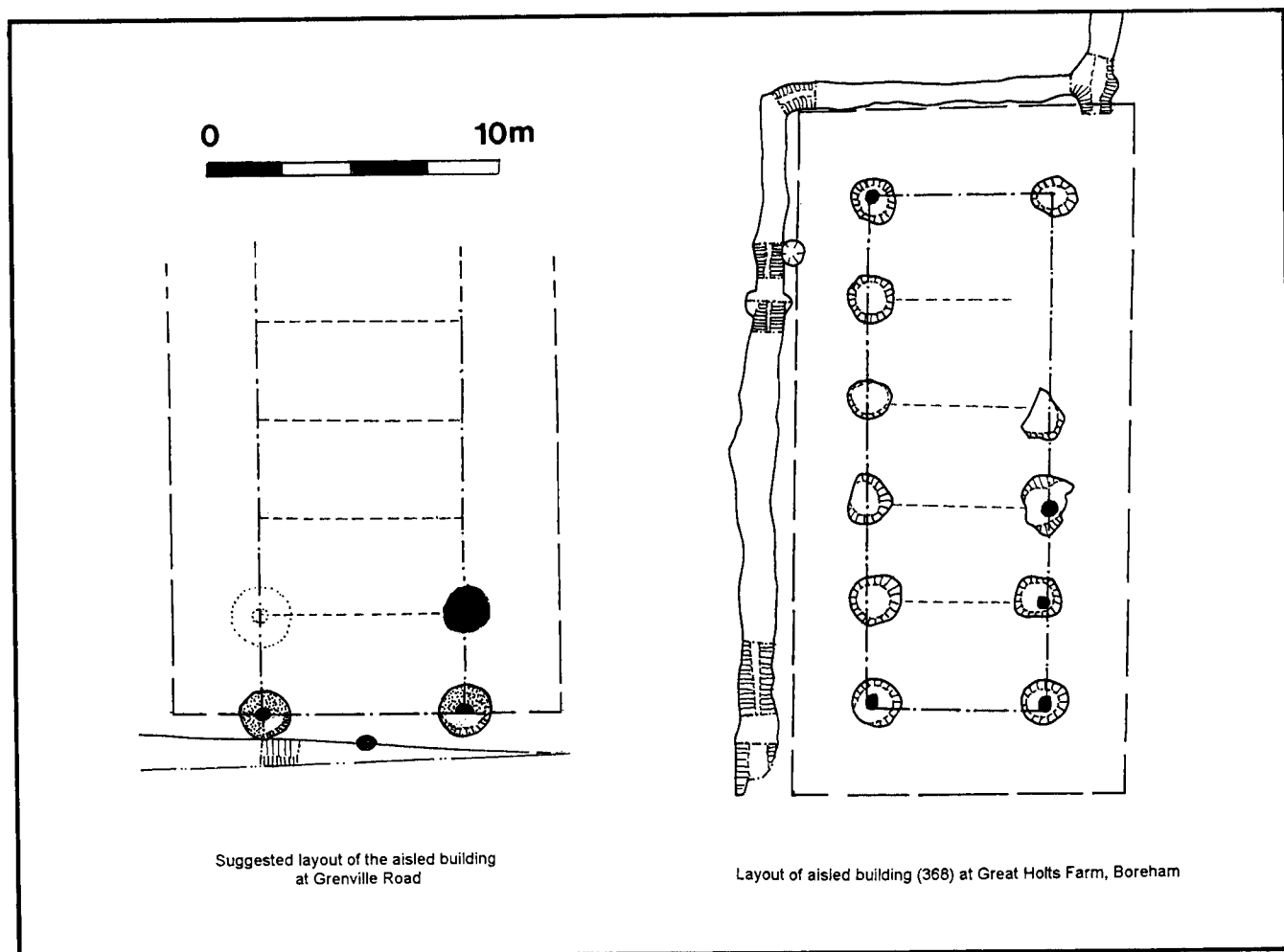


Fig. 4 Grenville Road, Braintree.  
Suggested layout of Roman aisled building, compared with known structure at Great Hолts Farm, Boreham

of the nave are very similar. It is not possible to confidently suggest the function or status of the building at Grenville Road, as aisled buildings can be main domestic accommodation, subsidiary buildings to a villa (as at Great Holts Farm) or a building where use is wholly or principally agricultural. However, the range of the material recovered from the post-pipes suggests that a higher status building with solid footings may have been present within the immediate area, and that the aisled building itself was a subsidiary structure within a domestic complex.

**College Road (BT25)**

*The Site*

Four trenches (A-D in Fig. 5) were positioned to provide optimum coverage of the site whilst avoiding parts of the area most likely to be disturbed by tree roots. Archaeological features were revealed in all four trenches, as was both early Roman and post-medieval buried soil horizons. The Roman horizons (22 and 207) were both cut by the majority of features and survived to a depth of 0.2m in trenches A and C, while a considerable post-medieval make-up (13,113, 205 and 320) measuring from 0.32-0.40m thick, sealed all Roman deposits across the site. Specifically, the main Roman features included ditches, a well, a possible building and a metallised surface. As was the case with the Grenville Road evaluation, the significance of the

archaeological deposits led to a watching brief on any subsequent groundworks.

*Roman (mid 1st to early 2nd century)*

Even though LIA pottery occurred as a residual element on site, the earliest excavated features were early Roman in date, of which both appeared in trench A (Figs 5, 6). A possible linear feature (7), which was truncated on its south-western side by post-medieval pit (3) produced pottery dating to the mid-1st to early-2nd century. While crossing the trench to the east on a north-west to south-east alignment were the shallow remnants of a ditch (2) that contained early Roman pottery.

*Roman (2nd-early-mid 3rd century)*

To the west of ditch (2) was a north-south aligned ditch (8) (Fig.6) which failed to produce any diagnostic finds, but its stratigraphic relationship, cutting both a buried Roman soil horizon (22) and the fill of feature (7) suggests that it dates from the early-mid 2nd century onward.

To the south in trench B, was a shallow sub-circular pit (102) (Fig. 7), measuring 2.6m in width, with a central steep-sided shaft, 1.8m in diameter. Only the upper backfill deposits of (102) were removed before excavation ceased for safety reasons. However, from its character, particularly the weathering cone and central shaft, the feature probably represents the top of a well. The large quantities of Roman pottery retrieved suggest

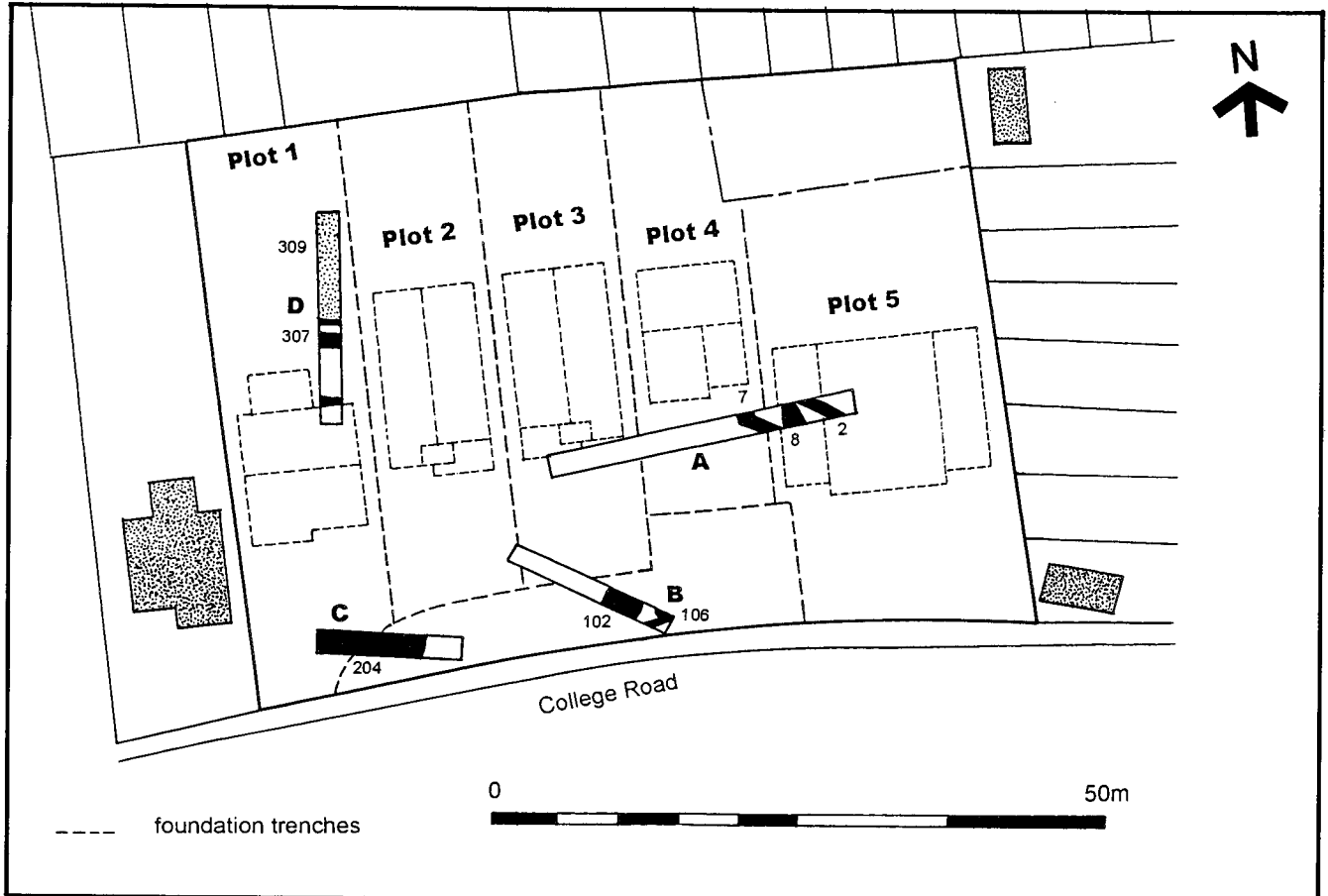


Fig. 5 College Road, Braintree. Trench and plot location

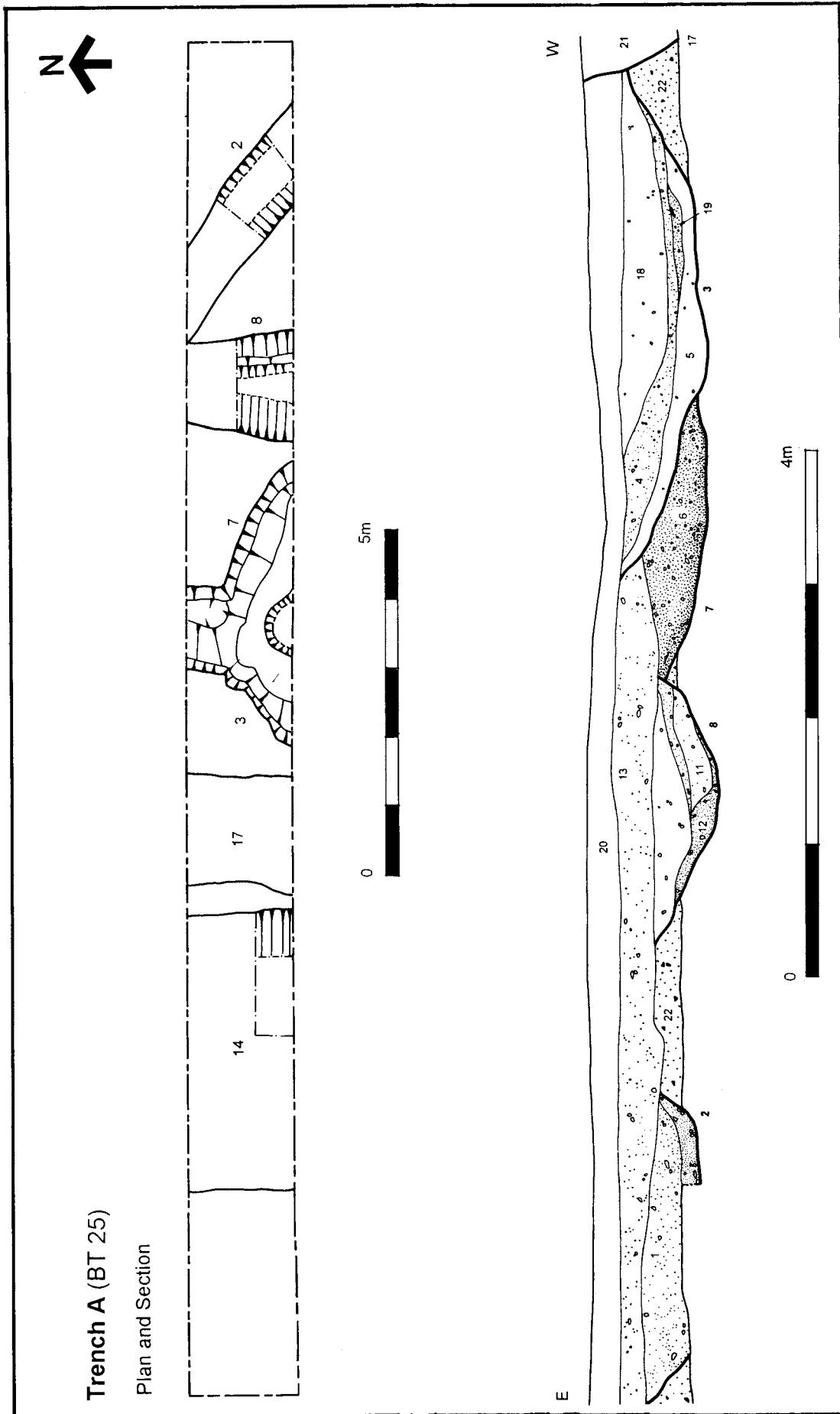


Fig. 6 College Road, Braintree. Trench A; plan and sections



that it fell into disuse and was backfilled in the first half of the 3rd century. Immediately east of the well was a small pit (104), measuring 1.1m in diameter, containing pottery of a similar date range to the well.

A large feature (204) measuring at least 7m wide and 0.7m deep was located toward the south-western corner of trench C. Excavation revealed a steep eastern edge and an uneven base, the irregularity of which is suggestive of quarrying. Pottery recovered from its backfill reveals that the feature was in use up to the first half of the 3rd century.

A ditch (307), located towards the north-eastern corner of the site, in trench D), produced a large assemblage of pottery from its upper fill (308), that confirmed it had ceased to function by to the mid 3rd century. Immediately to the north and possibly associated with (307), was a metallised surface (309). Measuring over 6m wide and up to 0.25m thick, it was laid directly onto the natural substratum, which had been purposefully levelled to receive it. The main component of the surface consisted of evenly sized small to medium rounded pebbles, although a suggestion of larger stones close to the surface was discernible. Two linear east-west aligned tracks (315 and 317) suggestive of continued use by a wheeled vehicle, was clearly visible on the surface, and showed evidence in some areas, of patching with a gravel of an inferior quality (316 and 318). Along the southern edge of the surface was a steep-sided gully (313), 0.30m deep, that appears to have been cut for the purposes of additional drainage. Although the extent of the surface was not clearly defined, its character and the presence of features such as the linear traces of wear, the drainage gully and the ditch all suggest its use as a road surface. Neither the metallised surface nor gully yielded any dating evidence, but both were sealed by a Roman buried soil horizon (320).

To the south of (309) and (307), remnants of a timber structure, lying parallel to Rayne Road were uncovered (Fig. 8). This evidence comprised a narrow,

steep-sided slot (304) 0.70m wide and 0.45m deep, which terminated in a posthole (305) 0.50m wide and 0.50m deep. With no discernible difference between the fills of the two features, the suggestion that they fell into disuse at the same time, is supported by the recovery of early 3rd-century pottery, and flint nodules and septaria blocks (*c.*100-250mm), from both features. The flint and septaria may have originally been used as packing for a post setting, which was later disturbed and redeposited into the trench during the removal of the post.

#### *Post-medieval*

All later features were cut through dark brown clayey silt layers (13=133=320=205) present in each trench. Appearing centrally in trench A was a large pit (3) that measured at least 2.65m in diameter and *c.*0.7m in depth. Cut by modern ditch (17) to its west and cutting earlier ditch (7), the shallow-sided pit produced pottery from its basal fill (5), that dated to the 17th century or later.

#### *Watching brief*

The watching brief was undertaken only after the foundations of the first two plots had been completed and as and when the foundation trenches for building plots three to five were excavated. Surprisingly little recognisable archaeological evidence was revealed, but Roman soil horizons and remnants of three ditches, two pits and a post hole appeared in plots three and five. Of the features recorded in plot three only a ditch located in the easternmost footing trench and a shallow pit set centrally within the plot, yielded Roman pottery. From the three features detected in the easternmost footings of plot five, only a single ditch, produced any amounts of stratified Roman pottery, albeit undiagnostic in form. Although the ditches revealed in these plots appeared to be aligned east-west, only one extended across the entire site, being recognised in plot 3, and in trench A as ditch (2).

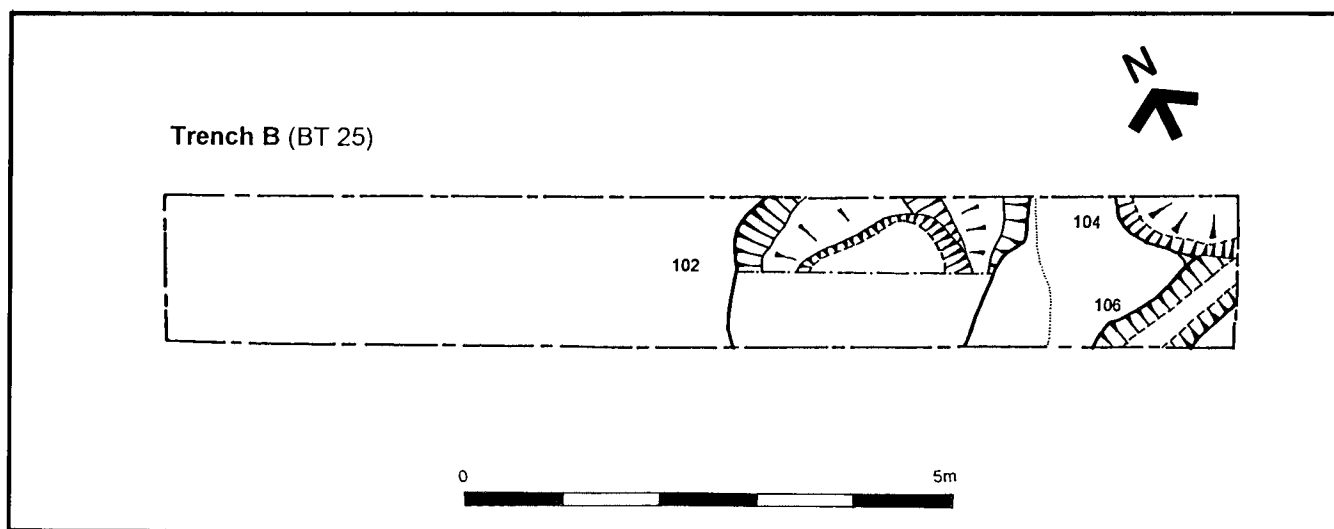


Fig. 7 College Road, Braintree. Trench B; plan

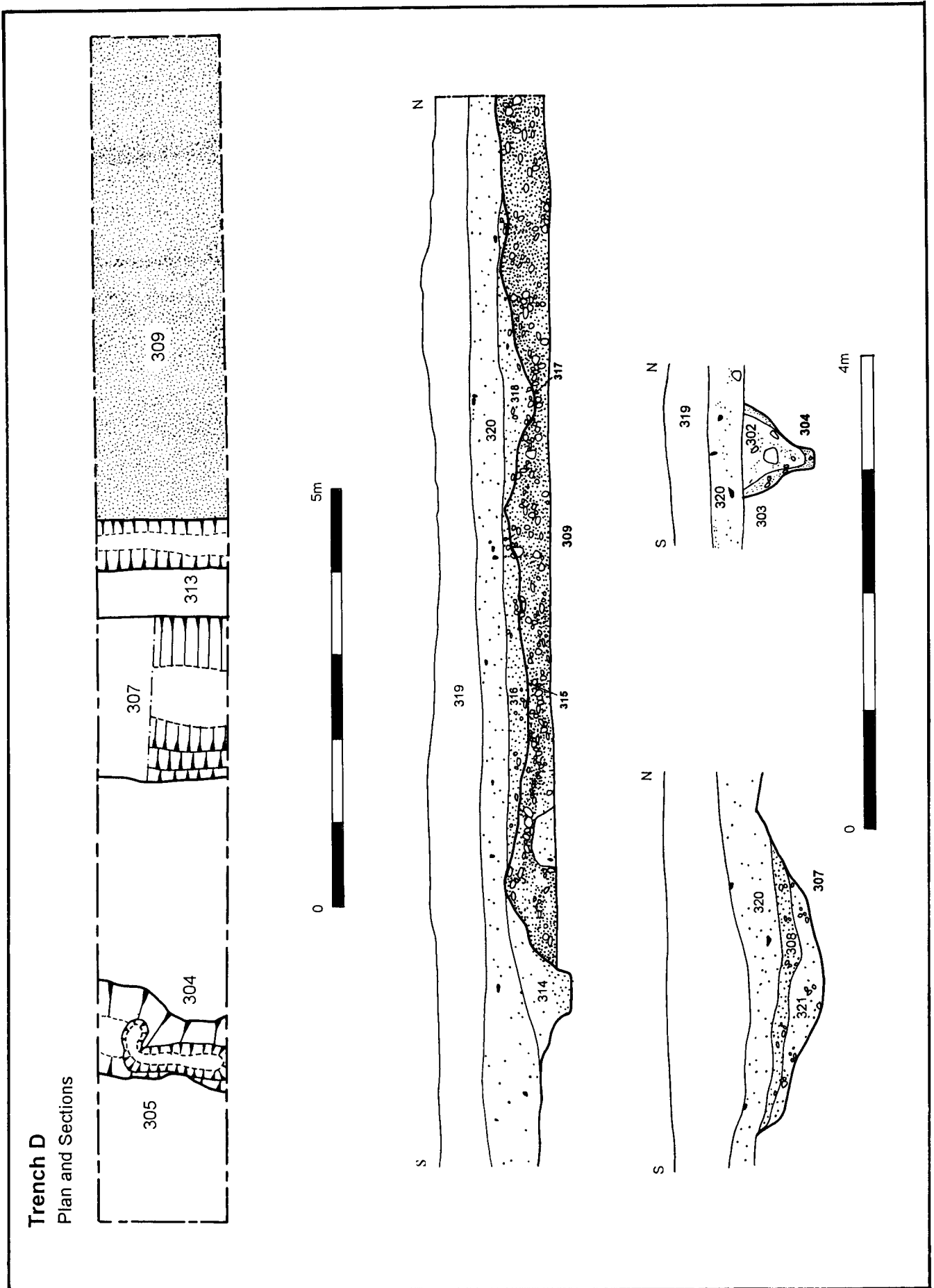


Fig. 8 College Road, Braintree. Trench D; plan and sections.

## Discussion

The presence of Late Iron Age material, albeit as a residual element, at the College Road site, further supports the evidence already uncovered Grenville Road and the excavations of Hope and Bakewell, that the earliest phase of the town lay in this area. The next main period of activity on site undoubtedly dates from the early Roman period through to the mid-3rd century. Lying parallel to Rayne Road are the remains of a timber building, that appears to respect a possible road surface onto which it may have fronted, and as with many of the features on both sites, appears to fall into decay by the earlier decades of the 3rd century. Its presence, along with the building at Grenville Road and 2nd to 3rd-century structural evidence revealed, prior to the construction of Pierrefitte Way, all point toward this part of Roman Braintree as being actively residential, and not solely an area of cemeteries on the fringe of settlement. The presence of other features such as the well and a metalled road surface further support this assumption. The road surface is of particular interest as if its axis is projected to the east and toward London Road, it aligns with a minor Roman road C excavated at the Boars Head site (Havis 1993). As with the Grenville Road site there appears to be a decline in activity after the mid-3rd century. This allows a build-up of post-Roman soil horizons to accumulate, before activity reappears, in the form of a rubbish pit, around the 17th century.

## The finds

### The Late Iron Age and Roman pottery

T.S. Martin

#### Introduction

Excavations at College Road and 7 Grenville Road produced a combined total of 10.3kg of pottery dating from the Late Iron Age to the 3rd century. This assemblage provides an important opportunity to study the development of Roman Braintree from its pottery. The pottery was classified using the Chelmsford typology (Going 1987, 2-54) and the *Camulodunum* type series (Hawkes and Hull 1947; Hull 1958; 1963) where forms are present that are not included in the former. Analysis is primarily concerned with identifying the variety of fabrics and forms, and providing dating evidence for site features. Quantification is by sherd count and weight by fabric for all contexts, while the Late Iron Age pottery from the fill of ditch 5 (BT26) was also quantified using Estimated Vessel Equivalents (EVEs) based on rim percentage present. This proved to be the only group worth analysing in this manner from either site. The fabrics identified are detailed below (numbers in bold after Going 1987); they are referred to using standard Essex County Council mnemonic codes as not all fabrics are found in Going.

AMP [E]	Early Amphora fabric, possibly Dressel 1 or Dressel 2-4	-
ASS	Dressel 20 amphorae (South Spanish)	<b>(55)</b>
BB1	Black-burnished ware 1	<b>(40)</b>
BB2	Black-burnished ware 2	<b>(41)</b>
BSW	Misc. black-surfaced wares	
BUF	Unspecified buff wares	<b>(31)</b>
CGSW	Central Gaulish samian ware (Lezoux)	<b>(60)</b>
COLB	Colchester buff wares	<b>(27)</b>
COLC	Colchester colour-coated ware	<b>(1)</b>
EGRHN	East Gaulish Rhenish ware	<b>(9)</b>

EGSW	East Gaulish samian ware (Rheinzabern)	<b>(60)</b>
ESH	Early shell-tempered ware	<b>(50)</b>
FMW	Fine micaceous ware of unknown origin	-
GRF	Fine grey wares	<b>(39)</b>
GROG	Grog-tempered wares	<b>(53)</b>
GRS	Sandy grey wares	<b>(47)</b>
HAR	Hadham grey wares	<b>(36)</b>
HAWG	Hadham white-slipped grey wares	-
HAX	Hadham oxidised red wares	<b>(4)</b>
MCA	?Local mica-dusted wares	<b>(11)</b>
MICW	Misc. Iron Age coarse wares*	-
NKG	North Kent grey ware	<b>(32)</b>
NVC	Nene Valley colour coat	<b>(2)</b>
RED	Misc. oxidised red wares	<b>(21)</b>
RED/BUF	Oxidised red/buff ware	-
RET	Retendon type flint-tempered grey wares	<b>(48)</b>
STOR	Storage jar fabrics	<b>(44)</b>
UCC	Unspecified colour-coated wares	-
WCS	Misc. white- or cream-slipped sandy red wares	<b>(15)</b>

#### 7 Grenville Road (BT26)

*Pattern of pottery deposition* A total of 196 sherds (6,092g) of Late Iron Age and early Roman pottery were recovered from thirteen contexts. Because of the small sample very little can be said about the pattern of pottery deposition. Some comparisons with the College Road site might be useful at this point (Tables 1 and 4). Feature fills account for nearly 95% of the whole assemblage a figure comparable to that seen at College Road. At both sites ditches formed the main feature category for the recovery of pottery dating evidence. This is in spite of the fact that a greater number of categories are represented at College Road. The small number of feature categories with pottery at Grenville Road may indicate that activity was much less intense and of a slightly different character compared with College Road. However, the bulk of the pottery from Grenville Road came from the single fill ditch 5 in Trench A. The pottery from this feature accounts for 65% of all pottery by sherd count. This material is discussed in detail below. Other than this the remainder of the stratified pottery was fairly evenly distributed with only one feature producing no Late Iron Age or Roman pottery dating evidence.

Context type	Feature type	Sherds	Wt(g)	% Wt	Av. Wt.
Cleaning layers & unstratified	-	8	175	5.11	21.8
Fill	Ditch/Gully	149	2468	72.07	16.5
	Pit	10	403	11.76	40.3
	Post-hole	29	378	11.03	13.0
(Fill total)	-	188	3249	94.88	17.2
<b>Totals</b>	-	<b>196</b>	<b>3424</b>	-	<b>17.4</b>

Table 1 The pattern of pottery deposition

#### Site chronology

The bulk of the pottery recovered from the evaluation belongs to the Late Pre-Roman Iron Age and early Roman periods (Table 2). Although much of the Romanised material is not closely datable and the assemblage rather small, the latest sherd from the site suggests that occupation may not have continued beyond the early 3rd century at the latest. This is almost certainly of some significance, as later pottery has been examined by the author from two sites in close proximity at College House and Boars Head (BBH). Both of these remain unpublished. However, it is the Late Pre-Roman Iron Age aspect of the Grenville Road site which stands out.

#### Pottery supply (Late Iron Age)

A total of 2.1kg (2.48 EVE) of Late Pre-Roman Iron Age date were recovered from the fill of ditch 5 in Trench A (Table 3). Nine individual vessels are represented seven of which are illustrated below (Fig. 9). Close dating is problematical and rests on several

Feature	Segment/within	Context	Pottery	Dating
Ditch 5	-	Fill 5	Misc. pottery: bowl CAM 217A type (GROG); jars CAM 254/G4.1 (GROG & ESH), G21(GROG), CAM 259 (GROG) G narrow-necked (FMW), G20 - type (RED/BUF); beaker H7 - butt-beaker type rim (GROG)	LIA
Ditch 7	Segment 7	Fill 8	Misc. pottery: jars CAM 254/G4.1 (ESH), G necked (GROG) amphora: AMP [E] spike ?Dressel 1 or Dressel 2-4	LIA
Ditch 7	Segment 14	Fill 13	Misc. pottery: beaker H27.2 (COLC)	late 2nd to early 3rd cent
Ditch 7	Segment 20	Fill 21	Misc. pottery: jar ?G (GROG)	LIA
Ditch 7	Segment 24	Fill 22	Misc. pottery: Fabrics RED, GRS, ESH & GROG	?early Roman
Post-pipe 10	within Post-pit 18	Fill 9	Misc. pottery: Fabrics STOR & GROG	?early Roman
Post-pit 18	-	Fill 15	Misc. pottery: Fabrics GRS & GROG	?early Roman
Post-pit 18	-	Fill 17	Misc. pottery: mortarium D (COLB); Fabrics STOR, BSW, GRS & GROG	early to mid Roman
Pit 29	-	Fill 27	Misc. pottery: Fabrics STOR & RED	Roman
Pit 29	-	Fill 28	Misc. pottery: dishes B3.2 (BB2), B4.2 (BB2); jar G44 (STOR)	mid to late 2nd century
Post-pipe 31	within Post-pit 35	Fill 30	Samian: TSG, Misc pottery: Fabrics STOR, BSW & GRS Amphora: ASS )Dressel 20)	Roman
Post-pit 35	-	Fill 33	Misc. pottery: Fabrics STOR, GRS & GROG	?early Roman
Post-pit 35	-	Fill 34	Misc. pottery: Fabric GROG	LIA

Table 2. Summary of the dating evidence from Grenville Road (BT26)

assumptions. The variety of forms, coupled with the absence of fully Romanised and transitional fabrics, suggests that the group may be attributed to the Late Pre-Roman Iron Age with some confidence. Moreover, given the absence of imported Gallo-Belgic wares such as terra rubra and terra nigra, and the high levels of hand-made pottery present may suggest that this feature is possibly late 1st century BC rather than early 1st century AD in date. As it stands, the group exhibits little or no obvious Romanising influences.

The range of fabrics in the group is narrow. Much of the group comprises a variety of hand-made and wheel-thrown Grog-tempered wares. Hand-made Early shell-tempered ware, small quantities of a

Fine micaceous ware and an oxidised fabric are also present. Grog-tempered pottery accounts for more than 64% of the total assemblage, while Early shell-tempered ware is next in importance on 32%. The other fabrics combined represent a further 2% of the assemblage and are probably locally made, like the grog-tempered sherds. The presence of wider trade contacts outside Central Essex is indicated by the occurrence of the shell-tempered pottery from southern Essex. This fabric was produced at a number of sites close to the Thames including Gun Hill, West Tilbury (Drury and Rodwell 1973, 79 (fabric A)) and Mucking (Jones and Rodwell 1973, fig. 5.24). The Fine micaceous ware and the Red/buff oxidised ware are from unknown, possibly local sources. They are, however, the only assemblage component to approach a fine ware.

In terms of assemblage composition, the group consists overwhelmingly of seven jars, a H7 butt-beaker (Fig. 9.2) and a CAM 217A type bowl (Fig. 9.3). Both of these vessels are grog-tempered. Club-rimmed jars form the main jar type with four examples in grog-tempered and shell-tempered fabrics (Fig. 9, nos 4, 5 and 7). Of the two grog-tempered vessels, one has scored decoration (Fig. 9.4), while both of the hand-made shell-tempered vessels are undecorated, only one of which is illustrated (Fig. 9.7). None of these vessels show signs of having the grooved top of the ledge-rimmed jar (G5), a feature that

Fabric	Sherds	Wt.(g)	%Wt.	EVE	%EVE
ESH	27	697	32.70	0.54	21.77
FMW	5	35	1.64	0.15	6.04
GROG	93	1377	64.61	1.72	69.35
RED/BUF	3	22	1.03	0.07	2.82
<b>Totals</b>	<b>128</b>	<b>2131</b>	<b>-</b>	<b>2.48</b>	<b>-</b>

Table 3 The pottery from ditch 5 quantified by sherd count, weight and EVEs

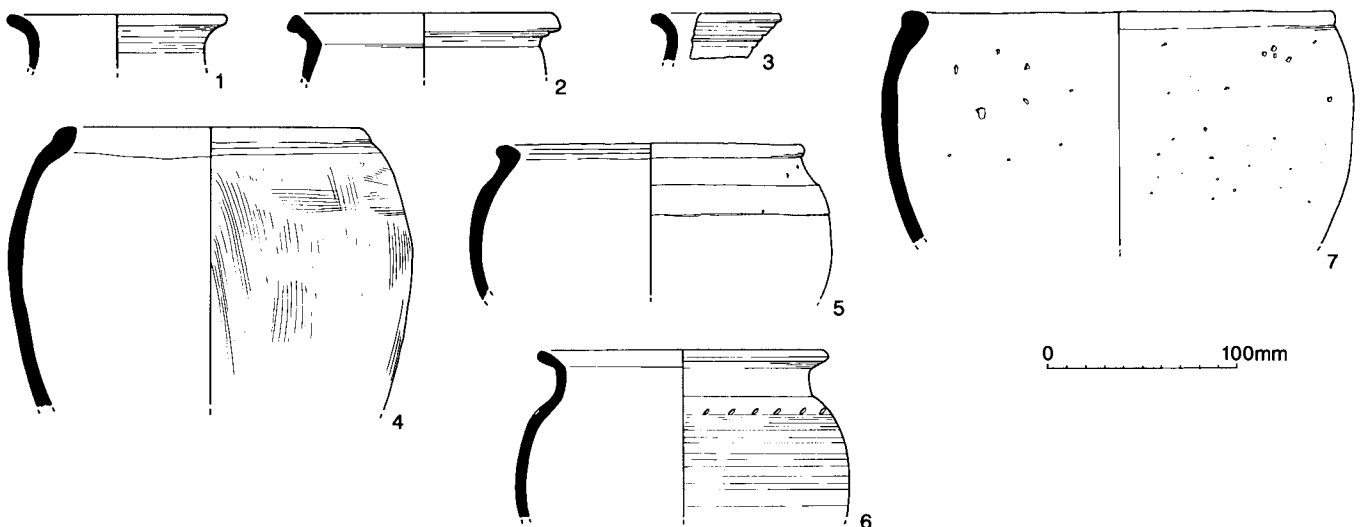


Fig. 9 Late Iron Age pottery from Grenville Road

## IRON AGE AND ROMAN OCCUPATION AT BRAINTREE

may not have developed until the mid-1st century AD (Cheer 1998, 93). The rim profiles are all variations on the CAM 254 (Thompson 1982, C3) theme (cf. Hawkes and Hull 1947, fig. 36.5) and are characterised by the presence of internal thickening of the bead rim. The presence of external sooting on the Early shell-tempered ware Cam 254 jar indicates use as a cooking pot. This evidence suggests, therefore, that this assemblage is ostensibly comprised of domestic refuse.

The other forms in the group comprised a necked jar type that is an early form of the 'Braughing' jar (Fig. 9.6) and a neckless CAM 259 type jar (not illustrated), both of which are in Grog-tempered ware. The 'Braughing' type jar, which is most often come across in East Hertfordshire, is characterised by the presence of a band of horizontal combing or rilling on the shoulder. It is encountered in contexts dating from the end of the 1st century BC/early 1st century AD to the end of the 4th/early 5th century and seems to have undergone little typological alteration in this period. However, on early versions this rilling extends down onto the body below the shoulder (cf. Stead and Rigby 1986, fig. 110.77) and some early vessels may also be rather squat and bowl-like in appearance (cf. Partridge 1981, fig. 47.78). At Skeleton Green, 'Braughing' type jars were recovered from a well deposit associated with Augustan-Tiberian fine wares (Partridge 1981, fig. 24.112-6), while at King Harry Lane, they were present in settlement contexts considered to be contemporary or later than the cemetery (Stead & Rigby 1989, fig. 33.7). These were assigned a mid- to late 1st century AD date range (Stead & Rigby 1989, 65). The Braintree vessel has a combination of rilling and stabbing. This seems to be quite rare, but is attested in the late 2nd century on a vessel from a cremation at Great Dunmow (Wickenden 1988, fig. 16.5). A vessel from Kelvedon (Rodwell 1988, fig. 90.230) provides further evidence of the use of 'Braughing' type

Context type	Feature type	Sherds	Wt. (kg)	% Wt.	Av. Wt.
Cleaning layers & unstratified	–	47	0.276	3.98	5.8
Fill	Foundation slot	39	0.343	4.95	8.7
	Ditch/Gully	425	3.457	49.94	8.1
	Pit	31	0.312	4.5	10.0
	Well	189	1.797	25.96	9.5
	Quarry	123	0.663	9.57	5.3
(Fill total)	–	807	6.572	94.94	8.1
Layer and levelling		3	0.074	1.06	24.6
<b>Totals</b>		<b>857</b>	<b>6.922</b>	–	<b>8.0</b>

Table 4. The pattern of pottery deposition at College Road (BT25)

jars in Essex in the Late Iron Age, even though this example has been mis-paralleled with the neckless CAM 260B in the publication. The final vessels in the group include a fragmentary unclassified narrow-necked jar rim in a fine micaceous ware (Fig. 9.1) and a G20 type jar in a red-buff oxidised fabric (not illustrated).

*College Road (BT25)*

*Pattern of pottery deposition*

The four evaluation trenches (A-D) produced a total of 857 sherds, weighing 6.9kg, of Late Pre-Roman Iron Age and Roman pottery from twenty-two contexts. The bulk of this came from feature fills

Trench	Feature	Context	Pottery	Dating
A	Ditch 2	Fill 1	<i>Misc. pottery:</i> Fabrics BSW, GRS & GROG.	?Early Roman
A	Ditch 7	Fill 6	<i>Misc. pottery:</i> jar G19.3 (BSW); Fabrics GRS & GROG.	Early Roman
B	Well 102	Fill 110	<i>Misc. pottery:</i> dish B1.3 (BSW); flagon J (COLB); Fabrics GRF & GRS.	mid to ?late 2nd century
B	Well 102	Fill 108	<i>Samian:</i> CGSW. <i>Misc. pottery:</i> dishes B1.3 (BSW), B5/B6 (BB1); bowl C16 (GRS); jars G5.5 (GRS), G19 (BSW), G23/24 (GRS), G (BSW); flagon J (COLB); beaker H20.2 (UCC), H35.1 (GRS); Fabrics COLC, HAX, MCA, HAWG, RED, GRF, BB2, STOR & GROG.	early to mid 3rd century
B	Well 102	Fill 111	<i>Misc. pottery:</i> jars G5.5 (GRS), G19.3 (GRS), G23 (GRS) G (BSW); Fabrics HAWG, RED & STOR.	mid 2nd century
B	Well 102	Fill 109	<i>Samian:</i> EGSW. <i>Misc. pottery:</i> jars ?G9 (GRS), ?G42 (BSW); Fabrics COLC, WCS, RED, BUF, STOR & GROG.	later to early 3rd century
B	Well 102	Fill 112	<i>Misc. pottery:</i> Fabrics STOR, BSW & GRS.	Roman
B	Well 102	Fill 105	<i>Misc. pottery:</i> dish B2/B4 (BSW); jars G9 (BSW & GRS); beakers H20.3 (COLC), H20.1 (COLC), H35.1 (NVC), H35 (GRS); Fabric RED.	early to mid 3rd century
B	Gully 106	Fill 107	<i>Misc. pottery:</i> jar G (GRS).	Roman
C	Quarry 204	Fill 202	<i>Samian:</i> f31 (CGSW), f33 (CGSW). <i>Misc. pottery:</i> dish B3.2 (GRS); jars G24 (GRS), G (BSW); beaker ?H17.1 (HAX); Fabrics COLB, COLC, RED, GRF, STOR & RET.	mid to late 3rd century
C	Quarry 204	Fill 203	<i>Misc. pottery:</i> dish B2/B4 (GRS); jar G9 (GRS); beaker H36 type (GRS); Fabrics COLC, GRF, STOR, BSW & GROG.	3rd century
D	?Slot 304	Fill 302	<i>Misc. pottery:</i> dish B3.2 (BSW); jars G24 (GRS), G9.1 (GRS), G (BSW); Fabrics NVC, HAR, GRF & STOR.	later 2nd century
D	?Slot 304	Fill 303	<i>Misc. pottery:</i> dish B2/B4 (BB2); jar G (GRS); Fabrics COLB, STOR, BSW & GROG.	mid to late 2nd century
D	Ditch 307	Fill 308	<i>Samian:</i> f33 (CGSW), f38 (CGSW), f18/31R (CGSW). <i>Misc. pottery:</i> dishes B1.3 (GRF), B3.2 (BSW), B2/B4 (BSW & BB2); bowl C16 (GRS); bowl-jar E (GRS); jars G44.5, (STOR), G23 (GRS), G24 (GRS); beakers H23.1 (NVC) H33.1 (GRS), H35.1 (NVC); flagon J [CAM 363] (HAX); Fabrics COLC, EGRHN, COLB, BUF, RED, NKG, ASS, UCC & GROG.	late 2nd to early 3rd century
D	Ditch 307	Fill 321	<i>Samian:</i> CGSW. <i>Misc. pottery:</i> Fabrics ASS, STOR, BSW & GRS.	mid to late 2nd century

Table 5. The dating evidence for the College Road site (BT25)

(94% by weight). Pottery was recovered from all four trenches in varying quantities, although Trench D produced nearly half of the total assemblage (407 sherds weighing 3.1kg) from just four contexts, while Trench A produced just 53 sherds (0.6kg) from four contexts. Trench B also produced a large number of sherds (255 weighing 2.3kg), although this was spread over eleven contexts. Trench C produced the most fragmentary assemblage, 142 sherds weighing just 0.7kg from three contexts.

There are two aspects of pottery deposition that are worth mentioning: firstly, the global pattern of deposition in terms of what type of context produce the majority of dating evidence; and secondly, its state of preservation in terms of average sherd weight. This data is summarised in Table 4 below. However, the inferences drawn from this data must be viewed as being very tentative both because of the small size of the excavated pottery assemblage and the small number of features examined.

The data shows three noteworthy trends, of which the importance of feature fills and the supremacy of linear features as sources of pottery dating evidence are perhaps the most significant. Both of these trends are emblematic of Essex rural sites in this period as has been established at a number of sites recently. However, pits, if the presence of the late quarry in Trench C and the well in Trench B are included in the figures, also form good sources for the recovery of pottery dating evidence, a trend that is more in keeping with urban sites. It seems that the pattern of pottery deposition exhibits trends that are broadly comparable to both rural and urban sites. This perhaps indicates that the site in question may lie on the periphery of the built-up area of the Roman settlement.

The third noteworthy trend at College Road is the poor state of preservation displayed by the excavated assemblage. The material from feature fills exhibits trends in average sherd weights roughly uniform in character, regardless of feature category. The low figure suggests that the assemblage is fragmentary and very broken and thus relatively poorly preserved. This is especially true of the material from the late quarry in Trench C. The material from these contexts had the lowest average sherd weight on the whole site. The absence of large well-preserved sherds from complete or near complete vessels in the fill of well 102 in Trench B suggests that this material is comparable to the rest of the assemblage. Moreover, this also indicates that the

material recovered from the filling of this feature is unlikely to form part of a structured deposit.

#### *Site chronology*

The earliest features encountered were excavated in Trench A (Table 5). These comprise two poorly dated early Roman ditches (2 and 7). The amount of pottery recovered from these features is not large and not especially diagnostic, although the fill of ditch 7 did produce a mid-1st to early 2nd century jar form. The dating of ditch 2 is even less well established and largely rests on the range of fabrics present.

By far the bulk of the features, and with them the mass of the site's pottery can be dated to the mid-Roman period. The range of forms and fabrics present places these features within period covered by the mid-2nd to mid/late 3rd century. The earliest feature excavated in Trenches B-D comprises slot 304, which is likely to have been infilled about the turn of the 3rd century, while the rest probably belong to the first half of the 3rd century. There is very little to suggest continued activity much beyond *c.* AD 280, although the presence of a small amount of Rettendon ware in the fill of quarry 204 in Trench C may indicate continued activity of some kind, perhaps up to the turn of the 4th century. Forms dating to the late 3rd century onwards are very rare, however. This suggests a rapid decline in the level of activity during the second half of the 3rd century.

There seems to be a genuine absence of later material from the site and this is reflected in the two groups presented below. The latest fabrics on the site comprises the small amounts of Hadham oxidised red ware and the Nene Valley colour-coat, neither of which are likely to have arrived much before the beginning of the 3rd century. The latest forms comprise the BB1 rim fragment of a B5 or B6 type dish in context 108 (well 102 in Trench B), and an unstratified B1.2 'dog' dish in Nene Valley colour-coat also from Trench B which is probably 4th century. This latter piece is perhaps best interpreted as a stray find in view of the absence of other later dish types on the site. The site seems to have gone out of use by the mid-3rd century judging from the general lack of later material. Later Roman fabrics are present in the latest Roman groups at Great Dunmow (Going and Ford 1988) and have been encountered at other sites in Braintree (*cf.* Basset 1976, 77 and fig. 35). This strongly suggests either settlement contraction or shift in the late Roman period at Braintree.

Fabric	Well 102				Ditch 307			
	Sherds	Wt. (g)	% Wt.	Av. Wt.	Sherds	Wt. (g)	% Wt.	Av. Wt.
ASS	–	–	–	–	6	212	7.66	35.3
BB1	1	7	0.38	7.0	–	–	–	–
BB2	3	8	0.44	2.6	4	45	1.62	11.2
BSW	51	523	29.10	10.2	110	533	19.26	4.8
BUF	1	5	0.27	5.0	1	3	0.10	3.0
CGSW	1	2	0.11	2.0	6	249	9.00	41.5
COLB	3	29	1.61	9.6	3	91	3.28	30.3
COLC	2	2	0.11	1.0	5	22	0.79	4.4
EGRHN	–	–	–	–	4	5	0.18	1.2
EGSW	1	1	0.05	1.0	–	–	–	–
GRF	4	11	0.61	2.7	9	67	2.42	7.4
GROG	2	13	0.72	6.5	1	5	0.18	5.0
GRS	91	748	41.62	8.2	172	919	33.22	5.3
HAWG	4	32	1.78	8.0	–	–	–	–
HAX	2	9	0.50	4.5	5	38	1.37	7.6
MCA	2	8	0.44	4.0	–	–	–	–
NKG	–	–	–	–	1	3	0.10	3.0
NVC	–	–	–	–	9	22	0.79	2.4
OCC	1	2	0.11	2.0	1	1	0.03	1.0
RED	6	42	2.33	7.0	10	25	0.90	2.5
STOR	13	352	19.58	27.0	21	527	19.05	25.0
WCS	1	3	0.16	3.0	–	–	–	–
<b>Totals</b>	<b>189</b>	<b>1797</b>	<b>–</b>	<b>9.5</b>	<b>368</b>	<b>2766</b>	<b>–</b>	<b>7.5</b>

Table 6. The groups from well 102 and ditch 307 quantified by sherd count and weight (g)

*Pottery supply (late 2nd to early/mid-3rd century)*

Although early Roman material was present the quantities were insufficient to provide any clear insights into pottery supply in the 1st and early 2nd centuries. Only for the late 2nd to mid-3rd century is it possible to say anything meaningful about supply (Table 6). The large groups (i.e. comprising of 100 sherds or more) were recovered from the fills of well 102 and ditch 307. To date, very few groups from Braintree have been quantified (cf. Horsley 1993), and what has been are groups of late 3rd to mid-4th century date from Sandpit Road (SR88) and Braintree Youth Club (BYC86). The samples from the evaluation trenches, while large, are too fragmentary to fulfil all the criteria to be analysed in this manner at. Further excavation may well yield quality groups of this period from which it will be possible to examine pottery supply in the 2nd and early 3rd centuries at Braintree in detail for the first time. The groups recovered from the fills of well 102 and ditch 307 (Table 3) are offered as an interim summary in the hope that they may highlight some of the more general characteristics in pottery supply for this period.

Judging by the pottery from well 102 and ditch 307, assemblages of this period are dominated by locally made Sandy grey wares. These fabrics represent between 41% and 33% of all pottery reaching the site. Next in importance are the Storage jar fabrics and the Black-surfaced wares. These represent 19% and between 19% and 29% of the assemblage respectively. All other fabrics are poorly represented, and apart from the samian, which forms an unusually high 9% and the Dressel 20 amphoras, which comprise 7% of the ditch 307 assemblage, none of the remaining fabrics in these groups reach above 3%. The bulk of the pottery reaching this part of Braintree in the late 2nd and early/mid-3rd century is of local manufacture. Traded wares and imports are quite rare.

Apart from samian, the range of imports comprises East Gaulish 'Rhenish' ware and Dressel 20 amphorae from southern Spain. The Romano-British traded wares are represented by Hadham oxidised red ware from east Hertfordshire and Nene Valley colour-coat from near Peterborough in Cambridgeshire. Classic BB2 is poorly represented, with the bulk of the black pottery comprising locally made black-surfaced wares. The latter fabric group may also include sherds of Hadham black-surfaced ware (Going's fabric 35) and a small amount residual Romanising grey ware (Going's fabric 45). The small quantities of North Kent grey ware and Local mica dusted ware are almost certainly residual, as too are the few sherds of Late pre-Roman Iron Age grog-tempered ware sherds. The same is also probably true of the Colchester products as well. By and large this picture is similar to that provided by groups of the same date from Great Dunmow (Going and Ford 1988) and Rivenhall (Going 1993). At Braintree, a greater number of fabrics exhibit a higher degree of fragmentation compared with the other sites.

Both of these groups are too fragmentary to say much about assemblage composition. Jars are the main vessel class represented and not surprisingly these are virtually all of local manufacture and include a range of necked G23/G24 and lid-seated (G5.5) types. Other vessel classes are poorly represented by comparison. Beakers are mainly Nene Valley products and include H23 and H35 types. The dish types present largely comprise the ubiquitous the B1.3 plain-rimmed types and the straight-sided bead-rimmed B2/B4 types. Only one flagon was represented, but this was too fragmentary to identify its type. A single C16 carinated bowl was also present, but this form is likely to be residual.

*Discussion*

While the assemblages recovered from College Road and Grenville Road lack large well-dated groups, the pottery from these sites nevertheless provides an important data-set from which a number of conclusions may be drawn. Firstly, although these sites exhibit contrasting chronological patterns in some instances, they both have a marked absence of 4th century pottery. This must be highly significant concerning the location of the focus of late Roman Braintree.

A second point is that both sites have different start dates. Occupation clearly began in the Late Iron Age at Grenville Road, but at College Road the earliest reliably dated contexts are probably 2nd century. By and large the College Road site belongs to the 2nd and

3rd centuries, while the Grenville Road site is mainly Late Iron Age and early Roman with a small amount of 2nd-century activity. This suggests that, in this part of the settlement at least, different plots can exhibit fundamentally different histories when dealing with pottery supply.

Over the past twenty years or so, much evidence has accumulated to suggest the presence of a sizeable pre-Roman settlement at Braintree. While the evidence for a Late Iron Age settlement at Braintree has been surveyed most recently by Havis (1993, 61), the assemblage from Grenville Road provides a useful addition to the evidence for this and may indicate an origin in the late 1st century BC for the settlement. Although many of the key sites have yet to be published, the pottery from them has been scanned briefly by the author. Late Pre-Roman Iron Age and early Roman groups have been recorded on the Boars Head site (BBH) along with Gallo-Belgic imports and transitional wares and at 65 Rayne Road (BRR86) with Gallo-Belgic imports. At the rear of 4 London Road (BT13/BLRA), a large group of Late Pre-Roman Iron Age pottery was recovered, the character of which suggests a primary rubbish deposit. The propinquity of all these sites suggests that the focus of the Late Pre-Roman Iron Age settlement does not lie far off.

The value of the College Road assemblage is much more difficult to assess. It does, however, appear to indicate activity within a relatively narrow date band. In this part of the settlement at least, activity seems to be confined to the second half of the 2nd and the first half of the 3rd century. However, because of the fragmentary nature of the assemblages, only the most tentative conclusions are possible regarding pottery supply. Even less certainty surrounds the issues relating to pottery use. Further excavation and/or publication of the Brain Valley Archaeological Society's sites is required if these issues are to be properly addressed.

**The Samian Pottery**

Steven Willis

*The College Road (BT25) Samian**Introduction*

A total of 10 sherds (258g) of samian pottery (*terra sigillata*) recovered during the excavations were submitted for identification and reporting. The sherds probably all derive from separate vessels. The collection is essentially Hadrianic to Antonine, with only one piece having a date range extending into the early third century. No decorated pieces are present. With one exception the sherds are of unusually small size and, additionally, are somewhat abraded.

*Catalogue*

The catalogue lists all the samian sherds from the excavations submitted for identification and reporting. The catalogue adheres to a consistent format. Sherds are listed in feature number order, then the following data are given: the number of sherds and their type (i.e. whether a sherd is from the rim, base (footring) or body of a vessel, or if it constitutes a complete profile), the source of the item (Central Gaulish is abbreviated to CG and East Gaulish to EG), the vessel form (where identifiable), the weight of the sherds in grams, the percentage of any extant rim (i.e. the RE figure, where 1.00 would represent a complete circumference) or base (i.e. the BE figure) and the rim and base diameters, and an estimate of the date of the sherd in terms of calendar years, this being the date range of deposits with which like pieces are normally associated.

Well 102

Context 108

- Body, CG Lezoux, form not identifiable, 1g, c. AD 120-200.

Context 109

- Base, EG Rheinzabern, form not identifiable, 2g, BE: 0.12, Diam. 100mm, c. AD 150-225.

Quarry 204

Context 202

- Body, CG Lezoux, probably Drag. 31, 3g, c. AD 150-200.
- Rim, CG Lezoux, Drag. 33, 3g, RE: 0.06, Diam. 130mm, c. AD 120-200.

#### Ditch 307

##### Context 308

- Base, CG Lezoux, probably Drag. 18/31R, 33g, BE: 0.25, Diam. 100mm, c. AD 120-150.
- Base, CG Lezoux, form not identifiable, 2g, BE: c. 0.06, Diam. uncertain, c. AD 120-200.
- Body, CG Lezoux, form not identifiable, c. 1g, c. AD 140-200.
- Body, CG Lezoux, Drag. 33, 1g, probably c. AD 140-200.
- Complete profile, CG Lezoux, Drag. 38 (with plain rim), 209g, RE: 0.36, Diam. 136mm, BE: 0.51, Diam. 70mm, c. AD 140-200. Not stamped. Interior worn.

##### Context 321

- Body, CG Lezoux, form not identifiable, 3g, AD 120-200.

#### Discussion

The small collection of samian recovered from the evaluation trenches has an overall date range of c. AD 120-225, with an apparent later second century emphasis. It is closely consistent in terms of chronology and condition with the other Roman pottery. Although of very modest size it is of some informative value.

Nine out of the ten vessels represented are Central Gaulish Lezoux products (as is the sherd from 7 Grenville Road (BT26)), with one East Gaulish vessel. At College Road the apparent dearth of early Roman features is likely to be a contributory factor accounting for the absence of South Gaulish and Les Martres samian (collectively c. AD 40-130). Though if earlier samian was ever present at or near the site in any quantity then one might have expected the occurrence of such material as residual items. Significantly the composition of this small group mirrors that of the large samian assemblage from 51-7 Rayne Road which mainly comprised Lezoux ware of Antonine date (Rodwell 1976). It is worth noting that the predominance of Lezoux products amongst the material from these Braintree sites conforms to the general trend identifiable elsewhere at rural and middle rank settlements of the early to mid Roman period in Britain where samian assemblages are dominated by these wares. This is especially the case with Antonine items (c. AD 140-200). The assemblages from the 1953-5 work at Great Chesterford (Pengelly 1988), Rayne (Cheer 1989) and Tendring (Willis forthcoming), for example, display a similar pattern. In sum the samian from College Road is both consistent with the date of the bulk of the Roman pottery from the site, that is, c. mid second to mid third century AD (cf. Martin above), and with other samian from this area of Roman Braintree.

The absence of Colchester samian (c. AD 155-180) from the group is likely to be a function of the small size of the recovered sample, as vessels from this source occur in central Essex, albeit in modest numbers; indeed examples have previously been documented from Braintree (Rodwell 1976, 42). The one East Gaulish item present comes from the Well 102, and dates from the mid-2nd century.

As regards vessel form, the highly fragmentary nature of the sherds precludes form identification in a number of cases. The group includes an unsurprising range of cup, dish and plain bowl forms. The fact that there are no decorated pieces is not remarkable amongst such a small collection from such a site; on average only one in six samian vessels at rural and middle rank Roman sites in Britain is decorated (Willis 1998; cf. Rodwell 1976, 41).

The fragment from a Drag. 38 bowl in context 308 is of some interest. It shows internal ware, evidently the consequence of a sustained use that was only mildly abrasive. Such a pattern of ware can be paralleled at other sites and is presumably the outcome of day to day usage. However, there is a potentially less mundane side to this piece. The fragment is near to being one half of the complete vessel and is uncommonly large when compared to the other pottery from this context. Samian 'half vessels' occur occasionally at other sites (such as Rocester, Staffordshire (Willis in press)) and there is a possibility that some at least represent deliberately split vessels which may have had a symbolic significance.

The Drag. 38 sherd apart the average weight of the BT25 samian sherds is just 5.4g. This is a low figure by comparison with other samian assemblages but reflects the general site pattern noted by Martin (cf. above). Clearly the samian has been subject to sustained attritional processes.

#### The 7 Grenville Road (BT26) Samian

Only one sherd of samian was present amongst the 13 contexts investigated at this site. This item came from context 30, the fill of the post-pipe 31. The sherd is a rim fragment from a cup of Drag. form 33 in Central Gaulish Lezoux fabric, c. AD 120-200 (c. 1g, Rim Equivalent: 0.07, Diam. 90mm).

#### Medieval and post-medieval pottery

H. Walker

##### Grenville Road

Two sherds were intrusive in Roman ditch segment 20 (fill 21). These comprise a medieval coarse ware ribbed jug handle, perhaps dating to the 13th century, and one sherd of internally glazed post-medieval red earthenware.

##### College Road

Again, very little pottery was recovered. The only medieval pottery is a sherd of green-glazed Hedingham ware, decorated with ring-and-dot stamps and notched, applied strips (found unstratified in Trench C).

Buried soil 113 in trench B produced a sherd of Surrey-Hampshire white ware, perhaps from a base, showing an internal pale yellow glaze. This ware was manufactured from the second half of the 16th century, becoming increasingly important in the 17th century (Pearce 1992). Pit 3, which cut the equivalent of buried soil 113 in trench A, also produced pottery (from primary fill 5). This comprises a post-medieval red earthenware flanged rim, probably from a bowl, showing the remains of internal glaze, datable to the 17th century or later.

To conclude, the pottery shows little evidence of activity on either site during the medieval and post-medieval periods, although the buried soil 113 and the fill of pit 3 at College Road can be dated to the post-medieval period.

#### Miscellaneous finds

H. Major

##### Grenville Road

##### Building Material

The Roman building material from the site comprised tile, *tesserae*, painted plaster, a small piece of masonry, and daub.

There was a total of 17.012kg of brick and tile from the site, of which nearly 14kg was Roman. *Tegulae* were most abundant, and the group included a half *tegula*, broken lengthways. Many of the pieces had mortar on them, implying use as coarse building material, confirmed by the presence in context 9 (post-pipe 10) of two pieces of broken brick in mortar. Impressions in the mortar suggest that the bricks were laid in courses, rather than used haphazardly. Fifteen *tesserae* made from tile were found in the main excavation, and a further seven from the watching brief, some clearly worn. Context 9 (post-pipe 10) produced a number of small fragments of painted plaster, with a variety of colours present; reddish-purple, pinkish-buff, possibly originally pink, and brown (possibly not the original colour). On some fragments the paint was on top of a thin skim of fairly fine plaster, but on two, the paint had been applied directly to the surface of the mortar.

Contexts 9 and 30 (post-pipes 10 and 31) produced fairly large groups of daub, similar in composition, and likely to be from the same source. Many of the pieces had impressions of cut, squared timbers; a few pieces had combed surfaces, which would have provided keying for mortar or plaster.

The range of Roman building material from the site (principally from contexts 9 and 30) suggests the proximity of a building of some



## IRON AGE AND ROMAN OCCUPATION AT BRAINTREE

pretension, although not necessarily the one to which the post-holes belong, and the types of material present can give some indication of the style of the structure (assuming the material is all from the same building). The tile and mortar masonry implies a building with solid footings, perhaps a dwarf wall with a wooden superstructure; the impressions on the daub are of squared timbers rather than wattle panels, and the combing on the daub indicates that it would have been covered by mortar or plaster. There are tesserae from a coarse tessellated floor in reddish-orange and grey, and fragments of painted plaster in several colours, apparently from at least two different walls. However, the use of paint directly onto the mortar on some pieces suggests that the quality of the decoration was not very good. There was no evidence for a hypocaust, since box flue tile was completely absent. Some of the daub from contexts 9 and 30 had been exposed to considerable heat, and much of the tile had been burnt after breakage, so the material may have come from a building that had burnt down.

### Other Finds

There was a small amount of ironwork consisting principally of nails. A horseshoe fragment from context 13 is probably post-Roman contamination. The other material included two oyster shells and a single piece of worked flint.

### College Road

#### Metalwork

There was a small amount of metalwork from the site, mostly iron nails. There were no other definitely identifiable iron objects, although one fragment could possibly be the bow from an iron bow brooch of a type current in the 1st century AD, in this case residual in its 3rd century context (ditch 307, fill 308). The only copper alloy object was a cosmetic spoon, or *ligula*, also from context 308. There were also two pieces of iron slag. This does not necessarily imply iron working in the immediate vicinity of the site, although it is known that there was Roman iron working nearby behind Flack's Hotel in the High Street.

#### Building materials

This category was mainly represented by brick and tile, although most of the small amount of baked clay from the site could have derived from structural daub. There were eighteen pieces of Roman tile, including roof tile (*tegulae* and *imbrices*) and flat tiles, but no box flue tiles. The tile was unremarkable, although one piece (from 308) had an iron nail baked into it, which had evidently been accidentally dropped into the clay while it was being prepared.

#### Catalogue (Not illustrated)

Cosmetic spoon (*ligula*) with a small, round, flat scoop set at a slight angle to the shaft, and the other end pointed; similar to Crummy 1983, 60, no. 1901. Complete but bent, and in good condition. The type is common, and not closely datable within the Roman period. L. 123mm, scoop diam. 4mm. Context 308 (ditch 307), SF1

### The Faunal Remains

Alec Wade and P. McMichael

The animal bone from the two sites formed small and disturbed assemblages, but the results are summarised here to suggest the type of assemblages that might be recovered from larger scale excavation in the area. The report for Grenville Road was prepared by Phil McMichael, and that for College Road by Alec Wade.

#### Grenville Road

The animal bone from Grenville Road totalled 80 pieces weighing 0.64 kg. Four species were identified in the assemblage, of which cattle was the most numerous, followed by sheep or goat (no distinction being made between the two species due to a lack of diagnostic indicators), horse and pig. A bird bone (unidentified) was also recovered from context 8 (ditch 7). Possible evidence of bone working was found from context 9 (post-pipe 10), where an unidentified piece

of bone may have had a fire hardened point or edge. Butchered and dog gnawed fragments were also present in several contexts indicating the domestic nature of the assemblage.

Feature	Context	Horse	Cattle	Sheep /Goat	Pig	Un-identified
Ditch 5	6	4	1	0	2	3
Ditch 7	8	0	0	0	0	1
	22	0	0	1	0	2
Post-pipe 10	9	1	0	0	0	2
Post-hole 12	11	0	0	6	0	0
Post-pit 18	15	0	1	0	0	3
Pit 29	27	0	20	0	0	1
	28	0	21	0	0	0
Post-pipe 31	30	0	0	0	0	7
Unstratified		0	0	0	0	4
<b>Total</b>		<b>5</b>	<b>43</b>	<b>7</b>	<b>2</b>	<b>23</b>

Table 7. Quantification of the assemblage by species, context and number of pieces

#### College Road

The animal bone assemblage from College Road amounted to 221 pieces of bone weighing a total of 0.97 kg. Three species were identified as being present, of which cattle which was the most numerous followed by sheep or goat (no distinction being made between the two species due to a lack of diagnostic indicators) and pig.

The majority of the bone was produced by the fill (context 308) of a single feature, the late 2nd/ early to mid 3rd century roadside ditch 307. The bone from this ditch was representative of domestic rubbish and included butchered, burnt and dog gnawed pieces. This would suggest the roadside ditch ran close enough to habitation/occupation for household rubbish to be deposited within it, either intentionally or otherwise.

None of the cut marks noted were particularly diagnostic and where it was possible to tell the bone was from mature animals. No wild species were identified within the assemblage.

Feature	Context	Cattle	Sheep/Goat	Pig	Unidentified
Pit 3	5	-	-	-	2 @ 24g
Ditch 14	15	-	-	-	4 @ 29g
Well 102	112	1 @ 6g	-	-	4 @ 1g
Ditch 307	308	39 @ 344g	27 @ 128g	1 @ 6g	137 @ 106g
	321	1 @ 8g	-	-	5 @ 6g
Total		41 @ 358g	27 @ 128g	1 @ 6g	152 @ 166g

Table 8. Quantification of the assemblage by species, context number of pieces, and weight

## Topographical Discussion

The archaeological investigations at the Grenville Road and College Road sites have provided further insight into the chronology, layout and function of Roman Braintree, in the area to west of London Road and south of Rayne Road. The results of these investigations can, in part, be related to evidence already uncovered during the construction of Pierrefitte Way.

The presence of a Late Iron Age ditch at the Grenville Road site is not wholly unexpected as excavations immediately to the east, at the Boar's Head, Fountain and London Road sites have all uncovered Late Iron Age occupation, as did, albeit as a residual element, the College Road site.

The results of these evaluations further support the

inference that Late Iron Age domestic occupation was centred in this area, to the north and west of London Road (Havis 1993) and not as previously thought, solely focused in the area of the putative *oppidum*. The occurrence of 1st-century BC pottery, unusual as it is one of the earliest Iron Age assemblages found in Braintree, suggests this area was continuously settled long before the Roman town appears.

The probable metallated road at College Road and the road-side ditch at Grenville Road, combined with evidence of roads previously excavated to the east and along Rayne Road, give some insight into the possible layout (Fig. 10). The road surface at College Road is both roughly parallel to the course of Rayne Road, the postulated principal western approach road, and aligns with Havis's minor road E, excavated at the Boars Head

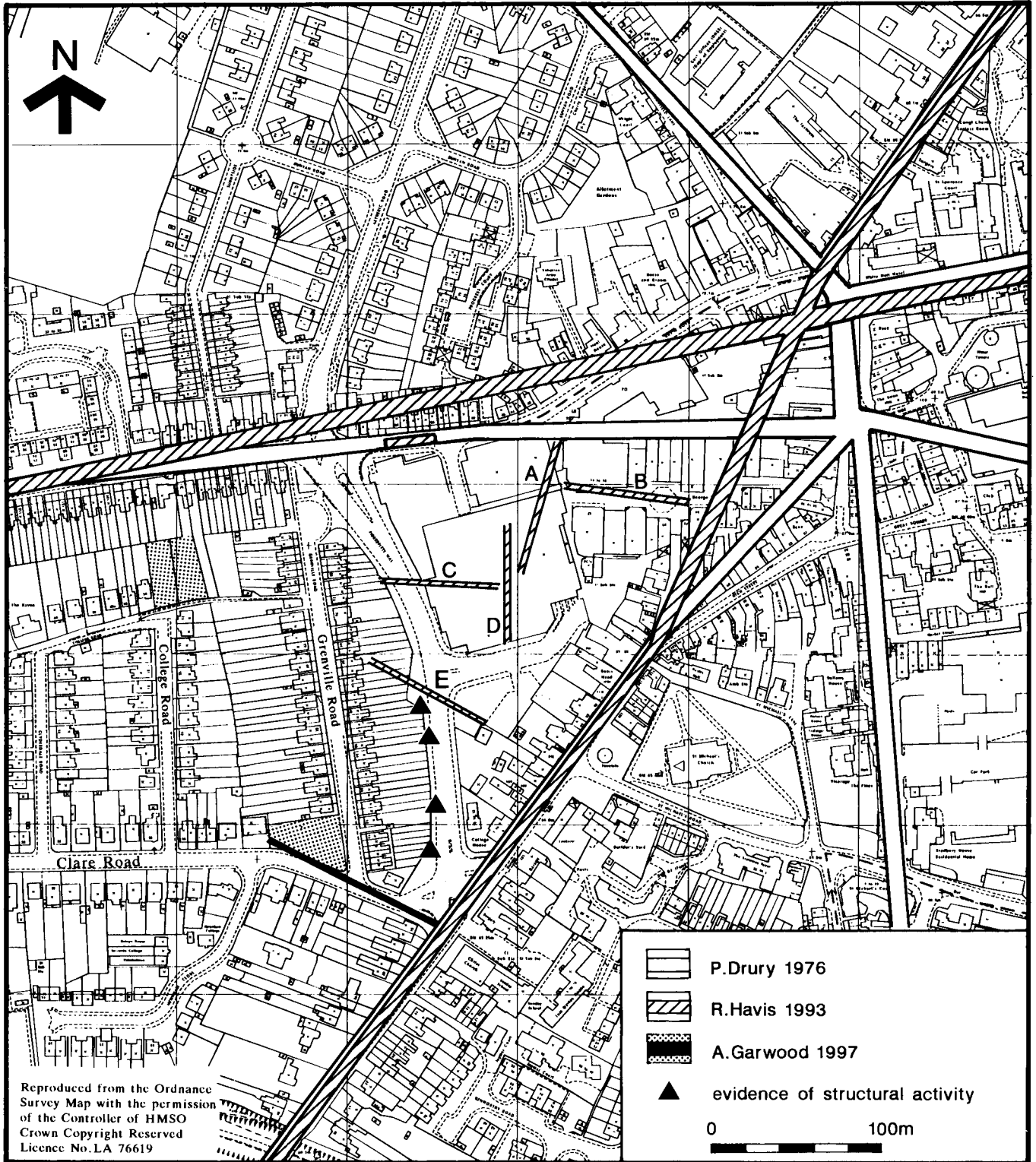


Fig. 10 Major and minor roads within Roman Braintree, based on Drury (1976) and Havis (1993), with the addition of a minor road identified at the Grenville Road excavation. (Reproduced by kind permission of Ordnance Survey. © Crown copyright NC/01/154)

site (Fig. 10). The position of the roadside/boundary ditch at Grenville Road lies perpendicular to London Road and parallel to the minor Roman road E (Fig. 10) identified during the Fountain excavations (Havis 1993). It may therefore delineate the course of another minor road radiating from London Road. It is probable that both these features served or followed boundaries within the town.

The evidence from both sites supports, by the presence of early Roman to early 3rd-century features, a continuity of settlement with the resettlement during the early Roman period, of an area already occupied by an established and not insubstantial Iron Age settlement. The Roman town displays elements of deliberate planning, with building plots, evidence of timber and masonry buildings, and minor road systems, radiating out from London Road. From its origins in the early Roman period it appears to have enjoyed a sustained period of activity during 2nd to the early 3rd century, after which, by the mid 3rd century and for reasons that yet remain unclear, a stark fall in activity denotes its decline as a residential area.

Furthermore, the nature of the archaeology revealed and the absence of Roman burials at both sites discounts the suggestion, based on cremation burials uncovered during the 1970s (Drury 1976), that this area to the west of London Road was used solely as cemeteries. The presence of domestic activity with early Roman origins in this area, pushes the likelihood of a cemetery site on the fringe of settlement further to the west or south-west of London Road. However, these discoveries indicate that one of the cemeteries of the Roman town must lie nearby.

The paucity of recognisable medieval features, the post-medieval soil build-up and dearth of post-medieval features suggest that this area was sparsely occupied, until the urban expansion during the mid 19th century, brought about by the building of the Braintree to Witham branch line.

*Authors:* A. Garwood and N. Lavender, Essex County Council Planning Division, County Hall, Chelmsford CM1 1LF.

#### Bibliography

- Bakewell, J. 1988 'College House, Braintree', *Excavations in Essex*, *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* **19**, 262
- Bassett, S.R. 1976 'Excavations at 13-17 Bank Street (Site C)' in Drury, P.J. 'Braintree: excavations and research 1971-76 and an archaeological gazetteer', *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* **8**, 65-80
- Cheer, P. 1989 'The pottery', in M.D. Smoothy, 'A Roman rural site at Rayne, Essex: excavations 1987', *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* **20**, 14-5
- Cheer, P. 1998 'Late Iron Age pottery', in Carter, G.A., *Excavations at the Orsett 'Cock' Enclosure, Essex, 1976*, E. Anglian Archaeol. **86**, 89-93
- Crummy, N. 1983 *The Roman small finds from excavations in Colchester 1971-9*, Colchester Archaeol. Rep. **2**
- Drury, P.J. 1976 'Braintree: Excavations and Research, 1971-76', *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* **8**, 1-143
- Drury, P.J. and Rodwell, W.J. 1973 'Excavations at Gun Hill, West Tilbury', *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* **5** (3rd Series), 48-112
- Drury, P. J., 1976 'A group of mid-thirteenth-century pottery from

- Naylinghurst, Braintree', *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* **8**, 267-71
- Eddy, M. 1983 'Excavations on the Braintree Oppidum', *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* **15**, 36-54
- Germany, M. In prep. *Excavations at Great Holts Farm, Boreham, Essex*, E. Anglian Archaeol.
- Going, C.J. 1987 *The mansio and other sites in the south-eastern sector of Caesaromagus: the Roman pottery*, CBA Res. Rep. **62**
- Going, C.J. 1993 'The Roman pottery' in Rodwell, W.J. and Rodwell, K.A. *Rivenhall: Investigations of a villa, church and village, 1950-1977. Vol. 2 - Specialist studies and index to volumes 1 and 2*, CBA Res. Rep. **80**, 64-70
- Going, C.J. and Ford, B. 1988 'Romano-British pottery', in Wickenden, N.P., *Excavations at Great Dunmow Essex: a Romano-British small town in the Trinovantian civitas*, E. Anglian Archaeol. Rep. **41**, 60-76
- Havis, R. 1993 'Roman Braintree: excavations 1984-90', *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* **24**, 22-68
- Hawkes, C.F.C. and Hull, M.R. 1947 *Camulodunum. First report on the excavations at Colchester 1930-1939*, Reports of the Research Committee of the Society of Antiquaries of London, **14**
- Hope, J. 1983 'Braintree: recent discoveries in the Roman town 1981-2', *Brain Valley Archaeol. Soc. Interim*
- Hope, J. 1987 'Field director's report', *Brain Valley Archaeol. Soc. Journ.* **24**
- Horsley, K. 1993 'The Roman pottery' in Havis, R. 'Roman Braintree: excavations 1984-90' *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* **24**, 31-44
- Hull, M.R. 1958 *Roman Colchester*, Reports of the Research Committee of the Society of Antiquaries of London, **20**
- Hull, M.R. 1963 *The Roman potters' kilns of Colchester*, Reports of the Research Committee of the Society of Antiquaries of London, **21**
- Jones, M.U. and Rodwell, W.J. 1973 'The Romano-British pottery kilns at Mucking', *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* **5**, (3rd Series), 13-47
- Morris, P. 1979 *Agricultural buildings in Roman Britain*, BAR Brit. Ser. **70**
- Partridge, C. 1981 *Skeleton Green: A Late Iron Age and Romano-British Site*, Britannia Monogr. Ser. **7**
- Pearce, J.E., 1992 *Post-Medieval Pottery in London, 1500-1700 Volume 1 Border Wares*, London, HMSO
- Pengelly, H. 1988 'Samian ware from Great Chesterford', in J. Draper, *Excavations at Great Chesterford, Essex, 1953-5*, *Proceedings of the Cambridge Antiquarian Society*, 75 for 1986, (3-41), 15-25
- Rodwell, K.A. 1988 *The prehistoric and Roman settlement at Kelvedon, Essex*, CBA Res. Rep. **63**
- Rodwell, W.J. 1976 'The terra sigillata', in P.J. Drury, 'Braintree: Excavations and Research, 1971-76', *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* **8**, 38-42
- Smoothy, M. 1988 'Braintree Roman town: excavations at George Yard/Sandpit Road', 1984-88, BDC interim.
- Stead, I.M. and Rigby, V. 1986 *Baldock: The excavation of a Roman and pre-Roman settlement, 1968-72*, Britannia Monogr. Ser. **7**
- Stead, I.M. and Rigby, V. 1989 *Verulamium: the King Harry Lane site*, English Heritage Archaeol. Rep. **12**
- Thompson, I. 1982 *Grog-tempered 'Belgic' Pottery of south-eastern England*, BAR Brit. Ser. **108**
- Wickenden, N.P. 1988 *Excavations at Great Dunmow, Essex: a Romano-British Small Town in the Trinovantian Civitas*, E. Anglian Archaeol. **41**
- Willis, S.H. 1998 'Samian pottery in Britain: exploring its distribution and archaeological potential', *Archaeological J.* **155**, 82-133
- Willis, S.H. in press 'The samian pottery', in I.M. Ferris, 'Excavations in Orton's Pasture, Rochester, 1996', *Transactions of the Staffordshire Archaeological and Historical Society*
- Willis, S.H. Forthcoming 'The samian pottery', in E. Heppell, 'Excavations at Hill Farm, Tendring, Essex', *Essex Archaeol. Hist.*

*The Society is extremely grateful to Essex County Council for a generous grant towards the cost of publishing this article.*

## Excavations at 79 Hythe Hill, Colchester 1994-5

by Howard Brooks

*Excavations in advance of the construction of the Colchester Eastern Approaches Road on the site of 79, Hythe Hill, Colchester (the former Colchester Tractors site) revealed a series of medieval and post medieval buildings.*

*An earthfast post building of the 15th or 16th century was the first structure on site (period 1). This was followed by a three-roomed 16th-century structure with dwarf stone plinths, clay floors, and hearths (Period 2). This building is number 182 in the Colchester buildings series. In period 3 (mid 17th century) the structure was completely rebuilt on the same spot as a four- or five-roomed structure (building 189 in the Colchester series).*

*Later periods involved the insertion of a chimney breast (period 3.3, 18th); and the building of a detached smithy building (period 3.4; 18th). The whole site was rebuilt in brick in the 19th century, when the building on the street frontage was named "St. Leonard's House" (period 4). Romano-British, Saxon and early medieval material was found in residual contexts, including a rare late Saxon iron strap end.*

*This is a summary of a full archive report (lodged with the finds and in the Essex Sites and Monuments Record) which should be consulted for further details.*

### Introduction

Following submission of a planning application for construction of the new Colchester Eastern Approaches Road, Phase 1, an evaluation was carried out by Colchester Archaeological Trust Field Projects (CAT 1993). Trench 8 of that evaluation was opened up on the pavement side of the west end on the west wing of Colchester Tractors showroom (79 Hythe Hill). Post medieval and medieval deposits (principally a clay floor and a stone frontage wall) were revealed below slab level. This led to the definition of the area around 79 Hythe Hill as an archaeologically sensitive area, and the requirement that further excavation should be carried out before construction of the road. The subsequent fieldwork was carried out jointly by Colchester Archaeological Trust Field Projects and Howard Brooks Archaeological Services, under the direction of the writer. The work was carried out from December 1994 to January 1995, and was sponsored by the road-building consortium, principally Essex County Highways Department and Tesco Stores Ltd. (NGR site centre TM 0133 2468).

### Archaeological background

Port facilities have always played an important role in the development and success of Colchester from the late Iron Age onwards. Despite this, detailed information about the precise location of any of the historic waterfronts is scant. The Hythe, located 200m east of this site, was clearly important from at least the Norman period, when it was known as "New Hythe", its predecessor being farther downstream at *Ealdehythe* (now Old Heath). In the medieval period, buildings would have lined the Hythe quay, and would probably have spread up to and around St. Leonard's church on Hythe Hill (Fig. 1). The port facilities in the Roman period are obscure, but there may have been two Roman crossing or bridge points near the Hythe. By the Saxon period, place name and other evidence suggests that the waterfront was at Old Heath, farther downstream.

### Interpretation

#### *Early activity on site (pre-15th century)*

There were a number of residual finds - a single prehistoric struck flint, a Romano-British potsherd and thirteen RB brick fragments recovered mainly from period 1-2 contexts. This relatively large quantity of brick fragments must imply that the source of this material is not far away. There is no record of RB brick fragments reused in the structure of St. Leonard's church, 70 m to the north-west (RCHM, 1922; Rodwell 1977, 36). There are also several residual Saxon and medieval finds which imply both Saxon and medieval activity for which there are no surviving contemporary structures.

#### *Period 1. 15th/16th century (Fig. 2)*

The earliest structural activity consists of a series of pits or post holes - a convincing N-S row of features, and a less well-defined group to their west. It is tempting to see a rough right-angle setting of features here - perhaps the corner of a building. Several of the post holes contained stones or Roman brick, which may have been post packing. The structure was demolished in the late 15th or early 16th century. Its date of construction is unknown, but could be as early as the 13th century.

#### *Period 2.1. 16th century (Fig. 2)*

This period saw the construction of the first house,

EXCAVATIONS AT 79 HYTHE HILL, COLCHESTER

Building 182 in the Colchester series. Its walls (a mixture of brick/tile and septaria in mortar) were rather flimsy and insubstantial, and must have been plinths to support a timber frame. There are a number of difficulties in interpreting buildings whose walls only survive in fragmentary form. On the face of it, the house consisted of one large room (10.7 x 4.8m), with a separate 3.7 x 5.2m room on its eastern end. Both rooms had clay or trample floors, and the larger

(western) room had a central hearth built of tile fragments in burnt clay. There was no such hearth in the eastern room, but a burnt clay patch hard against its south wall must indicate the position of a hearth.

The layout is typical of a medieval hall, with a smaller service room to the east. Pottery finds in the floors must be 16th century or after, perhaps slightly later than one would expect for a hall. The central hearth implies that the hall roof was open to the eaves, although

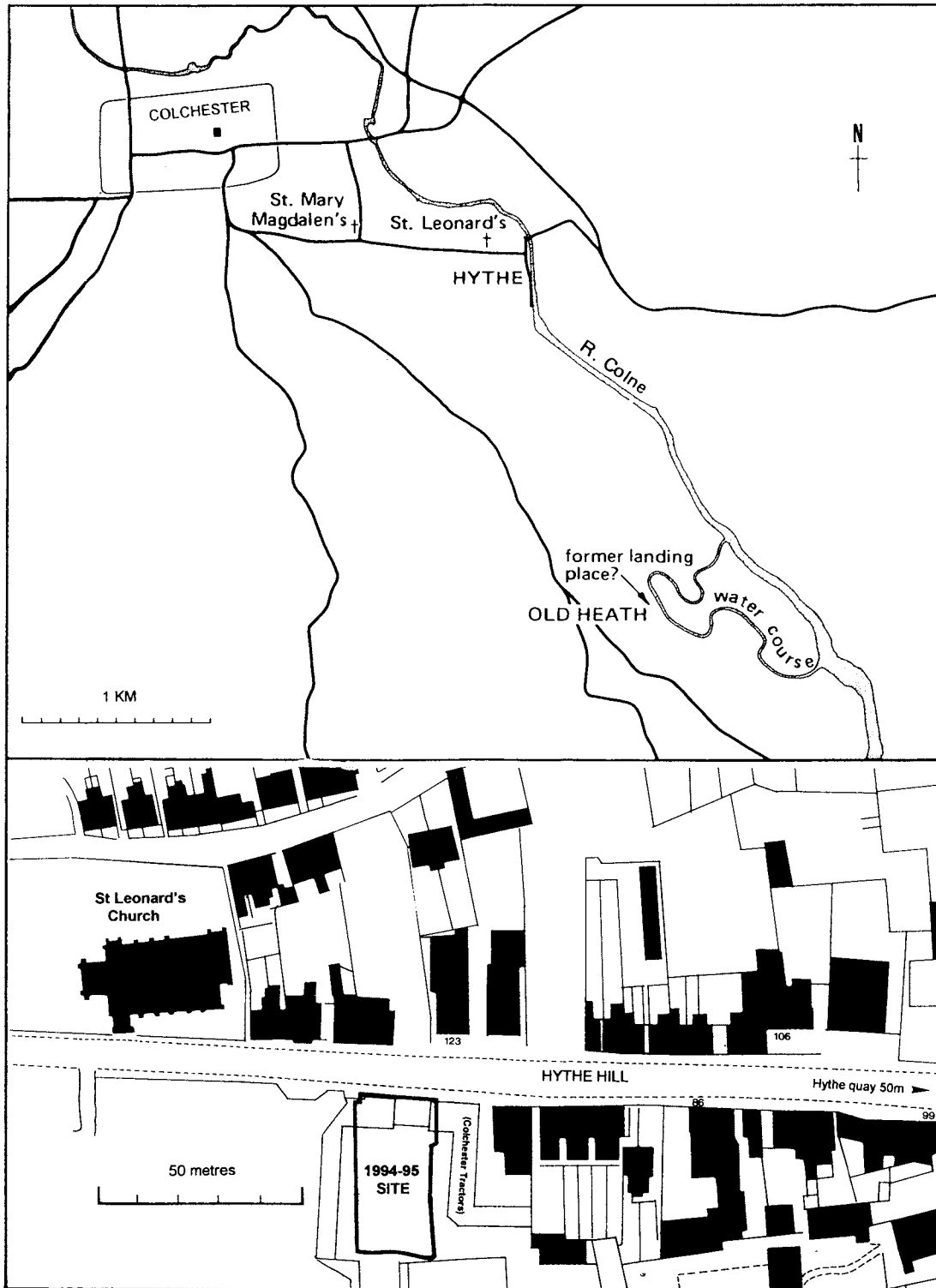


Fig. 1 Site Location

Colchester, with the Hythe, Old Heath, and St Leonard's Church (above); St Leonard's Church and 1994-95 excavation site (below).  
(Reproduced by kind permission of Ordnance Survey. © Crown copyright NC/01/154)

there may have been a second floor over the eastern service room. Two ovens lay a safe distance south of the house. They are not securely dated, but are presumably associated with the period 2 house. The ovens undoubtedly provided bread and other foodstuffs for the household.

A deposit of black-smithing debris on the floor near

the western end of the house indicates that the building was not purely domestic. Justine Bayley of the Ancient Monuments Laboratory has examined this and concludes that a smith was working here, perhaps on a nearby raised bench (which has not survived). The scale of smithing here was probably too great simply to supply the needs of the household, and a commercial

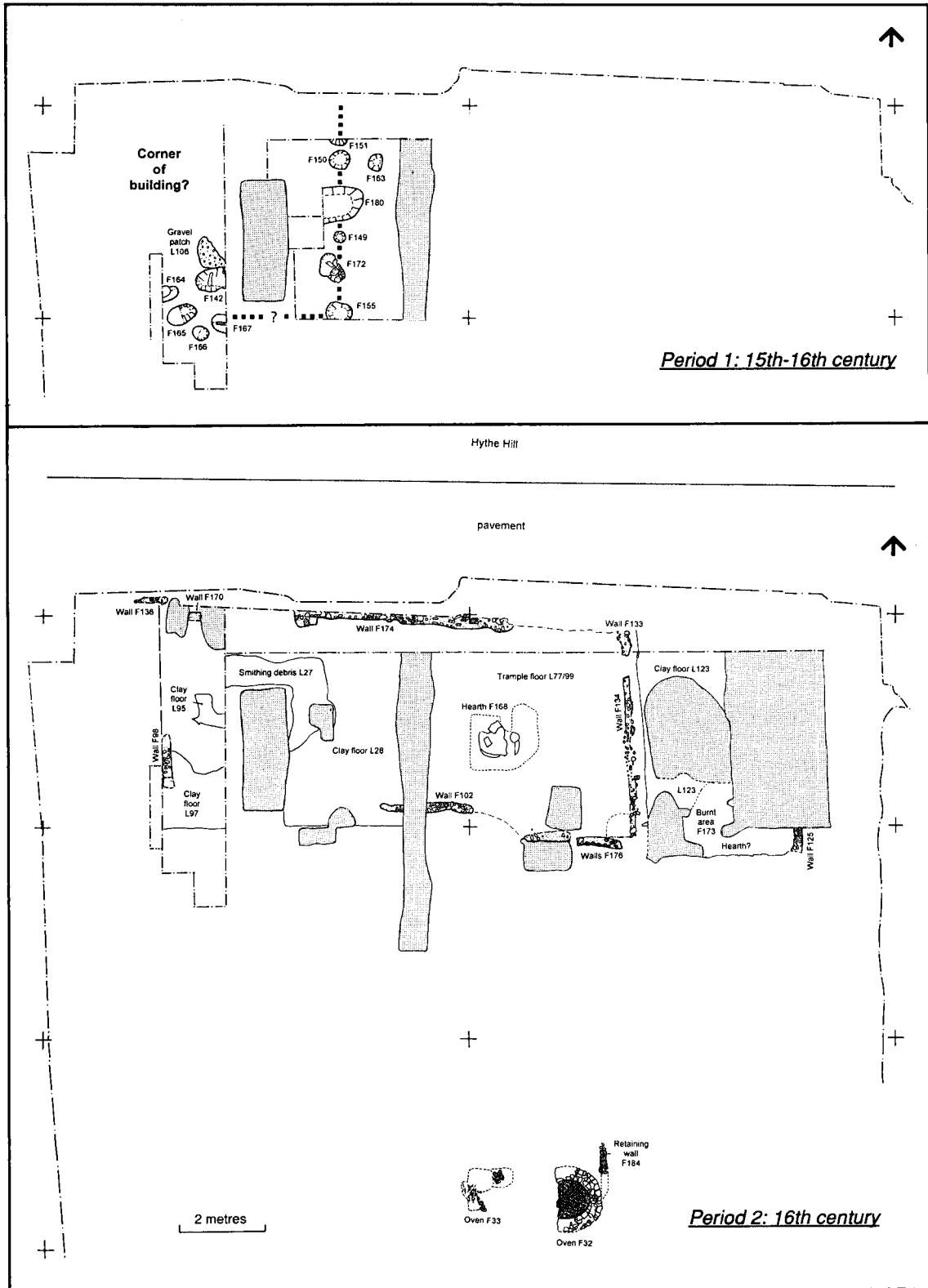


Fig. 2 Period 1 (above) and Period 2 (Colchester Building 182).

EXCAVATIONS AT 79 HYTHE HILL, COLCHESTER

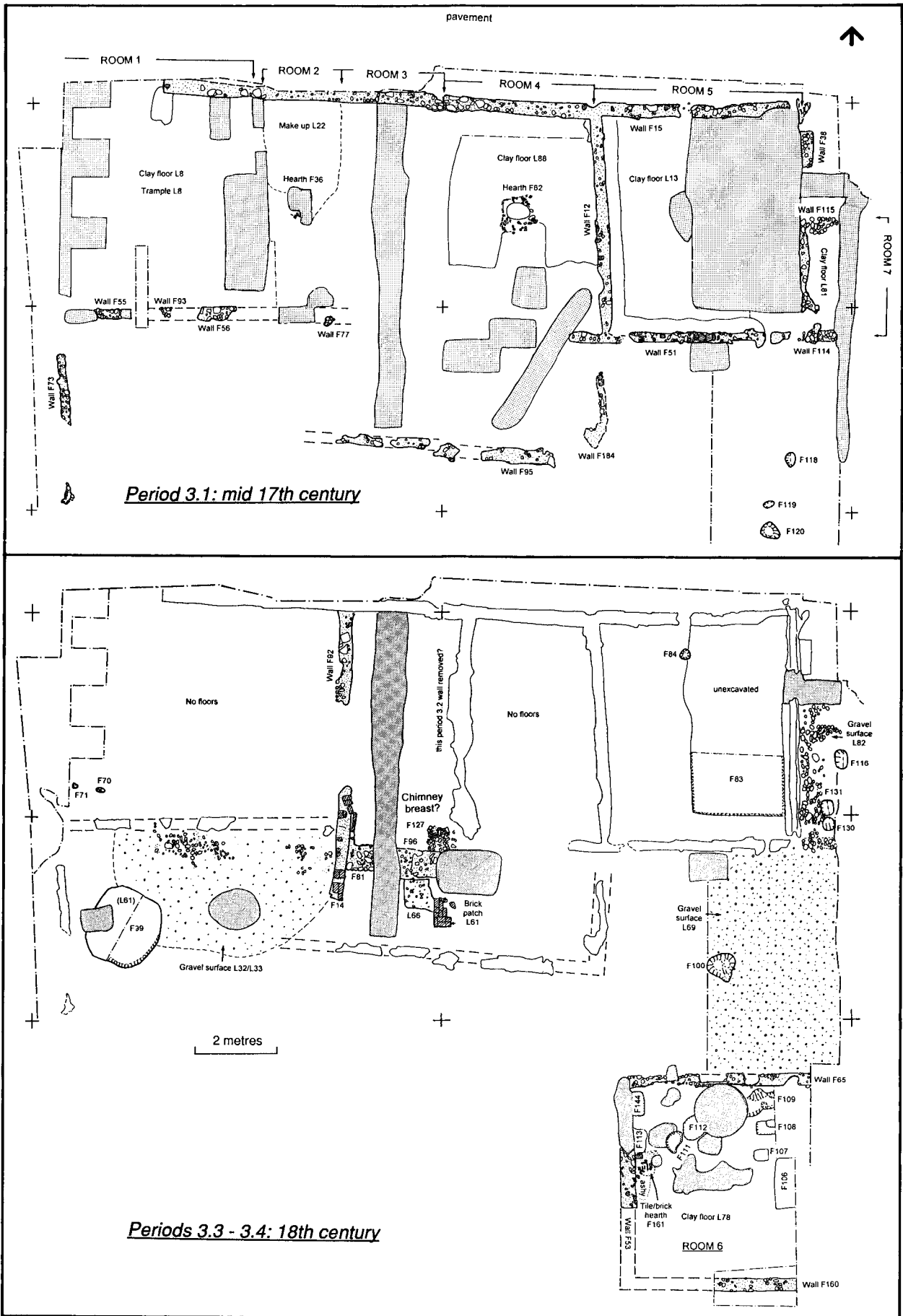


Fig 3 Periods 3.1 (above, building 189) and 3.3 - 3.4 (below). Walls unchanged from previous period are shown in outline.

venture is therefore indicated (the Hythe would have provided a market for such service industries).

*Period 2.2. Early 17th century*

New clay floors and hearths were laid. Whereas the main central hearth in the hall was replaced in the same position, the hearth in the eastern service room was repositioned in the centre of the room, implying that the previous arrangement (where smoke must have escaped somewhere near the south wall) had been changed.

*Period 3.1. Mid 17th century (Fig. 3)*

The house was completely rebuilt (Colchester building 189). The pattern was as before (stone rubble plinths which presumably supported a timber frame), but in this period it was a four-roomed structure with a lean-to on its east end. The house had a passage or corridor on its south edge. Whether it reached the west edge of the building is not known. In a normal house with single tenure, there is no need for a connecting passage or corridor - perhaps this was not one property, but *two*, and the occupants of one section (presumably the west rooms) needed an independent rear access route to their part of the house.

*Period 3.2. Late 17th century*

This period saw repairs and renewals to clay floors and hearths, and a drain was created by tacking new masonry onto the existing east wall of the east room.

*Period 3.3. Early 18th century (Fig. 3)*

The principal change of period 3.3 was the insertion of an H-shaped structure into the centre of the building. This looks very much like the foundation for a chimney breast, even though it was a rather rag-bag collection of old bits of brick and stone, in mortar. The broken remains of a witch bottle were found within part of the middle bar of the H-shape of the structure. These were traditionally placed to ward off evil spirits, and a chimney would be an entirely appropriate place for such a deposit. Apart from the chimney, other structural changes were the building of a wall on the line of one of the chimney wings, and the deposition of gravel over the east end of the building, which implies that the lean-to room had been demolished by this time. Outside the house, the gravel deposit south of the west end was renewed, and another rubbish pit dug through it. The top fill of this pit (F99) was sampled. It was not rich in environmental material (only indeterminate cereal grains), but contained clinker, mortar, coal and fish bone.

*Period 3.4. Later 18th century (Fig. 3)*

Period 3.4 saw the building of a separate room (6) south of the east end of the house. Access to this room had been opened up by the removal of the eastern room in period 3.3, and the dumping of gravel to provide dry ground under foot. Like the main building, room 6 had plinth type walls, which had been almost entirely truncated by later activity. These presumably held a

timber frame, since there is no sign of brickwork in this room until period 4. The room had a clay floor, and a tile hearth against the west wall. The floor was perforated by a number of small holes. Some of these may have been bench supports, others were simply holes filled with slag and ironworking debris. This room was probably a smithy.

*Period 4. 19th century*

Period 4 saw the complete rebuilding of the site in brick in the Victorian period. The main house on the frontage was known as "St Leonard's House" and plans survive (see archive report). The details of the site in this period will not be repeated here, because they conform very closely with 1896 1st Edition Ordnance Survey sheet.

*Later periods*

Period 5 was the later 20th century rebuilding of the Colchester Tractors' showroom. The two frontage buildings were single storey timber and glass structures with flat roofs (Fig. 1). Both sat on concrete slabs, whose construction removed so much of the Victorian brickwork from the frontage. Period 6 was the 1993 archaeological evaluation of the site. Period 7 was the 1995-6 building of the road which now occupies the site.

<i>Periods here</i>	<i>Periods in archive report</i>
1	1
2.1	2
2.2	3
3.1	4
3.2	5
3.3	6
3.4	7
4	8
5	9
6	10
7	11

Table 1 Concordance of periods in published report and archive report

**Finds**

After assessment, few of the finds groups were judged by the specialists to be of special significance. The only finds reports given here are summaries of the pottery and small finds reports. The full versions of these reports and details of the other finds are in the Archive report (i.e. clay tobacco pipes [by Mandy Marshall], animal bones [by S. Pinter-Bellows], macrobotanical and other remains [by V Fryer and P Murphy], shell, flint, coal, slate, mortar, glass.

**A summary of the medieval and post-medieval pottery**

by Helen Walker

*Introduction*

A total of 1879 sherds weighing 27.5kg was excavated from 228 contexts. All the pottery has been spot-dated by finds number and is available in the site archive. However the pottery is poorly stratified with medieval and post-medieval pottery often appearing in the same context, and is of little use in interpreting the site. However, as even unstratified pottery will yield information on date ranges and pottery supply, a summary of the pottery present is given below. The pottery has been classified using Cunningham's typology (Cunningham 1985, 1-4), and several of Cunningham's rim-form codes are quoted in this



report, especially cooking-pot rims which follow a chronology described in Drury (1993, 81-4).

*Medieval pottery (12th to 14th centuries)*

Very little pottery belongs to the early medieval period. There are a couple of shelly-ware sherds, including a beaded cooking-pot rim datable to the 12th century. Sherds of early medieval ware are scattered sparsely throughout the site and forms comprise, an everted cooking-pot rim; a 12th-century type thumbbed, beaded cooking-pot rim; and a slightly later B2-type cooking-pot rim datable to c.1200. A couple of the early medieval ware sherds show combed decoration.

Modest amounts of Hedingham ware are present. This ware is described by Drury (1993, 86-9) and was made at Sible Hedingham in north Essex between the mid-12th and the mid-14th centuries, although sherds belonging to the late 12th to 13th centuries are commonest. There is one large concentration of Hedingham ware, and the bottom half of a jug with a decomposed glaze was found. It is decorated with horizontal incised lines and is comparable to a jug published by Rackham (1972, pl.41). A number of Hedingham ware body sherds are decorated, most commonly with vertical applied strips, under a mottled green glaze. A twisted rod handle is also present, the handle type typically found on strip jugs, which date from the later 12th to earlier 13th century. Other Hedingham ware sherds show red slip decoration, perhaps copying Rouen-style decoration of the early to mid-13th century. There is also an example of a slightly later style of decoration, showing vertical combing through a cream slip-coating, in imitation of mid-13th to mid-14th century Mill Green ware. Other featured Hedingham ware sherds comprise a plain rod handle, a strap handle showing an incised zigzag line and a B3-type jug rim, a typical Hedingham rim form, as found on jugs excavated at Rivenhall (Drury 1993, fig. 43. 127-130).

A single sherd of London-type ware decorated with red slip was found in the same context as the Hedingham ware jug base. London-type ware (Pearce *et al.* 1985) has roughly the same date range as Hedingham ware and its styles of decoration were widely copied by

the Hedingham potters (Drury 1993, 86).

As might be expected, medieval coarse ware is the commonest medieval ware. This is a grey-firing, sand-tempered ware produced from the 12th to 14th centuries and made at several production centres, the nearest being at Mile End and Great Horkesley, just to the north of Colchester (Drury and Petchey 1975, 33-60). It is difficult to differentiate the products of the various industries as the fabrics and forms are similar, but one sherd of Mill Green coarse ware was identified. Medieval coarse ware forms comprise jugs, often with inturned rims, flanged bowl rims and cooking pot rims. Several types of cooking-pot rim are present some of which are roughly datable, these rim-forms comprise types B2 and B4, dating to c.1200; D2 and H2, dating to the early to mid-13th century; H1, current throughout the 13th century; and H3 and E5A rims, dating to the late 13th to 14th century. The H2 rim is probably the most frequent.

The earliest imported ware comprises two sherds of Rouen ware, a white ware imported from northern France during the early to mid 13th centuries (Barton 1966). One sherd, decorated with red slip and a rouletted applied strip has been illustrated (Fig. 4.1). Rouen ware is found mainly at sites along the south coast of England and was also traded along the east coast (Allen 1983, 197-8), but is not a common find in Essex. The Hedingham ware Rouen copies (mentioned above) are indirect imitations and were probably copying London-type ware Rouen-style jugs.

Traded English wares are also present at Hythe Hill. This includes a few sherds of Grimston ware, a reduced ware with a drab olive-green glaze made near Kings Lynn in Norfolk (Leah 1994). Sherds found here are plain, except for one example showing applied, horizontal curved strips, probably dating to the period c.1225 to 1350. Grimston ware had an overland distribution across East Anglia (Jennings and Rogerson 1994, 116-119) but is more likely to have reached Colchester via the coast. To the author's knowledge Grimston ware is a rare find in the rest of Essex. Small amounts of Scarborough ware (described by Farmer 1979) are present. This was also traded down the North Sea coast and has been found at other sites in Essex, for

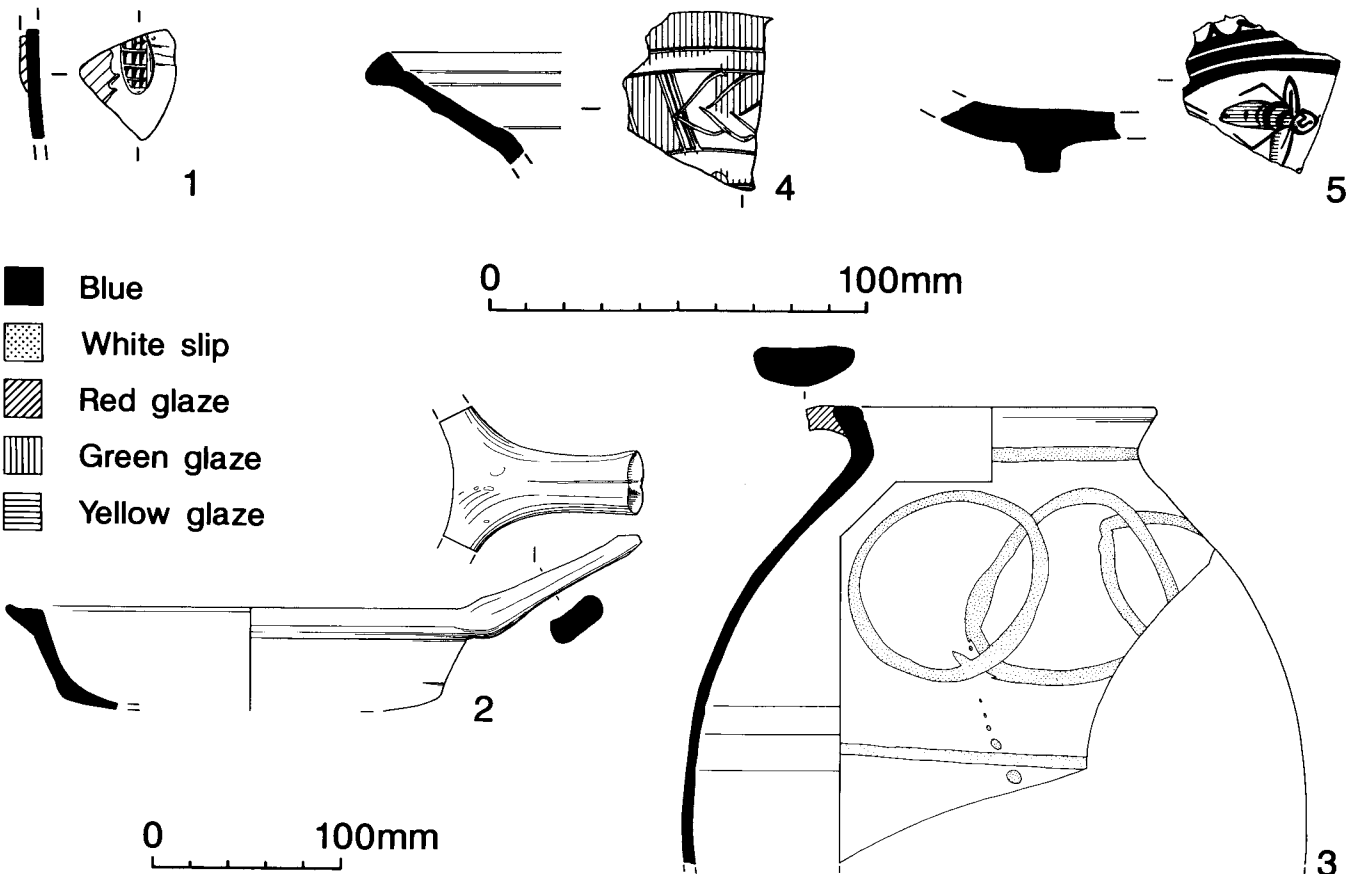


Fig 4 Medieval & post-medieval pottery

example at Harwich (Walker 1990, 92-102) and inland at Rivenhall (Drury 1993, 90). Both the phase 1 and phase 2 fabrics are present at the Hythe, in roughly equal quantities. The phase 1 fabric is slightly pinky and is not unlike Hedingham ware. It was traded from c.1200 to c. 1225 and featured sherds comprise two sherds showing brown slip dots under a honey coloured glaze, and what appears to be the rear end of a zoomorphic aquamanile (an ornamental water carrier used for the washing of hands at the dinner table). The phase 2 fabric is harder, thinner-walled and ranges from pinky to near white in colour, it dates from c.1225 to 1350 (Farmer 1979, 29). Only one featured sherd is present, a ribbed rod handle probably from a jug.

Saintonge ware is scattered widely but sparsely throughout the site, (often in the same context as Scarborough ware) and is the commonest of the medieval, traded/imported wares. Saintonge is another French white ware (Dunning 1968), and imported from south-west France in association with the Gascon wine trade. Green-glazed Saintonge and Saintonge polychrome are both present but the former is more common and was imported from the mid-13th to mid-14th centuries, reaching a peak around 1300 (Davey and Hodges 1983, fig.1.3). A couple of green-glazed jug rims and a sherd with a vertical applied strip are present. Body sherds only were found in Saintonge polychrome, which has the narrower date range of c.1280 to c. 1310 (Dunning 1968, 45).

Roughly contemporary with the Saintonge ware are sherds of Mill Green ware, made at kilns near Ingatestone in central Essex (Pearce *et al.* 1982). As Colchester is to the north of its main markets, little Mill Green ware was found here. A couple of sherds show combed decoration through a cream slip-coating, covered by a mottled green glaze, a typical method of Mill Green surface treatment. Several sherds are plain or have only a partial olive-green glaze and have been classified as Mill Green-type ware as they are untypical. A total of four sherds of Kingston-type ware are present. This is a type of Surrey-white ware which flourished from the later 13th to the mid 14th centuries (Pearce and Vince 1988, 82-91). Kingston-type ware is not uncommon in Essex, but as here, tends to occur only in small quantities.

Apart from medieval coarse ware, the largest component of the assemblage is Colchester ware with smaller amounts of other sandy orange wares. Colchester ware was made in the Colchester area between the 13th and mid-16th centuries and can be distinguished from other sandy orange wares by its heavy tempering of white quartz inclusions (Cunningham 1982, 365-7, see also Drury 1993, 89-90). In the 13th and 14th centuries a plain or mottled green glaze is typical, but in the transitional period, glaze becomes sparse or completely absent. Slip-painting is common throughout. It is often difficult to date sherd material as an unglazed sherd may either belong to a 15th/16th-century vessel, or the unglazed part of a medieval vessel. Almost certainly belonging to the 13th and 14th century are fragments from inturned jug rims showing slip-painting under a plain lead glaze, a ribbed rod handle that appears to be an imitation of Scarborough ware, and several sherds with a cream slip-coating under a mottled green glaze imitating Mill Green ware.

#### *Late medieval/transitional pottery (late 14th to mid 16th C.)*

Quite a large proportion of the pottery belongs to this period. Imports are still frequent and the most common of these is Low Countries red ware (Hurst *et al.* 1986, 130-45). This is a red-firing fabric with fine quartz sand inclusions and is not unlike later post-medieval red earthenware but can be distinguished by its glossy, often honey-coloured glaze, and by the different forms produced. A Low Countries red-ware skillet with a flat base and solid handle has been illustrated (fig. 4.2). A similar skillet is published by Hurst (*ibid.* fig.61.198), and is dated to the late 14th to early 15th centuries. Other featured sherds comprise more skillet fragments, a bowl rim and several tripod-feet which could be from pipkins or from tripod skillets.

Much of the Colchester ware was found in the same contexts as Low Countries red ware and is probably late medieval in date, when production switched from table wares to kitchen wares (Cunningham and Cotter 1988). Jars with lid-seated rims are common, these are sometimes internally glazed with slip-painted dashes on the rim, a Colchester ware characteristic. There are also examples of one-handed jars, a flanged bowl rim and fragments from cisterns. Part of

a slip-painted cistern is illustrated (Fig. 4.3).

Other imports from north-west Europe include sherds of Rhenish Siegburg and Langerwehe stonewares (Hurst *et al.* 1986, 176-190). Finds include a sherd from a 15th-century Siegburg Jacobakanne. Langerwehe stoneware is slightly more common and featured sherds comprise a cup rim dating from c.1360 to 1450, and flrilled base sherds probably from jugs. Somewhat later in date are examples of Raeren stoneware, also from the Rhineland (*ibid.* 194-208), including sherds from late 15th to mid-16th century squat, bulbous drinking jugs. Unlike the earlier German stonewares, Raeren is also a common find on inland sites. A more unusual import, is a Beauvais sgraffito bowl rim from Beauvais in northern France (Fig. 4.4).

Surrey white wares are still in evidence in the late medieval period. These include a few sherds of 14th to mid/late 15th-century Cheam white ware (Pearce and Vince 1988, 82-91), and a sherd painted with red slip which may be an example of coarse border ware, dating from the mid 14th to early 16th century (*ibid.* 82-91). There are also sherds from 'Tudor Green' ware lobed cups, a form produced from the mid 14th to mid 15th centuries (*ibid.* 82-91). With the exception of the possible coarse border ware sherd, these would not be out of place on an inland site. Belonging to the medieval or late medieval periods are unidentified buff ware and white ware sherds. The white wares may be Surrey or French wares while the buff wares may have a Suffolk origin.

#### *Post-medieval pottery (mid-16th century onwards)*

There is not a great deal of post-medieval pottery. As would be expected, post-medieval red earthenware is relatively common. Elsewhere in Essex post-medieval red earthenware was current by the late 15th/16th century (Cunningham 1985, 1-2) but none of the sherds from the Hythe belonged to this early date, presumably because the niche was filled by Colchester ware. Both types produced oxidised kitchen wares, but post-medieval red earthenware has a harder, smoother fabric. Post-medieval red earthenware forms comprise, jar rims, bowl rims, dish rims and part of a lid. The two variants of post-medieval red earthenware, black-glazed ware and Metropolitan slipware, both dating to the 17th and earlier 18th centuries are present, albeit in small quantities. No featured black-glazed sherds were found but most are probably from mugs or tygs. Metropolitan slipware forms comprise fragments from flanged-rim dishes.

Surrey-Hampshire white ware (Pearce 1992) is present at Hythe Hill. This was manufactured from the second half of the 16th century and throughout the 17th, and was the successor to the medieval Surrey white ware industries. A flanged bowl rim is the only featured sherd.

Post-medieval German stonewares are represented by Frechen stoneware fragments from 17th century type jugs and bellarmines (Hurst *et al.* 1986, 214-221), and sherds of Westerwald stoneware, imported from the 17th to earlier 18th century (*ibid.* 221-226). Both these wares are common on inland sites and do not reflect the Hythe's status as a port. There is however, one stoneware sherd of interest, the lower part of a ?Cologne Fountain Schnelle datable to 1525 - 1575, and paralleled by Hurst (*ibid.*, pl. 40). This form was not widely traded.

Several sherds have been designated as Anglo/Netherlands tin-glazed earthenware, as it can be difficult to distinguish early English tin glaze from Dutch products. Fragments from 17th century bowls and dishes with squared, footing bases were found and are similar to those published by Jennings (1981, figs 86-7). One such vessel shows an unusual ?wasp motif and is illustrated (No.5). In addition, there are two tin-glazed sherds with green, blue and turquoise painting which may have an earlier, Mediterranean origin.

The remaining post-medieval material is typical of that found on any site, comprising English stonewares manufactured from the later 17th century; English tin-glazed earthenware which is mainly plain and datable to the 18th century; Staffordshire-type white salt-glazed stoneware dating from the 1720s to 1770s; mid-18th century fine earthenwares; creamware, dating from the mid-18th century and pearlware dating to c.1800. There are also examples of industrial slipwares dating to around 1800, and 19th-century slipped kitchen earthenwares, along with the odd flowerpot. The latest datable pottery

is ironstone dating from the early 19th to 20th centuries.

*The catalogue* (Fig. 4).

- 1 Body sherd; Rouen ware; pinky-white fabric; applied rouletted strip and patch of red slip coating under a plain lead glaze giving an apparent yellow glaze and a gingery colour over the red slip-coating; early to mid-13th century. Bag 358. (Li25)
- 2 Skillet: Low Countries red ware; partial internal glaze with splashes of glaze on the rim and exterior; patches of fire-blackening on exterior; late 14th to early 15th century Bag 34 (L30) and bag 51 (L29).
- 3 Slip-painted one-handed cistern: Colchester ware; orange fabric with occasional darker patches; laminated fracture; painted with casually executed intersecting circles, delineated by horizontal slip-painted bands around the neck and around the girth: several drips of slip; slip-painted dashes on rim (not shown); abraded stump of handle; 15th to mid 16th century. Unstratified.
- 4 Bowl rim: double slip Beauvais sgraffito; buff fabric covered with a coating of red slip, and then a covering of white slip, the design is scored through the white slip to reveal the red slip beneath clear lead glaze with patches of green: 16th century. Bag 31
- 5 Recessed base from a dish: Anglo/Netherlands tin-glazed earthenware; pinkish fabric but with a buff surface; yellowish glazed lead glaze on exterior; off white tin glaze on interior;

shows painting of a wasp; 17th century. Bag 224 (F123).

*Discussion of pottery*

The dating of the late medieval and post-medieval pottery fits in with the different phases of house building and rebuilding. However, quite a lot of the pottery dates from the late 12th to mid 14th century and predates period 1 of the house. There are several imported wares, although they make up quite a small proportion of the total assemblage. In the medieval period the imports come from France and eastern England but in the late medieval and post-medieval period trade switches to the Low Countries, a situation reflected at Harwich (Walker 1990, 86), although in contrast to Harwich there are no (definite) imports from the Mediterranean. The small amounts of Rouen ware and Grimston ware may represent incidental finds rather than the results of trade.

**The small finds**

by Nina Crummy

The overwhelming majority of small finds from this site were residual in their contexts. While this makes them of little help in dating the various phases of construction and alteration of the Hythe Hill building, there are among them pieces of intrinsic interest and importance not only in relation to Colchester, but also in a national

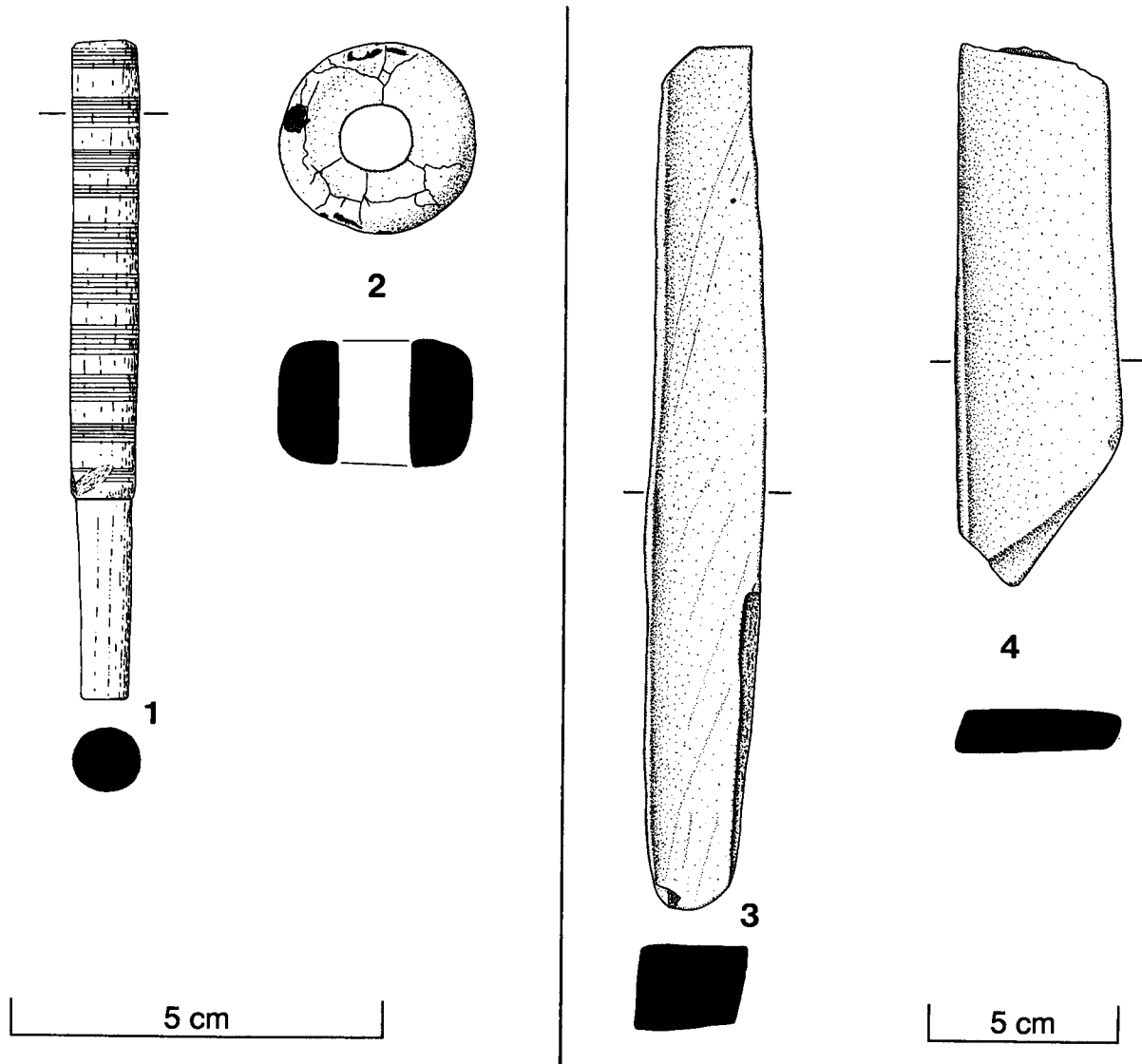


Fig. 5 Bone (1), ceramic (2), and stone (3-4) small finds 1 Bobbin (SF3, F171, Per 2.1); 2 Spindlewhorl (SF27, L60, Per 2.2); 3 Hone (SF12, L78, Per 3.3 - 3.4); 4 Hone (SF1, L60, Per 2.2).

and northern European context.

The most notable find is an iron split-end strap-end (Fig. 6.4, SF 64) of probable 9th- to 10th-century date, found in a Period 3.4 posthole (F107). It is straight-sided with a debased zoomorphic terminal accentuated by notches filled with white-metal. Arcs and notches around the upper end are also picked out in white-metal. The strap was secured by a single, quite large, rivet. Length 40 mm, max. width 11 mm.

Few pre-conquest iron strap-ends are known, though this may be as much a factor of developing post-excavation practice as of contemporary manufacture. The earliest in date is from the middle Saxon site at Ramsbury, Wiltshire (Evison 1980, fig. 20,6), there is a 9th-century example from Winchester (Hinton 1990, fig. 126, 1062), and five were found on the Coppergate site, York, in contexts dated c. 930/5-c. 975 (Ottaway 1992, fig. 285). The method of manufacture was to weld two strips of iron together, leaving one end open in which to insert the strap, which was then held in place by one or more rivets. The Ramsbury example has one rivet, the Winchester one has two, while those with a surviving upper end at Coppergate have one.

A 9th-century copper-alloy strap-end with animal-head terminal and single fixing rivet in Colchester Museum is purported to have

come from the town, though its find spot is unknown (CM 3187.15; Crummy 1981, fig. 26). The date of the iron Hythe Hill example is uncertain. While it is closest to the 9th-century piece from Winchester in general form, its single rivet seems to ally it more to the Ramsbury and York examples.

The location of middle Saxon settlement at Colchester has yet to be identified. A scatter of finds suggest that, like late Saxon occupation in the town, it was spread along Head Street and High Street, or that it may have been on the river possibly at Old Heath (Crummy 1981, 23, 47). Colchester lay within the south-eastern corner of Danelaw from at least the 870s until Edward the Elder's siege of 917, though there are few finds of that period from the town and none are diagnostically Anglo-Scandinavian or continental Scandinavian in character. It is impossible, therefore, to offer a date for the Hythe Hill strap-end other than a broad 9th- to 10th-century range, with the proviso that it may be earlier or may even slip into the 11th century.

A complete burnt doughnut-shaped stone spindlewhorl (Fig. 5.2, SF 27) came from Period 2.2 make-up (L60). Most of the surface is crazed and generally beige in colour, with a few dark brown to black patches. The stone is probably the hard fine-grained silt-grade limestone from the Mendips or Pennines (Ellis in Geddes & Dunning

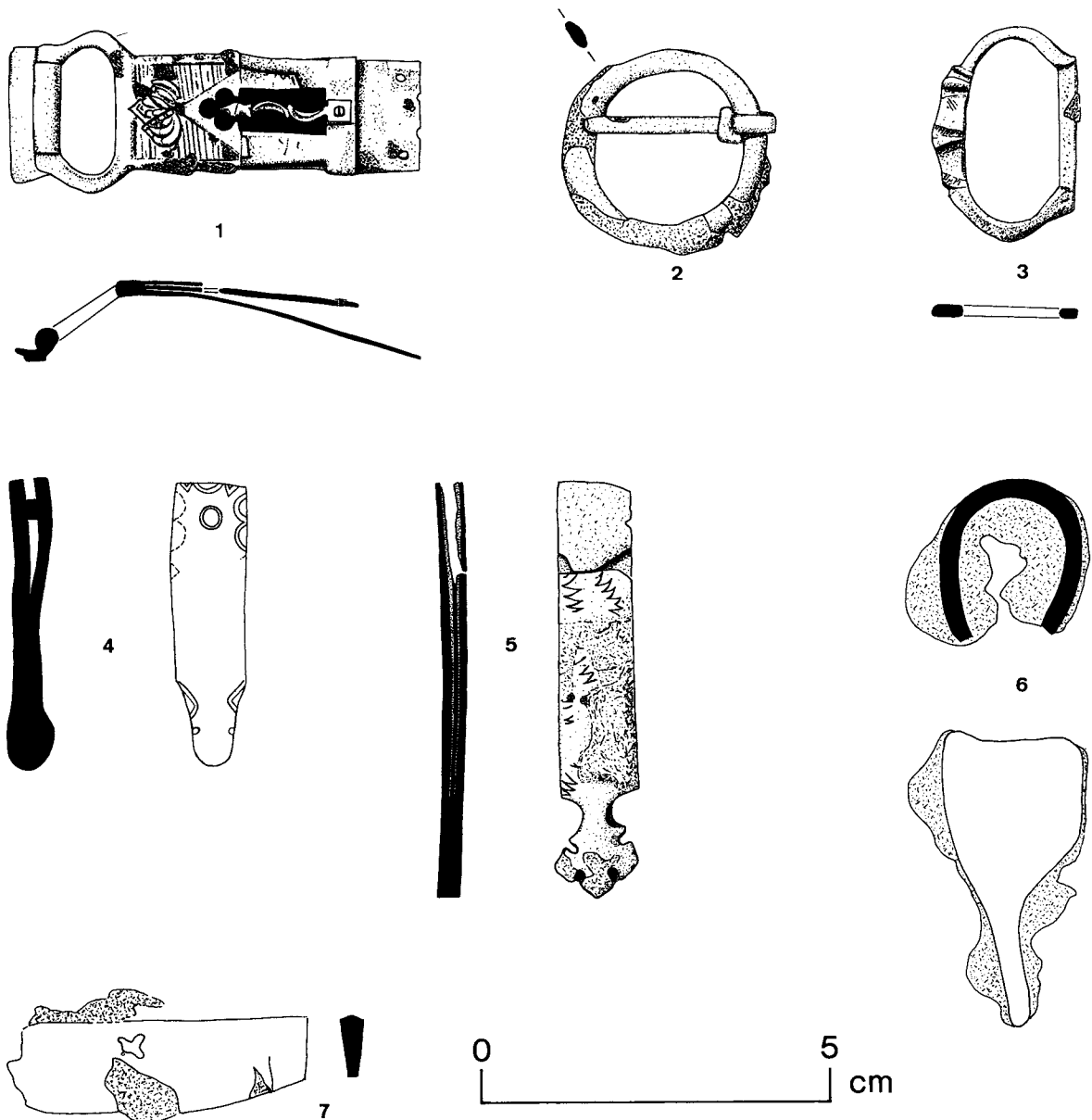


Fig. 6 Copper alloy (1-3, 5) and iron (4, 6-7) small finds 1 Composite strap clasp (SF52, L60, Per 2.2); 2 Buckle (SF27, L113, Per 3.1); 3 Buckle (SF32, L60, Per 2.2); 4 Strap end (SF64, F107, Per 3.4); 5 Strap end (SF21, u/s); 6 Candlestick (SF81, L101, Per 3.1 - from x-ray); 7 Knife blade (SF86, L24, Per 2.2 - from x-ray).

1977, 315) that was often used for whorls in the late Saxon and early medieval periods. Examples come from Thetford (Rogerson & Dallas 1984, 111), Lincoln (Mann 1982, 22), London (Pritchard 1991, 165), King's Lynn (Geddes & Dunning 1977, 315-17), Norwich (Margeson 1993, 185), Winchester (Crummy, forthcoming), and York (Waterman 1959, fig. 20). Evidence for a closing date for the manufacture of these objects is lacking, but their recovery from mainly late Saxon to early medieval contexts suggests that this example is residual, and it need not be much later than the iron strap-end.

A large slate roundel (SF 61), maximum diameter 90 mm, was found in a Period 1-2.1 pit of 15th- to 16th-century date (F 172). It was probably cut down for use as a pot lid from a roof tile (*cf.* Allan 1984, fig 168, 35). A second example (SF60), maximum diameter 83 mm, came from a clay floor, L25, in the early 17th-century rebuild of the house.

The later medieval period, especially the 14th century, was a period of mass production of cheap base-metal objects such as buckles and strap-ends, many produced in England, but also many imported, particularly from Germany. It is not, therefore, surprising that a number of strap fittings of this date are present at Hythe Hill

A complete buckle (Fig. 6.2, SF 37) of a plain circular form (internal diameter 24mm) found from the late 13th to early 15th century came from Period 3.1 make-up (L113). The tongue on this example is unusual in having a collar wrapped around it just below the fold around the frame (Egan & Pritchard 1991, fig. 32). Another widely used form of buckle, in use from the late 12th to late 14th century, is represented by a worn copper-alloy oval frame (Fig. 6.3, SF 32), with an offset narrow bar for the tongue and plate, both of which are missing. The outside edge is thickened to a point, which is notched to take the tongue. Pairs of ridge mouldings flank the thickened area. The frame was residual in Period 3 make-up.

A composite copper-alloy strap-end (Fig. 6.5, SF 21) with a spacer of sheet metal sandwiched between the front and back plates is of a form dated to the 14th-century (*ibid.* 148). Both front and back plates have broken at the strap end, the former only just above the end of the strap, the latter higher up. Some leather remains between the plates. This form is usually secured by two rivets, one to fix the spacer, one to fix the strap. The front plate is decorated with lines of engraved zigzags (otherwise known as worked scorpion, or rocker-arm decoration), a form of decoration in use from the early 13th to early 15th centuries. The terminal is of stylised foliate knob form. The strap-end is made for a narrow girdle of only 10 mm width, and its maximum surviving length is 55 mm. It derived from a disturbed (unstratified) context (L100).

Of similar form to SF 21, composite with a sheet metal spacer, is a copper-alloy folding strap-clasp (fig. 6.1, SF 52) from Period 3 make-up (L60). A form of buckle in use throughout the 14th century and possibly into the early 15th, which makes it residual in this context, the strap-clasp functioned by folding the plate attached to the outer bar of the buckle frame over onto the leather strap to secure it. As on many examples, the folding plate of this clasp was strengthened with a bar-mount (*ibid.*, 116-20).

This strap-clasp is of particular importance, as it is the first known example, from Britain or the continent, of a buckle with plates decorated with a form of openwork decoration previously found only on strap-ends (*ibid.*, 149). The likelihood of sets of strap-fittings being made with this type of decoration was suggested by a buckle-plate from Belgium (Fingerlin 1971, 101), but that lacked any diagnostic feature of the buckle form. Part of the front-plate of SF 52 is missing, but enough survives to show the top of an openwork panel with a trefoil arch and a side pillars, with, above the arch, a field of engraved horizontal lines at the top of which is set a bud-like design, possibly flanked by two uncertain designs - possibly leaves. The spacer plate has a central rectangular cut-out, and riveted to it, displayed in the frame of the arch, is a stem bearing an acorn. The back-plate is plain but for two notches between the three rivet holes that secured the leather strap between the plates. Mineralised traces of the strap remain between the spacer and back plates. The decoration places this clasp in the late 14th or early 15th century (Egan & Pritchard 1991, 149).

Several household items, some of which may have derived from the earliest house on the site, came from Period 2 contexts. Built into a period 2.1 masonry wall (F136) was a partially worked fine-grained

limestone mortar, 25 cm in diameter at the rim (SF 62). A shallow pouring groove has been cut into the rim, which is reasonably flat but sloping relative to the base, of irregular thickness (maximum 51mm, minimum 36mm), and has clearly never been worked to a smooth finish. The inside of the bowl (depth 55-60 mm) also appears unfinished, as its superficially smooth surface is pitted with numerous shallow patches of rough stone. The surface of the outer wall (maximum height 155mm) shows rough chisel marks, rather than the fine pecking apparent on finished mortars. The pouring groove is cut near the centre of a straight section of wall, suggesting the mortar was fashioned from a squared-off block. Both on and opposite the straight section the wall is undercut. It seems to have split during shaping, and it is probably this damage that has resulted in the piece being abandoned, to be recycled as building stone. The source of the stone is uncertain, but the fineness of the grain suggests that it may be either from Barnack or France. Blocks of both Barnack and Caen were brought to Colchester to be used for detailed architectural work in the Norman period (Crummy 1981, 1), and other French quarries were also exploited for both carved architectural figures (J. Snyder, pers. comm.), and mortars, though shipwreck evidence suggests that the latter were imported as finished items (Dunning 1977, 336).

From Period 2.2 make-up (L60) came a stout copper-alloy lozenge-shaped key bow (SF 35), similar to an example from Exeter in a context dated from the late 13th to early 14th century (Goodall 1984, fig. 193, 184). Iron examples from Winchester date to the late 11th and early to mid 13th century (Goodall 1990, fig. 327, 3782, and fig. 326, 3758 respectively). A bone lace-making bobbin (Bullock 1981, 80; Palliser 1910, 294-7) from a Period 2 pit (Fig. 5.1) is probably contemporary with its context, as is a crushed copper-alloy thimble (SF 17) in Period 3 topsoil/dump (L65). Originally dome-shaped, the thimble has a plain band around the base and circular indentations punched by hand in a spiral up to the centre of the crown.

A large hone (Fig. 5.4, SF 1) from Period 3 make-up (L60) is of blue phyllite, 150 mm long, rectangular in section, and tapers in thickness from 15 to 5 mm. The upper end is pointed, the lower end is missing. The smooth faces demonstrate that it has been used principally for edge sharpening. Slight short grooves along one of the narrow edges are almost certainly from natural cleavage in the stone, not from point-sharpening, though there is a small point-sharpening groove on one of the edges of the pointed top. Another large hone (Fig. 5.3, SF 12), from a 16th- to 18th-century context (L78), is of Norwegian ragstone, a fine-grained mica-schist quarried at Eidsborg, near Telemark. It is 236 mm long, square in section, with only the narrow end missing. One face, which is quite rough, is spalled at the upper end, and is scored by a point-sharpening groove. The spalling may have been triggered by another such groove. The other faces are all smooth, though there is some roughness down one edge at the upper end, and have been used principally for edge-sharpening. There is a slight point-sharpening groove at the lower end of one face. Both hones are almost complete, and of a size used for sharpening tools rather than small personal knives.

The principal sources for both stones lie in southern Norway, though there is some suggestion that blue phyllite may have a more central European origin (Moore 1978, 68). Hones of these stones were imported into England from the 9th century (Mann 1982, 30; Moore & Ellis 1984, 107), throughout the medieval period, and possibly even as late as the 16th or 17th century (Moore & Oakley 1979, 283). Rough blocks were also imported into London to be made into hones at the point of entry (Pritchard 1991, 155; Museum of London Archaeological Archive, LUD82 [1062] <297>). That importation continued into the post-medieval period appears to be supported by four examples from 15th- to 16th-century contexts at Victoria Road, Winchester (Crummy forthcoming), as may SF 12 from Hythe Hill.

The clay floors and other occupation levels of the rebuilt Period 4 building produced several iron objects, mainly nails and roves, but also a candlestick (fig. 6.6, SF 81) of simple socketed form, common throughout the medieval period (e.g. Margeson 1993, 84), a small knife blade and most of the whittle tang (SF 80), and a small fragment of a knife blade with an inlaid mark of white-metal (Fig. 6.7, SF 86). This is the first mark to be noted on a blade from Colchester, but they

were widely used by medieval and early post-medieval cutlers and blacksmiths (Cowgill *et al.* 1987, 20). A fragment of a scale tang (SF 13) from an iron knife with wooden plates and copper-alloy binding and rivets came from a late 16th- to early 17th-century pit (F99). It is unlikely to be much earlier than its context.

Commerce on the site is indicated by a 14th-century latten reckoning counter (SF 15) from Period 3.2 make-up (L12). Counters of this period bear a design based on that of silver pennies, and are wholly or partly pierced through the centre of the flan to prevent them being silvered and passed off as coins. This example probably belongs to the period 1321-43 (Mitchiner 1988, 95-6, 102-3, as Lawrence class XV, 144-5).

The small copper-alloy pins and lace-ends usually common on medieval and early post-medieval sites are not well represented here. Only four pins were found, none of a type that can well-dated, and only one lace-end, a Colchester Type 1, dated *c.* 1375-1550/75 (Crummy 1988, 13). This comes from a Period 3.1 clay floor (L13), and may be contemporary with its context.

A weathered lug broken from the rim of a Purbeck marble mortar came from an unstratified context. The lug has a wide pouring groove, tapering only slightly towards the outer edge, and terminates just below the rim. It is chamfered at the angles. A similar example, also in Purbeck marble, came from King's Lynn (Dunning 1977, 325, fig 147, 31). In the medieval period Purbeck marble mortars were in demand throughout southern, midland, and eastern England, and were also exported to continental North Sea ports and the Channel Islands. Shipwreck evidence points to their reaching East Anglia by sea (*ibid.*). A second fragment of weathered Purbeck marble, maximum dimensions 60 x 70 mm, thickness varies from 20 to 30 mm, was found in a dump layer associated with the Victorian rebuilding of the house. While this fragment has two contiguous worked edges set at right angles to each other (the other two edges are fractured), the curvature of the longer edge and the way the outer face remains more or less vertical while the inner becomes increasingly curved (thus increasing the thickness) suggest that it has been cut from the rim of a Purbeck marble mortar. Both Roman and medieval examples of these vessels are known from the town (Crummy 1983, 76; Crummy 1988, 39-41), and their reuse as building material in the medieval period was shown at Middleborough, where at least one reused example had, like this, been deliberately trimmed (*ibid.*).

A small number of iron nails and roves from holdfasts were found in Period 2.2, Period 3.1, and later contexts. While some may be from the Hythe Hill building, others, such as those in Period 3 make-up, may have been brought onto the site from elsewhere. Most of an iron strap-hinge was recovered from a Period 3.2 pit, but no other substantial iron fittings, or tools, were found.

The proximity of the site to the harbour is shown by a lead fishing weight (SF 58; unstratified) and three pieces of pitch, two from a Period 3.1 ?hearth (SF57; F62), and one from a Period 5 pit (SF 56; F85). The pitch was probably stored on the property and used for caulking boats. The site is not immediately adjacent to the river, but a parallel for the storage of pitch at some remove from the waterfront is provided by the Peninsula House site, London, where the remains of barrels of pitch were found stored in a cellar in the 17th century (Milne 1990, 115).

## Discussion

There are three principal research themes which concern us here. First, the internal development of the site, second the origins and growth of the settlement which established itself around St Leonard's Church and, third, the relationship of Hythe port to the old port of Colchester, Old Heath (Old Hythe). These are obviously interconnected themes.

The growth and development of the buildings along the frontage of Hythe Hill repeats a pattern seen before in Colchester. At Hythe Hill, an earthfast building (demolished in the 15th/16th century) was replaced by

a stone plinth house of a simple two-cell plan (hall and service room). There was a major rebuild in the 17th century, a chimney was inserted in the 18th, and the site was rebuilt in brick in Victorian times. At the Middleborough site, in the northern suburbs of the town, two excavated houses (buildings 75 and 76) show remarkably similar developments, with a medieval timber phase replaced by a stone plinth house (in the case of building 75, a very close parallel), with several extensions in the 15th and 16th century, a chimney breast inserted between the 17th and mid 19th century, and ultimately (building 76 only) Victorian rebuilding in brick (Brooks and Crummy 1983, 197).

If the Hythe Hill houses were architecturally similar to others in Colchester, were they different in any other way? There was no reason to suppose that the Middleborough houses were anything other than purely domestic, but at Hythe Hill there are indications in the form of 16th-century blacksmithing activity, the possible subdivision of the property, the insertion of a drain in the 17th, and the building of a separate smithy in the 18th that these buildings were both domestic and light industrial in nature. There is little doubt that the proximity of the Hythe port provided the market for many types of "support services", such as the blacksmithing, and the fact that the 1896 OS sheet shows a smithy and a coal yard within 75 yards of our site demonstrates the continuing need for such light industrial or cottage industries, tucked away in the local backstreets. Other finds, such as the hones, tend to emphasise the light-industrial rather than the domestic nature of the site.

There were quantities of residual finds from the site. The Romano-British material implies that there must be a Romano-British site in the near vicinity. The late Saxon strap end has important, but slightly different, implications. This is the first Saxon object from the Hythe port area. The received wisdom on the origins of what is now Hythe port is that the original landing place or port of Colchester was at "Old Heath", and that a reference to *Ealdehythe* (Old Heath) in 1237 (Reaney 1935, 376) makes it clear that there must have been both an old and a new heath (Hythe) at that time. The discovery of the Saxon piece on Hythe Hill throws up the following question. Is it possible that the church and settlement around St Leonard's church and in the Hythe area in general originated in the Saxon period, rather than in the thirteenth century? And by extension, could the port at Colchester have transferred to "new" Hythe much earlier than we first thought? The Royal Commission Inventory entry for St Leonard's church (RCHM 1922) states that the earliest surviving fabric dates to *circa* 1330-40. It is known that this is by no means the original date of construction of the church, of which the earliest record is in the year 1237 (Moore 1897). Rodwell (1977, 36) also rightly points out that the wall misalignment between nave and chancel must be the relic of an earlier ground plan. We must now ask ourselves whether the church and parish are Saxon in origin. There is a further link between Saxon and

medieval periods - even allowing for the fact that the origin of the first structure (period 1: 15th century) is not firmly dated, there are sufficient quantities of residual medieval material from the site to make it a reasonable assumption that there are periods of activity on Hythe Hill which have not survived on this site.

Do any of the site finds reflect its proximity to a port? There is certainly slate in early contexts, and it would appear that this material is coming in through Hythe in the 15th century at the latest. There is a certain amount of imported pottery, though this did not form a large part of the assemblage. Early pottery is largely 13th century French (Saintonge and Rouen) and eastern English (Scarborough and Grimston) material. From the 14th, trade switches to the Low Countries and north-west Europe.

Traded imports therefore form a small part of the site's pottery assemblage, but much material is locally produced, and all the site's clay pipe appears to be locally made.

### Acknowledgements

Our thanks to the principal projects sponsors, Tesco Stores Ltd. and Essex County Council, and especially to Mr Robert Nourse, Resident Engineer for Essex County Council Highways and Transportation Department for his help and interest.

I am grateful to all the site staff, and in particular to Steve Benfield, and Julian Hudson. Photographs by site staff and Alison Colchester. Thanks to all the finds specialists for their reports, and especially to Nina Crummy for doing so much of the reporting in her own time. The finds were X-rayed, cleaned and conserved by Anne-Marie Bojko of Colchester Museum Services. Pottery illustrations are by Stewart MacNeill. Other figures are by HB. And finally, thanks to Carl Crossan and Philip Crummy for support and advice during site work and in post-excavation.

*Author:* Howard Brooks, Colchester Archaeological Trust, 12 Lexden Road, Colchester CO3 3NF

### Bibliography

- Allan, J P, 1984 *Medieval and post-medieval finds from Exeter, 1971-80*, Exeter Archaeological Reports 3
- Allen, J., 1983 "The importance of pottery to England c. 1200-1500" in Davey, P., and Hodges, R., (eds.), *Ceramics and Trade: the production and distribution of late medieval pottery in north-west Europe* (University of Sheffield, Department of Prehistory and Archaeology), 193-207.
- Andrews, D., Milton, B., and Walker, H., "Harwich; its archaeological potential as revealed in excavations at George Street and Church Street", *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* 21, 72-86.
- Barton, K., 1966 "Medieval pottery at Rouen", *Archaeol. J.*, 122, 73-85.
- Biddle, M., 1990 *Object and economy in medieval Winchester, Winchester Studies 7 ii*
- Brooks, H & Crummy, P. 1983 "Excavations at Middleborough 1979", 1555-209, in Crummy 1983.
- Bullock, A. 1981 *Lace and Lace-making*
- CAT 1993 Archaeological evaluation of the route of the Eastern Approaches Road, Phase 1. Colchester Archaeological Trust.
- Clarke, E., and Carter, A., 1977 *Excavations in King's Lynn 1963-70*, Society for Medieval Archaeology Monograph 7.
- Cowgill, J, de Neergaard, M, & Griffiths, N, 1987 *Knives and scabbards, Medieval finds from excavations in London 1.*
- Crummy, P., 1981 *Aspects of Anglo-Saxon and Norman Colchester, Colchester Archaeological Report 1*, CBA Research Report 39.
- Crummy, N. 1983 *Colchester Archaeological Report 2. The Roman small finds from excavations in Colchester 1971-9.*
- Crummy, P. 1983 *Colchester Archaeological Report 3: Excavations at Lion Walk, Balkeerne Lane, and Middleborough, Colchester, Essex.*
- Crummy, N., 1988 *Colchester Archaeological Report 5. The post-Roman small finds from excavations in Colchester 1971-85.*
- Crummy, P, 1991 'St Botolph's Priory Church' in *The Colchester Archaeologist*, 4, 1-5
- Crummy, N., et al, forthcoming *Small finds from the suburbs and city defences, Winchester City Museums publication 6.*
- Cunningham, C. M., 1982 "The medieval and post-medieval pottery" in Drury, P.J., "Aspects of the origin and development of Colchester Castle", *Antiq. J.* 139, 358-80.
- Cunningham, C.M., 1985 "The pottery" in Cunningham & Drury 1985.
- Cunningham, C.M., and Cotter, J., 1988 "An outline of the development of Colchester ware". Unpublished paper given at North Woolwich Old Station Museum 4/6/88.
- Cunningham C.M. and Drury, P.J, 1985 *Post-Medieval sites and their pottery: Moulsham Street, Chelmsford*, Chelmsford Archaeol. Trust Rep. 5, Counc. Brit. Archaeol. Research Report 54, 63-78.
- Davey, P., and Hodges, R., 1983 "Ceramics and trade: a critique of the archaeological evidence", in Davey, P., and Hodges, R., (eds), *Ceramics and Trade: the production and distribution of late medieval pottery in north-west Europe* (University of Sheffield, Department of Prehistory and Archaeology), 1-14.
- Drury, P.J., 1993 "The later Saxon, medieval and post-medieval pottery", in Rodwell & Rodwell 1993.
- Drury, P.J., & Petchey, M.R., 1975 "Medieval potteries at Mile End and Great Horkeley, Essex", *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* 7, 33-60.
- Dunning, G C, 1968 "The trade in medieval pottery around the North Sea", in Renaud, J.G.N. (Ed) *Rotterdam Papers: a contribution to Medieval Archaeology* (Rotterdam), 35-38.
- Dunning, G C, 1977 "Mortars" in Clarke and Carter 1977.
- Egan, G, & Pritchard, F, 1991 *Dress accessories, Medieval finds from excavations in London 3.*
- Evison, V, 1980 "Iron objects", in Haslam 1980.
- Farmer, P.G. 1979 *An Introduction to Scarborough Ware and a Re-assessment of Knight jugs* (Sussex, Farmer and Farmer).
- Fingerlin, I., 1971 *Gürtel des hohen und späten Mittelalters*
- Geddes, J, & Dunning, G C, 1977 "Stone objects", in Clarke and Carter, 1977.
- Goodall, A, 1984 "Objects of non-ferrous metal" in *Medieval and post-medieval finds from Exeter, 1971-80*. Exeter Archaeological Reports 3.
- Goodall, I, 1990 "Locks & keys" in Biddle 1990.
- Haslam, J.A., 1980 "A middle Saxon iron smithing site at Ramsbury, Wilts", *Medieval Archaeology* 24, 35-9.
- Hinton, D, 1990 "Split-end strap-ends", in Biddle 1990.
- Hurst, J.G., Neal, D.S., and Beuningen, H.J., 1986 *Pottery produced and Traded in North-West Europe 1350-1650* (Rotterdam Papers VI).
- Jennings, S., 1981 *Eighteen Centuries of Pottery from Norwich*. E. Anglian Archaeol. 13.
- Jennings, S., & Rogerson, A., 1994 "The Distribution of Grimston

- Ware in East Anglia and beyond”, in Leah 1994.
- Leah, M., 1994 *The Late Saxon and Medieval Pottery of Grimston, Norfolk: Excavations 1962-92*, E. Anglian Archaeol. **64**, 116-9.
- Mann, J. E., 1982 “Early medieval finds from Flaxengate I: objects of antler, bone, stone, horn, ivory, amber and jet” in *The Archaeology of Lincoln, XIV-1*
- Margeson, S., 1993 *Norwich Households: the medieval and post-medieval finds from Norwich Survey excavations 1971-78*, E. Anglian Archaeol. **58**
- Milne, G, 1990 *The Great Fire of London*
- Mitchiner, M, 1988 *Jetons, medalets and tokens: the medieval period and Nuremberg*
- Moore, D.T., 1978 ‘The petrography and archaeology of English honestones’, *Journal of Archaeological Science*, **5**, 61-73
- Moore, D.T., & Ellis, S.E., 1984 “The hones” in Rogerson & Dallas 1984.
- Moore, D.T, and Oakley, G.E. 1979 “The hones” in Williams 1979.
- Moore, S.A. (ed), 1897 *Cartularium Monasterii S Johannis de Colcestria*, 1897
- Ottaway, P, 1992 “Anglo-Scandinavian ironwork from 16-22 Coppergate”, *The Archaeology of York 17/6*
- Palliser, B, 1910 *A History of Lace*
- Pearce, J.E, 1992 *Post-medieval pottery in London 1500-1700. Volume 1. Border Wares*, (London, HMSO)
- Pearce, J.E, Vince, A.G., and White, R., 1982 “A dated type-series of London medieval pottery part one: Mill Green Ware”, *Trans London Middlesex Archaeol. Soc.*, **33**, 266-298.
- Pearce, J.E, Vince, A.G., and Jenner, M.A., 1985 *A Dated Type-Series of London Medieval Pottery Part 2: London-type ware*, London Middlesex Archaeol. Soc. special paper no.6.
- Pearce, J.E, Vince, A.G., 1988 *A Dated Type-Series of London Medieval Pottery Part 4: Surrey Whitewares*, London Middlesex Archaeol. Soc. special paper no. **10**
- Pritchard, F, 1991 “Small finds” in Vince 1991
- Rackham, B., 1972 *English Medieval Pottery* (London, Faber and Faber)
- Reaney, P.H, 1935 *The Place Names of Essex*
- Rodwell, W.J., and Rodwell, K.A., 1993 *Rivenhall: Investigations of a villa, church and village, 1950-1977*, Chelmsford Archaeol. Trust Rep **4.2**, CBA Res. Rep. **80**, 78-95.
- Rodwell, W. with Rodwell, K. 1977 *Historic churches - a wasting asset*. CBA Res. Rep. **19**.
- Rogerson, A., & Dallas, C. 1984 *Excavations in Thetford 1948-59 & 1973-80*. E. Anglian Archaeol. **22**.
- RCHM (1922) *Royal Commission on Historical Monuments (England). An Inventory of the Historical Monuments in Essex, Volume III*.
- Vince, A. (ed), 1991 *Aspects of Saxo-Norman London: II. Finds and environmental evidence*. London & Middlesex Archaeological Society Special Paper **12**
- Walker, H., 1990 “The medieval and later pottery” in Andrews, Milton and Walker 1990.
- Waterman, D, 1959 “Late Saxon, Viking, and early medieval finds from York” *Archaeologia* **97**, 59-105.
- Williams, J.H., 1979 *St Peter's Street, Northampton, excavations 1973-6*.



## A Saxon inter-tidal timber fish weir at Collins Creek in the Blackwater estuary

by R.L.Hall and C.P.Clarke

with contributions by Peter Murphy and Cathy Groves

*A complex series of timber alignments, measuring at least 3.0 km by 0.7 km overall, has been recorded at Collins Creek in the Blackwater estuary. Three sets of radiocarbon dates from timbers in different parts of the alignments are all within the Saxon period. These structures are interpreted as fish weirs; associated with them are stretches of wattling, which are thought to have facilitated access for collecting the fish, and for carrying out repairs.*

### Introduction

In 1989, the first-named author noted the existence of long rows of wooden posts stretching across a mud bank exposed at low tide in the centre of the Blackwater estuary (Fig. 1; Plate 1). During the summer of 1991, he (and his family) returned to the area several times, and compiled a basic survey report, a copy of which was given to Essex County Council's Archaeology Section. This prompted a visit to the site by Archaeology Section staff in September 1991, and this

in turn led to a series of field investigations, organised jointly by both authors. Funding for fieldwork was provided mainly by English Heritage, with additional support from Essex County Council and Maldon District Council.

In spite of problems caused by the short time available for observation at low tides, it has been possible to establish an overall ground plan of the timber alignments, which proved to be very complex. The alignments consist of long, straight rows of mainly roundwood posts, most of which were driven vertically into the mud, and of which only stumps now remain. Three main rows have been identified, plus a number of minor alignments. Timbers are typically 100 to 150 mm diameter, and in many cases the bark survives. Five timbers from different parts of the alignments have been radiocarbon dated, and all have proved to be Saxon. Stretches of wattling associated with these rows of posts have become exposed (particularly after heavy storms), and at least one area has been sampled in detail, along with a small patch of basketry.



Plate 1 Collins Creek. General ground-level view of timber alignments. Linear scale 4 metres.

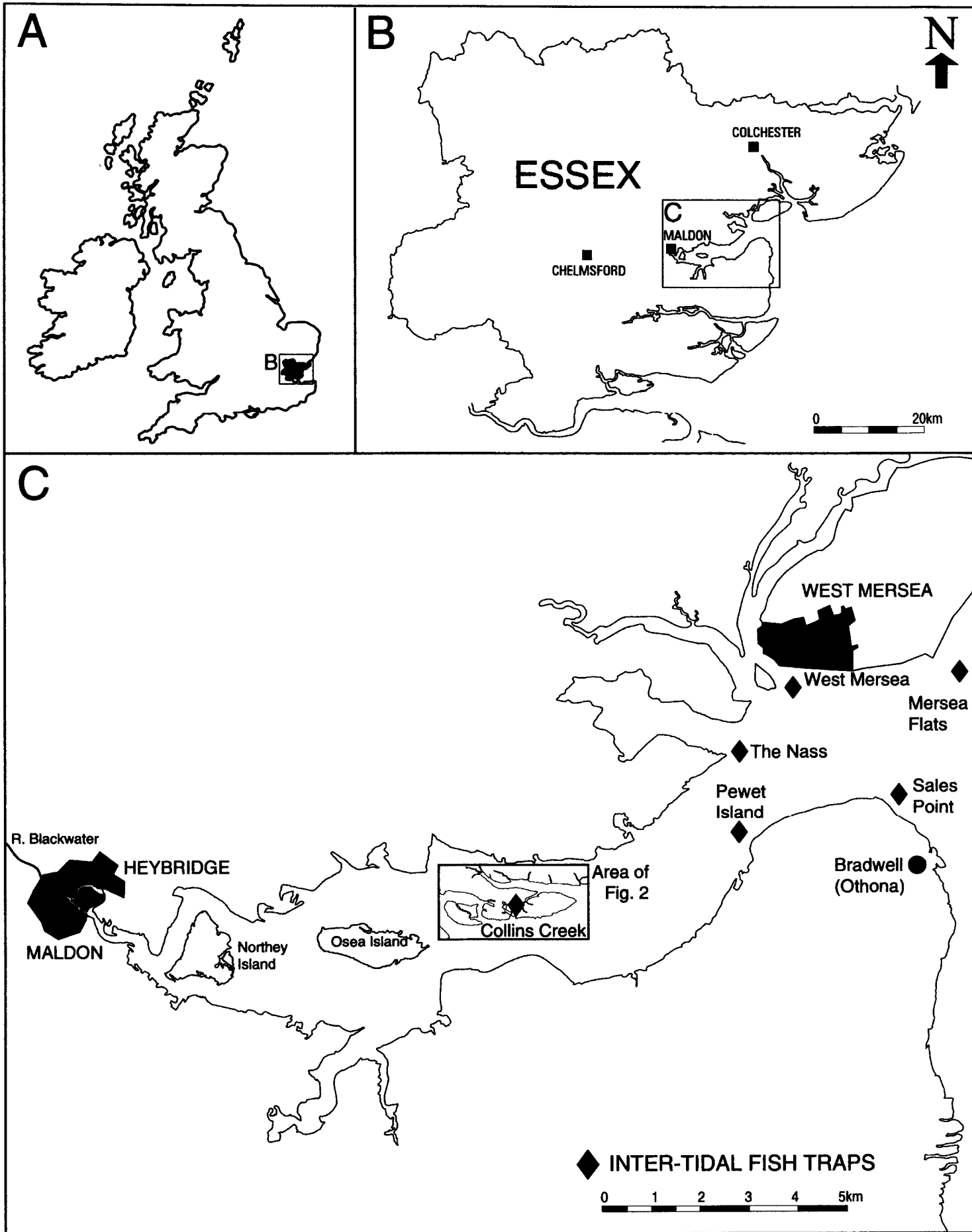


Fig. 1 Collins Creek. General site location

### Topography and logistics

The timber alignments are centred at *c.* TL 9450 0730, in an area of inter-tidal mud banks whose eastern end forms Thirslet Spit. These banks are intersected by two low-water creeks (Upper and Lower Collins; Fig. 2), running roughly north to south, bordered to the north by Thirslet Creek, and to the south by the main arm of the Blackwater. The area of mud bank measures *c.* 3 km east-west and 1.0 km north-south; it is covered by 3.5 m of water at high tide.

The southern edge of the mud bank consists of a hard surface of packed shell, gravel and clay. To the east, Thirslet Spit is formed from shell and gravel heaped up by tidal action where the main river and Thirslet Creek divide. Moving northwards across the mud bank, the ground becomes progressively softer, with soft mud along the southern edge of Thirslet Creek itself. Although the beds of both Collins Creeks are hard packed, the banks of both are soft alluvial deposits which will not bear any weight. Even at low water, a boat is needed to cross these creeks, and the mud bank is therefore effectively divided into three islands, making access on foot to all parts from one landing site impossible. In practice, the area is only accessible by boat; the terrestrial survey described in this report was carried out as follows. Staff were picked up by the 'Olan', a 9 m Thames workboat owned and operated by the first author, off The Stone at St Lawrence, to the south of the site. After travelling the short distance across the main course of the Blackwater, the 'Olan' anchored off the southern edge of the mud bank; staff and equipment were decanted into a small dinghy, which then took them to various parts of the bank. Equipment was carried to the particular area under study, and survey and recording began.

Under favourable conditions (calm weather and spring tides), it is possible to work safely for about two hours (an hour and a half before low water plus half an hour after low water). However, during periods of neap tides, when the tidal range is less, the site hardly uncovers, and only the highest part of the bank is accessible. Daylight is also an important factor. Spring tide low waters occur in the early morning and late evening, and therefore the winter months are unproductive for observing the site, due to lack of daylight. Given the annual variability in tidal patterns, and the unpredictability of the British weather, it is possible that a given 12-month spell may provide only a few useful opportunities for visiting the area.

Another problematic issue has been the potential presence of unexploded WWII bombs. Two wrecks adjacent to the north-west edge of the site were used for target practice during WWII, and an area around these is strewn with what appear to be fragments of bomb case. On occasion, it has proved difficult to distinguish between an upright timber stump and a vertically embedded piece of bomb case, when the object is obscured by weed growth and/or barnacles. In all cases, considerations of staff safety have been paramount, and no attempt has been made to dig around the base of

these objects to clarify whether they are wood or metal.

### Fieldwork

A number of reconnaissance visits were made to the site by staff of ECC Archaeology Section and English Heritage, and also by Peter Murphy, the English Heritage-funded regional environmentalist, based at the University of East Anglia, with the aim of assessing its potential. A research design for a survey project was submitted to English Heritage by ECC Archaeology Section in the summer of 1992 (Clarke 1992). The project's main aims were to establish an accurate overall ground plan of the timber rows and associated features, to date them by dendrochronology, to carry out an auger survey of the deposits, to sample some of the stretches of wattling, to examine evidence for carpentry techniques (as opportunities arose), and possibly to carry out limited sample excavation to try and establish the stratigraphic relationship between the upright posts and the stretches of wattling.

The research design was accepted by English Heritage, and survey began in August 1992. Because the mud bank itself contained no fixed features other than the upright timbers, it was necessary to set up a number of control points, surveyed in from the southern shore of the Blackwater. This was done by Neil Carey and Rob Poulton of ECC Highways Department. Twelve fixed points were set up, of which the major ones were SO10 and SO11 (Fig. 2). The points took the form of wooden pegs driven into the mud, capped with round white plastic discs, to aid visibility in aerial photographs. (This work needed a licence from the Crown Estate, and permission from the Department of Transport, as the river is a navigable highway).

In October 1992, the site was overflowed by Group Captain T.F.Cockerell, of the Cambridge University Committee for Aerial Photography (CUCAP). Two passes were made at 2000 and 2500 feet, using a Wild RC8 camera; the resultant vertical aerial photographs were at scales of 1:4000 and 1:5000, respectively (Plate 2).

The intention was to use these photographs to produce a detailed plan of the site, but the level of resolution was inadequate to map individual components; neither were the control markers visible at these scales. Nevertheless, the rows themselves were visible over much of the mud bank, usually standing out as dark lines against a lighter background, but there were areas (typically with weed growth) where the background was as dark as the timbers, so the latter could not be seen.

It was therefore necessary to augment the aerial photographic information, and this was done by means of a stop-and-go GPS ground survey, carried out by staff from the Department of Land Surveying, University of East London (Dr Richard Baldwin, Peter Dare, John Smith and Fiona Paterson). A number of visits were made to the site in November 1992 and February/March 1993, and it was possible to add information about apparent 'gaps' within the rows, plus locational information about timbers at the extreme

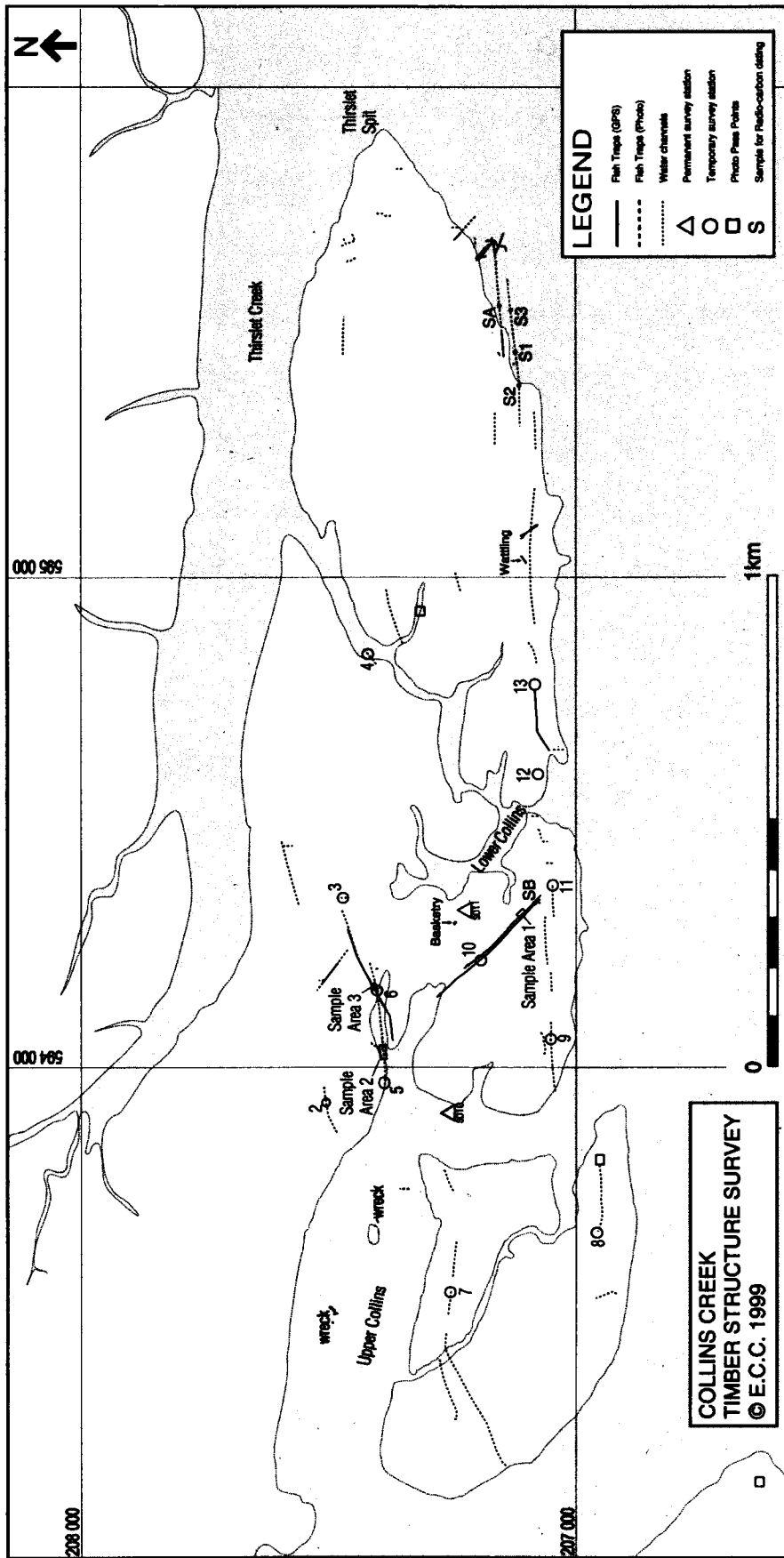


Fig. 2 Collins Creek. General plan of the timber alignments on the mud bank, derived from vertical aerial photographs, augmented by GPS data.



Plate 2 Collins Creek.  
Example of vertical aerial photograph of stretch of timbers at the eastern end of the main east-west row indicated by black arrow towards bottom right. South to the top.



Plate 3 Collins Creek. Staff from the University of East London surveying in underwater timbers with a GPS receiver.

ends of some rows, even where these were underwater, and were never exposed even at the lowest of tides (Plate 3).

By enhancing and augmenting the plan derived from the aerial photographs with the GPS survey, the overall plan presented in Fig. 2 has been produced, showing the alignments measuring *c.* 3.0 km (east-west) by *c.* 0.7 km (north-south). In general terms, there is a main alignment running east-west along the southern margin of the mud flat, a second, more fragmented, east-west alignment to the north of this, and a third row aligned north-west/south-east, converging with the main east-west row. In addition to these, a number of minor stretches have been identified.

The rows consist largely of upright, roundwood posts which have been set deeply into the mud. The eroded tops of these vary between being more or less flush with the surface, to sticking up to a height of 250 mm. The posts are generally 100 - 150 mm diameter; on many the bark still survives, especially where erosion has been relatively recent. Posts are spaced at anywhere between 300 and 500 mm. A few of the posts are split and a few radially cleft.

Detailed examination of some of the better preserved stretches has revealed considerable variety within this general pattern, however. Some are straightforward single rows (e.g. Fig. 5, central alignment in Area 3). Others are single rows with regular raking struts set in the mud at a slight angle (e.g. Fig. 3, Area 1). In others a double row is visible (e.g. Fig. 4, Area 2), and finally there are stretches in which a regular, V-shaped repeat is present (e.g. Fig. 5, northernmost row in Area 3). It is possible that other variants exist.

Although the rows of upright timbers are the most conspicuous elements, small areas of wattling were also noted, lying flat on the mud, usually adjacent to one of the rows of uprights. Some appeared to have been fixed in position by timber posts driven through them. As such, they are considered to be *in situ*, and therefore an integral part of the overall timber structure; they have been interpreted as walkways permitting easier access around the site, rather than panels which were originally attached to the timber uprights, but which have since collapsed. One stretch of wattling, consisting of seven panels (Figs 2 and 6), has been examined in some detail by Peter Murphy (report below), and contains 4 wood species, hinting at more than one source of managed woodland providing the timber. From another part of the mud bank came a small flattened piece of basketry (Figs 2 and 7), thought to be part of a fish-basket of a type used in the Severn estuary (Murphy, below).

There were other minor irregular fragments of wood lying on the surface of the mud, often associated with upright rows. These are thought to be the final traces of brushwood which originally formed then upright sides of the fish weir (e.g. Fig. 3).

#### Dating

Although occasional finds of pottery and other artefacts have been made on the mud bank (ranging from sherds of abraded Roman pottery to 20th-century beer bottles and a Swiss Army knife), these are all essentially unstratified, and cannot be used to date the timber alignments.

During one of the early visits to the site by ECC Archaeology Section staff, two timber samples were

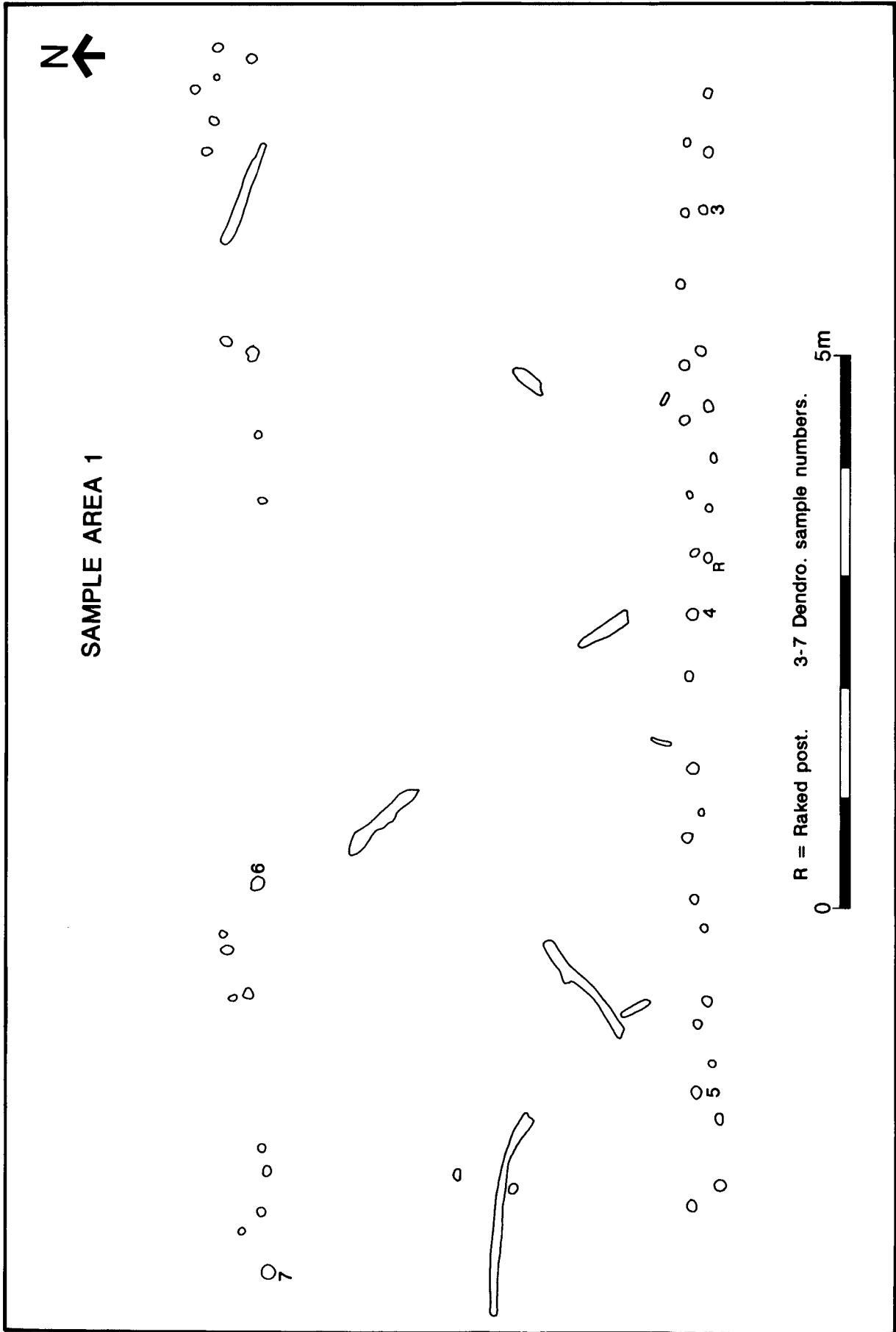


Fig. 3 Collins Creek. Detailed plan of an area of timber alignments (Area 1; for position see Fig. 2)

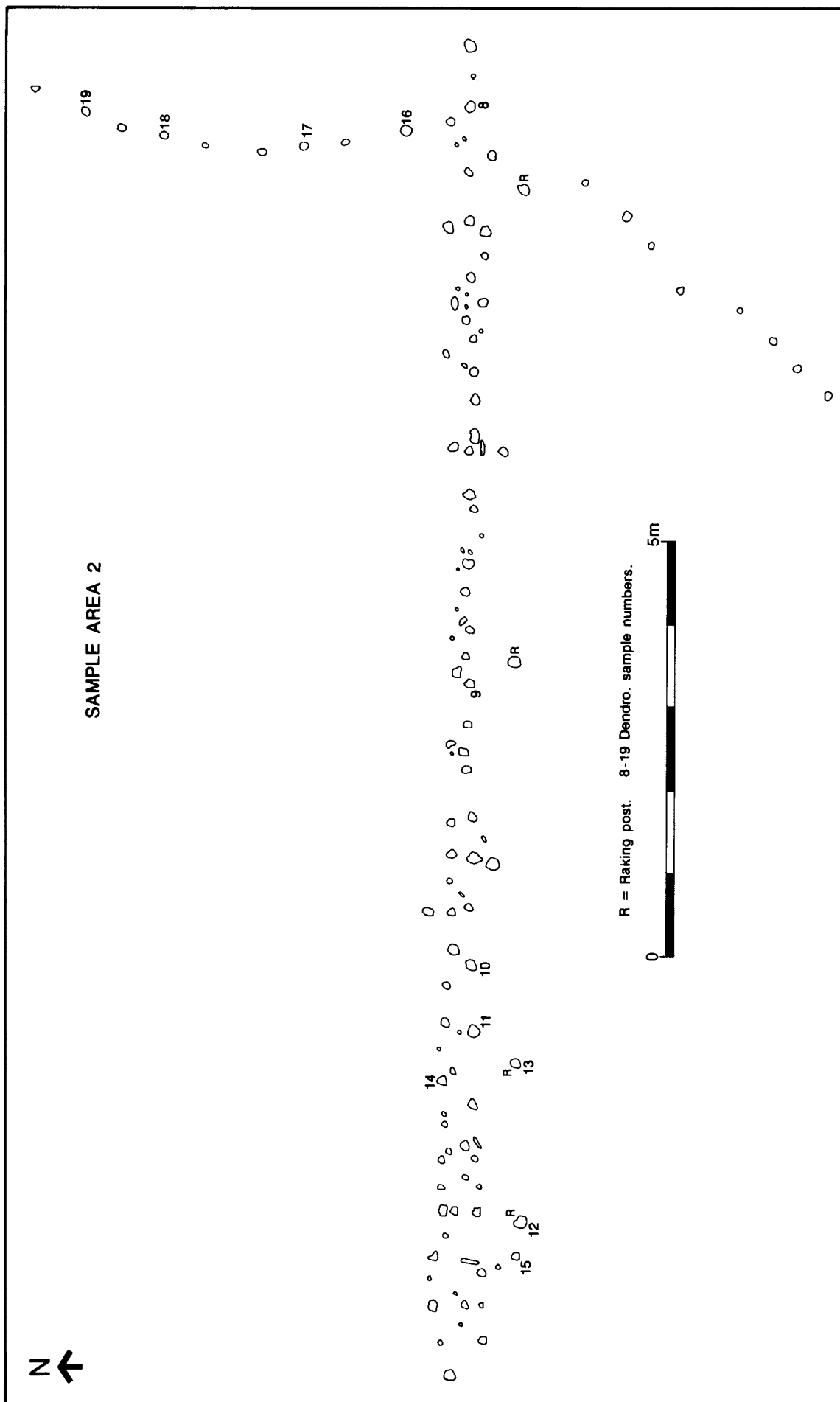


Fig. 4 Collins Creek. Detailed plan of an area of timber alignments (Area 2; for position see Fig. 2)



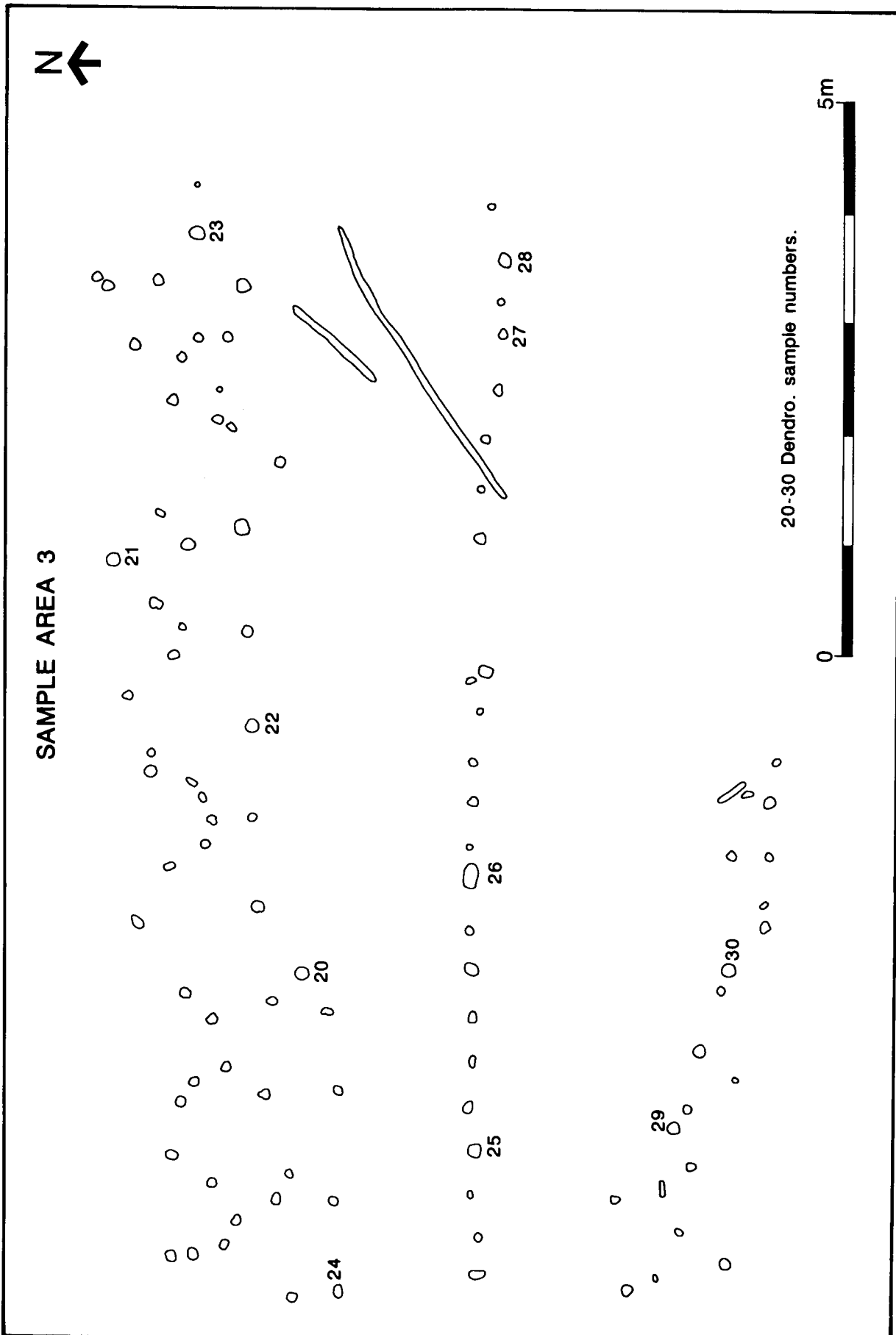


Fig. 5 Collins Creek. Detailed plan of an area of timber alignments (Area 3; for position see Fig. 2)

taken (by sawing off the tops of two posts) from different parts of the rows (Fig. 2; SA and SB), and sent for radiocarbon dating at the University of Belfast. These produced dates as follows: SA (UB 3485; 1364±48BP) cal AD 600-770; SB (UB 3486; 1140±33BP) cal AD 780-900.

These Saxon dates were unexpected, as most documentary references to fish weirs in Essex (and beyond) are medieval (or later). A main aim of the English Heritage-funded survey project was to improve the precision of this dating by the use of dendrochronology, and a number of timber samples were collected for this purpose (the positions of these are noted in Figs 3 to 5). Unfortunately, the posts had insufficient growth rings (usually rather less than 50) and the technique was inapplicable (Groves, below). Subsequently, three further timber samples from the east end of the site were radiocarbon dated (S1 to S3 in Fig. 2) and these were also Saxon. These three dates (UB-4139 to 4141), plus the two taken earlier are presented in the following table:

Laboratory number	Radiocarbon Age (BP)	$\delta^{13}\text{C}$ (‰)	Calibrated date range (at 95% confidence)
UB-3485	1364±48	-25.3±0.2	600-700 cal AD
UB-3486	1140±33	-24.9±0.2	780-990 cal AD
UB-4139	1300±45	-22.1±0.2	650-810 cal AD
UB-4140	1286±45	-30.3±0.2	650-880 cal AD
UB-4141	1262±45	-26.7±0.2	660-890 cal AD

[Note that all radiocarbon dates in the text have been calibrated according to the maximum intercept method of Stuiver and Reimer (1986) using data from Stuiver *et al.* (1998). Ranges are quoted at 95% confidence and have been rounded outwards to 10 years (Mook 1986)]

*Use of species*

Both Cathy Groves (examining the possibilities of dendrochronology) and Peter Murphy (examining stretches of wattling and basketry in detail) have identified a number of species used.

From 32 samples of upright timbers, 26 were *Quercus* (oak), five *Betula* (birch) and one was *Salix/Populus* (willow or poplar).

The seven wattle panels (Fig. 6) provided the following four species: *Salix* (willow) 25, *Quercus* (oak) 23, *Betula* (birch) 21 and *Corylus* (hazel) 1.

The basketry fragment (Fig. 7) was *Corylus* (hazel) 15 elements, and *Quercus* (oak) 2.

**Discussion**

The timber alignments at Collins Creek are interpreted as a series of Saxon fish weirs, measuring overall at least 3.0 km by 0.7 km. As

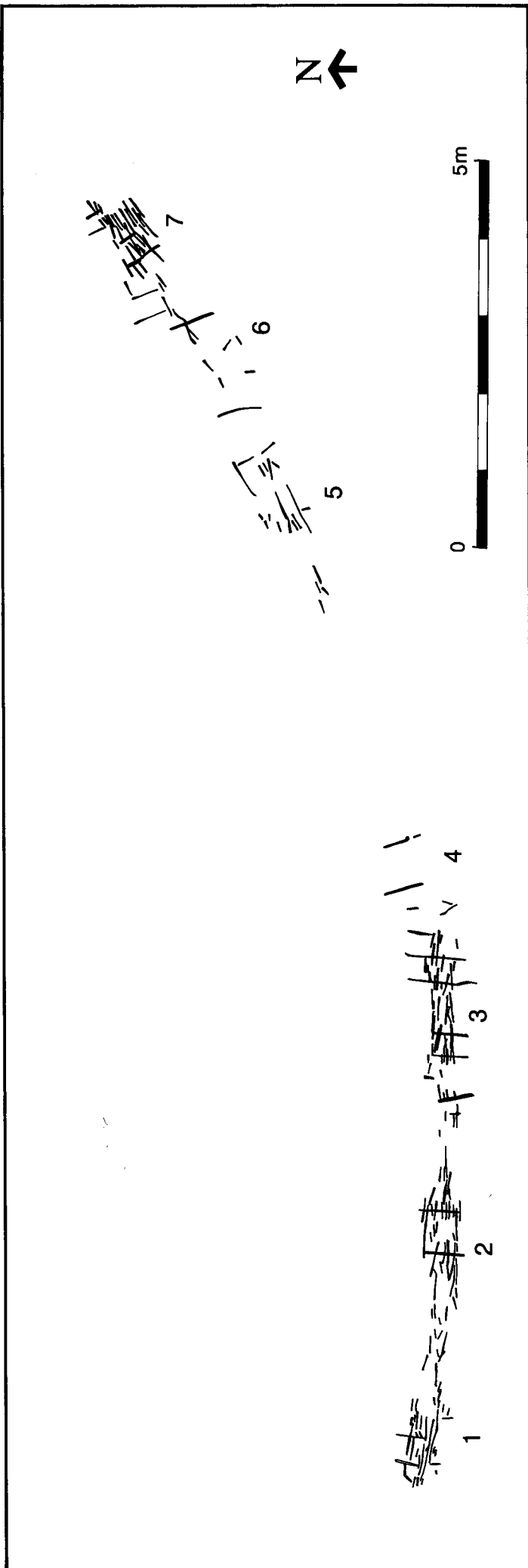


Fig. 6 Collins Creek. Detailed plan of seven wattle hurdles (for position see Fig. 2)

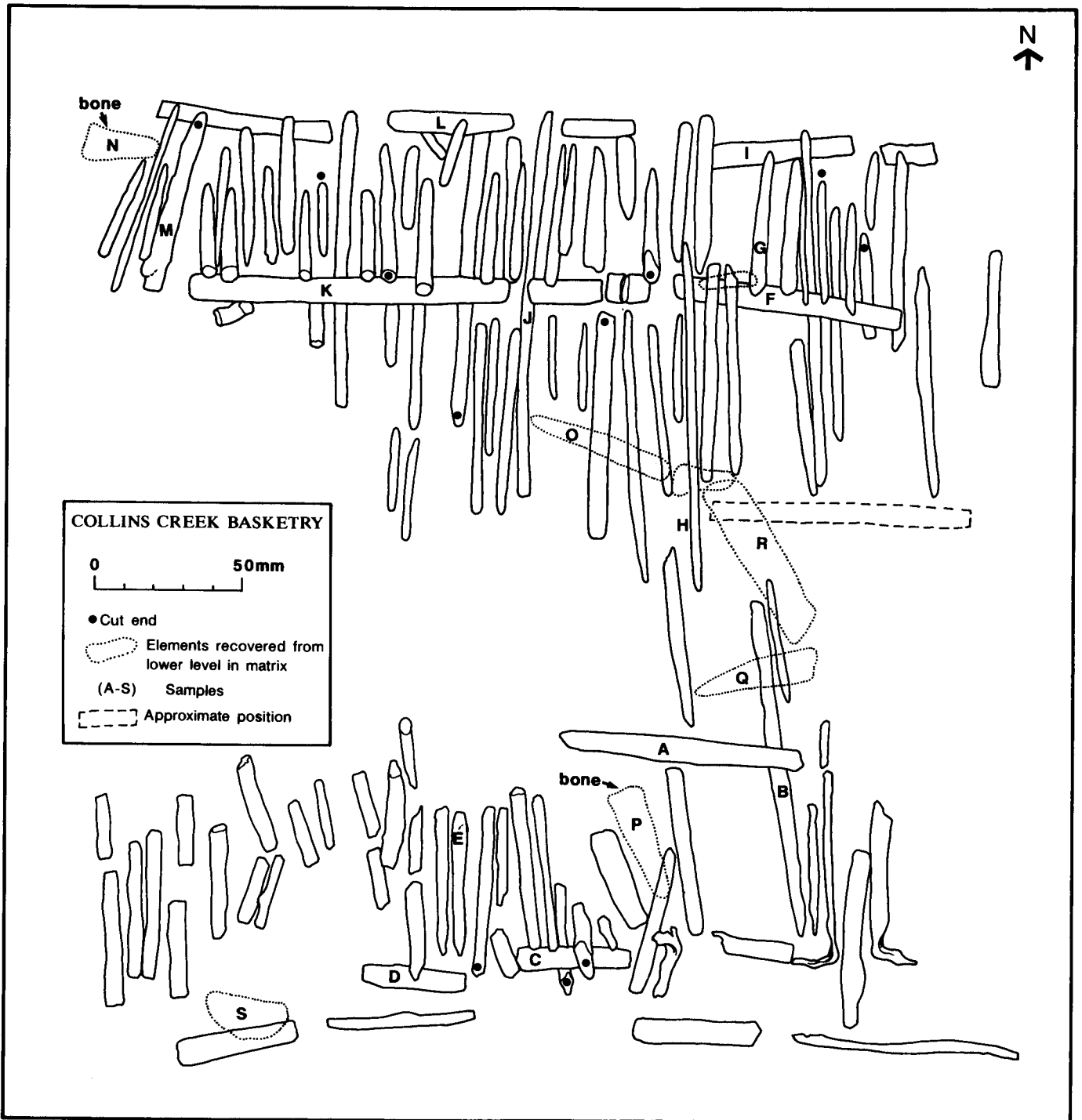


Fig. 7 Collins Creek. Detailed plan of basketry fragment (for position see Fig. 2)

such they are probably one of the largest, if not the largest, known from south-east England. (A structure of a comparable size is known from Whitstable in Kent; Williams and Brown 1999).

It is worth pointing out that at least one other interpretation of these structures has been considered, namely that it was a wooden revetment protecting and stabilising a small island, now lost through erosion, in the middle of the Blackwater estuary. In order to test this possibility, Peter Murphy carried out an auger survey across the sediments into which the southern east-west timber alignment had been driven (Fig. 2;

Murphy, below). It was found that the sediment underlying this alignment was a fine, shell-rich sandy silt, interpreted as the Saxon precursor of the present shell ridge along the southern side of the mud bank. It seems probable that the presence of this relatively firm substrate may have determined the position of the east-west alignment, as it would have provided a relatively firm footing for construction work. Perhaps more importantly, because this ridge is slightly higher than the surrounding mud-flat, it would have held back water draining from the north during an ebb, so as to create a temporary lagoon in which fish would have been

confined. As such, the results of the auger survey rather confirm the interpretation of the structure as a fish weir (or weirs).

However, given the size of the site, it is inherently unlikely that these timbers are all of a single phase. Other fish weirs in the inter-tidal zone along the Essex coast, and further afield, tend to be simple V-shapes, with the apex of the V pointing out to sea, so that on the ebb tide, fish are channelled towards the point of the V, where they are collected. In other Essex examples, the sides of the V are typically anything between c. 80 and 390 m long (Strachan 1998).

Examination of the Collins Creek plan (Fig. 2) shows a number of potential V-shapes, along the main east-west alignment, and also in the northern central part of the mud bank. It is unlikely that all of these were in operation simultaneously, as the radiocarbon results are statistically significantly different at 95% confidence [ $T^* = 18.7$ ;  $T^* (5\%) = 9.5$ ;  $v = 4$ ; Ward and Wilson (1978)]. The five radiocarbon dates indicate that the construction (or repair) of these structures spanned several centuries. During that time, there may have

been piecemeal repair, minor modification or radical alteration in the lay-out.

Technology may have altered over that period also; although the overall ground plan in Fig. 2 indicates a number of V-shapes which at one stage or another could have acted as the 'eye' of a substantial fish weir, part of one of the alignments planned in detail (Fig. 5; northernmost row in Area 3) shows a regular V-repeat over a distance of c. 2.0 to 2.5 m. This is perhaps more suggestive of a superstructure supporting funnel-shaped baskets similar to those known to have been used on the River Severn, where they are called 'putts' (Godbold and Thomas 1993). Equally, the wattle panels, especially those fixed in place by upright timbers, are interpreted as walkways enabling access to the weir, and also perhaps helping to reduce scour by the tides, which would undermine the structure. In other excavated examples, e.g. at Colwick, Notts, Saxon timber fish traps in the River Trent used wattling for both walkways and for some short stretches of vertical hurdling, woven in between the wooden uprights, though brushwood bundles were probably the main

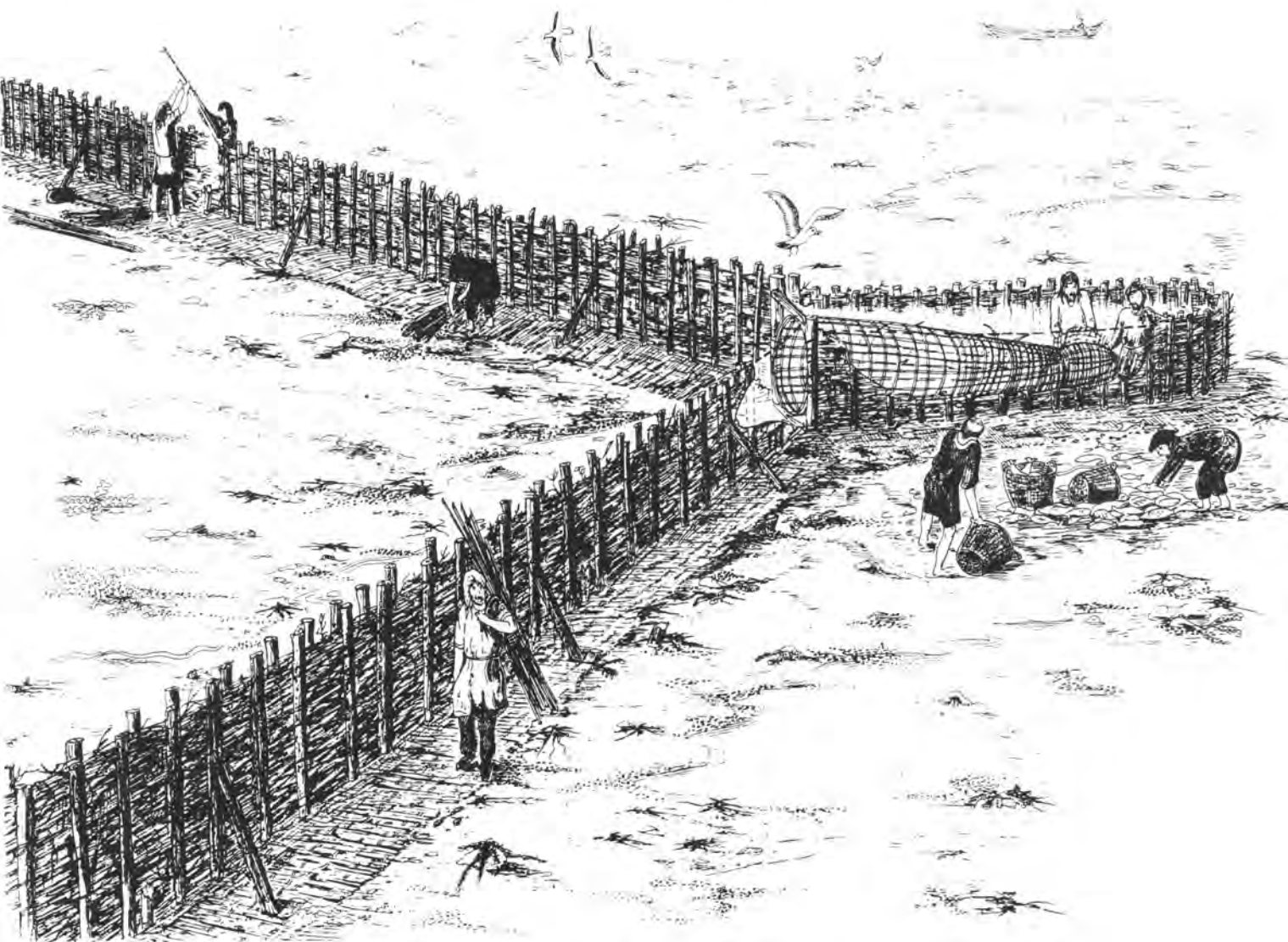


Fig. 8 Artist's impression of Saxon inter-tidal fish weir, based on surviving evidence from Essex sites.

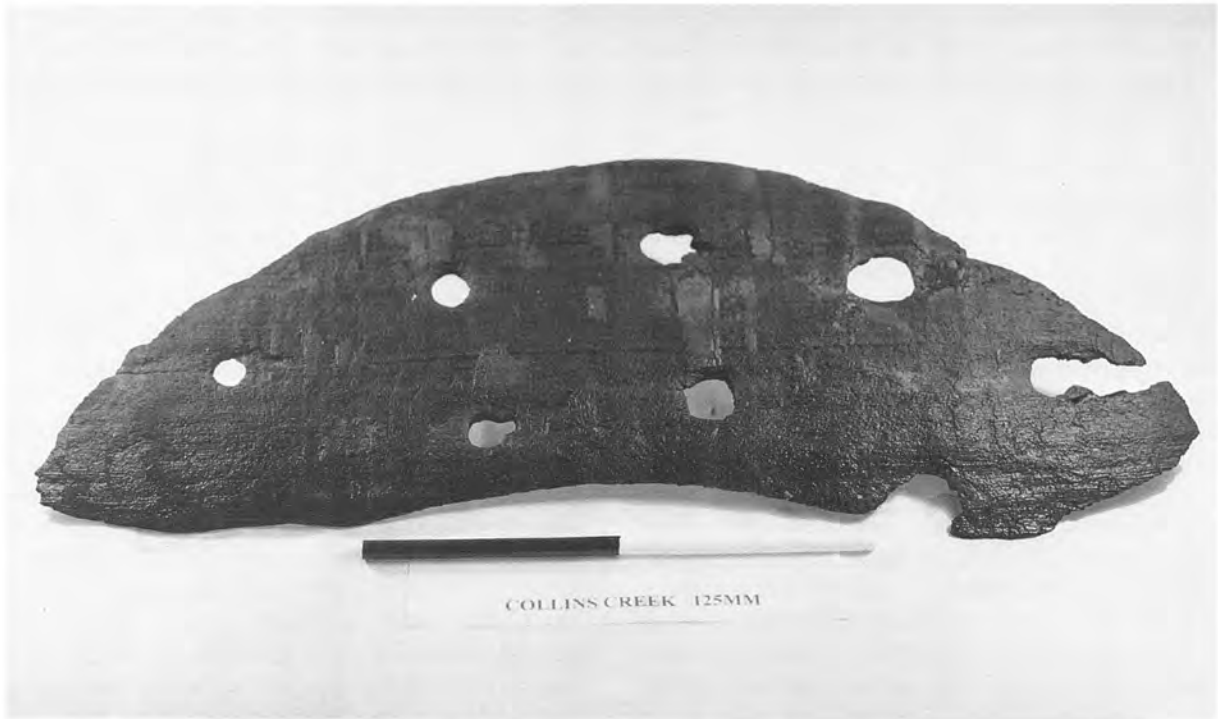


Plate 4 Collins Creek. Piece of drilled oak recovered from the surface, and thought to be part of a barrel.



Plate 5 Collins Creek. Cleft oak with bark and hole, found embedded in the north-west/south-east timber alignment

material forming the sides of the weir (Losco-Bradley and Salisbury 1988). The artist's impression of a 'generalised' Saxon inter-tidal fish weir (Fig. 8) is based on the use of brushwood sides and wattling walkways.

Apart from the timber uprights and stretches of wattling, a number of isolated pieces of worked wood

have been found, including a piece of drilled oak (Plate 4), which may be part of a barrel, and a number of more enigmatic pieces (e.g. Plate 5). Many of these probably relate to the operation of the site, but the possibility of material lost overboard from boats should not be ignored.

*Potential for further work*

Although establishing a reasonably accurate ground plan of these complex timber alignments, and dating them, is a significant achievement, given the practical obstacles, there are a number of further lines of investigation that could prove fruitful.

Perhaps the most crucial is a more refined dating of what is almost certainly a sequence of structures, rather than a single build. The dendrochronology report (below) makes it clear that the relatively immature poles used for the uprights do not give enough growth rings to achieve a cross-match to the main Essex curve. Nevertheless, there remains the possibility that by taking a sufficiently large sample of timbers, it may be possible to construct an internal chronology for the Collins Creek site itself, which may at least provide a relative sequence (Groves, pers. comm.). At some future stage, it might be possible to link this relative chronology to the Essex curve, thus establishing an absolute chronology.

Secondly, there is the investigation of a whole series of aspects of the site which might be summarised under the general term of 'ownership and management'. It has not been possible to count precisely the number of upright timber posts in the alignments, but a rough estimate suggests that there are well over 10,000. If to this number is added the wood needed for the wattle panels and the brushwood for the sides, it is evident that building a large fish weir in this position is an enormous undertaking (even allowing for the possibility of several phases within the alignments). Apart from earthworks on dry land, it would have been among the largest

engineering projects of its time. Who initiated and managed such an undertaking? In the medieval period (for which documentary sources are more numerous), it is clear that either the larger manors or ecclesiastical establishments are those most likely to have owned fish weirs. The Domesday Book (Rumble 1993) notes a number of 'fisheries' for the Blackwater, and these may relate to large stationary fishing structures. There is a remarkable coincidence between the places mentioned in Domesday and timber structures interpreted as fish weirs. For example, three are recorded at Mersea Island (two timber structures have been found there by aerial photography; Fig. 1: Wallis 1993); two at Bradwell (where two structures have now been identified; one at Sales Point, the other at Pewet Island; Fig. 1: Strachan 1998); one at Tollesbury (where a V-shaped alignment is known at The Nass, off Old Hall Marshes; Fig. 1), and finally one is recorded at Osea Island, the eastern end of which is less than a kilometre from the western end of the Collins Creek mud bank (Fig. 1). It is tempting to identify these documentary references with the several timber structures now identified in the Blackwater area, but there are at least two problems. First, the Domesday book records a state of affairs late in the 11th century, whereas the radiocarbon dates for Collins Creek, The Nass and Sales Point are all considerably earlier (Strachan 1998; see also Fig. 9 for a visual representation of the spread of dates). Secondly, the word 'fishery' is an ambiguous one; it may mean a substantial timber alignment of the sort found at Collins Creek, but it could also mean a fish trap based primarily

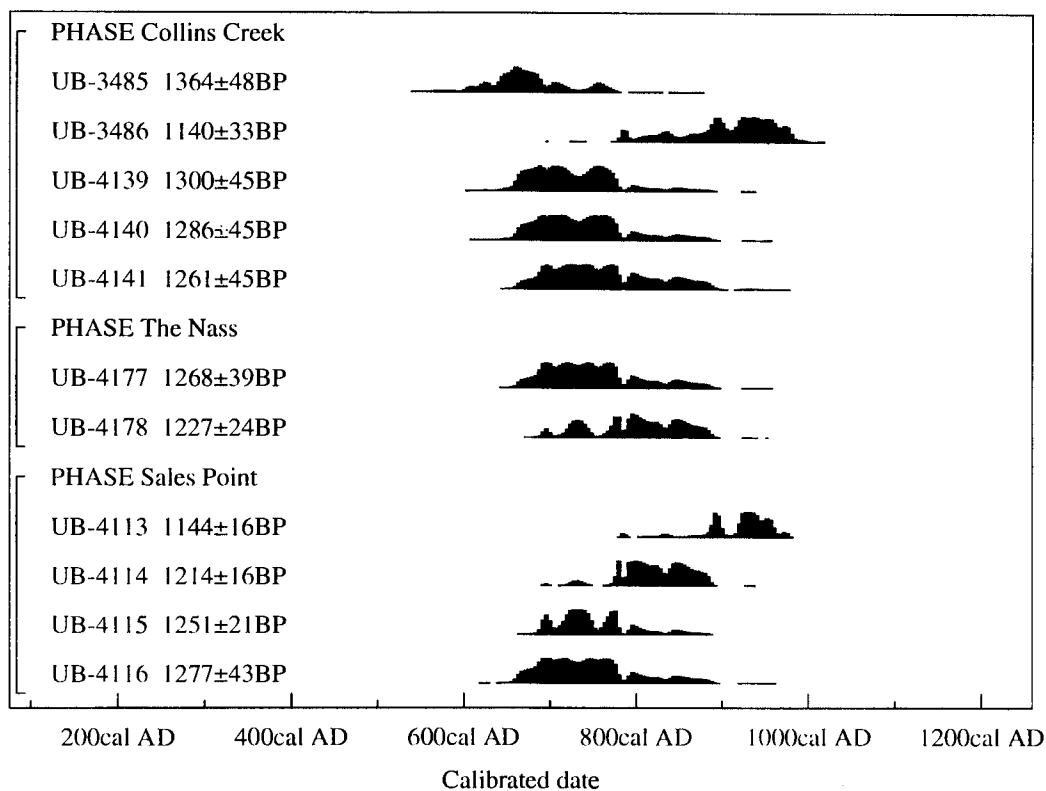


Fig. 9 Probability distribution of dates from timber fish traps in the Blackwater. Each distribution represents the relative probability that an event occurs at a particular time.

on netting, known in Essex as a 'kiddle', and which would leave relatively little trace in the archaeological record.

An obvious candidate for ownership of a large, permanent timber structure constructed in the second half of the 7th century in the Blackwater, is the monastery of *Yihancester*, thought to have been constructed at Bradwell (Fig. 1) in the middle of the 7th century. However, it must be stressed that there are no documents to connect the monastery at Bradwell with the fish weir at Collins Creek; moreover, there are two weirs off the coast at Bradwell itself, both much closer to the monastic site than Collins Creek.

Regardless of ownership, construction, maintenance and operation of such a site would have required substantial resources. One aspect of that would have been the ability to provide supplies of timber of the right kind from managed woodland. Two of the specialist reports below refer to this in passing. Peter Murphy notes the unexpected discovery of four different species within a short length of wattling, and suggests that these would probably have come from different sorts of managed woodland. The dendrochronology report notes the extremely high potential of the site for studies of Saxon woodland management. Detailed study of more of the isolated timbers would also provide information about carpentry techniques (with the *caveat* that some may have simply been lost overboard from passing boats).

Finally, there is the issue of the vulnerability of the timbers themselves. The first author has noted the exposure of new areas of wattling, especially after stormy weather, and these elements lying on a freshly exposed surface are extremely prone to further damage. The upright timbers are perhaps less vulnerable in the short term, though in certain stretches, some further exposure of these has been observed. It may be that this site offers opportunities for monitoring the erosion of the sediments, the horizontal elements, such as the wattling, and the vertical timbers.

## Specialist reports

### Assessment of wattling and basketry

Peter Murphy, Centre of East Anglian Studies, University of East Anglia

#### Introduction

The most immediately conspicuous feature of the structures is an extensive series of post alignments, but more detailed examination has shown that these are commonly associated with parallel lines of wattle panels, laid flat and in some cases fixed in position by posts driven through them. They clearly formed an integral part of the post-alignment structures and were possibly intended as walkways. Alongside the collection of post samples for a pilot dendrochronological study it was considered that this large collection of wattling merited attention. A sample area (Area A), actively eroding, was selected for assessment. A small piece of basketry (Area B) was also examined.

#### Area A

This area of wood comprised at least seven wattle panels probably originally forming a continuous wide arc running roughly east-west.

These panels, at a relatively high elevation, were more vulnerable to wave action than those on lower mudflats, which are generally subtidal, except at Spring Tides. The first main author had seen them perceptibly diminishing. They were therefore selected for recording and assessment as an example of the wattling at the site, before they entirely disappeared.

Since these panels were never exposed for more than about 2 hours per tide, generally less, a streamlined approach had to be adopted. Conventional planning methods were clearly too time-consuming, and a plan was therefore prepared by the team from the University of East London using digitised points from oblique photographs (Fig. 4). This plan is obviously less detailed than would be prepared in less difficult circumstances, but it does at least indicate the overall form of the wood and its main elements. During sampling short notes were made about each panel and samples were taken from each surviving sail (S1 - Sn, going from west to east) and rod (R1 - Rn, going from north to south). Panel 1 was at the western end of the area. For assessment purposes wood from alternate panels has been identified and stem ages determined by ring-counting.

#### Panel A1

Well-defined wood, partly undercut by erosion. Surviving length 1.9m. Maximum width (sails) 0.9m. Rods surviving over width of 0.5m. 3 surviving sails, 12 rods.

	Diam (mm)	Bark?	Species	Stem Age	Notes
S1	26	N	Quercus	11	
S2	25	N	Betula	8	Traces of oblique cuts
S3	20	N	Salix	8	
R1	24	Y	Betula	11	
R2	12	N	Salix	10	
R3	12	N	Salix	10	
R4	12		Salix	5	
R5	25	Y	Quercus	12	Oblique transverse cut
R6	22	Y	Betula	10	
R7	18	Y	Quercus	8	
R8	17	Y	Quercus	6	
R9	14	N	Salix	6	
R10	11	N	Salix	8	Eroded
R11	20	N	Salix	8	
R12	15	Y	Betula	9	

#### Panel A2

Well-defined wood, partly undercut by erosion. Surviving length 1.8m. Width of sails 0.5m. 3 surviving sails, 20 rods. End contiguous with A1.

S1	30	Y
S2	25	Y
S3	26	N
R1	18	Y
R2	21	N
R3	16	Y
R4	9	Y
R5	25	Y
R6	13	Y
R7	24	Y
R8	24	Y
R9	21	Y
R10	13	Y
R11	15	Y
R12	14	Y
R13	14	Y
R14	11	Y
R15	13	Y
R16	10	Y
R17	20	Y
R18	14	Y
R19	16	Y
R20	17	Y

ESSEX ARCHAEOLOGY AND HISTORY

Panel A3

Fairly well-defined. Surviving length 2.4m. Maximum width (of sails) 0.75m, rods surviving over width of 0.3m. 10 surviving sails, 15 rods. End contiguous with A2.

	Diam (mm)	Bark?	Species	Stem Age	Notes
S1	22	Y	Salix	?	Oblique transverse cut
S2	41	Y	Betula	?	
S3	29	Y	Quercus	11	
S4	20	Y	Salix	11	Cut side-branch
S5	22	Y	Salix	13	
S6	20	Y	Salix	12	
S7	26	Y	Betula	9	
S8	23	Y	Betula	8	
S9	22	Y	Quercus	7	
S10	29	Y	Betula	10	
R1	15	N	Quercus	11	
R2	22	Y	Indet	11	Soft, degraded
R3	20	Y	Salix	12	
R4	18	N	Quercus	8	
R5	21	Y	Quercus	8	
R6	14	Y	Quercus	6	
R7	20	Y	Quercus	5	
R8	14	N	Quercus	5	
R9	12	Y	Corylus	4	
R10	18	Y	Betula	8	
R11	18	Y	Salix	12	
R12	25	Y	Quercus	10	
R13	20	Y	Salix	12	
R14	18	Y	Salix	10	
R15	24	Y	Betula ?	11	

Panel A4

Virtually destroyed by erosion. Short, 50cm, lengths of 4 sails survived. End contiguous with A3.

S1	29	Y			
S2	24	Y			
S3	30	Y			
S4	34	Y			Oblique transverse cut

Panel A5

Badly eroded and obscured. Remnants of wattling over area 2.4x0.6m. 4 surviving sails, 14 rods. Gap of about 3m between A4 and A5.

S1	25	N	Quercus	10	
S2	22	N	Quercus	8	
S3	25	N	Indet	10	
S4	26	Y	Quercus	7	Oblique transverse cut
R1	20	Y	Indet	9	
R2	14	Y	Quercus	7	
R3	18	Y	Indet	?	
R4	17	Y	Indet	?	
R5	?	N	Indet	?	
R6	30	Y	Indet	?	
R7	11	N	Indet	?	
R8	10	Y	Indet	?	
R9	13	Y	Salix	5	
R10	9	Y	Indet	?	
R11	14	Y	Indet	?	
R12	13	Y	Indet	?	
R13	24	Y	Salix	8	
R14	18	N	Salix	6	

Most of the wood from this panel had very disrupted cell structure and was compressed.

Panel A6

Eroded and obscured. Area of wattling over about 1.5x0.8m. 7 surviving sails, 5 rods. Contiguous with A5.

	Diam (mm)	Bark?	Species	Stem Age	Notes
S1	20	N			
S2	25	N			
S3	25	N			
S4	23	Y			
S5	22	N			
S6	24	Y			Decayed
S7	27	Y			
R1	15	Y			
R2	10	N			
R3	11	Y			Decayed
R4	18	Y			
R5	14	N			Cut side-branch

Panel A7

Well-defined. Surviving length 2.5m. Maximum width (sails) 0.85m, rods surviving over width of 0.5m. 8 surviving sails, 24 rods. End contiguous with A6.

S1	27	Y	Quercus	7	Trace of oblique cut
S2	32	Y	Salix	10	Oblique transverse cut
S3	28	Y	Quercus	12	Oblique transverse cut
S4	27	Y	Betula	4	Wedge-cut tip
S5	30	Y	Corylus	16	
S6	25	Y	Betula	5	
S7	25	Y	Corylus	15	Pencil-point, 4 facets
S8	25	Y	Corylus	13	
R1	17	Y	Salix	17	
R2	20	Y	Betula	?	
R3	21	Y	Betula	12	
R4	20	Y	Corylus	7	
R5	27	Y	Salix	16	
R6	13	Y	Quercus	3	
R7	15	Y	Betula ?	5	
R8	22	Y	Quercus	10	
R9	24	Y	Quercus	6	
R10	26	Y	Salix	8	
R11	26	Y	Salix	6	
R12	21	Y	Betula	9	
R13	18	N	Betula	8	
R14	11	Y	Betula	4	
R15	23	Y	Corylus	10	
R16	37	Y	Betula	12	Oblique transverse cut.
R17	24	Y	Corylus	10	
R18	13	Y	Corylus	6	
R19	17	Y	Salix	8	
R20	19	Y	Betula	5	
R21	19	N	Corylus	8	
R22	22	Y	Salix	7	
R23	14	Y	Betula	12	
R24	26	N	Quercus	13	

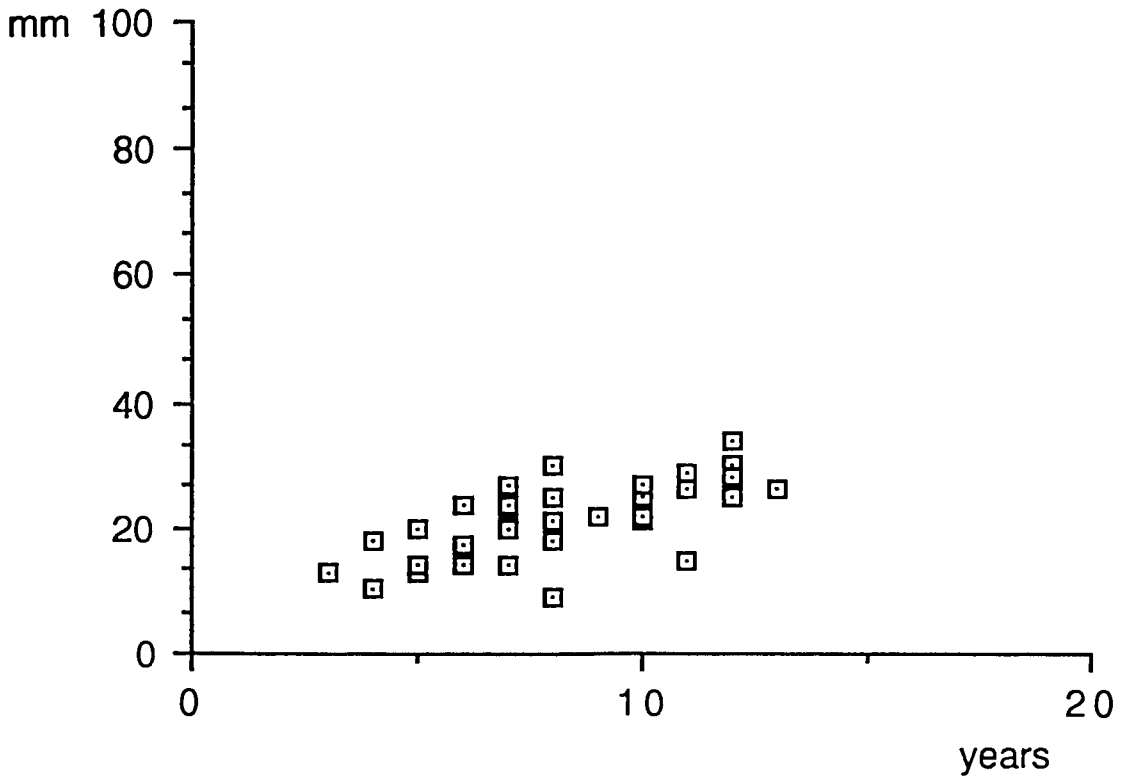
*Area B (adjacent to Control Point 11)*

At this location Phil Clarke found a small area of basketry. It was lifted as an intact block on its clay matrix for recording in the laboratory. Hilary Major photographed the material, made a 1:1 plan and took samples from each individual component for identification and stem ageing (Fig. 7). Locations of samples are shown on the plan Fig. 2.

A	9	Y	Corylus	2	One tangential cut
B	6	Y	Corylus	1	
C	10	Y	Corylus	2	One tangential cut
D	9	Y	Corylus	2	
E	5	Y	Corylus	2	
F	9	Y	Corylus	2	Two opposing tangential cuts
G	5	Y	Corylus	2	
H	5	Y	Corylus	1	
I	9	N	Corylus	3	One tangential cut
J	7	Y	Corylus	1	
K	9	Y	Corylus	2	3 tangential cuts



Collins Creek. Quercus roundwood (all contexts).



Blackwater Site 28. Ct. 96. Quercus roundwood.

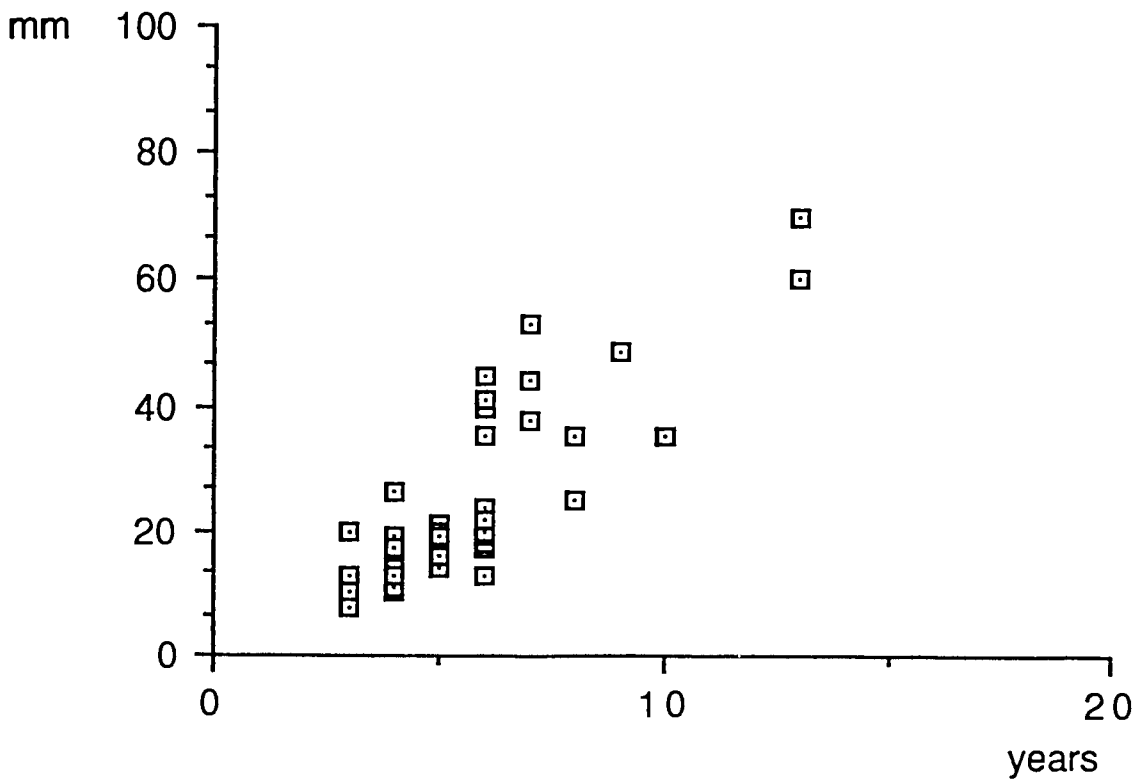
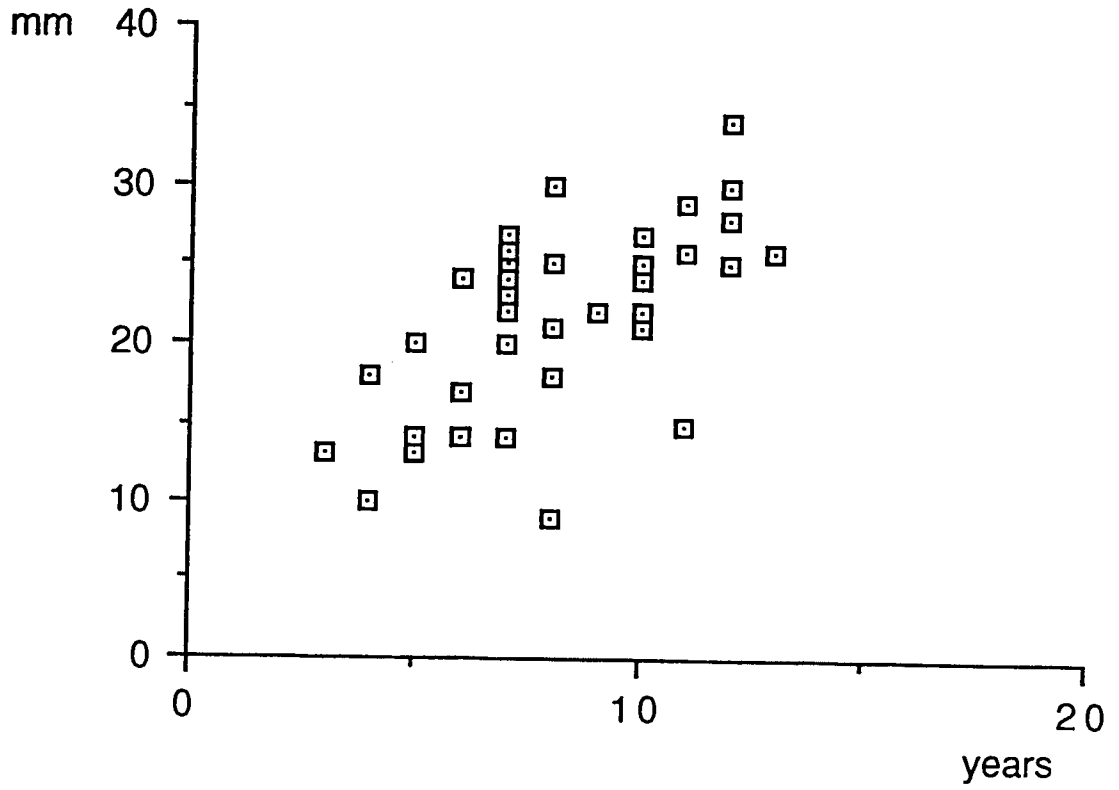


Fig. 10 Collins Creek. Comparison of age/size distribution of oak stems from Collins Creek (Saxon), with those from Iron Age structure at Blackwater structure 28

Collins Creek. Quercus roundwood.



Collins Creek. Salix roundwood.

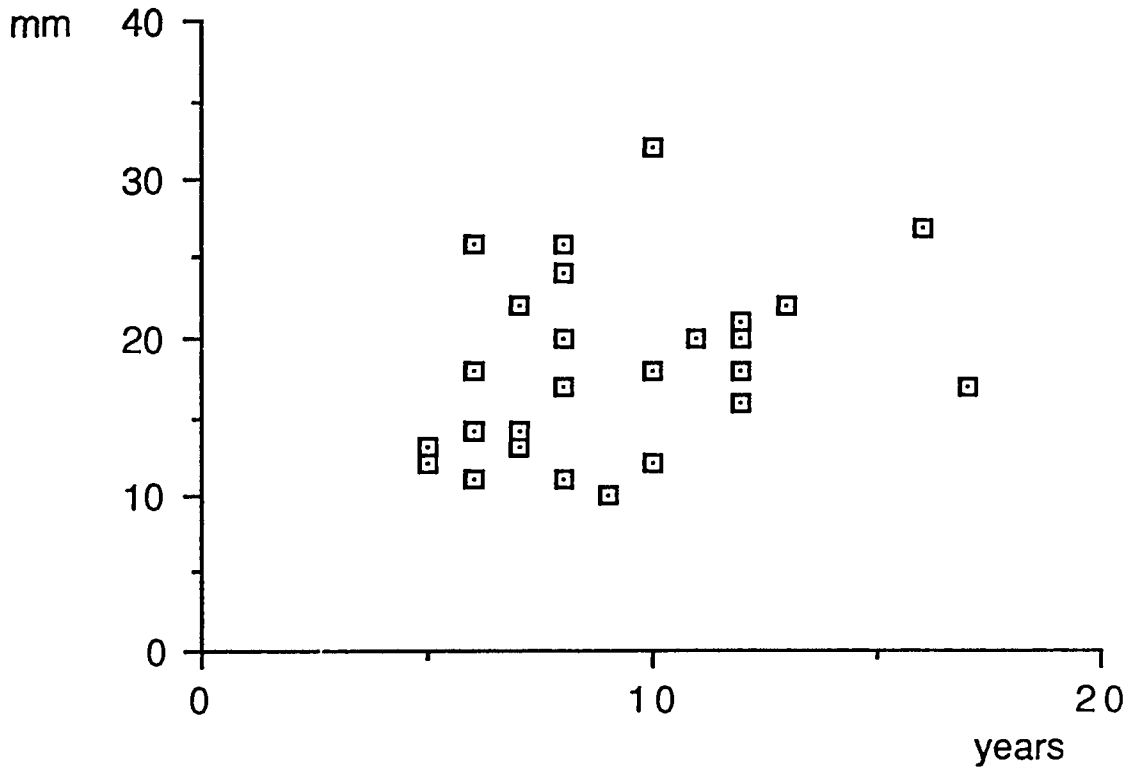


Fig. 11 Collins Creek. Comparison of age/size distributions for oak and willow stems from wattling panels

A SAXON INTER-TIDAL FISH WEIR IN THE BLACKWATER

	Diam (mm)	Bark?	Species	Stem Age	Notes
L	9	Y	Corylus	3	One tangential cut
M	5	Y	Corylus	2	Oblique transverse cut
N	-	-	Indet	-	Degraded wood scrap
O	6	Y	Indet	2?	Degraded fragment
P	13	Y	Corylus	8	
Q	c.16	N	Quercus	>4	Abraded
R	14	Y	Corylus	4	Halved (split) stem fragment
S	-	-	Quercus	-	Fragment

The larger, 9-10mm, stems forming part of the basketry had been very neatly trimmed by tangential longitudinal cuts along their lengths so as to reduce their size to that of the smaller, 5-6mm, stems. This gave them sub-quadrilateral cross-sections.

Discussion

1) Wood utilisation

The wattle panels were made of (in order of abundance) *Salix*, willow or sallow (25 identifications), *Quercus*, oak (23), *Betula*, birch (21) and *Corylus*, hazel (9). Separation of *Salix* from *Populus* (poplar) is difficult. However, all *Salix/Populus* samples from this site showed distinctly heterogeneous rays and have therefore been referred to as *Salix* (Schweingruber 1978). This mixture of woods may imply that more than one type of woodland was supplying roundwood stems.

2) Stem ages and diameters

A conspicuous feature of many stems is their slow growth rate: they commonly show many narrow rings. In Fig. 10, age/size distributions of oak stems from Collins Creek are compared with oak stems from the Iron Age structure Context 96 at Blackwater Site 28 (Wilkinson and Murphy 1995). The difference in growth rates is striking, though difficult to explain. It presumably relates to some environmental variable.

In Figs 11 and 12, age/size distributions for oak, willow and birch

stems are shown in more detail. From the data so far obtained points do not seem to be clustered, as would be expected from coppiced/pollarded roundwood from a single stand. Clearly the Collins Creek wood must have come from managed woodlands, so this lack of clustering seems to suggest that the roundwood used came from several different woodlands under different regimes, as the species composition of the wood would suggest. It is perhaps surprising that this very small area of wattleing should have been made of material from more than one source. It may imply some centralised stock-piling of roundwood for hurdle construction, with a resultant mixing of wood imported from different locations.

3) Basketry (Area B)

Definite functional interpretation of this small and flattened fragment of basketry is difficult. However it could be part of a fish-basket similar to that described by Godbold and Turner (1993) from the Welsh intertidal zone on the line of the second Severn crossing.

Potential for analysis

The material so far collected needs full analysis in order to increase the sample size: this would not be time-consuming.

However the area of wattleing so far examined represents only a very small sample of the total present at the site. Further work along the same lines in other areas alongside detailed planning of sample lengths is likely to be profitable, principally to demonstrate any variability in construction methods, wood utilisation and woodland management.

Assessment of stratigraphic context of the southern east-west post alignment

Peter Murphy, Centre of East Anglian Studies, University of East Anglia

Introduction

The wooden structures visible at Collins Creek are exposed on a planed-off eroded surface and lack an immediately apparent stratigraphic context. The location of the southern east-west post

Collins Creek. *Betula* roundwood.

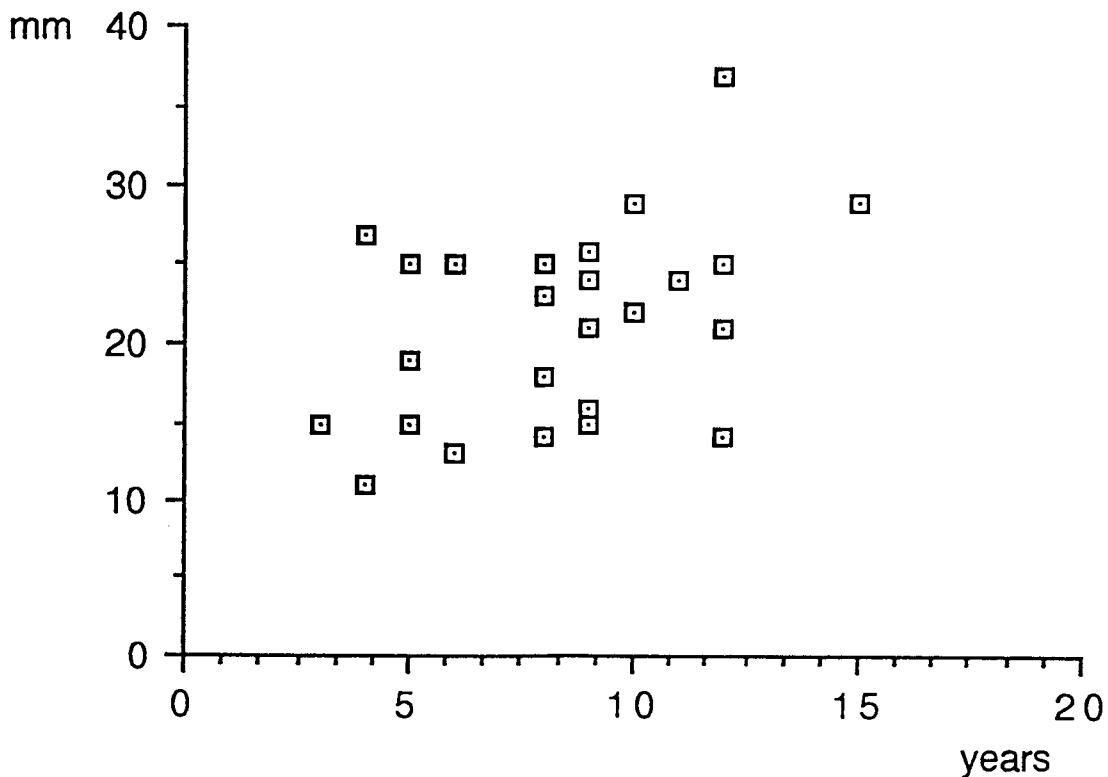


Fig. 12 Collins Creek. Comparison of age/size distributions for birch stems from wattleing panels

alignment prior to the present investigation was problematic for it was then hard to see how it would have functioned as a fish-trap. A possible alternative explanation for the structure was as a revetment protecting a putative salt-marsh island, now lost by erosion. It was thought possible that, if this second explanation was correct, limited probing of the underlying sediments might detect firmer sediments or even solid deposits (London Clay head or valley gravels) forming the core of a former salt-marsh island reverted to the south by this alignment. To investigate this possibility a transect of probes was sunk across the alignment adjacent to Control Point 11 proceeding north-west in the direction of Control Point 6 on 6 June 1993.

#### Results

The depth of soft sediment proved by probing was as follows.

Distance to north-west from Control Point 11	Sediment depth (metres)
-10	3.1
0	0.4
10	0.8
15	3.5
20	3.2
30	3.1
40	2.3
50	2.6
60	3.1
70	2.2
80	3.3

It was immediately clear from these results that there are no hard sediments close to the surface north of the east-west alignment: on the contrary the alignment itself was constructed on a ridge of firm sediment, impenetrable with the auger used, along which a modern shell-ridge has been emplaced. Inspection of the sediments exposed by erosion at the flanks of the modern shell ridge showed that this firm sediment was a grey, very firm fine sandy silt including abundant mollusc shells. In places the remnants of horizontally-laid wattling could be seen resting on the surface of this sandy silt.

A 1.4kg sample was examined from this deposit. The sample was disaggregated and wet-sieved over 2mm and 0.5mm meshes. In the coarser fraction shells of *Cerastoderma edule* predominated, in the finer *Hydrobia ulvae*. Some of the *C. edule* shells were as paired articulated valves, though most were separated and often fragmentary. Other molluscs present included *Nucula* sp, *Cerastoderma lamarcki*, *Parvicardium* sp, *Mytilus edulis*, *Macoma balthica*, *Scrobicularia plana*, *Littorina* spp, *Retusa* spp and *Turbonilla* sp, with barnacles and foraminiferans.

#### Conclusions

The sediment underlying the east-west alignment at this point is a very firm shell-rich sandy silt which would appear to represent the Saxon precursor of the modern shell-ridge at the site, in approximately the same position. It was evidently this feature that determined the position of the east-west alignment. It would have provided firm footing for construction work. More importantly it seems probable that, being raised above the general mud-flat surface, this ridge would have held back water draining from the north at falling tide so as to create a temporary lagoon in which any fish present would have been confined. In this context the east-west post alignment makes sense as a fish-trap.

#### Recommendations for further work

Following this limited investigation, re-inspection of the site plan leads to a provisional suggestion that the southern east-west alignment, that running north-west from Control Point 11 and the northern east-west alignment might form a sort of enclosure or 'corral' in which fish confined by the falling tide could be trapped as they attempted to escape. If these other alignments can also be shown to be running along former shell ridges this interpretation would be supported. It is therefore proposed that further simple probing, as described here, should be undertaken across these other alignments. This would require two further site visits.

#### Identification and tree-ring analysis of wood from Collins Creek - a pilot study

Cathy Groves, Department of Archaeology & Prehistory, Sheffield University

Following a site visit by the Sheffield Dendrochronology Laboratory staff (at the request of English Heritage), it was decided that a small pilot project be undertaken to determine the dendrochronological potential of the site. The results are presented in Groves (1993) and are summarised below.

#### Results

A total of 32 samples from three areas were obtained for identification and assessment purposes. The samples were prepared and analysed using standard dendrochronological techniques. Details of the samples are presented in Table 1. Twenty six samples were identified as oak, five as *Betula* spp and one as *Salix/Populus* type. Non-oak samples were only present in area 3, as were timbers with injury scars. All samples were roundwood and most had both pith and bark surface. The vast majority of the timbers were in the 10-35 year age range at felling.

Samples with less than 50 rings are usually rejected as unsuitable for dating purposes due to the possibility of such a short ring sequence not being unique in time (Hillam *et al.* 1987). However, previous analyses, such as those at Fiskerton (Hillam 1992) and Testwood (Boswijk and Groves 1997), have shown that in certain circumstances where there are a substantial number of timbers with 30-50 rings they have the potential to provide extremely detailed chronological information concerning the primary construction and subsequent repair phases of structures. Unfortunately in this instance, only a handful of samples contained even 30 or more rings. Consequently only two oak samples (14, 27B), from different alignments, were considered potentially suitable for dendrochronological analysis. The ring sequences from these two samples did not crossmatch. In general where there are only two ring sequences available of 50 and 51 years respectively dating would not be attempted. Single samples, particularly those with less than 100 rings, are far less likely to give a reliable date than a well replicated site master curve (Hillam *et al.* 1987). However as there is a Saxon chronology available from nearby Mersea Strood (Hillam 1981), it was considered appropriate to attempt to date the Collins Creek samples. Both ring sequences were tested against the Mersea sequence and other dated Saxon reference chronologies from East Anglia and the London region. No consistent results were found for either ring sequence so the timbers remain undated.

#### Future work

From a dendrochronological view point it seems unwise to proceed further. The alignments investigated appear to be constructed of young timber that is unsuitable for dating purposes. Thus it seems that it would be more beneficial to the archaeological survey to embark on a more detailed radiocarbon dating program, perhaps obtaining series of samples from the different area/alignment types.

The vast quantities of material available appear to be suitable for woodland characterisation studies if this is deemed applicable. The pilot study has shown that the samples from areas 1 and 2 consist entirely of oak, whilst those of other species are present in area 3. (Area 3 was also the only one which had samples with injury scars.) A large scale woodland characterisation study would allow comparisons to be made between areas/alignments with regard to differences in species utilisation and age range of material. Particular patterns in the use of winter and summer felled material within individual alignments may become apparent. Information may also be obtained concerning possible woodland management practices. The extensive sampling required for such a study may well have the added bonus of locating sufficient samples to make dendrochronological analysis feasible at a later stage in the survey.

## A SAXON INTER-TIDAL FISH WEIR IN THE BLACKWATER

Table 1 Details of the samples. AGR – average growth rate (mm/year); the dimensions exclude the bark.

Sample number	Species	Total no. of rings	Sapwood rings	AGR	Dimensions (mm)	Comments
<b>Area 1</b>						
01	Quercus spp	33	12	2.3	145x125	bark - felled summer; knots
02	Quercus spp	23	9	2.3	105x105	bark?
03	Quercus spp	20-25	7	1.7	80x75	bark - felled winter
04	Quercus spp	25-30	25-30	1.5	85x75	bark; knots
05	Quercus spp	18	8	2.8	105x105	bark
06	Quercus spp	23-25	14	2.2	00x90	bark - felled winter; pith rotted
07	Quercus spp	19	19	3.2	110x100	bark - felled summer
<b>Area 2</b>						
08	Quercus spp	27	14	2.6	145x130	bark - felled winter
09	Quercus spp	21	11	3.7	145x145	bark - felled summer
11	Quercus spp	23	14	2.4	135x115	bark - felled winter
12	Quercus spp	35	18	2.1	175x135	bark
13	Quercus spp	32	17	1.3	90x75	bark - felled winter
14	Quercus spp	50	17	1.1	135x120	bark - felled summer
15	Quercus spp	18	16	2.7	95x90	bark - felled summer
16	Quercus spp	26	14	2.7	135x130	bark - felled winter
17	Quercus spp	28	13	2.5	140x120	bark - felled winter; pith rotted
18	Quercus spp	39	19	1.3	120x90	bark
19	Quercus spp	32	18	1.9	125x115	bark
<b>Area 3</b>						
20	Salix/Populus	21	-	3.8	145x140	bark?; knots
21A	Betula spp	15	-	2.8	85x85	-
21B	Quercus spp	22	11	2.7	140x135	bark; scar in outermost rings
22	Betula spp	24-25	-	2.5	150x140	bark; knots
23A	Betula spp	14	-	5.4	150x140	knots
23B	Betula spp	15	-	3.8	110x95	knots
24	Quercus spp	23	9	2.7	120x100	bark - felled winter
25	Quercus spp	12	12	5.0	120x110	bark - felled winter
26	Quercus spp	25	10	4.0	195x175	knots
27A	Quercus spp	13	13	2.4	55x55	bark - felled summer
27B	Quercus spp	51	21	1.0	120x120	-
28	Betula spp	25-30	-	2.7	160x140	knots
29	Quercus spp	29	18	3.0	150x145	bark - felled summer; scar in ring 26
30	Quercus spp	22	12	3.0	150x130	bark - felled winter; knots

### Acknowledgements

The authors wish to thank the many people who have contributed to this project. In addition to those specifically mentioned by name in the main text, acknowledgements are due to Burnham Yacht Harbour Marina Ltd for allowing the first author leave of absence to be boatman for the site visits, to the Hydrographic Office, MoD, for computer programme SHM 159a Version 2 - Tidal predictions, and Keyboard marine software for Tidecomp Tidal Prediction software. The authors are also grateful to Alex Bayliss of English Heritage's Ancient Monuments Laboratory for advice on the presentation and interpretation of radiocarbon dates.

*Authors;* Ron Hall, 12 Octagon Terrace, The Hythe, Maldon CM9 5HN, and Phil Clarke, Essex County Council Planning Division, County Hall, Chelmsford CM1 1LF.

**Bibliography**

- Baillie, M.G.L. 1982 *Tree-ring dating and Archaeology*, London: Croom Helm
- Baillie, M.G.L. and Pilcher, J.R. 1973 'A simple cross-dating program for tree-ring research', *Tree Ring Bulletin* 33, 7-14
- Boswijk, G. and Groves, C. 1997 *Dendrochronological analysis of timbers from Meadow Lake excavations, Testwood Lakes, Netley Marsh, Hampshire*, ARCUS Rep. 281
- Clarke, C.P. 1992 *Collins Creek, Inter-tidal zone, Essex*, unpublished ECC report
- Godbold, S. and Thomas, R. 1992 *Second Severn crossing - final report*, CADW: Aberystwyth
- Groves, C. 1993 *Identification and tree-ring analysis of wood from Collins Creek, Blackwater inter-tidal zone, Essex 1993 - a pilot study*, Anc. Mon. Lab. Rep. 104/93
- Hillam, J. 1981 *The dating of the Mersea Strood timbers*, Ancient Monuments Laboratory report series 3261
- Hillam, J. 1992 'Dendrochronology in England: the dating of a wooden causeway from Lincolnshire and a logboat from Humberside', *Proc. 13th Colloquium of the AFEAF Guerat 1989*, 137-41
- Hillam, J., Morgan, R.A. and Tyers, I. 1987 'Sapwood estimates and the dating of short ring sequences', in Ward, R.G.W. (ed.), *Applications of tree-ring studies: current research in dendrochronology and related areas*, BAR S333, 165-85
- Losco-Bradley, P.M. and Salisbury, C.R. 1988 'A Saxon and Norman fish-weir at Colwick, Nottinghamshire', in Aston, M. (ed.), *Medieval Fish, Fisheries and Fishponds in England*, BAR (British Series) 182, 329-51
- Mook, W.G. 1986 'Business meeting: Recommendations/resolutions adopted by the Twelfth International Radiocarbon Conference', *Radiocarbon* 28, 799
- Munro, M.A.R. 1984 'An improved algorithm for crossdating tree-ring series', *Tree Ring Bulletin* 44, 17-27
- Rumble, A. (ed.) 1983 *Domesday Book, 32 Essex*. Chichester: Phillimore
- Schweingruber, F.H. 1978 *Microscopic wood anatomy*, Swiss Federal Institute of Forestry Research
- Schweingruber, F.H. 1990 *Anatomy of European woods*, Haupt: Berne and Stuttgart
- Strachan, D. 1998 'Inter-tidal stationary fishing structures in Essex: some C14 dates', *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* 29, 274-82
- Stuiver, M. and Reiner, P.J. 1986 'A computer program for radiocarbon age calculation', *Radiocarbon* 28, 1022-30
- Stuiver, M., Reimer, P.J., Bard, E., Beck, J.W., Burr, G.S., Hughen, K.A., Kromer, B., McCormac, F.G., van der Plicht, J. and Spurk, M. 1998 'INTAL 98 radiocarbon age calibration, 24,000 - 0 cal B.P.', *Radiocarbon* 40, 1041-84
- Wallace, S. 1993 'Aerial survey of the Essex coast' in Bennett, A. (ed.), 'Work of the ECC Archaeology Section 1992', *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* 24, 193-4
- Ward, G.K. and Wilson, S.R. 1978 'Procedures for comparing and combining radiocarbon age determinations: a critique', *Archaeometry* 20, 19-31
- Wheeler, E.A., Pearson, R.G., LaPasha, C.A., Zack, T. and Hatley, W. 1986 'Computer-aided wood identification', *North Carolina Agricultural Service Bulletin* 474, 160
- Williams, J. and Brown, N. (eds) 1999 *An Archaeological Framework for the Greater Thames Estuary*, Essex County Council, Kent County Council, English Heritage
- Wilkinson, T.J. and Murphy, P.L. 1995 *The Archaeology of the Essex coast Volume I: The Hullbridge survey*, E. Anglian Archaeol. 71

*The Society acknowledges financial assistance from the Publications Development Fund towards the cost of publishing this article.*

## The Medieval Manors of Maldon

by W.R. Powell

About eighty years ago J.H. Round commented on ‘the need which exists for further research in a field so promising as that afforded by the history of this ancient borough’ of Maldon. He went on to mention the traces of Danish settlement in east Essex, the manorial history of Maldon from Domesday to the 13th century, and Henry II’s charter to the borough, which, as Round himself had proved, was granted in October 1171. These notes on Maldon, given to our Society by Round’s executors, were published in *Essex Archaeology and History* in 1995, under our Publications Development Scheme.<sup>1</sup> Since they were first written valuable contributions have been made to the post-medieval history of Maldon by Dr W.J. Petchey and Mr J.R. Smith,<sup>2</sup> and to earlier periods by Dr D. Andrews, Mr D.F. Stenning and other archaeologists.<sup>3</sup> But much still remains to be discovered concerning the Middle Ages. The present paper discusses the manorial structure of Maldon from the Norman Conquest to the Dissolution of the monasteries, a crucial subject on which Morant’s *History* goes sadly astray.

### The Domesday Manors

Domesday Book records only two towns in Essex, Colchester and Maldon. Round compares them as follows:<sup>4</sup>

Though we have not for Maldon, as we have for Colchester, a separate and special survey of the town, we have several scattered entries affording, in the aggregate, considerable information. Just as Colchester is referred to as a hundred, so is Maldon as a half-hundred. In neither case is there now any district so called, and I cannot but think that, in both, the division referred to was the liberty - the *banleuca*<sup>5</sup> as it is called in both instances - of the borough. This would imply that both boroughs had a separate jurisdiction and organization of their own, independent of the adjacent hundreds.

Round’s statement that Maldon is referred to in Domesday Book as a half-hundred needs qualification. Of the five manors called Maldon in the ‘scattered entries,’ three are indeed listed under the heading ‘half-hundred of Maldon.’ The largest of these belonged to the king.<sup>6</sup> The others, both small, were held respectively by Ranulf Peverel<sup>7</sup> and Suen of Essex.<sup>8</sup> The remaining two manors, however, are listed under ‘the Hundred of Witbrictesherna’: this was a rural hundred, later called

Dengie, lying south, east and west of Maldon town. The larger of those two manors was held by Ranulf Peverel,<sup>9</sup> the smaller by Eustace, count of Boulogne.<sup>10</sup>

Maldon’s Domesday manors were located as follows. The king’s manor was an urban settlement, already established on the hill above the confluence of the Chelmer and Blackwater rivers. Ranulf Peverel’s double manor, later called Little Maldon, lay west and north of the town. Eustace of Boulogne’s manor, comprising about half the parish of St. Mary, and later called Ketons and Coopes, lay south-east.<sup>11</sup> Suen of Essex’s small manor has not been precisely located. Round identified it with the later manor of Southouse and Sayers,<sup>12</sup> but that was, in fact, carved out of the manor held in 1086 by Eustace of Boulogne.<sup>13</sup> Suen’s manor, like that of the king, was listed under the ‘half-hundred of Maldon.’ It also ‘shared with the other burgesses’ the duty of providing for the king’s service, when required, a horse and also a ship. There is therefore little doubt that this manor was close to the town. It was probably merged in the king’s manor of Maldon in 1163, when the honour of Rayleigh escheated to the Crown.<sup>14</sup>

If Round was correct in identifying the ‘half-hundred of Maldon’ with the liberty of the borough, it would appear that in 1086 the borough was limited to the king’s manor, that of Suen, and the smaller part of Ranulf Peverel’s double manor. If so, it was much smaller than it later became.

### The Descents of the Manors

MALDON or GREAT MALDON. The king’s Domesday manor contained 198 houses, of which 180 were occupied by burgesses, and 18 were unoccupied. Fifteen of the burgesses also held land, totalling 1/2 hide and 21 acres; the other burgesses held ‘no more than their houses in the borough.’ Two of the houses were held by Eudes *dapifer*, a baron whose Essex lands included the large manor of Mundon, immediately south of Maldon.<sup>15</sup> Besides the properties already mentioned, the king’s manor of Maldon also included 49 acres held by a sokeman, who was paying a customary rent of 3s. a year to Ranulf Peverel. The burgesses’ land in the manor seems to have been mainly pasture and woodland, since it supported 12 rounceys, 140 cattle (*animalia*), 103 swine, and 336 sheep. The produce from these beasts, including ewes-milk

cheese,<sup>16</sup> would, no doubt, have found a ready market in the town.

Maldon remained with the Crown until c. 1139, when King Stephen granted it to his brother, Theobald, count of Blois.<sup>17</sup> Soon after that the manor was seized by the Empress Maud, who at midsummer 1141 gave it to Geoffrey de Mandeville, earl of Essex. Later, probably at Christmas 1141, Stephen confirmed Geoffrey in possession.<sup>18</sup> But on Geoffrey's fall in 1144 Maldon reverted to the Crown. In 1155 Henry II granted it to his brother, William 'Longsword,' who, until his death in 1164, was holding land in Maldon valued at £22 a year. The manor then again came back to the king.

Whether the manorial structure of Maldon was altered by the borough charter granted by Henry II in 1171 is far from clear.<sup>19</sup> The Pipe Rolls of the Exchequer for the following years contain no new allowances against the county sheriff's farm, nor any other evidence indicating that the king, by the charter, had alienated any of his manorial rights. In Maldon, as sometimes elsewhere,<sup>20</sup> the purpose of the charter may have been to confirm privileges and jurisdiction previously held by prescription. One clause of the charter is notable as showing that the burgesses of Maldon were still required to provide a ship for the king. But nothing is said about the other obligation mentioned in Domesday, that of providing a horse.

The manor of Maldon, after reverting to the king in 1164, was again alienated in 1173, this time to Oliver FitzErnest (*Filius Ernisi*). According to an official record made in 1212, it had been given to Oliver by William Longsword.<sup>21</sup> That was obviously an error. How Oliver actually obtained the manor can be inferred from the Pipe Roll of 1173, in which the sheriff of Essex was credited with £4 in Maldon for a quarter of a year, and in future £16 a year, in respect of a grant to Oliver 'to make up the land worth £40 which the king had granted to Richard de Lucy by his writ from beyond the sea.'<sup>22</sup> This shows that the grant to Oliver took effect from July 1173. At that time Richard de Lucy, Chief Justiciar of England, and lord of the Essex barony of Ongar,<sup>23</sup> was engaged in suppressing the great baronial rebellion against Henry II. It is likely, therefore, that Oliver was one of Lucy's followers, and that he received Maldon as a reward for his loyalty.

Oliver FitzErnest held the manor until his death late in 1182, when it passed to his son, Eudes FitzErnest.<sup>24</sup> In 1193 Eudes gave half of it to the leper hospital of Bois-Halbout in Normandy (hamlet, com. Cesny, dep. Calvados). This may have been a death-bed benefaction, for by 1194 the remaining half of the manor was held by Robert FitzErnest.<sup>25</sup> Robert retained that until 1206 when he granted it to Eudes Patrick.<sup>26</sup> Meanwhile, in 1203, Bois-Halbout hospital had granted its half of Maldon to William of St. Mary Church, bishop of London, in exchange for property elsewhere.<sup>27</sup> The two halves of the manor, each valued in John's reign at £10 1s. 5d., remained separate until the 16th century. Their descents are traced below under

the respective headings, used there for convenience, of 'Bishop's Moiety' and 'Patrick's Moiety.'

*Bishop's Moiety.* William of St. Mary Church is said to have bought 'the land in Maldon' to endow the anniversary of king Henry II in St. Paul's cathedral.<sup>28</sup> It was assessed for feudal purposes at 1/4 knight's fee.<sup>29</sup> Successive bishops of London held it in demesne until 1403, when Bishop Robert Braybrooke demised it, with most of his manorial rights, to the burgesses of Maldon, subject to an annual rent of 10 marks (£6 13 s. 4d.).<sup>30</sup> The property thus conveyed included a house with a solar above it called the Moot Hall (*Le Motehall*); all vacant plots and stallages in the town; a marsh called Portmanmerssh; an assize rent called 'hadgavel'; annual view of frankpledge and three other courts general yearly; a custom called 'toltrety', of taking duty from ships in the port; and a custom called 'landchepe', of taxing land purchases in the town. The bishop reserved for himself various rents and services in Maldon belonging to his manor of Wickham Bishops (*Wykhamhalle*), which lay about two miles north of the town; and all escheats of lands in Maldon and escapes of felons from custody of the town's officers, subject to a customary payment. By this conveyance of 1403 the effective control of this moiety passed to the borough.

Maldon Carmelite friary was founded in 1292 by Richard Gravesend, bishop of London and Richard Iselham, rector of South Hanningfield, on a five-acre plot in All Saints' parish. In 1314 Thomas Parker of Maldon gave the friary a piece of land 60 feet long and 17 feet wide, to enlarge their house. The friary was dissolved in 1538.<sup>31</sup>

*Patrick's Moiety.* Eudes Patrick, who acquired this half of Maldon manor in 1206, still held it in 1212.<sup>32</sup> Roger de Mowbray (*Molbrai*) was named as owner from 1214 to 1218.<sup>33</sup> By 1230 the moiety had passed to William de Launde.<sup>34</sup> He was then holding 1/4 knight's fee in Maldon as subtenant of Neal de Mowbray, who died in that year.<sup>35</sup> This indicates that the Mowbrays, whose main estates were in Yorkshire, had subinfeudated their Maldon property.<sup>36</sup> Their interest in it was soon lost, for according to later records Launde and his successors held 1/4 knight's fee in Maldon of the king in chief.<sup>37</sup>

William de Launde died in 1269. His inquisition *post mortem* reported that he had left an only son aged nine, whose name was unknown because he had been born in Derbyshire.<sup>38</sup> It is probable that the boy was another William de Launde, and that he was not, in fact, the only son, for it was stated in 1284-5 that this half of Maldon had previously passed to John de Launde, then a minor, as heir to his brother William.<sup>39</sup> John de Launde later conveyed the lordship to Hamon le Parker and his wife Anne. At his death in 1302 Hamon was said to have held, jointly with Anne, 16 s. rent from the market stallages, 8 s. from tolls of ships, and 8 s. from pleas of court.<sup>40</sup> Anne was confirmed in possession, as a widow, in the same year.<sup>41</sup> Soon after she appears to have married John de Prayers, for in 1303 he and his



wife Anne were assessed for  $\frac{1}{4}$  knight's fee in Great Maldon.<sup>42</sup> In 1315 they conveyed their moiety of the manor to Robert FitzWalter, Lord FitzWalter, and his wife Alice.<sup>43</sup>

Lord FitzWalter, who traced his descent from Robert FitzWalter, leader of the barons against King John, held great estates in Essex, including Woodham Walter, adjoining Maldon. His Maldon lordship passed with the FitzWalter barony until the end of the 14th century.<sup>44</sup> Some time before 1398 Walter FitzWalter, Lord FitzWalter, granted a life interest in the lordship to Henry Tey.<sup>45</sup> By 1428 the ownership had passed to Robert Darcy.<sup>46</sup> He was already well established in Maldon, having acquired, in 1407, 40 houses and stalls, 120 acres of meadow, 4 a. marsh, 66 s. 8 d. rent, and a third part of a watermill in the town.<sup>47</sup> He came of a London family which had settled in Essex in the early 14th century.<sup>48</sup> During the 1420s and 1430s his name often appears in conveyances, evidently as an attorney.<sup>49</sup> He died before 1450, when his eldest son Robert founded in his honour Darcy's chantry in All Saints' church, Maldon.<sup>50</sup> Thomas Darcy, brother and apparently heir of the younger Robert, died holding the Maldon lordship in 1486.<sup>51</sup> It passed to Thomas's son Roger (d. 1508), and then to Roger's son Thomas (d. 1558), first Lord Darcy of Chich.<sup>52</sup>

In the mid or later 15th century the Darcy family planned a great mansion next to All Saints church. It was never completed, but the tower survives as part of the Moot Hall, High Street.<sup>53</sup>

**LITTLE MALDON.** This manor was centred on Maldon Hall, which still survives, about a mile south-west of the town centre. It must originally have included Beeleigh to the north, as well as Maldon quay and the adjoining shops, mentioned below. In the Ecclesiastical Taxation returns of 1291 and also in the Lay Subsidy of 1327 there are separate entries for Little Maldon, indicating that it was a separate 'vill' or township.<sup>54</sup> How far the vill coincided with the manor of Little Maldon is not clear.

In 1086 Ranulf Peverel held two manors in Maldon, both of which had belonged in 1066 to Seward, a thegn with extensive estates in Essex and Suffolk.<sup>55</sup> The smaller, entered under Maldon half-hundred, comprised half a hide and 24 acres.<sup>56</sup> The larger, in Witbrictesherna (Dengie) hundred comprised  $5\frac{1}{2}$  hides and 10 acres.<sup>57</sup> The two manors, both held in demesne, were jointly assessed. Ranulf Peverel also held 5 acres in Maldon, occupied by a free man, and attached to Steeple, a royal manor four miles south-east of Maldon.<sup>58</sup>

Ranulf Peverel's Essex estates, which became known as the honour of Peverel of London or Hatfield Peverel, escheated to the Crown on the death of his son William, some time between 1107 and 1130.<sup>59</sup> In 1130 William de Tregoz, custodian of the honour, was credited with 52 s. for making two vineyards at Maldon and for clothing and feeding the vine-dressers, and with 10s. for buying 16 barrels and transporting them to Maldon,

and then to London.<sup>60</sup> The descent of the manor in the following years is obscure, but there are some clues to it. Three royal writs, all issued between 1147 and 1152, show that Henry I had granted to Ralph de Venions a marsh in Maldon called Becehauhapre, and that Ralph had given it to the canons of the college of St. Martin-le-Grand, London.<sup>61</sup> The college, which already held a manor in Maldon,<sup>62</sup> had retained the marsh up to Henry I's death, and afterwards 'until the day when Walter FitzGilbert went on Crusade,' but had later lost control of it. In the first of the three writs King Stephen ordered an inquisition to be made into St. Martin's claim to the marsh. In the second writ, after the inquisition, he ordered that the land given by Ralph de Venions, which was held of the honour of Peverel, should be restored to the canons, and that they should not be subject to legal proceedings until Walter FitzGilbert, from whom they held the marsh, returned from Crusade. The third writ, issued by Stephen's queen Maud, also ordered the return of the marsh to St. Martin's, since the men of the honour of Peverel, and those of the neighbourhood, had sworn that it belonged to the canons, and that Walter FitzGilbert had conceded it to them.

Walter FitzGilbert's interest in Maldon is not clear. A member of the powerful Clare family, favourites of Henry I, he had joined the Second Crusade in 1147.<sup>63</sup> From the evidence quoted above it seems likely that he had been granted the mesne tenancy of Little Maldon by Henry I, and that he had become involved in a dispute with his subtenant Ralph de Venions. But no further references have been found to Walter or Ralph.

The descent of Little Maldon during Stephen's reign is further complicated by the royal grants to Geoffrey de Mandeville, earl of Essex. These have already been mentioned in connexion with the king's manor of Great Maldon, but the Empress's grant to Geoffrey at midsummer 1141 also affected Little Maldon. In one clause of the charter she promised that, if the honour of William Peverel of London should in the future be restored to his heirs, then she would compensate Geoffrey by giving him an exchange of equal value.<sup>64</sup> This seems to imply that the Empress intended Geoffrey to have the honour of Peverel, including Little Maldon. But here, as in Great Maldon, his interest ceased with his fall in 1144, and the manor reverted to the Crown.

In 1167 Henry II granted to Robert Mantel land in Maldon valued at 7s. 5d. a year.<sup>65</sup> Robert Mantel, says J.H. Round, 'was one of the lesser members of that interesting ministerial class which played so important a part in the financial and judicial system developed by Henry I and still more under Henry II.'<sup>66</sup> He was the founder of Beeleigh abbey, and probably also of St. Giles's hospital, Maldon.<sup>67</sup> From 1170 to 1181 he served as sheriff of Essex. On his death in 1190 Little Maldon passed to his son Matthew, who was sheriff of Essex 1204-8 and 1213-14. In 1212 Matthew Mantel was recorded as holding half a knight's fee in Little Maldon.<sup>68</sup> He was succeeded c. 1214 by his brother

Robert Mantel II (d. 1228). Robert's son Matthew Mantel II died before 1250, leaving a widow Cecily, who held dower in Little Maldon until her death in 1289. Matthew's heirs were his sisters Rose and Lucy. Rose, the elder sister, appears to have inherited the whole of Little Maldon, except for Cecily Mantel's dower lands. She married William de Fanecourt (d. before 1262), and later Roger Baynard, who outlived her and died shortly before August 1295, holding Little Maldon by courtesy of England for half a knight's fee.<sup>69</sup> In 1295 the manor was said to include a messuage, 250 acres arable, 18 a. meadow, 9 a. pasture, 3 a. vineyard, one third of a mill, and 73 s. assize rents. Baynard had previously given part of it to his daughter Margaret and her husband Henry de Cobham, but she had died before her father, and on his death Little Maldon passed to Thomas Filliol, grandson of Lucy, younger daughter of Matthew Mantel II.

Thomas Filliol had already succeeded to the dower lands held by Cecily Mantel (d. 1289), said to comprise 20 a. arable, 33 a. wood and one third of a windmill.<sup>70</sup> Like his Mantel ancestors he was employed in the king's service, as in 1295, when he was sent to Gascony.<sup>71</sup> In 1303 he, with his tenants, were assessed on half a knight's fee in Little Maldon, held of the honour of Peverel.<sup>72</sup> He had also inherited lands in Essex at Hatfield Peverel and Boreham, and he soon disposed of Little Maldon. By 1320 the manor, along with the advowsons of Beeleigh abbey and St. Giles's hospital, had been conveyed to John Amory by John de Grey, in exchange for the manor of Toseland (Hants). Grey had previously acquired Little Maldon from Thomas Filliol.<sup>73</sup>

In 1321 John Amory was licensed to exchange 60 a. land in Little Maldon, held of the honour of Peverel, for 60 a., then held in free alms by Beeleigh abbey.<sup>74</sup> He died in 1341 leaving a son and heir Edmund, aged 16.<sup>75</sup> Edmund himself was dead by 1346, when the manor was in the king's hands during the minority of his brother John Amory.<sup>76</sup>

By 1365 Little Maldon had passed to John Bourchier, Lord Bourchier, who in that year conveyed it to trustees.<sup>77</sup> The manor then included Maldon quay with an adjoining house and shops, as well as the advowsons of Beeleigh abbey and St. Giles's hospital. Bourchier already had estates in Essex, at Halstead, Sible Hedingham and elsewhere. Like his father he spent much of his life fighting in France.<sup>78</sup> He made a further settlement of Little Maldon in 1381.<sup>79</sup> On his death in 1400 the manor passed to his son Bartholomew, Lord Bourchier (d. 1409). Bartholomew's daughter and heir Elizabeth married successively Sir Hugh de Stafford (d. 1420) and Sir Lewis Roberstart (d. 1431), each of whom in turn was summoned to Parliament as Lord Bourchier and held Little Maldon. On Elizabeth's death in 1433 the manor passed to her cousin Henry Bourchier, who became Lord Bourchier and later earl of Essex.<sup>80</sup> He died in 1483 and was buried in Beeleigh abbey. Little Maldon passed to his grandson Henry Bourchier, earl of Essex

(d. 1540) whose heir was his daughter Anne, wife of Sir William Parr, who became earl of Essex and later marquis of Northampton.<sup>81</sup>

In the late 15th and the 16th century this manor was sometimes styled 'Great and Little Maldon,' which confused contemporary lawyers as well as later historians like Morant.<sup>82</sup>

**BEELEIGH or BEELEIGH FEE.** This manor comprised the lands in Maldon belonging to the Premonstratensian abbey of Beeleigh, founded in 1150 by Robert Mantel, lord of Little Maldon (above) and dissolved in 1536.<sup>83</sup> Mantel's original grants included two virgates in Maldon, two little islands called Ruckholm and Hardholm, one third of Strode grove, and Alicedune field.<sup>84</sup> During the 13th and 14th centuries the manor was augmented by several benefactions.<sup>85</sup> In 1291 the income from the abbey's lands in Maldon totalled £6 7s. 10d., itemized as follows: in Little Maldon £1 10s. 7d., in St. Mary's parish £1 6s. 3d., and in the combined parishes of All Saints and St. Peter £3 11s. 0d.<sup>86</sup> The Maldon borough survey under James I has a long list of the tenements in Beeleigh Fee.<sup>87</sup> Further evidence comes from the tithe award of St. Peter's parish (1841), which distinguishes properties which had belonged to Beeleigh abbey and had been tithe-free since the Dissolution.<sup>88</sup> These included 450 acres of farm land on the abbey site; Great Beeleigh, Little Beeleigh and Brook farms; Beeleigh mill; several wharfs, yards and buildings at the Hythe; and about 20 houses in the town. Beeleigh Grange farm (116 a.) and a small part of Great Beeleigh farm (13 a.) where the tithes had been merged in the freehold, must also have belonged to Beeleigh Fee. The lands of the abbey in St. Mary's parish, which in 1291 had comprised 20.5 per cent of the whole, probably amounted to a further 120 a. Those in the tiny parish of All Saints may have added a few more, bringing the total area of the manor to just over 700 a.

Beeleigh abbey's estate in Maldon was further augmented in 1484 by the appropriation of St. Giles's hospital, which had been founded c. 1164, on a site east of Maldon Hall, now in Spital Road.<sup>89</sup> The hospital had owned about 80 acres around the conventual buildings, later known as Spital farm,<sup>90</sup> and a property called Jenkyn Maldons lying in Hazeleigh, Purleigh, Woodham Mortimer and Maldon.<sup>91</sup> These estates seem to have remained distinct from Beeleigh Fee after they passed to the abbey, and they have not been included in the above calculations relating to the area of Beeleigh Fee.

**KETONS AND COOPES.** This manor has already been described in *Essex Archaeology and History*.<sup>92</sup> It was part of the original endowment of the college of St. Martin-le-Grand, London, founded c. 1068, and from 1158 was assigned to support two prebends. Its name, probably taken from two early prebendaries, first appears in the 14th century. St. Martin held the manor until 1503, when the college was appropriated to Westminster Abbey.

The manor must originally have comprised about 670 acres, roughly half of St. Mary's parish. Part of it was subinfeuded, probably in or before the 13th century, and eventually became the separate manor of Southouse and Sayers (below). Even without that, Ketons and Coopes was a sizeable property, amounting in the 19th century to 427 acres. A 14th-century list itemizes the assize rents due to it from ten tenements, including four shops, two vacant sites, a croft, and an acre of meadow.

**SOUTHHOUSE AND SAYERS.** This manor, lying in the marshes of St. Mary's parish, about 1½ miles SE of the town, was originally a free tenement of Ketons and Coopes (above), to which, in the 14th century, it owed an assize rent of 4s.<sup>93</sup> It can probably be identified with 90 acres of land and 60 acres of marsh in Maldon sold in 1248 by Felice FitzGerard to John de Grey for 100 marks (£66 13s. 4d.) Grey was to pay Felice 9 marks (£6) a year for her life, after which he and his heirs were to be quit of payment.<sup>94</sup> Richard of Maldon, who in that conveyance registered a claim to the property, surrendered it to Grey in 1254 for a payment of 20 marks (£13 13s. 4d.)<sup>95</sup> John de Grey, who died shortly before 18 March 1266, was father of Reynold de Grey, first Lord Grey of Wilton.<sup>96</sup> Reynold's grandson, Henry de Grey, Lord Grey, died in 1342 holding Southouse and Sayers of the dean and chapter of St. Martin-le-Grand, which proves that it had been subinfeuded from Ketons and Coopes.<sup>97</sup> Henry's son Reynold de Grey, Lord Grey (d. 1370), held two messuages, 160 a. arable and 20 a. marsh of St. Martin.<sup>98</sup> Elizabeth, widow of Henry de Grey, fifth Lord Grey, at her death in 1402, was holding Southouse and Sayers, under St. Martin-le-Grand, during the minority of her son, Richard, Lord Grey.<sup>99</sup> It was valued at £2 a year. The manor descended with the barony of Grey until 1507, when Edmund Grey, ninth Lord Grey, sold it, with other property, to Hugh Denys.<sup>100</sup> Denys was still holding it at his death in 1558.<sup>101</sup>

In 1844 Southouse farm comprised 246 acres.<sup>102</sup> It still appears on modern maps.

**EARLS MALDON.** This manor took its name from the earls of Oxford, who held it in the 15th and 16th centuries. It comprised a number of houses and shops in the town, with farm land behind them. There is no evidence of direct descent from any Domesday manor, and it seems likely that Earls Maldon was assembled from pieces carved out of older manors. At least part of it may originally have belonged to Little Maldon manor, and there are also links with Waltons Hall in Purleigh.

This may have been the estate conveyed in 1348 by Robert of Maldon and John of Purleigh to Peter Palmer (*le Palmere*) and his wife Joan. That comprised 3 houses, 6 shops, 145 a. land, 6 a. pasture and 64 s. 6d. rent in Great Maldon, Little Maldon and Woodham Mortimer.<sup>103</sup> Peter and Joan and their heirs were to have immediate possession of most of the estate. A smaller part, then held in dower by Margaret Tendring

and her husband Ralph, was to pass to Peter and Joan eventually. The contingent remainders stated in the conveyance show that Peter Palmer's interest in the estate came through his wife.

The Palmers' estate of 1348 is probably to be identified with one in Maldon occupied in the early 15th century by Sir Thomas Erpingham. A rental of Erpingham's estate drawn up in 1413 lists 7 houses, 12 shops or stalls, some 197 a. farm land (together with several small pieces for which acreages are not given), and 48s. 3d. assize rents.<sup>104</sup> The principal house was Palmer's Hall, which adjoined the Carmelite friary. Another house, also called Palmer's, lay close by, next to All Saints' churchyard. The net income from the estate, including arrears, was £21 5s. 10½d.

Sir Thomas Erpingham was a prominent soldier and administrator under Henry IV and Henry V.<sup>105</sup> He was holding the Maldon estate in right of his wife Joan (previously widow of Sir John Howard) who was heir to her brother Sir Richard Walton (d. 1409). Sir Richard had been lord of a manor later called Walton's Hall, in Purleigh, adjoining Maldon, which had been held in the 13th century by the Battaile family as part of the honour of Haughley.<sup>106</sup> Walton's Hall can be traced back to Domesday, for in 1086 Hugh de Montfort, lord of Haughley, held two large manors in Purleigh.<sup>107</sup> There is no evidence that Montfort held land in Maldon. The Battaile family certainly did so in the 13th century,<sup>108</sup> but the earliest proofs of a connexion between Waltons Hall and Erpingham's estate come from his rental of 1413. This includes an unnamed tenement in Maldon market which he was said to have acquired 'from the fee of Richard Walton.' Palmer's Hall was said to have been acquired 'from the executors of Richard Walton.' Another property was called 'Waltonshopp'. Several of the field names in the rental also occur in later records of Earls Maldon, as mentioned below.

The identification of Sir Thomas Erpingham's estate with Earls Maldon is proved by its subsequent descent. Joan, Lady Erpingham, died in 1424 holding 8 houses and a toft, 7 shops, 7 stalls, 160 a. land, 4 a. wood and 40s. rent in Maldon and Woodham Mortimer, together with the estate in Purleigh, Mundon and Hazeleigh, later called Walton's Hall.<sup>109</sup> These properties passed to her daughter Elizabeth Howard, who in 1425 married John de Vere, 12th earl of Oxford.<sup>110</sup> The earl was beheaded in 1462, along with his eldest son, Sir Aubrey, for plotting against Edward IV. The second son, John, was allowed to succeed to his father's estates as 13th earl, but in 1471, after taking part in the brief restoration of Henry VI, he fled abroad. Early in 1473 his mother, Countess Elizabeth, was forced to surrender to Edward IV's brother, Richard, duke of Gloucester, her manors in Essex and elsewhere, including Maldon and Walton's Hall.<sup>111</sup> In 1484 the duke, now Richard III, granted these two manors, together with Flanders Wick and Jackletts in Purleigh, and land in Mundon, to Sir Robert Percy, for his service against rebels.<sup>112</sup> By then the Countess was dead. Her son, the 13th earl, had been attainted and imprisoned after another unsuccessful

revolt against Edward IV. But in 1485 he escaped, fought for Henry Tudor at Bosworth, and regained his lands, including his mother's inheritance.<sup>113</sup> In 1489 his income from Maldon was £28 12s. 4d.<sup>114</sup>

The 13th earl of Oxford (d. 1513), the 14th earl (d. 1526) and the 16th earl (d. 1562) were all said to have held their Maldon manor of the earl of Essex.<sup>115</sup> That tenure implies that Earls Maldon had been subinfeudated from Little Maldon manor. In 1563 Edward de Vere, 17th earl of Oxford, had a total income of £36 18s. 8d. from Maldon and the outlying farm of Flanders Wick.<sup>116</sup> In 1579 and 1580, by two conveyances, he sold Earls Maldon to William Tweedie, who was already his tenant.<sup>117</sup> The first part, in the three parishes of Maldon and in Woodham Mortimer, comprised 2 houses, a cottage, and a total of 187 a. land, mainly pasture and meadow. The second part comprised the manorial rights, 3 houses, 2 cottages, a stall, an acre of arable land and 60s. rent in the parishes of All Saints and St. Peter.

William Tweedie, who came of a Scottish immigrant family, died in 1605, leaving Earls Maldon, with 11 fields listed by name, to his son Richard.<sup>118</sup> Henry Tweedie held the manor at his death in 1623.<sup>119</sup> According to a recent survey it was partly freehold and partly copyhold, and included 20 houses, 11 fields and a shop.<sup>120</sup> Some of the fields of the manor can be identified. They included Mill field, Friars field, and Milkwell, all west of High Street,<sup>121</sup> Tainterhawe and Wyntons, to the east.<sup>122</sup> Among the houses was Cottinghams (later the Ship Inn), lying west of St. Mary's church.<sup>123</sup>

## Acknowledgements

In writing this paper I have benefited from Dr. W.J. Petchey's *Prospect of Maldon*, and I am grateful to him also for providing me with unpublished information relating to the manor of Earls Maldon. My son, Dr. Edward Powell, kindly drew my attention to Shakespeare's reference, in *Henry V*, to Sir Thomas Erpingham. The paper has been put onto computer disk by Mrs. Helen Coghill, with assistance from Mrs. Pamela Studd. My wife, Avril, has read the proofs. Their continuing help is much appreciated.

*Author:* W.R.Powell, 28 The Walnuts, Branksome Road, Norwich NR4 6SR

## Notes

- <sup>1</sup> J.H. Round, 'Notes on Medieval Maldon', *E.A.H.* 26 (1995), 162.
- <sup>2</sup> W.J. Petchey, 'The Borough of Maldon, 1500-1688', (Ph.D. Leicester, 1972); and *A Prospect of Maldon* (1991); J.R. Smith, 'The Borough of Maldon, 1688-1768.' (M.Phil. Leicester, 1981).
- <sup>3</sup> For recent archaeology see: D. Andrews and D.F. Stenning, 'Wealden houses and urban topography ... Maldon High Street', (*E.A.H.* 20 (1989), 103; S. Wallis, 'Maldon landfill site: excavations 1990,' (ibid. 22 (1991), 67); M.R. Eddy and others, 'Medieval finds from the Post Office, High Street, Maldon,' (ibid. 23 (1992), 147); E. Watkin, 'The spire of All Saints church, Maldon,' (ibid. 24 (1993), 136); D. Andrews and D.F. Stenning, 'More Maldon Wealdens ... the Kings' Head, Maldon High Street,' (ibid. 27 (1996), 214; R.M.J. Isserlin and P. Connell, '... Medieval earthwork in Maldon ... High Street', (ibid. 28 (1997), 133).
- <sup>4</sup> J.H. Round, 'Notes on Medieval Maldon', *E.A.H.* 26 (1995), 162.
- <sup>5</sup> 'Banleuca' is more literally translated as 'banlieu.'
- <sup>6</sup> *V.C.H. Essex*, i. 434. It is convenient to refer to all the Domesday estates as 'manors', although that term is not consistently or precisely used in Domesday Book itself.
- <sup>7</sup> Ibid. 531.
- <sup>8</sup> Ibid. 491.
- <sup>9</sup> Ibid. 528.
- <sup>10</sup> Ibid. 465.
- <sup>11</sup> W.R. Powell, 'St. Mary, Maldon, and St. Martin-le-Grand, London,' *E.A.H.* 28 (1997), 142-150.
- <sup>12</sup> *V.C.H. Essex*, i. 491.
- <sup>13</sup> *E.A.H.* 28 (1997), 144.
- <sup>14</sup> Cf. I.J. Sanders, *English Baronies*, 139.
- <sup>15</sup> *V.C.H. Essex*, i. 492.
- <sup>16</sup> For ewes-milk cheese see *V.C.H. Essex*, i. 371.
- <sup>17</sup> For this paragraph, unless otherwise stated, see J.H. Round in *E.A.H.* 26 (1995), 163.
- <sup>18</sup> *Regesta Regum Anglo-Normannorum*, iii, nos. 274, 276.
- <sup>19</sup> For the charter see *Cal. Chart.* 1257-1300, 351-2.
- <sup>20</sup> E.g. in Havering Liberty: *V.C.H. Essex*, vii. 1.
- <sup>21</sup> *Book of Fees*, 121.
- <sup>22</sup> *Pipe R.* 1173 (P.R.S. xix), 12.
- <sup>23</sup> *D.N.B.* s.v. Richard de Lucy; *V.C.H. Essex*, iv. 160.
- <sup>24</sup> *Pipe R.* 1183 (P.R.S. xxxii), 19. Cf. *Bk of Fees*, 121, which however, contains a number of errors.
- <sup>25</sup> *Pipe R.* 1193 (P.R.S. N.S. iii), 1; ibid. 1194 (N.S. v), 28, 29, 30.
- <sup>26</sup> Ibid. 1208 (P.R.S. N.S. xxiii), 25, 26: in 1208 the sheriff's allowances included a total of 2 years' income from Eudes Patrick's lands in Maldon; *Bk. of Fees*, 121.
- <sup>27</sup> Ibid. 1203 (P.R.S. N.S. xvi), 123; *Cartae Antiquae* (P.R.S. N.S. xvii), no. 9.
- <sup>28</sup> *Close R.* 1242-7, 96.
- <sup>29</sup> *Feudal Aids*, ii. 155, 213.
- <sup>30</sup> *Cal. Pat.* 1401-5, 307-8.
- <sup>31</sup> *V.C.H. Essex*, ii. 182; *Cal. Pat.* 1292-1301, 25; ibid. 1292-1301, 25.
- <sup>32</sup> *Pipe R.* 1211 (P.R.S. N.S. xxviii), 112-13; *Bk. of Fees*, 121.
- <sup>33</sup> Ibid. 1214 (P.R.S. N.S. xxxv), 2; 1218 (P.R.S. N.S. xxxix), 67.
- <sup>34</sup> Ibid. 1230 (P.R.S. N.S. iv), 142. A garbled deposition made in 1284-5 seems to indicate that the Laundes were heirs of Patrick: Westminster Abbey Muniment Book 5, f. lxxxv.
- <sup>35</sup> *Bk. of Fees*, 1467, cf. 1458.
- <sup>36</sup> For the Mowbrays see *Complete Peerage*, ix. 372-5; I.J. Sanders, *English Baronies*, 146.
- <sup>37</sup> *Cal. Inq. p.m.*, i, no. 723; ibid. iv. no. 110; *Feud. Aids* ii. 156; ibid. ii. 213.
- <sup>38</sup> *Cal. Inq. p.m.* i, no. 723.
- <sup>39</sup> Westminster Abbey Mun. Bk. 5, f. lxxxiii d, lxxxv d.
- <sup>40</sup> *Cal. Inq. p.m.* iv, no. 110.
- <sup>41</sup> *Cal. Close*, 1296-1302, 544.
- <sup>42</sup> *Feud. Aids*, ii. 135. This quarter fee was then and later wrongly supposed to be held of the honour of Peverel. The Prayers' surname also occurs as 'Praers,' 'Preers' and 'Preirs.'
- <sup>43</sup> *Cal. Pat.* 1313-17, 211; *Feet of F. Essex*, ii. 156; *Complete Peerage* v. 473-4.

- 44 For the descent: *Complete Peerage*, v. 473-83; *Cal. Inq. p.m.* vii, no. 160; *ibid.* xi, no. 82; *ibid.* xvi, p. 136; *Feudal Aids*, ii. 156; *Cal. Close* 1399-1402, 489.
- 45 P.R.O., C139/2, No. 27.
- 46 *Feudal Aids*, ii. 213.
- 47 *Feet of F Essex*, iii. 248.
- 48 Morant, *Essex*, i. 396 and note.
- 49 *Cal. Close* 1422-9, 206, 266, 273, 395, 397; *Feet of Fines, Essex*, iv. 2, 4, 7, 8, 9, 13, 23, 26.
- 50 *Cal. Pat.* 1446-52, 312.
- 51 *Cal. Inq. p.m. Hen. VII*, i, no. 64; *E.A.T. N.S.* iv. 5; Morant, *Essex*, i. 329n.
- 52 *Cal. Inq. p.m. Hen. VII*, ii, no. 555; *Complete Peerage*, iv. 78; *Feet of F Essex*, iv. 232, 272, 273, 274.
- 53 W.J. Petchey, *A Prospect of Maldon*, 90; R.C.H.M., *Essex*, ii. 74.
- 54 *Taxatio Eccles.* (Rec. Com.), 25; *The Medieval Essex Community*, ed. J.C. Ward, 92.
- 55 *V.C.H. Essex*, i. 346.
- 56 *Ibid.* i. 531.
- 57 *Ibid.* i. 528.
- 58 *Ibid.* i. 432.
- 59 I.J. Sanders, *English Baronies*, 120.
- 60 *Pipe R.* 1130 (H.M.S.O.), 135.
- 61 *Reg. R. Anglo-Norm.* iii, nos. 546, 547, 548.
- 62 See below, Ketons and Coopes.
- 63 J.H. Round, *Feudal England*, f.p. 473.
- 64 *Reg. R. Anglo-Norm.* iii, no. 274.
- 65 *Pipe R.* 1167 (P.R.S. xi), 152.
- 66 Unless otherwise stated this paragraph and the next are based on J.H. Round, 'The Mantels of Little Maldon,' *E.A.T. N.S.* xx. 254-61.
- 67 *V.C.H. Essex*, ii, 172, 188.
- 68 *Book of Fees*, 121.
- 69 *Cal. Inq. p.m.* iii, no. 272.
- 70 *Ibid.* ii, no. 731.
- 71 *Cal. Pat.* 1292-1301, 157.
- 72 *Feud. Aids*, ii. 135.
- 73 *Cal. Pat.* 1317-21, 515.
- 74 *Ibid.* 1321-4, 27.
- 75 *Cal. Inq. p.m.* viii, p. 218; *Feud. Aids*, ii. 156.
- 76 *Feud. Aids*, ii. 156.
- 77 *Cal. Close* 1364-8, 200.
- 78 For the Bouchiers see *C.P.* ii. 246 f.
- 79 *Feet of F Essex*, iii, 188.
- 80 *Feud. Aids*, vi. 435 (dated 1412); ii. 213 (dated 1428); *Cal. Close* 1419-22, 181-2; *ibid.* 1429-35, 81, 216; *Feet of F Essex*, iv. 1, 13.
- 81 *C.P.* v. 137-9; *Feet of F Essex*, iv. 247.
- 82 E.g. *Cal. Pat.* 1476-85, 495; E.R.O., D/DMb M22 (account of 'manors of Great and Little Maldon' by ministers of Henry, earl of Essex, 1490-91); P.R.O., C142/226/147 (Inquisition 1590 on death of Thos. Gardiner); Bodleian Libr. MS. Top. Essex e 6/7 (Notes from Maldon White Book, fo. 92, date 1613); Morant, *Essex*, i. 329.
- 83 For Beeleigh abbey see *V.C.H. Essex*, ii. 172.
- 84 *Cal. Chart.* 1341-1417, 186-7.
- 85 *Feet of F Essex*, i. 181, 194, 209, 249; ii. 210; *Cal. Pat.* 1317-21, 491; *ibid.* 1321-4, 27; *ibid.* 1361-4, 310; *ibid.* 1391-6, 129.
- 86 *Taxatio Ecclesiastica* (Rec. Com.), 25.
- 87 E.R.O., D/B 3/3/421.
- 88 E.R.O., D/CT 228.
- 89 *V.C.H. Essex*, ii. 175, 188-9.
- 90 *Ibid.* 189; E.R.O., D/B 3/3/421; E.R.O., D/CT 238.
- 91 *V.C.H. Essex*, ii. 189; Morant, *Essex*, i. 330. For Jenkyn Maldons see: *PN. Essex*, 215; Chapman and André, *Map of Essex* (1777). It appears on modern maps as Bury Farm, in Hazeleigh. In and after the late 16th century Jenkyn Maldons was sometimes styled a manor: Morant, *Essex*, i. 330.
- 92 *E.A.H.* 28 (1997), 142-50.
- 93 Westminster Abbey Muniments, 8119. The name Sayers may come from Sayer Battaile (fl. 1232), whose family held Waltons in Purleigh (*Book of Fees*, 1465; Morant, *Essex*, i. 346) but there is no proof of his connexion with Maldon.
- 94 *Feet of F Essex*, i. 173.
- 95 *Ibid.* 199.
- 96 *Complete Peerage*, vi, 171, cf. pedigree f.pp. 133-6.
- 97 Morant, *Essex*, i, 345 (under Purleigh).
- 98 *Ibid.*
- 99 *Cal. Inq. p.m.* xviii, p. 203.
- 100 *Cal. Close* 1441-7, 88, 90; *ibid.* 1500-09, 219, 276-7; *Feet of F Essex*, iv. 48, 113; Morant, *Essex*, i. 330; *Cal. Pat.* 1494-1509, 545; *Complete Peerage*, vi. 180-1.
- 101 Morant, *Essex*, i. 330.
- 102 E.R.O., D/CT 227.
- 103 *Feet of F Essex*, iii. 98.
- 104 E.R.O., D/B 3/1/3, Maldon White Bk. 266 v. (Rental of Sir Thomas Erpingham's estate in Maldon, 1413.) For a translation (which omits several entries): Bodl. MS Top. Essex e 6/7.
- 105 *D.N.B.* s.v. Erpingham, Sir Thomas (1357-1428); *Complete Peerage*, x. 238, 542. He was one of the commanders at Agincourt, and appears as the 'good old knight' in Shakespeare's *Henry V*, iv (1), 283. See also J.H. Wylie, *Reign of Henry V*, i-iii, indexes.
- 106 Morant, *Essex*, i. 346; *Bk. of Fees*, 1465, cf. 1359. For the Battailes and their successors see *V.C.H. Essex*, iv. 227.
- 107 *V.C.H. Essex*, i. 497, 498.
- 108 *Feet of F Essex*, i. 200, 248.
- 109 *Cal. Close* 1422-9, 175.
- 110 *Complete Peerage*, x. 238.
- 111 *Ibid.* 238, 241; *Cal. Close* 1468-76, 334-5.
- 112 *Cal. Close* 1476-85, 345-6; *Cal. Pat.* 1476-85, 434.
- 113 *Complete Peerage*, x. 241-2.
- 114 E.R.O., D/DPr 139. He also had £10 13s. 11d. from Waltons in Purleigh.
- 115 Morant, *Essex*, i. 329, Note L.
- 116 E.R.O., D/DU 65/72A.
- 117 *Feet of F Essex*, v. 229, 234. Wm. Tweedie was the earl's tenant by 1570: E.R.O., D/B 3/1/33, f. 51.
- 118 *Visitations of Essex*, i. 305; Morant, *Essex*, i. 330.
- 119 P.R.O., C142/408/144.
- 120 E.R.O., D/B 3/3/421: undated survey, temp. James I.
- 121 W.J. Petchey, *A Prospect of Maldon*, fig. 15, p. 86; cf. Morant, *Essex*, i. 330.
- 122 E.R.O., D/B 3/1/34, ff. 16v. and 30 (abuttals mentioned).
- 123 *Ibid.*; Petchey, op. cit., 5, 147.

*The Society acknowledges financial support from its Publications Development Fund towards the cost of publishing this article.*

## St. Thomas Becket's Sisters, and other Studies

By the late J. Horace Round. Revised and completed by W.R. Powell.

[NOTE. This is the fifth of J.H. Round's posthumous papers to appear in *Essex Archaeology and History* since 1993, under the Society's Publications Development scheme. In editing it I have omitted some material superseded by the work of later scholars, and disquisitions irrelevant to Essex, while adding evidence from a number of sources not used by Round. Each new footnote is distinguished by an asterisk \*. W.R. P.]

### St. Thomas Becket's Sisters<sup>1</sup>

A paper of mine on 'Becket at Colchester'<sup>2</sup> aroused sufficient interest for me to follow it up by working out the connexion of St. Thomas's sisters with Essex. For this seems to have been no less overlooked than his visit to St. John's abbey, as one of Archbishop Theobald's confidential clerks.

Richard Newcourt, in his work on the diocese of London, on which Philip Morant was so largely dependent for ecclesiastical history, dealt in the London portion of his work with 'St. Thomas of Acon, or Acres Hospital, now called Mercer's Chapel.'<sup>3</sup> He seems to have relied on Stow's *Survey* for his statement that 'this Hospital ... was founded in the reign of Henry II by Thomas FitzTheobald de Heili [*sic*] and Agnes his wife, sister to Thomas Becket ... for a Master and Brethren *Militiae Hospitalis S. Thomae Cantuariensis de Acon*, saith the record of Edward III in the 4th [*sic*] year of his reign.'<sup>4</sup> The said Thomas FitzTheobald and his said wife gave to the Master and Brethren aforesaid the lands with the appurtenances that sometime were Gilbert Becket's, father of the said Thomas [Becket], in which he was born, to make a church to the honour of God, the Blessed Virgin and the Blessed Martyr S. Thomas.'

It was, however, the Essex connexion that led me to write this paper. For in spite of there being several accounts of this foundation, no one, so far as I know, has mentioned this connexion. This is doubtless due to the fact that it has only been brought to light by the publication of our *Feet of Fines for Essex*, on the initiative of our late treasurer Mr. W.C. Waller. In the first volume of that work there is calendared a fine levied early in 1207 concerning half a hide in Wigborough (*Wigeberge*).<sup>5</sup> The parties to the fine are Theobald de Helles, appearing by his son Thomas, and William FitzRoxe. Here we have beyond question the Thomas FitzTheobald who is named above and in all accounts of the London foundation. A Theobald de Helles

occurs in two more of our Essex fines. The first of these is dated 'Sunday before Ascension 7 John' (7 May 1206), and relates to one virgate in Wigborough.<sup>6</sup> The other party to that fine is Christiana, abbess of Barking. The fine deals with land in the manor of Abbess (corruptly Abbots) Hall in Great Wigborough. The other fine relates to 1220, when the abbess of Barking was named Mabel.<sup>7</sup> In this fine, which relates to land in Warley and Barking, Ralf FitzStephen and Theobald de Helles agree that 'any charters under the name of any former abbess of Barking' relating thereto should be 'reputed for naught.' It appears to me possible that this connexion with the great abbey of Barking may be traceable to the appointment as abbess of Mary, sister of St. Thomas, in reparation for the death of her brother.<sup>8</sup> The Theobald de Helles in this fine of 1220 was probably not identical with the Theobald of 1206-7, for the reasons given below.

Before returning to the Helles family and its connexion with Becket, I will dispose of a third sister, who bore her mother's name of Rohese. On the Pipe Roll of 1175, a strictly contemporary record, we first find her in receipt of an annual allowance of £6 13s. 4d. (10 marks), with effect from Midsummer 1174.<sup>9</sup> Subsequently she is found drawing an annuity of £11, charged on Canterbury mill. On the roll of 1185 the annuity is entered as payable to Rohese and her son John.<sup>10</sup> This, I take it, implies that he must have succeeded her in that fiscal year. The name of Rohese's husband is not given, but that of her son enables us to identify him with 'John Becket, nephew of the Blessed Thomas the Martyr', who in 1201-2 acquired a hide and a half of land at Stifford and Thurrock in Essex, as 1/4 knight's fee.<sup>11</sup>

The relationship of Becket's sister Agnes to the Helles family, as quoted by Newcourt, requires discussion. 'Thomas FitzTheobald de Heili and Agnes his wife' is ambiguous. Was Agnes the wife of Thomas or of his father Theobald? We have not the Latin before us, and in English the compound style might be read either way. The point is of importance, for if Agnes was the mother, and not the wife of Thomas de Helles, he may well have been named after the saint himself. The answer to the question depends mainly on chronological reasoning, and this is why our Essex fines, being dated, are helpful.

St. Thomas Becket was probably born in 1118.<sup>12</sup> As shown above, his sister Rohese died in 1184 or 1185.

Their sister Mary, abbess of Barking, probably died c. 1175, when she was succeeded by Maud, daughter of Henry II.<sup>13</sup> On chronological grounds, therefore, it is possible that Agnes, the third sister, was the wife of Theobald de Helles, who was a party to the fines of 1206 and 1207. By 1207 Theobald was evidently aged, since he was legally represented by his son Thomas. If so, it seems that Thomas, may also have been the son of Agnes, and therefore a nephew of St. Thomas.

### **The Earls of Oxford and the Forest of Essex**<sup>14</sup>

The historic contest before the House of Lords in 1902 for the Great Chamberlainship of England involved a searching scrutiny of the pedigree, history and offices of those celebrated Essex magnates the Veres, earls of Oxford, and incidentally had the effect of correcting views which had hitherto been held without question.<sup>15</sup>

The whole trouble in disentangling the history of the Great Chamberlainship<sup>16</sup> arose from the fact that John de Vere, earl of Oxford (d. 1526) left sisters as his heirs general, and a cousin as his heir male. This was a situation which had never previously occurred, since the earl himself was heir general as well as heir male of all the heads of the house since the Conquest. A question therefore arose as to the succession to his inheritance, for his heir male could only succeed to that which he held in tail male, not to that which he held in fee. It has always been supposed that the Great Chamberlainship passed on this occasion to the heir male, and antiquaries have, in consequence, deemed it an insoluble puzzle, why this precedent was not followed when the same situation arose afresh a century later; for on this second occasion the office of Great Chamberlain was decided by the judges to belong not to the heir male but to the heir general. I was able, however, to show when the question last arose, before the recent coronation [1902] that not only antiquaries and peerage historians, but the judges themselves, under Charles I, had been misinformed as to the facts, and that the heir male under Henry VIII has never obtained the office, though he so boldly alleged that he had. On the strength of the allegation he succeeded in getting recognized by the Crown as Great Chamberlain, and this is actually the source of the title under which this high office has been held ever since.

As a matter of fact Henry VIII, on the death of Earl John in 1526, resumed the office of Great Chamberlain and made life appointments to it, as later did Edward VI. The fact that the heir male of Earl John received the first of these *life* appointments led to the erroneous supposition that he had received it *in fee*. We were able to prove out of the mouth of the heir male himself that he had failed to obtain the office in fee, for in a letter dated at Earl's Colne on 1 May (1534) John de Vere, earl of Oxford (d. 1540) wrote to Cromwell:

Syr,

I have sewed [sued] with the Kyng's heyghness thys ii yeeres day for the offyceys of myn inheritauns, that is to say the gret chamberlenshypp, the Forest of Waltham and the

Castell of Colchester to have of eytche of them at bylle assynged by hys most gracyous hande to me lyke as yt hath beyn graunted heretofore by the king's hyghnes or by any of his noble progenytors to myn ancestors. And I have good and comforterbyll words of his grace at all tymes of my sewett [suit] howbe yt as yett I am at no poynt...<sup>17</sup>

In connexion with this letter I was asked to prepare a memorandum tracing the history of the two other offices claimed by the earl, namely that of constable of Colchester castle, and steward or warden of the forest of Waltham (i.e. Essex), as throwing light on the fate of the office of Great Chamberlain. The descent of Colchester castle presents no difficulty<sup>18</sup> Henry VII granted the custody in 1496 to John, earl of Oxford (d. 1513) but for life only. On the accession of Henry VIII the earl made the astounding allegation that his ancestors had held it ever since it was granted to them by the Empress Maud. In fact Maud's charter of 1141 to Aubrey de Vere had been ineffective, and none of his descendants had ever held the custody. But in spite of this the earl obtained from the king a confirmation of his right to the custody in fee. In 1541, however, the king granted the custody for life only to Sir Thomas Darcy, later Lord Darcy of Chich, reciting the grant of 1496, and adding that the earl who had then received it had long been dead, and that the castle was 'now in our hand and disposition.' This proves that the Veres' claim to hold the castle in fee had failed; and in fact none of them held the custody after 1541.

We now come to the remaining claim made by the earl of Oxford in 1534, that to the office of steward or warden of Waltham Forest. The history of this office as given by Morant is very unsatisfactory. W.R. Fisher, in his *Forest of Essex*, had the advantage of examining the documents in the hands of the trustees of Lord Mornington, the last of the wardens of the forest. But like Morant he had not looked at the extensive collection of manuscripts formerly at Barrington Hall, Hatfield Broad Oak, and now in the British Library.<sup>19</sup>

Fisher states that the Montfichet family seem to have been the earliest recorded holders of the stewardship.<sup>20</sup> But there can be no doubt that it was associated from the Conquest with the barony of Stanstead Mountfichet, and belonged in 1086 to Robert Gernon, the holder of the barony. Contrary to what has sometimes been alleged (as for instance by Morant) there is reason to believe that the Montfichets were quite distinct from the Gernons, and took their name from Montfiquet (Balleroy, Calvados), south-west of Bayeux.<sup>21</sup> How the Montfichets obtained the barony is not known, owing to the obscurity of the period following Domesday. There is no evidence of a family link between them and Robert Gernon.<sup>22</sup>

The stewardship of the forest was confirmed by Henry II to Richard de Montfichet, from whom it descended to a namesake in the days of Henry III.<sup>23</sup> And now comes the most curious part of the story. The senior coheirress of Montfichet brought Stanstead to the

Bolbecs, whose senior coheiress brought it in turn to the Veres, earls of Oxford.<sup>24</sup> Therefore when we find the earls of Oxford, at a later date, holding the stewardship of the forest of Essex by hereditary right, we should naturally think that they inherited the office through the Montfichets. And yet they did not.

The Barrington Hall manuscripts contain a record of the proceedings at a forest court, held at Brentwood on 15 January 1465, at which the earl of Oxford was called upon to prove his claim to be keeper of the forest of Essex, and to have a deputy or mounted forester, three yeoman foresters on foot, waifs and strays, deer-felled (or browsing) wood, and the ameracements of the swaynmotes and the wood courts held in the forest. He replied that he derived his title from Thomas de Clare, who died seised in fee of the keepership of the forest, including the manor of Havering, and showed that Margaret, heiress of Thomas, had married Bartholomew de Badlesmere, and that her daughter Maud had married John, earl of Oxford, whose heir he was.<sup>25</sup> The record states that the Crown opposed this claim, but that the jury, composed of regards and verderers of the forest, found for the earl, so the court adjudged that he should hold in peace.

When we test the above statement we find it true that Thomas de Clare, a cadet of the great house of that name, obtained the stewardship in 1267 from Richard de Montfichet.<sup>26</sup> An important entry on the Close Roll for 1329 tells us that Thomas, son of Richard de Clare and grandson of the previous Thomas, held the stewardship at his death, and that his heirs were his sister Margaret, wife of Bartholomew de Badlesmere, Lord Badlesmere, and his nephew Robert de Clifford, Lord Clifford, son of another sister, Maud.<sup>27</sup> Between these two the stewardship of the forest was divided. Margaret de Badlesmere in turn left daughters as coheiresses, of whom Maud married John de Vere (d. 1360) earl of Oxford.<sup>28</sup> Through this Maud the earls of Oxford, in the course of Edward III's reign, obtained the undivided stewardship of the forest.<sup>29</sup> It is clear, therefore, that the office was held in fee, and passed accordingly to heirs general. Consequently the heir male of the earls in the time of Henry VIII was not entitled to the office, and though we have seen him suing for it in 1534, he sued in vain.

It was not until 1603 that, by an entirely fresh grant, Edward de Vere, earl of Oxford obtained the stewardship of the forest. This grant was printed by us among the evidences in the Lord Great Chamberlain case to show that the right of the heir male had not been recognised by the Crown.<sup>30</sup> Nevertheless, in the very next year (18 June 1604) we find him, with the astonishing persistence of his race, reciting, in a demise of the rights he had acquired, that they had all rightfully descended to him from his ancestors, the earls of Oxford.<sup>31</sup> These rights he defined in the same words as those used by the previous earl at the forest court in 1465. With the same persistence his family continued to employ the styles of the baronies which had passed from them to heirs general, according to the judges, as early

as the reign of Henry VIII, together with that of the Lord Great Chamberlainship itself, even when that also had passed away from them in 1626. The Veres appear to have believed that whatever they claimed might in time be recognised; and in the case of the Lord Chamberlainship their plan actually succeeded.

When James I, however, 'restored and granted' to Earl Edward the stewardship of the forest of Essex, he was careful to recite, in the preamble, that Earl John had held it in the fourth year of Henry VIII [1512-13], that Earl Edward was his heir male, and that the grant was subject to the rights of any person holding office in the forest under appointment by the Crown. This grant of James I included the keepership of the king's park and houses at Havering, as having belonged to the stewardship of the forest 'from time whereof the memory of man was not then [1512-13] to the contrary.'<sup>32</sup>

Not for long after James I's grant did the Veres retain the stewardship. In 1625 the grantee's son, Henry de Vere, earl of Oxford, died leaving heirs general as well as an heir male, his cousin Robert de Vere, who succeeded to the earldom. In 1627 Robert joined with the trustees of his predecessor in selling the stewardship for £3,500 to Robert Bertie, earl of Lindsey, who had already, in the previous year obtained the Great Chamberlainship.<sup>33</sup>

### Some grants to Colchester Abbey<sup>34</sup>

In the printed edition of the *Colchester Cartulary*<sup>35</sup> is a note that five pages have been left blank for the insertion of later accruing charters, and that the 'two following documents have been added in a later handwriting,' defined elsewhere as 'of the 15th century.' The editor, Mr Stuart A. Moore, dates the first of these documents twice over as '10 July 16 Henry III, A.D. 1232,' and describes it as 'Licence to acquire lands in mortmain.' No one acquainted with such documents could imagine this licence to be of so early a date. We glance, therefore, at the king's style, and discover that it is '*Rex Anglie et Francie et Dominus Hibernie*.'

Now the style 'King of France', we know, was first assumed by Edward III. Therefore the King Henry by whom this licence was granted must have been one of the Lancastrian kings in the 15th century. It will be shown below that it cannot be later, and since the document is dated in the 16th regnal year, it must belong to the reign of Henry VI, who alone, of the house of Lancaster, reigned so long. Its true date, therefore, is 10 July 1438, and the well-known antiquarian lawyer by whom the cartulary was edited is found to have misdated the document by more than two centuries.

I fear that this extraordinary blunder is but one of the errors in this edition of the *Colchester Cartulary*, and that it needs, on this account, to be used with caution. That it should have been issued without even an index of proper names, and also without any attempt to identify the names of places, is a piece of sheer neglect, which has the deplorable effect of making the two volumes, which ought to have proved of the greatest service to Essex antiquaries, extremely difficult to use.<sup>36</sup>



The first of the two documents with which I am here dealing is merely a licence to St. John's abbey to acquire lands to the value of £20 and to hold them in mortmain. The second, the more important one, is similarly dated by the editor 'Henry III. Licence to acquire lands in Myland, Lexden, and Braiswick.'<sup>37</sup> Here again the document is wildly misdated, and the lands, moreover, are wrongly described. It was actually issued in 1438, and it empowers John Stopyndon, archdeacon of Colchester, to give certain lands to the abbey.<sup>38</sup> This John, who was a master in Chancery, was given the archdeaconry on 19 May 1433. He was also, about that time, keeper of the Hanaper, in which capacity he was named in the first of the *Cartulary* documents. He was made Master of the Rolls, 14 November 1438, and received the archdeaconry of Dorset, as an additional preferment, 19 July 1440.<sup>39</sup>

The lands which Stopyndon was empowered to grant to the abbey comprised a messuage, 200 acres of (arable) land, 3a. meadow, and 140a. woodland in Myland and Lexden, whether within or without the Liberty of the town of Colchester, called Braiswick. Part of this land was held of the abbot of Colchester, at a rent of 30 s. a year, and part of Sir Thomas Cobham, knight, and Elizabeth, Lady FitzWalter, his wife, and the value of the whole property was reckoned at 8 marks (£5 6s. 8d.) a year. Morant, who seems to have worked not from the abbey's cartulary but from the public records, rightly dates the licence as 16 Henry VI (1437-8), but describes its subject as 'One messuage and 140 acres of wood in Braise-Wicwood in Lexden.'<sup>40</sup>

The above mention of Sir Thomas Cobham and Elizabeth his wife clears up a difficulty which baffled Morant in his account of Lexden. Finding that Cobham 'presented to the rectory from the year 1440 to 1461' and that he is mentioned in the Colchester court rolls of 36 Henry VI (1457-8) as having failed to maintain Park bridge near Lexden Park, which was his responsibility as lord of Lexden manor, Morant hazarded a guess that he had probably received the wardship of John Ratcliffe, heir to the FitzWalters, who 'seems to have come of age' about 1461.<sup>41</sup> But this John, at his father's death in 1461, was only nine years old. His mother, 'Elizabeth, late wife of John Ratcliffe of Attleborough' (Norf.), obtained the wardship on 29 November 1461.<sup>42</sup> The true explanation is that when Elizabeth Ratcliffe's father, Walter FitzWalter, last of the Lords FitzWalter of the original line, died in 1431, his widow Elizabeth (mother of Elizabeth Ratcliffe) received as dower almost all the Essex manors of his house, and other estates in Norfolk and Suffolk.<sup>43</sup> As our *Cartulary* document shows, the richly endowed widow married Sir Thomas Cobham, but retained her style of Lady FitzWalter.<sup>44</sup>

This correction to Morant solves a problem in the FitzWalter monument in Little Dunmow church.<sup>45</sup> In his earliest contribution to our *Transactions* the late Mr W.C. Waller pointed out that Lady FitzWalter had married Sir Thomas Cobham as her third husband, and suggested that this might explain the Cobham coat on

this monument.<sup>46</sup> The Rev. H.L. Elliot later developed this suggestion, and pointed out that the monument was of distinctly later date than the death of Lord FitzWalter, and was probably not erected until after the death of his widow (still styled Lady FitzWalter) in 1464.<sup>47</sup>

Two points remain to be settled: the parentage of Lady FitzWalter, and the identity of Sir Thomas Cobham. As to the first, it is known that she was a Chideock. Mr Elliot observed that on the Little Dunmow monument Chideock is marshalled FitzWarin quartering Chideock, precedence being given to FitzWarin, and suggested that the lady was probably coheir to that barony. But if we combine the evidence of chronology and of heraldry, I think that the lady can only have been a daughter (but not coheir) of Sir John Chideock, by Eleanor, daughter and sole heir of Sir John FitzWarin.<sup>48</sup> As that branch of FitzWarin differences the baron's coat, the monument should be examined for such a difference. As to Sir Thomas Cobham, he was of Stertborough (Surr.). He died in 1471 and was buried in Lingfield church.<sup>49</sup>

With regard to the name Braiswick, I suggest that it may be derived from Thomas de Bray, who in 1257 acquired from Mabel, daughter of Simon Norman, a messuage and land in Mile End, Lexden, and the suburbs of Colchester.<sup>50</sup> It may be compared with Battleswick, which certainly took its name from the Bataille family.<sup>51</sup> The Colchester 'wicks' (dairy farms) mostly lay in the angle formed by the Roman river and the Colne. Battleswick was situated at their junction, opposite Wivenhoe, where the Batailles were landowners.<sup>52</sup> Middlewick lay between Battleswick and Monkwick, and occurs also as 'Honyngeswyk' from the Hanengs, the Colchester burgesses who held it.<sup>53</sup> The little-known Canonswick was held by St. Botolph's priory, and is represented by Cannock (formerly Canwick) mill on the stream flowing from Bourne Ponds.<sup>54</sup>

Another example of poor editing in the *Colchester Cartulary* is the last document in these volumes (p. 679). It is described in the table of contents (page xci) as 'Record of the Court of Exchequer discharging the abbot of Colchester from services to the king for land in Estdon' [*sic*] 1325.' This description is repeated at the head of the document itself. The first point is the date. The document describes itself as of the Michaelmas term '*anno regni regis Edwardi filii regis Henrici xviii finiente et xix incipiente.*' This is the correct formal description of Edward I, whose regnal years begin on 20 November and therefore in Michaelmas term. It is therefore clear that the document's date is 1290. How then can the editor make it 1325? He must have supposed that 'Edward son of King Henry' meant Edward II, in which case his date would have been correct!

The next point is that of the place to which this record refers. The editor, overlooking the abbreviation mark in his text, fails to realise that *Estdon*' is in fact East Donyland, which lies opposite Wivenhoe on the Colne, just outside the Colchester borough boundary.<sup>55</sup>

The record takes us back to the days of King Stephen. The abbot, we read, was called upon, jointly with John de Marck, to pay arrears of £27 13 s. 4d. for divers aids and scutage in respect of 'Malmesford, Stybinton, Estdon' and Blunteshale.' He pleaded, however, that he held nothing thereof except East Donyland, and that he ought not to be charged jointly with John de Marck because he and his predecessors held East Donyland by gift of Maud, formerly queen of England, who gave it to them in exchange for the church of Lillechurch (Kent), free of military service, as confirmed by King Stephen. The abbot produced the actual charters, and was declared free from all the said demands and arrears.

Maud, Stephen's queen, was in her own right countess of Boulogne, and lady of that great Boulogne fief, to which so many Essex manors belonged. Among those was East Donyland, which was held of her by Henry de Marck, whose family came from Marck, in her own Boulonnais, now the Pas-de-Calais.<sup>56</sup> As Maud wished to give to another religious house a church in Kent belonging to Colchester abbey, she gave the abbey in exchange for it the manor of East Donyland, and compensated Henry de Marck by giving him land in his native Marck. The documents relating to this transaction will be found on pages 34-7 and 513 of the *Colchester Cartulary*. They have been dated 1148 - 1152.<sup>57</sup>

It was not, in those days, easy to extinguish an hereditary claim. On pages 36 and 37 of the *Cartulary* are final quitclaims by Henry de Marck and his son, Eustace 'de Oys'. Eustace took his name from Oye, which adjoined Marck.<sup>58</sup> Also in the *Cartulary* (p. 513) is a final concord dated 25 April 1190.<sup>59</sup> This belongs to the same occasion as the quitclaim by Eustace de Oys, which must, therefore, be of the same date. In the fine Eustace is styled 'de Hoeyes', but all those before whom the fine was made are parties to the quitclaim, and the consideration is the same, viz. 2½ marks (£1 13s. 4d.).

This transaction yields valuable information on local history. We learn from Henry de Marck's quitclaim that he specifically exempted from it the land of 'Blunteshale'.<sup>60</sup> Morant thought that this reserved land was in East Donyland, and that it was what Eustace de Oys later quitclaimed to Colchester abbey.<sup>61</sup> But if we return to the document of 1290 we find 'Malmesford, Stybinton, Estdon' and Blunteshale' grouped together. Now the *Book of Fees* has two returns for the honour of Boulogne, in one of which we read: '*Johannes de Merc ii milites, unum in Waumeford, Sibinton et Stebinton, et in Edunelande et in Blundeshall i militem in Essex.*'<sup>62</sup> The first three places were Wansford (Northants.) and the adjoining Sibson and Stibbington (Hunts.) 'Blundeshall' was the well-known Blunts Hall in Witham, which figures in Domesday.<sup>63</sup> Morant's account of it is unsatisfactory.<sup>64</sup>

[The few remaining sentences in Philip Laver's transcript of J.H. Round's manuscript are garbled, and were probably defective in the original draft. The paper was apparently unfinished, since it breaks off in mid-sentence. What follows has been reconstructed, partly from an earlier note by Round himself.]

In 1086 there were two manors of Blunts Hall in Witham. The larger, held by Humfrey, under Ranulf Peverel,<sup>65</sup> descended as part of the honour of Peverel of London, and was later held by the Tregoz family.<sup>66</sup> The smaller manor, held in 1086 by Eustace of Boulogne in demesne,<sup>67</sup> was the estate, mentioned above, later held by the Marck family, along with East Donyland, for one knight's fee.<sup>68</sup>

### 'The New Town of Glamorgan' and the Manor of Toppesfield'<sup>69</sup>

When Mr R.C. Fowler and I were revising the index to *Feet of Fines for Essex*, volume one, I vainly tried to identify 'the new town of Glamorgan,' which is mentioned in a fine of 1197.<sup>70</sup> In Wales *novus burgus* is used as a Latinization of Newborough, Newton, Newport, and even, possibly, Newcastle. In this case, however, its identity is proved by a charter entered on the back of a Margam Abbey roll.<sup>71</sup> In this document William, earl of Gloucester (1147 x 1183) notifies that he has given to Richard of Cardiff (*Kardif*), for his services, 'the New Town in Margam', to be held as ¼ knight's fee. The boundaries, which are named, prove that the place was Newton Nottage, near Porthcawl (Glam.). But why should a Welsh town appear in an Essex fine? The answer is that the great fief belonging to the earls of Gloucester, while it lay mainly in the west country and south Wales, included the Essex manor of Toppesfield. This is of particular interest because it may link Essex with the Norman conquest of Glamorgan during the reigns of William Rufus and Henry I.

In 1086 Toppesfield and Stambourne together formed a single manor, held in demesne by Hamon *dapifer* as part of a substantial Essex barony.<sup>72</sup> The manor included five knights, and also a vineyard, which suggests that it was Hamon's residence and the head of his barony.<sup>73</sup> He was a prominent official under William I and William II, serving as a royal steward and also as sheriff of Kent.<sup>74</sup> He died before 1100, leaving two sons, Hamon and Robert. Hamon, the elder son, succeeded to his father's fief and to his office of *dapifer*. He died in 1129 or 1130. The younger son, Robert FitzHamon, was one of the 'new men' promoted by William II, who gave him the great barony of Gloucester, previously held by William I's queen, Maud.<sup>75</sup> From there Robert launched an invasion of Glamorgan, advancing along the coast to Cardiff, where he built a castle. He died in 1107, leaving a daughter Mabel, who also succeeded, in due course, to the Essex lands of her uncle Hamon. She married Robert, bastard son of Henry I, who in 1122 was created earl of Gloucester. Their son, William, became the second earl on his father's death in 1147.<sup>76</sup>

\* \* \*

Among Robert FitzHamon's lieutenants in the conquest of Glamorgan was a certain William, who became sheriff of Cardiff.<sup>77</sup> He may have been the founder of the family which took their name from that place. Richard of Cardiff has already been mentioned as receiving Margam from William, earl of Gloucester. Richard of Cardiff (*Cardi*) and Simon his brother witnessed a charter issued by the same earl, c. 1150 x 1159, granting to Ranulf FitzGerold 12 *libratae* (pound's worth) of land in Great Gransden (Hunts.), to be held, along with 8 *libratae* in Toppesfield, for one knight's fee.<sup>78</sup> If anyone else successfully claimed Gransden, Ranulf was to receive in exchange other land from the earl's demesne. Whether Ranulf did gain possession of Gransden and Toppesfield is not known. But both places eventually passed to the Cardiff family. About 1180 Richard of Cardiff and his son Robert confirmed a grant by Richard's brother Simon to the Cistercian abbey of Savigny in Normandy of 40 *s.* rent charged on land at Toppesfield held by the men of Havecheshale and on the donor's demesne of La Herste, to provide the monks and lay brothers with white bread, wine, and fresh fish on St. Bernard's day (21 August).<sup>79</sup>

We can now look in detail at the fine of 1197. By that time Richard of Cardiff, and presumably also his son Robert, were dead, for the fine was an agreement between Richard's two daughters, Amabel, wife of Thomas de Samford, and Hawise, wife of Thomas de Bayeux,<sup>80</sup> to divide their father's lands between them. Amabel and her husband received, besides the New Town of Glamorgan, a moiety of one knight's fee in Great Gransden, and of one knight's fee in 'Hameldenne', together with all of 3 hides and one virgate in 'Haiston'. The last two places, almost certainly outside Essex, have not been identified. Hawise and Thomas de Bayeux received Toppesfield and 'Glamorgan of St. Hilary.'

The overlordship of the properties mentioned in the fine of 1197 is not stated, but it is clear from the earlier and later evidence that Richard of Cardiff had held his lands in Toppesfield, like those in Glamorgan, of the earl of Gloucester. There is no proof of a connexion between Toppesfield and Glamorgan before 1130, when Robert, earl of Gloucester, in right of his wife, succeeded to the Essex lands of her uncle Hamon. But it is tempting to suggest that Robert FitzHamon's father and brother may have been involved in his invasion of Glamorgan, and that such an adventure, offering land and booty for the taking, would have been attractive to their followers, including the five knights on Hamon *dapifer's* Domesday manor of Toppesfield. Those five men, says Sir Frank Stenton, were obviously household knights who had been provided with small holdings around their lord's residence, and were available for immediate service if the need arose.<sup>81</sup>

The holdings in Toppesfield assigned by the fine of 1197 to Hawise and Thomas de Bayeux can be traced down to the 15th century. In 1202 Thomas de Bayeux (*Baiocis*) was holding 4 knights' fees of the earl of Gloucester.<sup>82</sup> He, or another Thomas de Bayeux

(*Bayocis*), in 1251 granted to the priory of Stoke by Clare (Suff.), 20 *s.* rent charged on the windmill in his manor of Toppesfield.<sup>83</sup> In 1303 those in Toppesfield assessed for Feudal Aids included Thomas de Bayeux (*Bayose*), who held one knight's fee with John de Berewicke as his sub-tenant, and also John de Bayeux, who held 1/4 knight's fee with Henry de Lacheley as sub-tenant, and was himself sub-tenant of 1/4 fee under John de Berewicke.<sup>84</sup> In 1351 Roger de Bayeux (*Baiouse*) held the 1/4 fee formerly held by John de Bayeux.<sup>85</sup> The same record states that the whole fee formerly held by John de Berewicke had passed to Roger Husee, while the 1/4 fee formerly held by Henry de Lacheley had passed to Thomas Giffard. It does not mention, in either case, the mesne tenancy of Bayeux.

The returns of 1428 do not mention the Bayeux family, but the three tenements in which they had previously had an interest can be identified.<sup>86</sup> The 1/4 fee of John de Lacheley was in the hands of anonymous tenants. A whole fee called Berewicke and 1/4 fee called Bayous were held by John Doreward. The appearance of 'Berewicke' as a place-name is a clue to the location of the manor held by Richard of Cardiff in the 12th century, and later by the Bayeux family, for Berwick Hall, with its ancient moat, lies about 1/2 mile west of Toppesfield village.<sup>87</sup> 'Bayous', which obviously took its name from the Bayeux family, does not appear on the modern map, but its tenorial history strongly suggests that it lay near Berwick. The mention, in 1251, of a windmill on Thomas de Bayeux's manor of Toppesfield tends to confirm this, for the oldest known windmill site in the parish was about 1/4 mile SSE of Berwick, in Gainsford End Road.<sup>88</sup> Another clue to the location of the manor can be found in the modern place-name Le Hurst, a mile SW of Berwick, which is identical with 'La Herste', mentioned in Richard of Cardiff's grant to Savigny in c. 1180.<sup>89</sup>

### Acknowledgements

This paper was put onto computer disk by Mrs Helen Coghill, with assistance from Mrs Pamela Studd. The proofs were read by my wife Avril. Their continuing help is greatly appreciated.

*Author*, W.R.Powell, 28 The Walnuts, Branksome Road, Norwich NR4 6SR

### Notes

<sup>1</sup> \* This study was written after 1921.

<sup>2</sup> *E.A.T. N.S.* xv. 153.

<sup>3</sup> R. Newcourt, *Repertorium Ecclesiasticum Parochiale Londinense*, i. 552-3.

<sup>4</sup> Lower down the page the record is styled a charter of 14 Edward III. That is the correct date. \*See *Cal. Pat.* 1340-3, 12. Knowles and Hadcock, *Medieval Religious Houses*, 286, give the foundation date of the Hospital as 1191, quoting *V.C.H. London*, i. 491 n.

<sup>5</sup> *Feet of F. Essex*, i. 40.

<sup>6</sup> *Ibid.* 35.

<sup>7</sup> *Ibid.* 57-8.

- <sup>8</sup> See R.C. Fowler's history of the abbey, *VC.H. Essex*, ii. 116, 120. Cf. *Cal. Chart.* v. 285.
- <sup>9</sup> *Pipe R.* 1175 (P.R.S. xxii), 208, 213.
- <sup>10</sup> *Pipe R.* 1185 (P.R.S. xxxiv), 224.
- <sup>11</sup> *Feet of F Essex*, i. 25.
- <sup>12</sup> \* I am responsible for this paragraph. W.R.P. For Becket see *D.N.B.*
- <sup>13</sup> \* *VC.H. Essex*, ii. 120.
- <sup>14</sup> This study was originally entitled 'The Forestership of Essex.' A paper on that subject was read to the Essex Archaeological Society by Round on 14 April 1904: *E.A.T. N.S.* xix. 235.
- <sup>15</sup> \* Round had advised the Crown on this contest.
- <sup>16</sup> \* Cf. *Complete Peerage*, ii, App. D, p. 607 f; J.H. Round, *King's Serjeants and Officers of State*, 112 f.
- <sup>17</sup> *L. & P. Hen. VIII*, vii, No. 594.
- <sup>18</sup> \* Cf. *VC.H. Essex*, ix. 243.
- <sup>19</sup> \* For the Barrington archives, some of which are now in the Essex Record Office, see *Guide to E.R.O.* (1969), 124-6.
- <sup>20</sup> W.R. Fisher, *Forest of Essex*, 114.
- <sup>21</sup> \* L. Loyd, *Origins of Some Anglo-Norman Families*, 68.
- <sup>22</sup> \* I.J. Sanders, *English Baronies*, 83.
- <sup>23</sup> Fisher, *Forest of Essex*, 114.
- <sup>24</sup> \* Morant, *Essex*, ii. 577.
- <sup>25</sup> Hist. MSS. Com. 6, *7th Rep. Lowndes (Barrington)*, 586.
- <sup>26</sup> Fisher, *Forest of Essex*, 116.
- <sup>27</sup> *Cal. Close 1327-30*, 486; Cf. \**Complete Peerage*, i. 372 (Badlesmere); *ibid.* iii. 291 (Clifford); *ibid.* xii (2), 441.
- <sup>28</sup> \* *Complete Peerage* x. 223 (Oxford).
- <sup>28</sup> Fisher, *Forest of Essex*, 117.
- <sup>30</sup> \* *Complete Peerage*, x. 252 note b.
- <sup>31</sup> Fisher, *Forest of Essex*, 127. \* Edward de Vere, earl of Oxford died only six days later, on 24 June 1604: *Complete Peerage* x. 253.
- <sup>32</sup> \* This statement, which had also been made by the earl of Oxford in 1465, needs qualification: *VC.H. Essex*, vii. 20.
- <sup>33</sup> Fisher, *Forest of Essex*, 119.
- <sup>34</sup> This article was written after 1917. The original MS is lost, but a copy, made by Dr. Philip Laver in 1934, survives.
- <sup>35</sup> *Cartularium Monasterii Sancti Baptiste de Colecestria*, ed. S.A. Moore, 2 vols. (1897), 58, cf. page xlvi. \* For Stuart A. Moore (1842-1907) see *D.N.B.* J.H. Round had previously criticised his edition of the *Colchester Cartulary* in the *English Historical Review*, xvi (1901), 721-30.
- <sup>36</sup> \* Those who have used the *Colchester Cartulary* will confirm Round's criticisms, and may be surprised to see that Graves, *Bibliog. Eng. Hist.* 1485, No. 6141 (repeating Gross's bibliography, No. 2360) comments only that Moore's edition is 'Valuable'.
- <sup>37</sup> *Colchester Cartulary*, 59.
- <sup>38</sup> \* Cf. *Cal. Pat.* 1436-41, 223; *VC.H. Essex*, ix. 404.
- <sup>39</sup> According to Newcourt, *Repert. Eccles. Lond.* i. 89, 131, 340, he resigned the archdeaconry of Colchester 'about April 1440.'
- <sup>40</sup> Morant, *Essex* (Colchester), i. 143.
- <sup>41</sup> *Ibid.* 131.
- <sup>42</sup> *Cal. Pat.* 1461-7, 87.
- <sup>43</sup> \* *Complete Peerage*, v. 483-4. Elizabeth also held Roydon: *VC.H. Essex*, viii. 232, 243.
- <sup>44</sup> Morant thought that her second husband was William Massy, but he had in fact been her first husband, before Lord FitzWalter. Cf. *Complete Peerage* v. 483.
- <sup>45</sup> \* For this monument see *R.C.H.M. Essex*, i. 178.
- <sup>46</sup> *E.A.T. N.S.* v. 5, cf. 205-6.
- <sup>47</sup> *Ibid.* x. 263-4.
- <sup>48</sup> \* *Complete Peerage*, v. 483 agrees with J.H.R.
- <sup>49</sup> \* *Ibid.* 484.
- <sup>50</sup> *Feet of F Essex*, i. 227. \**VC.H. Essex*, ix. 404 gives the date incorrectly as 1258.
- <sup>51</sup> \* Cf. *P.N. Essex*, 378.
- <sup>52</sup> \* Morant, *Essex*, ii. 187.
- <sup>53</sup> \* Cf. *VC.H. Essex*, ix. 376 (Saer Haning); 52, 375, 412 (Walter Haneng); *E.A.T. N.S.* xiv. 139 (Saer Haning).
- <sup>54</sup> \* Cf. *VC.H. Essex*, ix. 413; *P.N. Essex*, 378 (which, however, wrongly associates Canonswick with St. John's abbey).
- <sup>55</sup> The Public Record Office, in *Feudal Aids*, ii. 567, 570, wrongly identifies East Donyland as Berechurch, but that error is due to the text, which has 'Est' for 'West.'
- <sup>56</sup> \* J.H. Round, *Feudal England*, 464; *Studies in Peerage and Family History*, 156-7; *VC.H. Essex*, i. 344. The Marck family gave its name to Marks Tey.
- <sup>57</sup> \* Cf. *Regesta Regum Anglo-Normannorum*, iii, nos. 221, 222, 223.
- <sup>58</sup> For Marck and Oye see J.H. Wylie, *Reign of Henry V*, i. 486n, 43 and n.
- <sup>59</sup> The *Cartulary* here preserves for us a fine of Richard I's reign some years earlier than those printed in our *Feet of Fines for Essex*.
- <sup>60</sup> 'Blunteshale' recurs in the *Colchester Cartulary*, 526-7.
- <sup>61</sup> Morant, *Essex*, ii. 185.
- <sup>62</sup> *Bk. of Fees*, 241 (dated 1217-18). For 'Sibintone, terra Eustacii de Oie' see *Pipe R.* 1189, 10.
- <sup>63</sup> \* *VC.H. Essex*, i. 462.
- <sup>64</sup> Morant, *Essex*, ii. 108.
- <sup>65</sup> \* *VC.H. Essex*, i. 526.
- <sup>66</sup> \* I.J. Sanders, *English Baronies*, 120; J.H. Round, 'Tregoz of Tolleshunt Tregoz', *E.A.T. N.S.* viii. 330.
- <sup>67</sup> \* *VC.H. Essex*, i. 462.
- <sup>68</sup> \* *E.A.T. N.S.* viii. 330.
- <sup>69</sup> \* This study has been reconstructed, with additional material, from part of an unfinished draft, written in or after 1921, entitled 'The Early Lords of Toppesfield.' The first paragraph is taken from a brief, untitled note which may originally have been part of the same draft.
- <sup>70</sup> *Feet of F.* i. 18. The volume, issued in parts, was completed, with index, in 1910.
- <sup>71</sup> W. de Gray Birch, *History of Margam Abbey* (1897), 40-1.
- <sup>72</sup> *VC.H. Essex*, i. 502.
- <sup>73</sup> *Ibid.* note 3.
- <sup>74</sup> \* *Regesta Regum Anglo-Normannorum*, i, pp. 23-4. For Hamon and his descendants see *Domesday Monachorum of Christ Church, Canterbury*, ed. D.C. Douglas, 55-9.
- <sup>75</sup> \* F. Barlow, *William II*, 321; G.E.C. *Complete Peerage*, v. 683.
- <sup>76</sup> \* *Complete Peerage*, v. 683.
- <sup>77</sup> \* *Reg. R.A.-N.* ii, no. 1307 and note.
- <sup>78</sup> \* *Sir Christopher Hatton's Book of Seals*, ed. L. Loyd and D.M. Stenton, no. 213.
- <sup>79</sup> *Calendar of Documents found in France*, ed. J.H. Round, no. 302.
- <sup>80</sup> In the printed edition of the fine Hawise's husband is styled 'de Bavis', but later references to the family name 'de Bayeux', in various forms, suggest that it should here be emended by reading the three minims as *i u* instead of *v i*, producing the name 'Baius'. See also below.
- <sup>81</sup> \* Sir F. Stenton, *The First Century of English Feudalism*, (1961), 144.
- <sup>82</sup> *Red Bk. of Exchequer* (Rolls Ser.), 153.
- <sup>83</sup> *Feet of F Essex*, i. 189. \*Stoke priory was patron of Toppesfield church: *E.A.T. N.S.* xviii, 129.
- <sup>84</sup> *Feudal Aids*, ii. 141. The tenancy-in-chief of the earl of Gloucester is not mentioned here.
- <sup>85</sup> \* *Ibid.* 164.
- <sup>86</sup> *Ibid.* 230.
- <sup>87</sup> \* Reaney, *Place Names of Essex*, 464 suggests that Berwick was a topographical name (*berewic*), but the Feudal Aid return for 1303, which he quotes, actually refers to the Berewicke family, as noted above, and it is probable that the place-name, in Toppesfield, came from the family.
- <sup>88</sup> \* K.G. Farrer, *Essex Windmills*, v. 66. Toppesfield mill, on this site, is recorded in 1677. It was then said to be 'newly erected', but wooden post-mills of that type were often rebuilt. This mill is shown on Chapman and André, *Map of Essex*, 1777.
- <sup>89</sup> \* Reaney, *P.N. Essex*, 464, 'Havecheshale' which appears in the same grant, is identified by Reaney with 'Hawks Hall', an estate, mentioned by Morant (*Essex*, ii. 361, 367), not shown on modern maps.

*The Society acknowledges financial support from its Publications Development Fund towards the cost of publishing this article*

## Church Dedications in Colchester Archdeaconry

by Janet Cooper

*This article incorporates the preliminary results of research into church dedications in the medieval Colchester archdeaconry. About a fifth of the dedications can be shown to have changed at some time between the 13th century and the present day. The distribution of some of the more popular dedications may suggest differences between the eastern and western parts of the archdeaconry; other dedications may reflect the popularity of medieval saints' cults.*

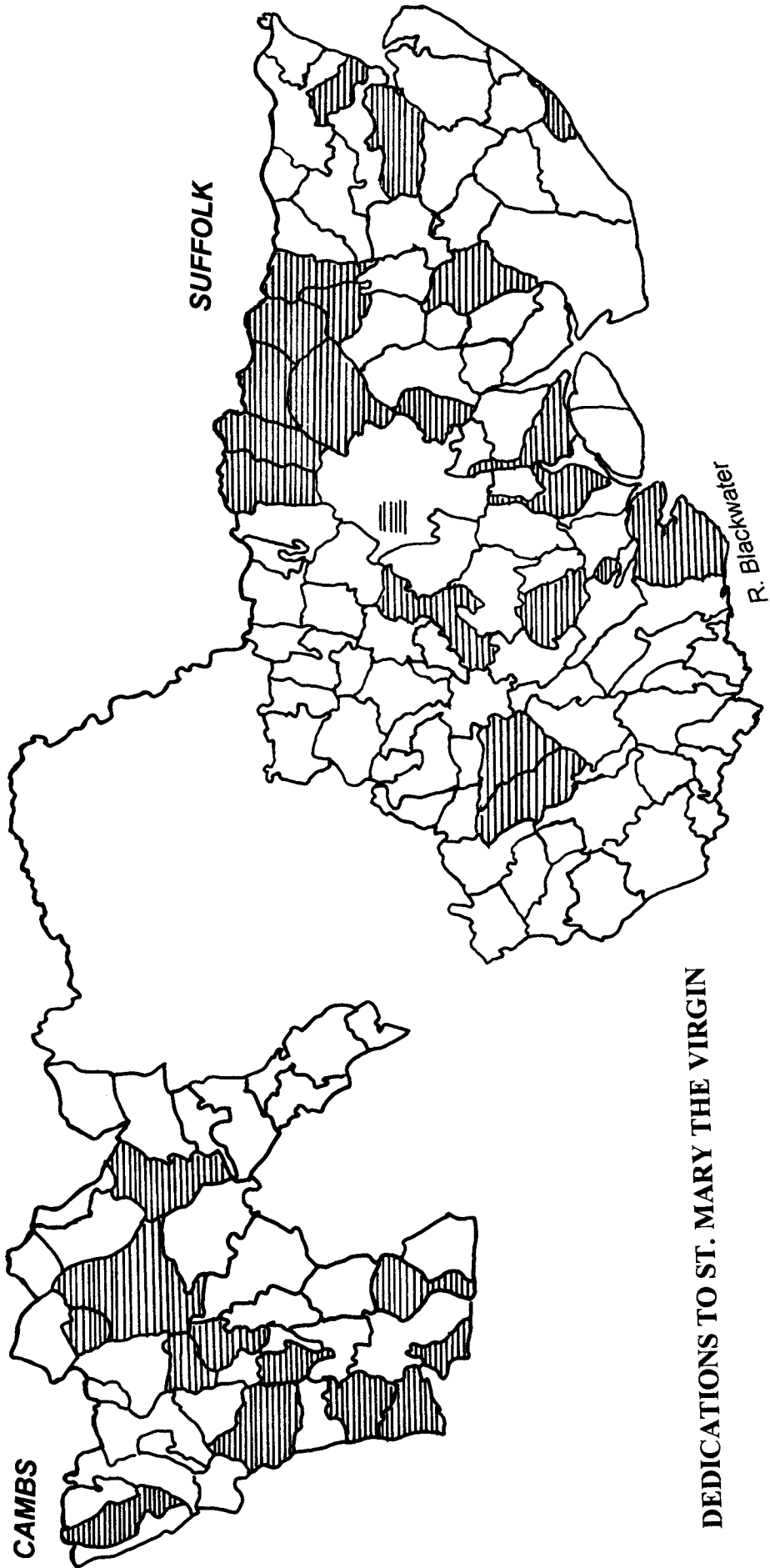
The study of church dedications has interested local historians and antiquaries since the 18th century, and earlier articles on Essex dedications have been published in this journal and in the *Essex Journal*.<sup>1</sup> Until recently, most writers have relied heavily on the work of Frances Arnold-Forster, who listed and discussed all the church dedications in England, as they were in the late 19th century.<sup>2</sup> Her work has been invaluable in many ways, but she assumed that church dedications were static, and that the dedications of medieval churches were the same in the Middle Ages as they were in her own day. Recent work has shown that that is far from being the case.<sup>3</sup> The changes in dedications are of interest in themselves, and they must be taken into account before church dedications can be used, as they have been in some places, as evidence for the popularity of saints' cults at different times and hence for the dates of origin of different churches and settlements. The following article draws on a study of the dedications of the 154 churches in the medieval and early modern Colchester archdeaconry at four periods: the present day, the mid 19th century, the earlier 18th century and the earlier 16th century. The present dedications have mainly been taken from the *Chelmsford Diocesan Yearbook*, the mid 19th-century ones from the 1848 edition of White's *Directory of Essex*, and the 18th-century ones from Newcourt's *Repertorium* and from Holman's notes.<sup>4</sup> The best source for the 16th-century dedications has proved to be wills, as official documents, both ecclesiastical and lay, usually simply refer to the parish church of such and such a place. I have been able to find early 16th-century dedications for 120 churches, including all the Colchester churches whose dedications have survived because the saint's name distinguished the different urban parishes from each other. I have searched the pre-Reformation registers of wills for Colchester archdeaconry and also all the surviving original pre-Reformation wills proved in the London diocesan courts and preserved in the E.R.O. For 26 churches the

surviving registers of the medieval bishops of London,<sup>5</sup> charters, or wills proved in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury have provided evidence of earlier dedications, but, apart from the bishop's registers, those sources have not been systematically searched.

Church dedications occasionally changed during the Middle Ages, as new relics, perhaps those of a local saint, were acquired, or as new saints, such as St. Thomas Becket, became popular. The main period of change in England, however, was between the 16th and the 19th centuries. Many medieval church dedications were lost at the Reformation, when patronal festivals ceased to be kept. It was not until the 18th century that an interest in church dedications revived, and then it was usually an antiquarian rather than a theological interest. Several antiquaries, among them Newcourt and Holman in Essex, tried to supply the dedications of the churches they studied. They probably drew on some local traditions, such as the date of the parish feast or fair, and they searched the medieval bishops' registers thoroughly, but they were not always able to assign saints to churches, and sometimes they assigned the wrong saint to a church. In Colchester archdeaconry, at least, the dates of fairs do not appear to provide reliable evidence for church dedications, unless there were many changes of dedication during the Middle Ages. Of the 19 medieval fairs held in the archdeaconry, only four were held on the church's patronal festival: those at Bradfield (St. Lawrence),<sup>6</sup> Coggeshall (St. Peter),<sup>7</sup> Hadstock (St. Botolph),<sup>8</sup> and Takeley (Holy Trinity).<sup>9</sup> Only one of the early 19th-century fairs, that at Little Clacton on 25 July, the feast of St. James the Great,<sup>10</sup> coincides with the parish church's patronal festival. As a rule it was not until after the Tractarian revival of the mid 19th century that the patronal festival was restored, and patron saints were assigned to those churches whose original dedications had been completely lost.

Of the 120 early 16th-century dedications I have found, 15 are different today, and one, Fingringhoe, changed from St. Ouen to St. Andrew during the early 16th century. Two, Debden and Clavering, now combine their medieval dedications with their 19th-century ones: Debden, originally All Saints,<sup>11</sup> being now the Virgin Mary and All Saints; Clavering, originally St. Mary,<sup>12</sup> being now St. Mary and St. Clement. A further four churches have reverted to their medieval dedication after a change in the 18th or 19th century. At Hatfield Peverel, the dedication of the lost,

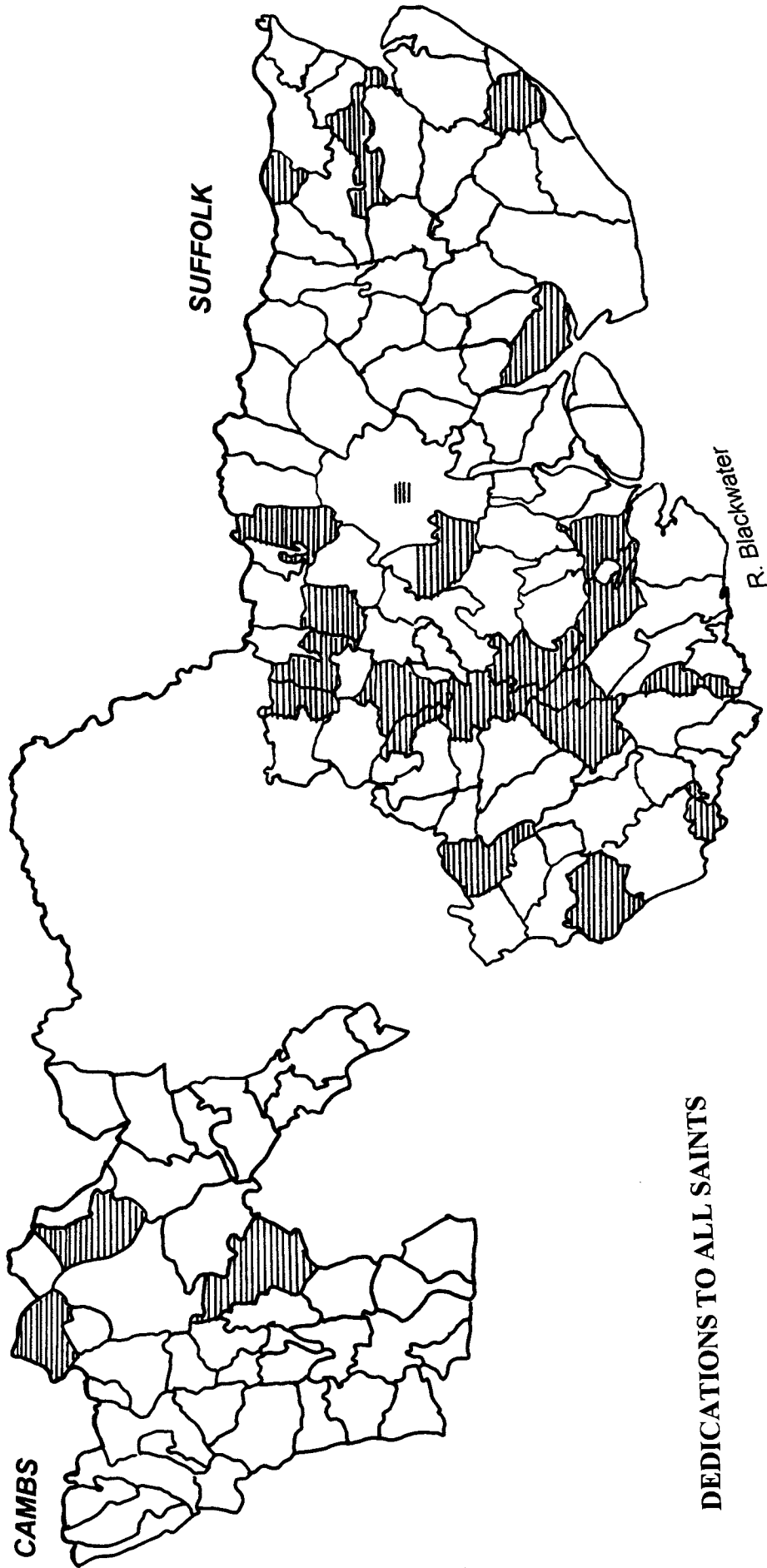
THE MEDIEVAL ARCHDEACONRY OF COLCHESTER



DEDICATIONS TO ST. MARY THE VIRGIN

Fig. 1 Distribution of dedications to St Mary the Virgin

THE MEDIEVAL ARCHDEACONRY OF COLCHESTER



DEDICATIONS TO ALL SAINTS

Fig. 2 Distribution of dedications to All Saints

**THE MEDIEVAL ARCHDEACONRY OF COLCHESTER**

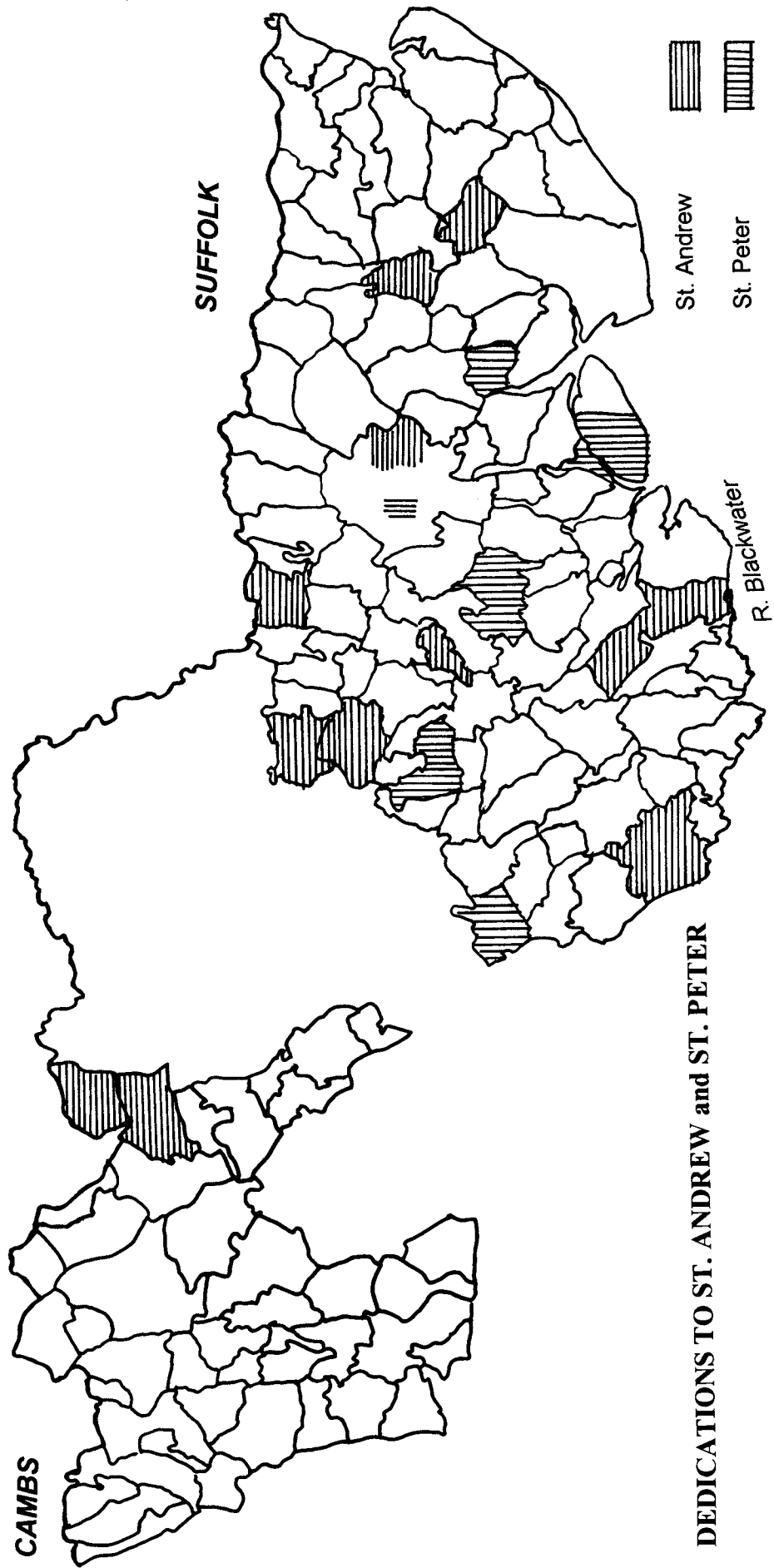


Fig. 3 Distribution of dedications to St Andrew and St Peter



THE MEDIEVAL ARCHDEACONRY OF COLCHESTER

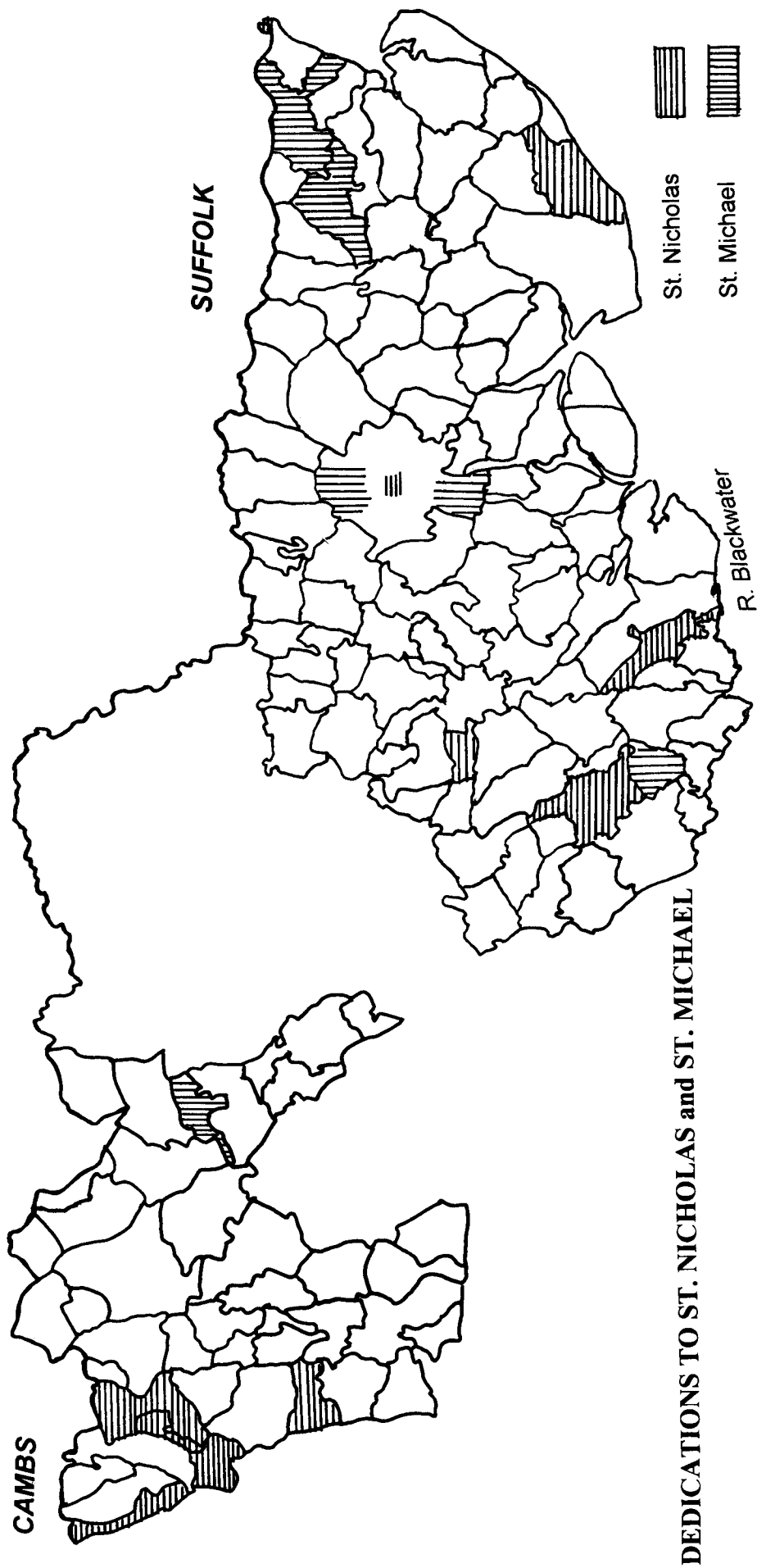


Fig. 4 Distribution of dedications to St. Nicholas and St. Michael

medieval parish church of St. Andrew was assigned to the former priory church of St. Mary, which was taken over as the parish church after the Dissolution.<sup>13</sup> Of the 26 earlier medieval dedications I have found, at least one, Little Tey, changed before the Reformation, being recorded as St. Mary in 1365 but St. James in 1522.<sup>14</sup>

The medieval and early modern Colchester archdeaconry comprised 154 parishes in the deaneries of Witham, Lexden, Colchester and Tendring in the north-east of Essex, and Sampford and Newport in the north-west. Between the two parts of Colchester archdeaconry was Hedingham deanery in the archdeaconry of Middlesex. The parishes in the eastern part of the archdeaconry were typical Essex parishes with a dispersed settlement pattern in an area extending from boulder clay uplands to the coastal marshes; in the western part of the archdeaconry the parishes retained open fields until the 18th or 19th century. A preliminary analysis of the distribution of some dedications suggests that there were some differences between the two halves of the archdeaconry.

The most popular saint in the archdeaconry, not surprisingly, is the Virgin Mary, with 34 16th-century dedications, and one other, Wix, which was apparently St. Michael in the 16th century but had been St. Mary in the 12th century. The churches dedicated to her are fairly evenly distributed throughout most of the archdeaconry, although there is a cluster of seven parishes near the Suffolk border which share the dedication (Fig. 1). There seems to be no particular reason for this cluster. St. Mary has been shown to have been a popular dedication at all dates, including the 7th and 8th centuries,<sup>15</sup> and of those in the Colchester archdeaconry, St. Mary's at the Wall, Colchester, which belonged to the bishop of London and was associated with an extensive 'soke' as well as having a large extra-mural parish, may date to the early days of Christianity in Essex, although it was first recorded in 1206.<sup>16</sup> Middle Saxon graves have been found near its graveyard. Copford was another important manor of the bishop of London.<sup>17</sup> Tollesbury, later a small town, may also be early. On the other hand, four parishes with churches dedicated to the Virgin contain the element Little in their names, and thus might be expected to be secondary settlements: Little Bromley, Little Chesterford, Little Holland, and Little Oakley.

The next most popular dedication is All Saints with 25 dedications, all but three of them in the eastern part of the archdeaconry (Fig. 2). Two parishes with the same name, Wakes Colne and White Colne, which were presumably once part of a single large estate, share the dedication, but the mother church of the Colnes was St. Andrew's, Earls Colne. Great Tey (All Saints in the Middle Ages) and Marks Tey may share the dedication, but Marks Tey is also said to be dedicated to St. Andrew, and I am inclined to suspect that the reference to that church as All Saints is a mistake, a confusion with Great Tey. In some counties dedications to All Saints have been seen as secondary,<sup>18</sup> and the semi-circle of parishes to the west and south-west of Colchester might

represent an expansion from the gravels onto the heavier clay. Cressing is certainly secondary to Witham, and Wakes and White Colne to Earls Colne.<sup>19</sup> However, Great Tey, with its fine 11th-century central tower, gives every indication of being an important Anglo-Saxon church; the estate, like the neighbouring Colne, belonged to the ealdormen of Essex in the early 11th century.<sup>20</sup> Three parishes with churches dedicated to All Saints have names containing the element 'Great': Great Chesterford, Great Holland, and Great Oakley. The All Saints' church Stanway was called the church of Great Stanway *c.* 1291, and its position beside the principal manor house suggests it was the original Stanway church.<sup>21</sup>

There are 11 certain dedications to St. Andrew (Fig. 3). Marks Tey church was almost certainly St. Andrew's, although it was on one occasion called All Saints, probably by confusion with Great Tey; the dedication of Fingringhoe changed from St. Ouen to St. Andrew in the 1520s or 1530s. All but two of the dedications to St. Andrew are in the eastern portion of the archdeaconry. Again, two Colne parishes share the dedication, Earls Colne, certainly a minster church in the early 11th century, and Colne Engaine. The Earls Colne dedication was recorded *c.* 1100.<sup>22</sup> St. Andrew's, Hatfield Peverel, may also have been a minster.<sup>23</sup> In contrast there are only five dedications to St. Peter and three to St. Peter and St. Paul, two of which were also recorded as St. Peter (Fig. 3, where the dedications to St. Peter and St. Paul have been included with those to St. Peter alone). The comparatively small number contrasts with the situation in Kent, where St. Peter was one of the most popular dedications.<sup>24</sup> Like those to St. Mary, dedications to St. Peter, may date from the mid Anglo-Saxon period.<sup>25</sup> All the St. Peter dedications are in the eastern portion of the archdeaconry; all but one of them south-west of the river Colne. They include St. Peter's, Colchester, almost certainly a minster, which was served by two priests in 1066,<sup>26</sup> and the church of Great Coggeshall, which may also be early; the Coggeshall dedication was recorded in 1441.<sup>27</sup> Little Horkesley appears to be secondary, but it is possible that it was the original church of a single Horkesley parish, replaced by Great Horkesley after the foundation of the priory there *c.* 1127.<sup>28</sup> St. John, both the Evangelist and the Baptist, were even less popular. There was only one medieval dedication to St. John the Evangelist, the lost Colchester church destroyed by the building of the abbey of St. John the Baptist.<sup>29</sup> The only building known to have been dedicated to St. John the Baptist was the chapel of Great Tey at Pontisbright, now Chappel. That dedication was lost at the Reformation, and in 1967 the church was rededicated to St. Barnabas, the modern dedication of Great Tey church.<sup>30</sup>

St. Nicholas, with ten certain dedications and a further two doubtful ones (Fig. 4), was another popular saint. The distribution of the St. Nicholas's churches does not support the suggestion that such dedications were connected with sailors and the sea, although the chapel at Harwich was (and is) St. Nicholas's. Other

parishes with churches dedicated to St. Nicholas include Witham, the site of one of Edward the Elder's *burhs* and the head of a half hundred. The church, whose dedication was recorded in 1389, has been identified as an Anglo-Saxon minster.<sup>31</sup> There are six dedications to St. Michael (Fig. 4), including Wix which was earlier St. Mary. Its placename suggests that Wickham Bishops (where the medieval church was at the bottom of the hill) was an early settlement.<sup>32</sup> Two other St. Michael dedications, the Colchester suburban parishes of Mile End and Berechurch, are certainly secondary.<sup>33</sup>

There are three 16th-century or earlier dedications to East Anglian saints. St. Botolph (Colchester and Hadstock), and St. Edmund (East Mersea) had widespread cults, and their appearance in Colchester archdeaconry is probably not significant. The third saint, St. Ethelbert or Albright (Stanway), may be. St. Ethelbert was a king of East Anglia who was killed in Mercia in 794, according to his legend on the orders of King Offa whose daughter he wished to marry.<sup>34</sup> Arnold-Forster listed 10 dedications to St. Ethelbert alone and one to St. Ethelbert and All Saints. Hereford cathedral and two other churches in Herefordshire and Gloucestershire owe their dedication to the presence of his body, enshrined in Hereford cathedral. Of the remaining dedications, seven are in Norfolk, four (Falkenham, Herringswell, Hessel, and Tannington) in south-eastern Suffolk, and two (Stanway and Belchamp Otten),<sup>35</sup> in Essex. The Stanway dedication is recorded in the early 13th century,<sup>36</sup> and may be evidence of an early cult of the saint in north-east Essex.

By 1254 one of the Colchester churches was dedicated to the mythical St. Runwald, possibly a Mercian saint. It seems to have been an encroachment in the market place and was probably an 11th-century foundation. It had no graveyard until 1362, and may have started as a chapel.<sup>37</sup> One other Anglo-Saxon saint was probably commemorated in the archdeaconry. St. Dunstan appears as the patron of Wenden Lofts (in the western portion of the archdeaconry) in 1501, although in the 1530s the dedication was said to be St. Nicholas.<sup>38</sup> No parish churches are known to have been dedicated to St. Osyth, who was alleged to have lived and been martyred at Chich, now St. Osyth's, where the Augustinian priory was dedicated to her in the early 12th century.<sup>39</sup> The parish church there may have been St. Osyth's in the Middle Ages, but from the 18th century it was St. Peter and St. Paul.

Of the Continental saints, St. Giles had two churches, at Langford and in Colchester (a suburban church, founded c. 1100, replacing an earlier church of St. John the Evangelist.)<sup>40</sup> Faulkbourne was dedicated to St. Germanus by 1437.<sup>41</sup> There was only one dedication in the archdeaconry to St. Martin, elsewhere a popular saint, the Colchester church recorded in 1254; the building may contain 11th-century fabric.<sup>42</sup> The comparatively unusual dedication of Fingringhoe to St. Ouen is to be explained by the fact that Fingringhoe was part of the large estate at West Mersea, granted by Edward the Confessor (1042 - 1066) to the abbey of St.

Ouen, Rouen, at the beginning of his reign.<sup>43</sup> There are five 16th-century or earlier dedications to saints whose, largely fictitious, legends were popular in the Middle Ages: St. George, at Great Bromley, St. Margaret at the neighbouring parishes of Wicken Bonhunt and Arkesden, St. Lawrence at East Donyland (recorded in 1366)<sup>44</sup> and Bradfield, and St. Leonard at Colchester Hythe, a 12th-century foundation.<sup>45</sup>

Further work on the church dedications of the rest of Essex, and perhaps on the dedications of subsidiary altars within parish churches, should throw further light on the saints' cults of medieval Essex.

*Author:* Janet Cooper, Victoria County History of Essex, Department of History, University of Essex.

### Notes

- 1 W. Addison, 'Parish Church Dedications in Essex', *Trans. Essex Arch. Soc.* ii (3rd ser.), 34 - 46; J. E. Oxley, 'Notes on Essex Church Dedications', *Essex Jnl.* xix. 74 - 6.
- 2 F. Arnold-Forster, *Studies in Church Dedications*, 3 vols. (1899).
- 3 e.g. R. Clark, 'Dedications of medieval churches in Derbyshire', *Derbyshire Arch. Jnl.* cxii (1992), 48 - 61; N. Orme, *English Church Dedications*, 3 - 10, and passim. All recent volumes in the *Victoria History of the Counties of England* (V.C.H.) note changes in church dedications.
- 4 E.R.O., T/P 195/7 - 8, 10 - 11, 15, 17.
- 5 Guildhall MSS. 9531/3 - 8. The registers rarely record dedications, usually referring to churches as the parish church of such and such a place.
- 6 *Cal. Charter Rolls*, iii. 417.
- 7 *Ibid.* 480.
- 8 *Regesta Regum Anglo-Normannorum*, ii, no. 15446.
- 9 *Cal. Charter Rolls*, i. 427.
- 10 *White's Dir. Essex* (1848) was used for 19th-century fairs.
- 11 E.R.O., D/ACR 1, f. 113v.
- 12 *Ibid.* f. 26.
- 13 E.R.O., T/P 195/10; P.R.O., PROB 11/13, f. 140v.
- 14 *Reg. Sudbury* (Canterbury & York Soc.), I. 247; E.R.O., D/ACR 2, f. 141v.
- 15 W. Levison, *England and the Continent in the 8th Century*, 36, 263-4; J. Margham, 'Saints in an Island Landscape', *Proc. Isle of Wight Nat. Hist. and Arch. Soc.* xiii. 91.
- 16 *V.C.H. Essex*, ix. 324.
- 17 Morant, *History and Antiquities of Essex*, ii. 195.
- 18 A. Everitt, *Continuity and Colonization*, 227.
- 19 W. Rodwell, *Origins of Witham*, 67; for Earls Colne, see below.
- 20 *Anglo-Saxon Wills*, ed. D. Whitelock, pp. 6, 38.
- 21 *Taxatio Ecclesiastica circa A.D. 1291* (Record Commission), 23.
- 22 *Anglo-Saxon Wills*, ed. D. Whitelock, p. 76; *Colne Cartulary*, ed. J. L. Fisher, p. 1.
- 23 W. Rodwell, *Origins of Witham*, 66.
- 24 A. Everitt, *Continuity and Colonization*, 230, 237-8.
- 25 W. Levison, *England and the Continent in the 8th Century*, 35, 260-1.
- 26 *V.C.H. Essex*, ix. 330.

- 27 Guildhall MS. 9531/6, f. 184v.
- 28 *V.C.H. Essex*, x, history of Little Horkeley (forthcoming).
- 29 P. Crummy, *Colchester Archaeological Report 1: Aspects of Anglo-Saxon and Norman Colchester*, 40—6.
- 30 Guidebk. in Chappel church.
- 31 Guildhall MS. 9531/3, f. 436v.; W. Rodwell, *Origins of Witham*, pp. xi, 5, 65—73.
- 32 M. Gelling, *Signposts to the Past*, 67—74
- 33 *V.C.H. Essex*, ix. 406—7, 416.
- 34 M. R. James, 'Two Lives of St. Ethelbert' *E.H.R.* xxxii (1917), 214 - 44.
- 35 The double dedication is due to the union of two churches, one of which (now lost) was St. Ethelbert.
- 36 *Colch.Cart.* ii. 531.
- 37 *V.C.H. Essex*, ix. 333.
- 38 E.R.O., D/ACR 1, f. 18; D/ACR 4, f. 56.
- 39 *Oxf. Dict. Saints*, 377; *V.C.H. Essex*, ii. 157.
- 40 *V.C.H. Essex*, ix. 315.
- 41 Guildhall MS. 9531/6.
- 42 *Ibid.* 322—3.
- 43 Cyril Hart, *Danelaw*, 495—504.
- 44 *Reg. Sudbury* (Canterbury & York Soc.), i. 253.
- 45 *V.C.H. Essex*, ix. 319.

*The Society acknowledges assistance from the Publications Development Fund towards the cost of publishing this article.*

## ‘The Master of Little Braxted in his prime’: Ernest Geldart and Essex, 1873–1900

by James Bettley

On 17 February 1881, the Revd Ernest Geldart drove from Willingale Doe in the company of that parish’s rector, the Revd A.R. Du Cane, to Chelmsford, where they took the train to Witham and from there walked to Little Braxted. They came first to the church, about a mile from the station,

described as a “small Norman building with semicircular apse wh. forms the chancel”. I was agreeably disappointed to find it not quite so small nor quite so Norman as I expected.

(Diary, 17 Feb 1881)<sup>1</sup>

They continued on for a mile and a half, up a long hill to the village itself, where ‘we beheld the Rectory – a most delicious Queen Anne house, only wanting 2 or 3 of Kate Greenaway’s children in sage green bonnets to make it complete’.<sup>2</sup> They had lunch with the outgoing rector, John Freeman King, who then took them back down to the church:

The inside is not so cheery as the exterior. A huge stone pulpit of Cox like design blocks up the view & displaces the rector’s stall or rather the reading desk to the north side. The altar is small & depressed but the communicants’ kneeler is resplendent. Having inspected the Church & rung its 2 bells we walked on to the station & took train back to Chelmsford...

Geldart then went to Rawreth, and from there to Suffolk; back in London on 22 March he went to Maples to buy himself some furniture, then down again to Willingale, over to Good Easter where he ‘set to work at once & began to “polychromatize” the walls of the sanctuary’ (Diary, 29 Mar 1881) and once more to London to collect his vestments.

The following day, Easter Day (17 April), Geldart went down by train to Chelmsford in the afternoon, and then over to Good Easter, where, after tea, ‘the Bp took me over to the Church and instituted me in the Chancel...’ On Low Sunday, 24 April 1881, he held his first service in St Nicholas’ Church, Little Braxted.

Little Braxted was Geldart’s first and, indeed, his only parish. He was 32 when he came there and it was to be his home for the next twenty years – the most fruitful years of his life both as a priest and an architect, the two careers which he combined with no little success and in a way which is unparalleled. Although his

architectural work is scattered over the whole of Great Britain, in places as far apart as Germoe in Cornwall and Millport on the Isle of Cumbrae, the greatest concentration is in Essex: 57 projects, whether or not executed, for particular known locations, out of a total of 163.

\* \* \*

Ernest Geldart was born in Holloway, north London, on 2 May 1848. His father, Thomas Geldart (1809–1877), was secretary of the Town Missionary and Scripture Readers’ Society; his mother, Hannah Ransome Geldart (Thomas’s second wife), was a popular writer of religious or otherwise improving or inspirational books, whose sister Emma Marshall (1830–1899) was also a prolific author of children’s books. Ernest was the fourth of seven children, one of whom died in infancy and another, the eldest, at the age of 16. In 1856, the family left London after Thomas was appointed secretary of the Manchester City Mission; they settled in the prosperous suburb of Bowdon. Following Hannah’s death in 1861, at the age of 41, Thomas married Lucy Brightwen (1814–1896), whose sister Eliza was the second wife of the naturalist Philip Henry Gosse (1810–1888); there were no further children.

Ernest was educated first at a private school at Timperley, then at Owen’s College, Manchester, before entering the office of the Manchester architect Alfred Waterhouse as a pupil in 1864. Waterhouse’s career was just taking off; the Manchester Assize Courts and Strangeways Gaol had brought him national recognition, and in 1863 he had opened an office in London. It was here that Geldart was sent, and quickly distinguished himself. However, in 1871 he left Waterhouse’s office and enrolled at King’s College, London, to read theology. While living in London he had been worshipping at one of the well-known ritualist churches, St Mary Magdalene, Paddington, and had been actively involved with church activities: he became a member of the Guild of St Alban, a national organisation with branches in many parishes which supported the work of the church through organising night schools, boys’ clubs, savings banks, and other worthwhile schemes. With two friends, H.H. Clarke and George Malim, he took things further by starting the lay Brotherhood of St Dunstan; ordination was the next logical step; he became a deacon in 1873 and priest in 1875.

These were troubled times for the Church of England. In 1874, the Public Worship Regulation Act was passed, which marked a turning point in the dispute between the High and Low Church factions within the Church over the conduct of services. Such matters as the use of vestments, candles and incense during the celebration of Holy Communion had hitherto been decided according to ecclesiastical law, and over the previous decades many conflicting judgements had been passed. Now, however, there was a concerted effort to stamp out the ritualists, of whom Geldart was one. As it turned out, the Act was a failure, but it caused much distress in the following few years, and resulted in the imprisonment of five clergymen. This was the background against which Geldart practised as a priest, and it determined also the flavour of the architectural work for which he was responsible: the central place of the Holy Eucharist in divine service, and the desire to make churches as fitting as possible for that supreme act of worship, necessitated many changes to the planning, furnishing and decoration of parish churches.

Once a deacon, Geldart found employment as a curate at St Andrew's, Plaistow, one of the so-called 'slum churches', officially in Essex but for all practical purposes in London, and at that time in the diocese of Rochester. So began his association with Essex, and some of his earliest known design work dates from his time at Plaistow. The Brotherhood of St Dunstan moved with him and helped with parish work, but Geldart's health was not sufficiently robust for the way of life of a curate in a busy city parish. In 1876 he found a less demanding curacy, at Hatchford, in Surrey, where he remained until 1880. It was at this time that he undertook the first of his foreign travels, accompanying a troublesome pupil (the vicar of Hatchford, Lewis Herbert Wellesley Wesley, also ran a school) to Australia. The trip was not a success, but it gave Geldart a taste for travel: in 1878 he went to South America, and the following year Belgium.

Relations with his employer at Hatchford became strained and in 1880 he took up the temporary post of mission priest attached to the Scottish Episcopal

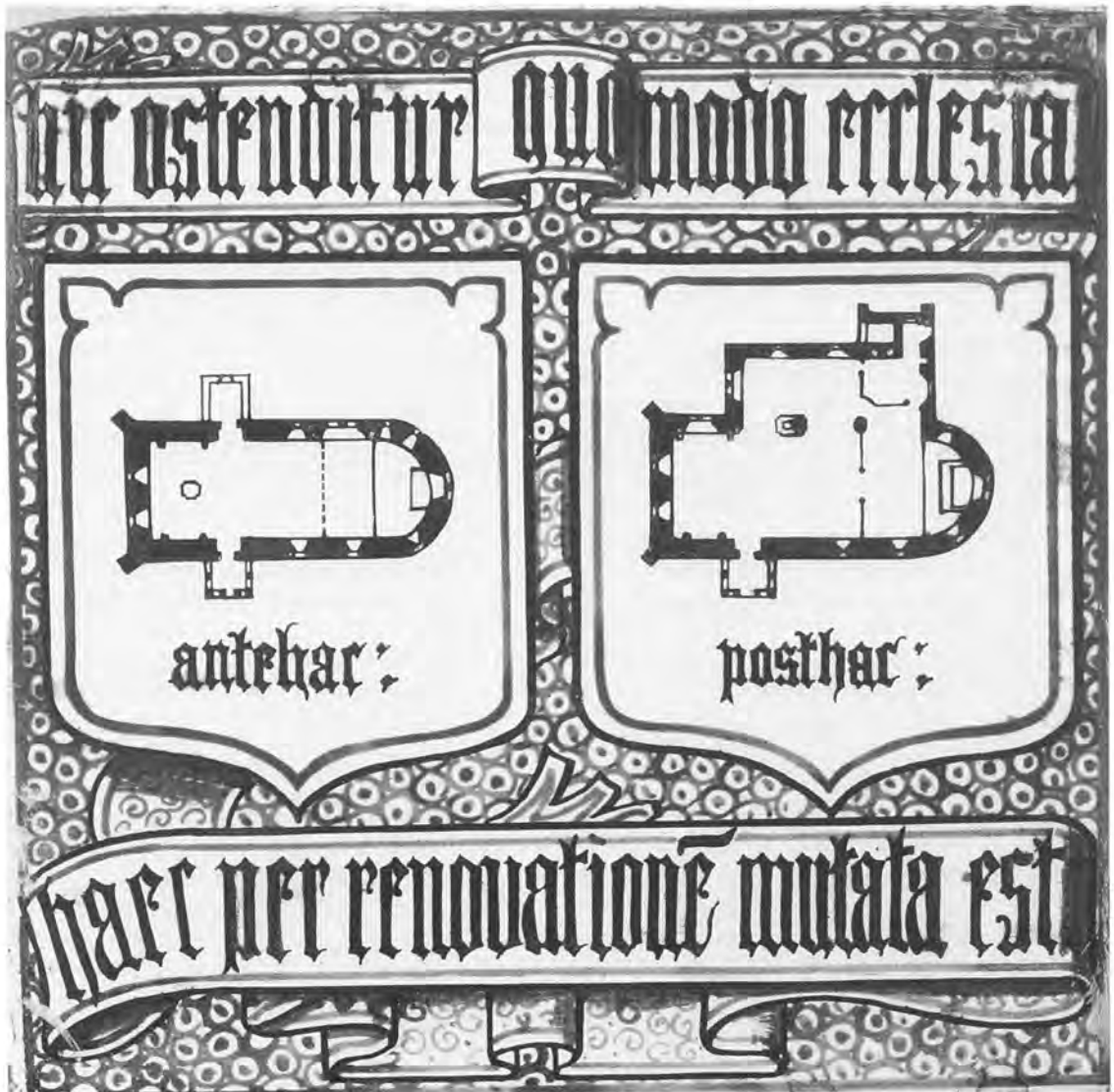


Plate I Church of St Nicholas, Little Braxted: tile in vestry showing the additions of 1884  
 Keith Hewitt/Country Life Picture Library

Cathedral of the Isles at Millport, on the Isle of Cumbrae, off the west coast of Scotland. The post involved travelling to various towns in the diocese of Argyll and the Isles, taking services at churches which were, for one reason or another, without an incumbent. This was a curious existence, which he tolerated because it was not permanent, and in 1881 he was appointed to the rectory of Little Braxted, Essex.

Ever since leaving Waterhouse's office, Geldart had been designing ecclesiastical work: vestments, decorations, fittings and so forth. Some of these jobs were direct commissions, but he was also working on a salaried basis for a firm of church furnishers, Cox Sons Buckley & Co. It was in fact an indirect result of an architectural commission, the west window of the church at Willingale Doe, that he was introduced to Little Braxted, but what brought him deep into Essex in the first place was probably a contact made through the Guild of St Alban, a connection that was to bring him much work over the years. A fellow member of the Guild was Hollingworth Tully Kingdon, who in 1878 became vicar of Good Easter, and it was natural that he should have asked Geldart to restore the chancel of his church, which had been damaged by lightning in 1877. This work seems the most likely explanation for the commission at nearby Willingale Doe, whose rector was the brother of the patron of Little Braxted.

The Guild was also responsible for another early job in Essex, which was in fact one of his largest architectural commissions: the rebuilding of St Nicholas, Rawreth. The rector here, since 1873, was Godfrey George Kemp, who was not only a clerical associate of the Guild of St Alban, but was also a cousin of Geldart's friend George Malim (one of the other members of the Brotherhood of St Dunstan), and had married another Malim cousin, Harriett Anne, in 1874; their son would be Geldart's godson. Kemp now wished to restore the church which had been unsatisfactorily rebuilt in 1823 by Thomas Hopper, County Surveyor of Essex.

The commission can in fact be dated back to October 1880, when the vestry approved his appointment and thanked him 'for his kind offer to prepare plans gratuitously' (ERO D/CF 20/2). The work involved a complete rebuilding, apart from the tower and part of the south aisle; in addition, there was to be a new north aisle (to be used as a children's aisle), and a new organ chamber on the south side of the chancel; part of the north aisle was screened off as a vestry. The rebuilt chancel was about 7ft longer than its predecessor, and was higher than the nave. By October 1881, the old church was gone and the foundations well advanced; the foundation stone of the new building was laid on 6 December 1881 (St Nicholas' Day), and the new church was dedicated on 21 November 1882.

The building is absolutely typical of its time: north aisle, vestry, organ chamber, large chancel, are all that an Anglo-Catholic churchman could have wanted in the 1880s. Furthermore, Geldart designed a complete set of fittings for the church, exhibited at the Ecclesiastical

Art Exhibition in 1882 by Cox Sons Buckley & Co. These comprised, according to the description in the exhibition catalogue, a lectern, rood screen, altar and reredos, all of oak; the east window and two memorial windows on the north side of the chancel; and a silver chalice and paten.

The windows on the north side of the chancel have not survived, the east window was apparently never executed, and the organ now stands at the west end of nave. Otherwise, Geldart's scheme is intact, including at least one example of a set of unusual frontals, worked by Kemp's wife, which were said to follow 'an ancient example': 'not hanging the full length, they form rather "apparels" to the linen cover, than Frontals as commonly understood' (EAE 1882, 71). An inscription on glazed tiles – the first use of this distinctive Geldart trade-mark – records that the reredos was given by George Malim and his brother Arthur in memory of their mother Harriett and her two sisters Mary Baseley and Katharine Hodson.

The work was not an unqualified success. The rebuilding had been necessary because Hopper's church, like the one it replaced, suffered from subsidence; rebuilding on the same footprint was perhaps not entirely sensible. The Essex earthquake of 1884 caused damage and on 18 November 1886 Geldart inspected the church with the builder, J.H. Wray of Chelmsford: 'Here I found the most awful cracks the whole east wall having fallen bodily away from its adjacent parts some 3 inches'. He returned in December with John Randall Vining, whom he describes as 'a practical architect', and

examined the awful breaches in the Chancel wall. Jacks were applied to the face of the E. wall & screwed but without the slightest effect save that the baulks buckled up wh. was just what might have been expected the sagacious Pitt having brought them 1/2 the size they should have been...  
(Diary, 18 Nov 1886)<sup>3</sup>

On 30 August 1894, he recorded that 'the Church is now braced up with iron ties & looks like a cripple but I believe is safe at last'.

In spite of these structural problems, which a more experienced (or 'practical') architect might have been able to avoid, Rawreth is important because it shows Geldart as capable of carrying out a major commission, his first project of any size, while pursuing his clerical career. The prominence given to the project at the Ecclesiastical Art Exhibition must also have helped to make his work better known. Although Pevsner (1965, 321) dismisses the design as 'rather gaudy', Norman Scarfe (1968, 151), a more sympathetic observer, calls it 'a *tour de force* by the Master of Little Braxted, the Rev. Ernest Geldart, in his prime'.

\* \* \*



Plate II Church of St Nicholas, Little Braxted: contemporary view from SE in about 1886, showing the N aisle and vestry added by Geldart in 1884 (Geldart 1886) *By permission of the British Library (4705.CC.14(3))*

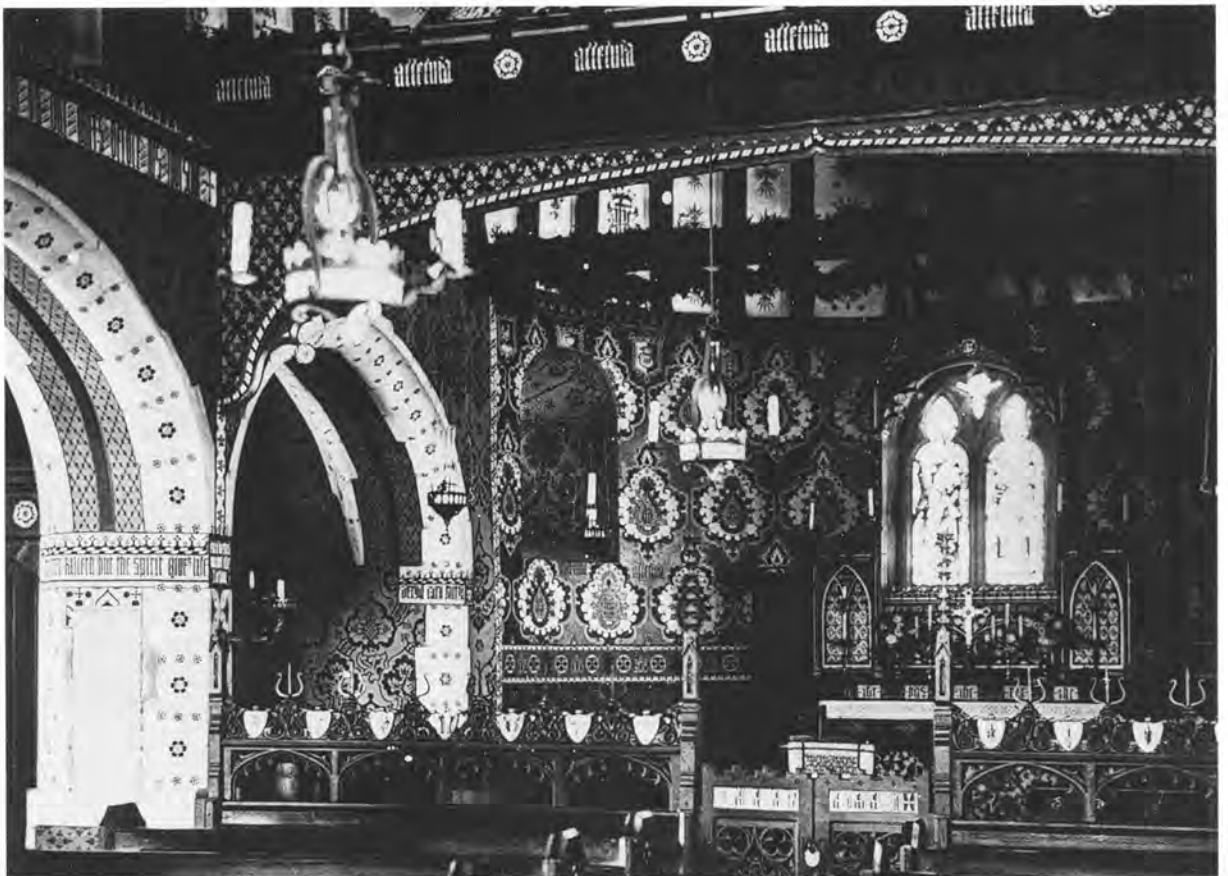


Plate III Church of St Nicholas, Little Braxted: view of the chancel in about 1886, showing the fittings and decorations introduced in 1884-5 (Geldart 1886) *By permission of the British Library (4705.CC.14(3))*



Once installed at Little Braxted, Geldart, like so many of his colleagues with whom he had been or would be involved as architect, set to work with the minimum of delay to introduce changes to the parish and the church which he felt were essential. By this point in the nineteenth century, the battles fought by the Ecclesiological Society (founded as the Cambridge Camden Society in 1839) had largely been won, and the principles of church restoration which they promoted were generally accepted. Moreover, the dogmatic phase of the Gothic Revival had passed and the current generation of architects was enjoying a new sense of stylistic freedom, characterised by the interest in Queen Anne architecture which Geldart demonstrated upon first seeing the rectory at Little Braxted.

As far as churches are concerned, most of those that were in need of restoration had been attended to; the focus of attention was now on those aspects which were very often omitted through lack of money – the decoration and fittings – and this was given added impetus by the revival of ritual in church services, especially Holy Communion, that had been growing steadily since the 1850s. One of the leading church architects at this time was G.F. Bodley (1827-1907), whom Geldart admired above all others: an exponent of a more English form of Gothic than the Continental forms favoured earlier in the century, with extensive decoration when funds permitted and elaborate furnishings and fittings to provide an appropriate setting for the celebration of the Holy Eucharist. It is ironic that one of Geldart's major commissions was to complete the furnishing of the chapel at Clumber Park, Nottinghamshire; the building was designed by Bodley, but he had been dismissed following a disagreement with his client, the Duke of Newcastle.

So it was that on that very first Sunday, 24 April 1881,

At 3.0 I said Evensong & before preaching opened my programme. The chief innovations I institute are the weekly offertory and the weekly celebration. Linen vestments, coloured stoles & altar candles I use without asking leave or mentioning the fact...

On 17 June, he was up in London inspecting a new organ proposed for the church, and the next few days were spent sending out appeals for funds to pay for it. On 30 July,

At 1/2 past 9 held a committee meeting at the Church to settle plans for the "restoration" My two churchwardens found [formed]? the meeting & we amicably arranged that I should be empowered to "spend the money". Came home big with resolve...

On 9 August, 'saw the Font lying out in the Church yard wh. looks as if Siggers has set to work... Wh. I find he has done. And the Church is rapidly becoming a wreck.'<sup>4</sup> The fabric of the church generally was in good condition at this time, having been restored by Ewan

Christian in 1856; in Geldart's own words, it was 'sound, strong and clean' (Geldart 1886, 11; Buckler 1856, 172-9). The changes Geldart made had much more to do with supplying those fittings and, as time went on, decorations which he felt to be essential adjuncts to worship. On 25 September, at a harvest festival service, Geldart's first innovations – architectural and liturgical – were unveiled. As well as the new organ, there was additional seating in the choir, and a new piscina, carved by Geldart himself from a block of stone left over from the old pulpit steps (Diary, 19 Aug 1881): significant changes, although not quite the 'complete renovation' reported by one local newspaper (cutting in Diary, 25 Sep 1881). There was as yet no resident choir, but this want was met by boys from St Andrew's, Plaistow, and the sermon was preached by George Godsell, vicar of St Andrew's; the preacher in the afternoon was H.T.W. Eyre, vicar of the neighbouring parish, Great Totham. The organist for the day was Charles W. Pearce, organist of St Clement's, Eastcheap, who later assisted Geldart with some of his musical compositions.

In the Register of Services, Geldart recorded tersely 'Lights Unleavened Bread Linen Vestments'. The newspapers were careful to report such potentially inflammatory features as the floral decorations, use of lighted candles, a procession, Eucharistic vestments, and characteristically High Church music, including Stainer's setting of Marbeck (cuttings in Diary, 25 Sep 1881). On this occasion, little comment was excited. The next day,

Bannister met me ... on the road & thus addressed me from the top of a clover cart. "That woke up Little Braxted, Sir, they've never seen anything like that before." I hope the awakening will be healthy. Poor Gooday did not seem quite to have approved of things, but said pathetically when I told him we were going back to our old ways next Sunday – "I hope so, it really was too much Sir, not but what it was a very good thing for one Sunday, it was the finest thing that could be for the Parish but not every Sunday."

(Diary, 26 Sep 1881)<sup>5</sup>

As time went on, and work on the church progressed, Geldart's relations with the local Protestants became less easy. He had had some first-hand experience of militant Protestants: he had been attacked in the local paper while at Cumbrae, and was in regular contact with those who had to endure persecution at St Alban's, Holborn. However, St Mary Magdalene, Paddington, was not considered unduly advanced: it 'has not the ornate Ritual of many other Catholic Parishes; nor has it been singled out for persecution, or attracted public notice consequent upon the present distress' (C.F.H. 1878, preface); and the same could be said of St Andrew's, Plaistow. Geldart had thus been spared the suffering of many of his colleagues, but the Low Church faction soon became aware of what he was up to at Little

Braxted.

No further work was done in 1882. For the Dedication Festival on 7 October 1883, the new east window (showing the Annunciation) and the small chancel window of St Nicholas were ready (Register of Services, 7 Oct 1883), but the most important changes came in 1884, with the building of the north aisle (plates I-II). Geldart fell foul of his bishop over this, although for what reasons it is not clear:

Yesterday was noteworthy as the day I received an Episcopal admonition & injunction to "put myself right" or desist from building the new aisle. He told me I was not above the "Law" though a man of taste & architectural knowledge & other home thrusts [?] of that kind. I wrote him a letter equally strong setting forth in dated order the facts of the case (seemingly perverted by the Rural Dean who had informed against me[])  
(Diary, 9 Aug 1884)

The following day a letter arrived giving leave to continue the work, which had in fact been going on since the church closed for building work on 15 June. On 17 September, he recorded in his diary that he 'began painting the apse', and for the rest of the month he was '[living] at the Church... eating sandwiches in the Vestry & only going home to dinner' (Diary, 2-4 Oct 1884). The fittings were the responsibility of Cox Sons Buckley & Co, whose inefficiency on this occasion added to his worries; the builder was Henry Gozzett, later responsible for the structural work at Great Braxted and Great Totham. The new aisle was opened at the Dedication Festival on 5 October. As before, Pearce was the organist, assisted on this occasion by a trumpeter. Little Braxted now had its own choir, appearing for the first time in cassocks and surplices, supplemented by choristers from Plaistow. The preachers were J.E. Sedgwick, rector of Stanford-le-Hope (where Geldart had just finished rebuilding the tower) and H. Wellesley Wesley of Hatchford.

The changes to the building consisted of the new north aisle, intended for schoolchildren, and to the east of it a new vestry; in the extra space thus created there was also room to rehouse the organ (which had been enlarged) and the font. There were new choir stalls, low chancel screen, and a new altar and reredos, as well as new lighting (plates III-IV). The local press (cuttings in Diary, 17-18 Oct 1884) eagerly reported both the structural alterations and the service, in a way that seems calculated to stimulate controversy:

The officiating clergymen wore coloured stoles and the epistoler was further robed in a dark cope with light blue border. At the communion service the celebrant was the Rector, who wore a long chasuble of white and gold and carried a biretta. Crossings and genuflections were frequent, and a layman discharged the duties of "server."

Another report noted:

A new chancel screen has been completed, and the chancel can now be shut off from the remainder of the Church by gates. Inside the chancel the alterations and decorations are of marked character. Before the induction of the present Rector, the services were of the most "low Church" type, but since that time the services have been as greatly altered as has the interior of the Church. New choir stalls now take the place of the well-worn barrel organ: and the reredos and altar are of the most elaborate type.

The predictable response came in a letter signed 'A CHURCHMAN', which concluded:

Surely such proceedings demand immediate episcopal action. Away, away with such childish ceremonials, absurdities, and fantastic babyish millinery.

Undaunted, Geldart continued to adorn the church, introducing a long case clock which 'by the aid of Polley of Coggeshall' he 'turned into a very ecclesiastical looking piece of furniture' (Diary, 23 Dec 1884).<sup>6</sup> In 1885, he carried out the greater part of the painted decoration of the interior. Some work had been done in 1884, probably the background decoration, when Geldart was assisted by Dudley Lewis of Witham, but 1885 saw the completion of the principal paintings. These were executed by Geldart himself, painted on to canvas that was then stuck in place (Diary, 3 Aug 1885) – the technique known as marouflage. There was also a new window in the south wall, made by Cox Sons Buckley & Co, of four martyrs: Stephen, Agnes, Alban and Cecilia. As usual, the work was ready in time for the combined Dedication Festival and Harvest Thanksgiving. Geldart reckoned that the church looked 'gorgeous' (Diary, 4 Oct 1885), which is no doubt what he had been striving for. According to one report, 'the church has undergone a complete change in its interior, and scarcely an inch of space is left of its walls which has not been artistically adorned with stencil work or paintings representing religious subjects' (cutting in Diary, 11 Oct 1885). Plaistow again lent their choristers; this year there was a local organist, from Coggeshall, assisted by a violinist. The preachers were C. Grinstead of Brentwood and H.R. Baker of Woolwich. The growing fame of Little Braxted ensured that the church was crowded in the morning and packed in the afternoon (Register of Services, 4 Oct 1885), with large numbers of visitors from nearby Witham, Kelvedon and Rivenhall.

Once again the newspapers were careful to report the controversial details of the service: no fewer than ten candles, the substitution of a 'high celebration' for 'the usual order of morning prayer', and the use of the eastward position. Grinstead went so far as to produce a coloured stole and kiss it before placing it on his

shoulders. Geldart exacerbated the situation after the service when, in explaining why the text of the creed was not painted on the walls, he remarked that 'this church was not a Protestant church'. The result of all this was a full church the following Sunday, 'owing to the sensational articles or letters rather in the local paper – "tolle lege"' (Diary, 11 Oct 1885)<sup>7</sup>. The correspondence was not all one-sided, but most was critical and urged 'episcopal interference'. On 4 November, Geldart wrote:

It is seen that the Extraordinary Service at Little Braxted still gives food for thought to the correspondents of the local press. But as the floods have been out for the last 3 weeks no more visitors have come from Witham. My church wardens both take a homely but sensible view of the case to wit "What business is it of people at Braintree or Brentwood what we do here!" In which sentiment I heartily concur.

By Christmas, however, he clearly felt that his innovations were having some beneficial effect. It was

Cold & dull but ecclesiastically a bright day, for at least my people agreed to keep Christmas & 40 communicants made me feel indeed that something has been done.

On 3 January 1886 'I wore the vestments for the 1st time at the "Protestant Mass" but nobody took any notice'. By 8 March, the public reaction was still in his mind, but fortunately

The local papers just now have found a successor to me & are wrangling over Sir Claude de Crespigny's having been foolish enough to act as assistant hangman to Berry in disposing of the 3 burglars at Carlisle & more than foolish enough to divulge the fact...<sup>8</sup>

The Dedication Festival in October 1886 was uneventful, although well attended; the four paintings on the reredos, illustrating the Old Testament origins of the Holy Eucharist, had been installed a few days before (Diary, 1 Oct 1886; plate IV). Geldart's Protestant opponents had fortunately not been aware of a visit by 22 members of the Guild of St Alban on 2 August, which included vespers with cope and incense. The Guildsmen were impressed:

Much as they had heard, and read of the church in Brother Geldart's little book of description, all who had not seen the building before were greatly struck with the beauty of its interior, which is a mass of colour exquisitely blended and harmonised. Every detail is wrought in the best taste, and there are three splendid paintings on the walls...  
(*Guildsman*, 3 (1886-7), 215-6)

This was the last of Geldart's work on St Nicholas, Little Braxted, although it had been his intention, 'if spared', to put in more stained glass (cutting in Diary, 11 Oct 1885). He also had plans, approved by the vestry in 1886 but never carried out, for improvements to the churchyard, including a lychgate, for heightening the steeple so that it could take three bells, and for introducing a screen over the chancel beam (Minute Book, 1 May 1886). The following Easter he suffered the accident which was to have a drastic effect upon his clerical and architectural career.

\* \* \*

The six years from February 1881 to April 1887 form a distinct period in Geldart's life, during which he combined his work as parish priest with that of architect most effectively. In 1881, Geldart had many reasons to feel that, in spite of the false start of Hatchford and the curious interlude of Cumbrae, he was well established. He was rector of a parish which, although small and providing only a meagre income, offered scope for putting into effect his doctrinal principles. The fact that parish work was undemanding enabled him 'to help his brethren spiritually as well as architecturally', as the *Church Portrait Journal* put it in a profile of him published in June 1885. He was known as the author of a number of published works, including the *Missa de sanctis* (1874), *A short explanation of the ceremonies of the Holy Eucharist*, and *The church afloat and in paribus* (1879), and he had provided the illustrations for Orby Shipley's *Ritual of the altar* (1878).<sup>9</sup> His work had been exhibited at the Ecclesiastical Art Exhibition (the manager, John Hart, was a Fellow of the Guild of St Alban) in 1879, and it would feature there for the next few years. By 1881, he had also entered into a more or less formal relationship with Cox Sons Buckley & Co, which was to play an important part in his life for more than ten years, not least from a financial point of view. Little Braxted was a small parish, with a population of only 117 in 1881, and the income was correspondingly low: only £169 a year. A pay rise from Cox's in 1882 – unfortunately he does not record the amount – enabled him to buy a pony, but he does note that in 1892 they were paying him £225 a year (Diary, 8 June 1882, 26 May 1892). His connection with them also led to the publication, in 1882, of *The art of garnishing churches at Christmas and other times*, a work which established Geldart's reputation as an authority on the subject of temporary and floral decorations in churches.

But although he needed money, the work which he did for his clerical brethren was gratis. Much of this work was, not surprisingly, local, and grew naturally from the contact he had with his neighbouring colleagues, both social and professional. The Register of Services for Little Braxted, which Geldart started when he took over the parish, records the many occasions on which he preached in other churches, while someone else preached in his, often a straight exchange. The Register includes mention of visits to or from 44

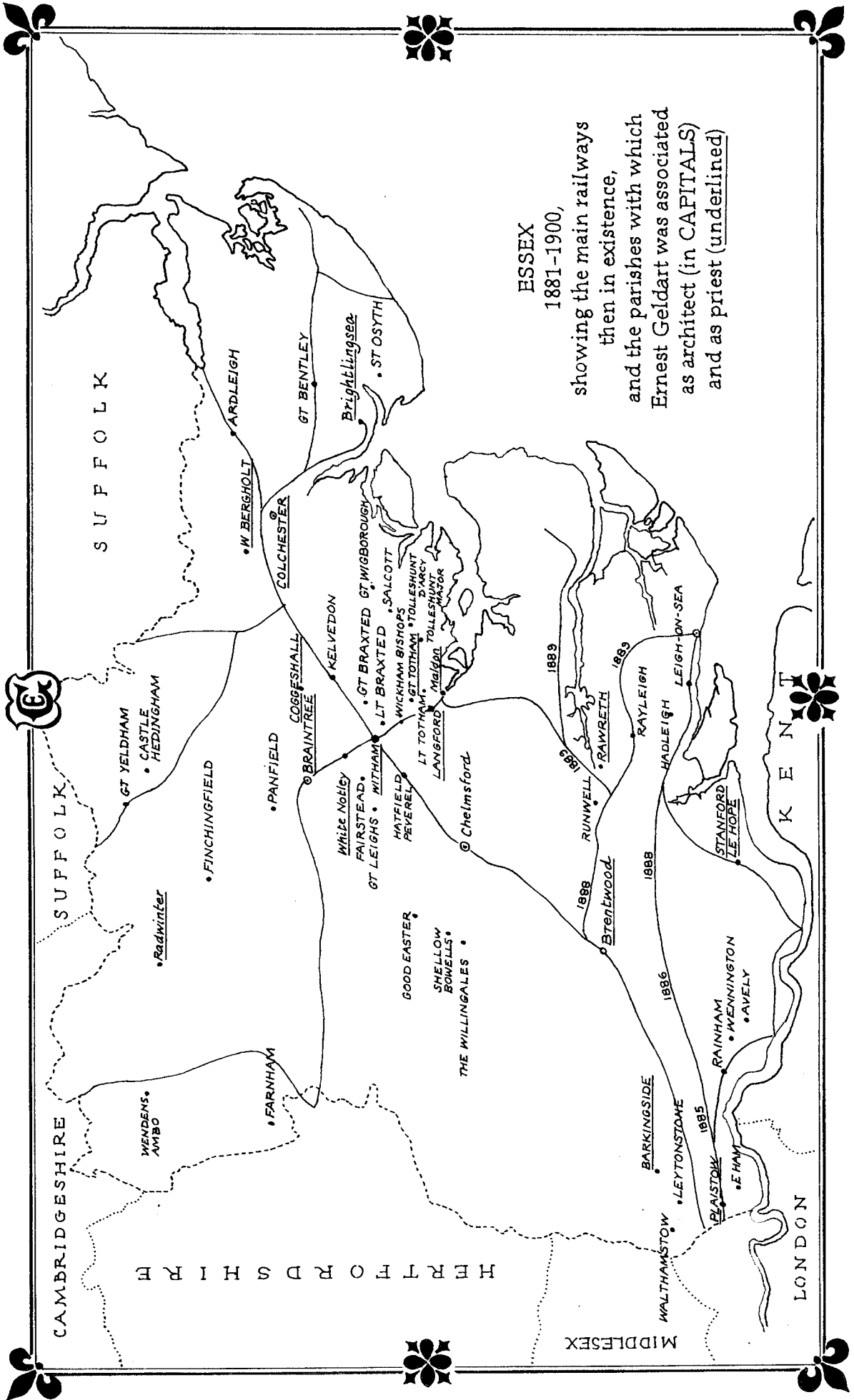


Fig. 1 Sketch map of Essex, 1881-1900, showing the places with which Geldart was principally associated. The border is based upon a design by Geldart *Virginia Fraser*

'significant' places: that is, places with which visits were reciprocated, or which can be associated with a job. 35 of the places (80 per cent) were connected with architectural work: that is, Geldart preached, or otherwise attended a service, at a church which he altered or decorated. 25 of the places (57 per cent) involved exchange visits, and in only nine of these was no architectural work involved; 16 reciprocal visits (64 per cent) were to places connected with jobs, and 12 of these were within Essex (Fig. 1). 19 jobs were in places with which there was no reciprocity, but in eight instances this is due to their remoteness or similar reasons, and the commissions can be attributed to connections such as the Guild of St Alban. This clearly demonstrates the extent to which Geldart's clerical and architectural careers were intertwined at this stage of his life.

One of his first commissions after arriving at Little Braxted was from H.T.W. Eyre, the vicar of Great Totham, who asked him to design a new east window in memory of his mother; this was made by Cox Sons Buckley & Co, and dedicated in 1882. Subsequent work at that church included a private pew for the de Crespigny family in the form of a south transept, and an extension of the north aisle to form an organ chamber and vestry. There was also some restoration work to do at Little Totham, although this seems to have been minimal.

Not surprisingly, the Du Canes found work for him to do at Great Braxted. The church there, All Saints', lies within the park, the rest of the village having been moved in the eighteenth century; but although Sir Charles Du Cane was Geldart's patron at Little Braxted, the patrons of Great Braxted were Corpus Christi College, Cambridge. Du Cane was, however, patron of Coggeshall, for which Geldart designed the rood screen and organ case (plate VIII). At Great Braxted, he was responsible for a new west end, including rebuilt tower and belfry, in 1883 (plate IX) and in 1889 designed a new east window as a memorial to his patron, who had died that year. In the 1890s he was responsible for new choir stalls and finally, in 1919, for a reredos, erected as a war memorial. He also designed some cottages for the Trustees of the Braxted Estate.

Further afield, but still within the limits of daily travel, J.E. Sedgwick of Stanford-le-Hope asked Geldart to rebuild the tower, part of a general restoration that had been started in 1874 by an architect called H.M. Linklater but halted when Linklater was ordained in 1877. This work was completed in 1884, although the chronogram which adorns the tower ('ECCE TURRIS OLIM STRATA DEO RURSUS EXORNATA RESONANTI VOCE GRATA' – 'This tower once down to God again rebuilt rings with pleasing strain') spells 1883;<sup>10</sup> the design of the tower was based upon that of nearby Prittlewell. In 1891, Geldart added two vestries at the west end of the church, and also designed the lychgate. Another job in the south of the county was the restoration of the church at Wennington, which dates from 1883 and continued until 1909; and in the

neighbouring parish, Rainham, he was similarly engaged between 1885 and 1909 on a restoration that included some fine stained glass by Percy Bacon & Brothers.

To the east, he was called upon by D.H. Francis, who had been curate, then vicar of Canning Town since 1876 and in 1884 became vicar of Great Bentley. At first he planned to restore the church but by 1886 had decided instead to build a mission chapel and infant school in an isolated part of his parish called Aingers Green. This opened in November 1887 but within a few years had become a Wesleyan chapel. A scheme of some significance which, however, came to nothing was the proposed rebuilding of St Mary's, West Bergholt. Geldart drew up plans in 1886 and a faculty was granted that year, but nothing was carried out and in 1891 the rector, Howell Patisson Lewis Blood, resigned; he was received into the Roman Catholic church the following year.

In referring to the size of his parish, the *Church Portrait Journal* suggests how Geldart managed to combine his duties as a priest with his activities as a designer. Indeed, on Christmas Eve 1891 he noted in his diary that he managed to visit every house in the parish in a single day. In the Register of Services, Geldart recorded not only all the services held at Little Braxted, but also all his absences from the parish, and who took the services on those occasions. He usually ensured that he was back on Sundays, when there were three services to take (at 8 o'clock, 11 o'clock and 3 o'clock): in 1881-2, he was absent on only one Sunday, in 1882-3 on ten (largely accounted for by a trip to Canada in August and September), in 1883-4 on four, in 1884-5 on nine, and in 1886-7 on ten. This conscientious attention to his duties bore fruit. Although at times he was depressed by the poor attendance in church – on Christmas Day 1884, according to his diary, '18 communicants miserable congregations at 11 & 3 I suppose it is Essex!' – the general trend was encouraging. Between 1881 and 1887, the number of communicants during the year rose from 280 to 681, an increase of 143 per cent, although the number of services, including services of Holy Communion, increased only slightly.

The physical location of Little Braxted, only a mile or two from Witham, made life easier than it might otherwise have been: Witham is on the main railway line from London to Ipswich and Norwich, and was also a junction for branch lines to Maldon and Braintree (Fig. 1). It was therefore easy for Geldart to get up to London and back in a day – to work at Cox's, for example – and for visits to places in the south of the county, such as Stanford-le-Hope or Rainham, it was easier to go up to Liverpool Street and down again from Fenchurch Street, than to go by road across country; for example, on 7 November 1882, he went 'Up to town down to Rainham', and on 26 March 1889 he records using 'the new line' from Shenfield to Maldon, Southminster and Southend. The effect of railways upon the development of architectural practice has been

remarked upon in connection with Pugin and George Gilbert Scott, and Geldart certainly depended upon them for some of his more remote jobs.

Within five years of coming to Little Braxted, therefore, Geldart was enjoying no small success as a parish priest and as a designer, managing to combine the two roles and coping with the rigours of working, on occasion, many hours' travel from home.

\* \* \*

On Low Sunday (17 April) 1887, George Malim came for the day, and wrote afterwards that

instead of preaching a sermon at the afternoon service, [Geldart] is in the habit of giving a brief review of his work, and of the state of the parish during the past year. His report this year was a very encouraging one. When he first went to Little Braxted six years ago, the total number of communicants at Easter was sixteen; they have gone on increasing till they now number nearly sixty... What is particularly noticeable is the cordiality of relations between our brother and his little flock. The beautiful little church has received an addition to its attractions since the guild's visit last August, in four paintings in panels added to the reredos... (*Guildsman*, 3rd ser. 3 (1886-7), 404-5)

Geldart's own account of the day is coloured by what happened next. His report to the parish concluded with the words, 'Now my friends I leave you to go in search of what people dont always find – "health"' (Diary, 17 Apr 1887). This is a reference to his recurring poor health, usually made much worse by Lenten fasting; this year, however, 'by Doctors and Priests orders I have eaten & drunk my fill all through Lent & am still in a poor way – heart refusing to do its work' (Diary, 29 Mar 1887). On 18 April he accordingly set off for a much needed holiday, intending to visit relations in Norfolk and Yorkshire. 'About 200 yards from the Rectory the wretched old horse fell heavily I, being thrown out, snapped my thigh on the front of the cart & then flew right over the horses head...' (Diary, written 21 Nov 1887). Not until June was the leg put into plaster, and only in September was Geldart able to put his foot to the ground once more. In November he spent five weeks convalescing at Malvern, with a view to starting work again, but on the way back through London, staying with friends at the Westminster Palace Hotel, he fell and broke the thigh again. Thanks to the generosity of his friends, who lived at the hotel, he stayed there until February, when he was fitted with a fine new splint, 'rather grand than otherwise being covered with white leather & lined with chamois, buckles silver plated & straps of white silk price £4.10 all complete' (Diary, 13 Feb 1888). He completed his recovery at the Grand Hotel, Eastbourne, and was more or less back to normal by the beginning of July 1888.

He was not, however, ready to return to parish

duties. For most of the first year of his absence, services were taken by a succession of clergymen. Everyone rallied round, and the experience might even have been rewarding for the parishioners, but such a state of affairs could not continue indefinitely. In March 1888 he advertised for a locum:

CAN any PRIEST afford to take charge of a Country Parish for 12 months for a nett income of about £56 and a furnished rectory? Church services "thorough." 110 people. Healthy country. – Address Rev. E. Geldart, Grand Hotel, Eastbourne.  
(cutting in Diary, 10 Mar 1888)

– the word 'thorough' is a code word for 'ritualistic'. He wrote in his diary that this 'produced all sorts of answers but no fruits'; however, by April he had appointed a curate, George Rogers. This was not a success. The Register lists services taken by him between April and September; after this, Geldart noted, 'the curate in charge appears to have lost all record of his performance or non-performance of his duty'. At the end of the year, Easter 1889, Geldart was unable to compile his normal annual statistics, 'owing to the neglect of the book by the curate George Rogers'. Geldart had returned to Little Braxted to resume his duties just before Easter, although he had some difficulty in getting 'the obstreperous Rogers' out of the rectory (Diary, 3 Apr 1889) and then found that 'the whole house is filthy torn, scraped, marked & spoilt' (6 Apr 1889).

There were other consequences, less easily remedied. Attendance at Holy Communion slipped back, from a high of 681 in 1886-7 to 443 in 1889-90 and 433 in 1890-91; as he wrote in his diary (10 Jul 1888), 'the locum tenens at Braxted has pretty well contrived to empty the Church & gives "general dissatisfaction".' On the other hand, life was made easier when the bishop gave leave for Holy Communion to be celebrated at the rectory on weekdays, thus saving the journey down and back up the hill to church (Diary, 23 Apr 1889); on 10 June, 'Said Mass in the oratory for the 1st time with the Bishops leave & licence'. The 'oratory' must have been a room set aside at the rectory; the chapel was not built until 1896.

One result of his injury was that he had been put to considerable expense:

After dinner I took the trouble to reckon up the payments by other people for me during my accidental illness & found that the total of such benefactions came to 867£! Verily I stand astonished this does not include my own earnings nor the borrowing of 200£ on mortgage. Evidently broken limbs are costly luxuries but in my case & thank God for it others have taken the chief burden. (Diary, 24 Jun 1889)

Fortunately, the bishop's support was not just spiritual:

The dear old Bishop besides giving me his blessing & leave to celebrate in the oratory on week days presented me with a birthday gift which being opened proved to be a cheque for 20£!...  
(Diary, 23 Apr 1889)

Geldart’s financial plight altered his work methods. Whereas before his accident it appears that his services were unpaid (apart from his work for Cox’s), he now began to charge. In 1891, he was asked to restore Salcott Church, Essex, but then

Got a letter from Musselwhite [the rector] saying that he had been told I received full architects fees was it true! I answered sadly but firmly – quite so & returned his old plans for Chancellor to make new ones on.  
(Diary, 15 Oct 1891)

There was also work closer to home, such as the restoration of the rood screen in St Nicolas’, Witham – the base of the fifteenth-century screen remained but the upper parts, including the canopy, had been cut off at various times – and a new chancel screen, followed by the organ case, in the Church of St Peter-ad-Vincula, Coggeshall, as well as the restoration of St Nicholas’, Tolleshunt Major. In Little Braxted, he built a reading room as an extension to the school (cutting the foundation stone himself, using his brother Frank’s penknife); it opened on Whitsun Monday, 1890, with a tea for 123, after which Geldart ‘delivered a harangue & then we had magic lantern’ (Diary, 26 May 1890).

This paints a happy picture of parish life, but in fact he was in very poor spirits at this time. There were, as we have seen, the financial consequences of his accident, but there were other problems as well. In July 1889,

I heard as newspapers would say on “good authority” that the Church Assoc. is actually contemplating prosecuting me! They are looking for the 3 parishioners. This will at least prevent my being dull if it comes to anything.  
(Diary, 28 Jul 1889)

Under the procedure laid down in the Public Worship Regulation Act, a declaration of unlawful proceedings had to be made to the bishop by the local archdeacon or a churchwarden of the parish or any three parishioners. The instigator of this attack was perhaps not far to seek, for Geldart found in December that

The County Chronicle is grievously exercised at my preaching at Witham or at least Hogben the haircutter is. As witness the following “Cutting” What on Earth I have done to rouse his spite, except – that my hair has never yet been submitted to his tender hands – I cannot guess. Possibly he thinks that willing or unwilling I must be “snipped”. Still I hope to survive & preach again at Witham!  
(Diary, 15 Dec 1889)

A few days later, on 21 December 1889, he reflected upon the sixteenth anniversary of his ordination:

Ah me I am a sadder if a wiser man today than then when all was new & bright & when I read the Gospel & thought well (not much of a preferment God is my witness) but still that it was a bright prospect...

Work seems to have been his refuge from these worries, and over the next two years the difficulties and the compensating activity continued. Hogben still persecuted him; in October 1891,

Received among other letters one from Champion Lodge enclosing a startling Bill headed. Shame: Shame: Shame: & setting forth my enormities. This beautiful effusion of Hogbens my man James has been circulating. I wonder whether he expects a character after this! The domestics departed. James I politely informed him might go elsewhere for a character.

(Diary, 3 Oct 1891)

The diocese as a whole had something of a reputation for ritualism at this time, to judge by a booklet published by the Church Association in 1892, *Ritualism rampant in the diocese of St Albans*.<sup>11</sup> This included a list of 180 benefices (out of a total of 627 in the diocese) which were ‘more or less identified with the Ritualistic movement’, giving the name of the incumbent and noting their particular ritualistic practices: eastward position, altar lights, linen vestments, coloured vestments and incense. Only two parishes used incense, but in the previous ten years the number adopting the eastward position had doubled, from 76 to 147, and the use of altar lights had jumped from 17 to 82. Geldart had used linen vestments, coloured stoles and altar lights from the start (Diary, 24 Apr 1881), although not until 1886 for ordinary late celebrations (Register of Services, 3 Jan, 14 Feb 1886), and he did not use incense for a public service at Little Braxted until 1896 (Diary, 1 Oct 1896). Of the 180 benefices, Geldart was associated in one way or another with 23, and in the list he is additionally identified as a member of both the English Church Union and the Confraternity of the Blessed Sacrament.

The blame for this state of affairs was placed at the door of the bishop, J.W. Festing (1837-1902), who succeeded T.L. Claughton (1808-1892) in 1890. Although Geldart got on well enough with Claughton (he refers to him as ‘the dear old Bishop’ in his diary, 23 Apr 1889), and had been ordained deacon by him in 1873 when he was bishop of Rochester, Claughton was not sympathetic towards the ritualists. In his charges to the diocese, he warned against ritual, and the danger in which it placed the church: ‘every day’s experience tells us that the dangers which threaten the Church of England are from within, and not from without’ (Claughton 1873, 4). One of the most notorious

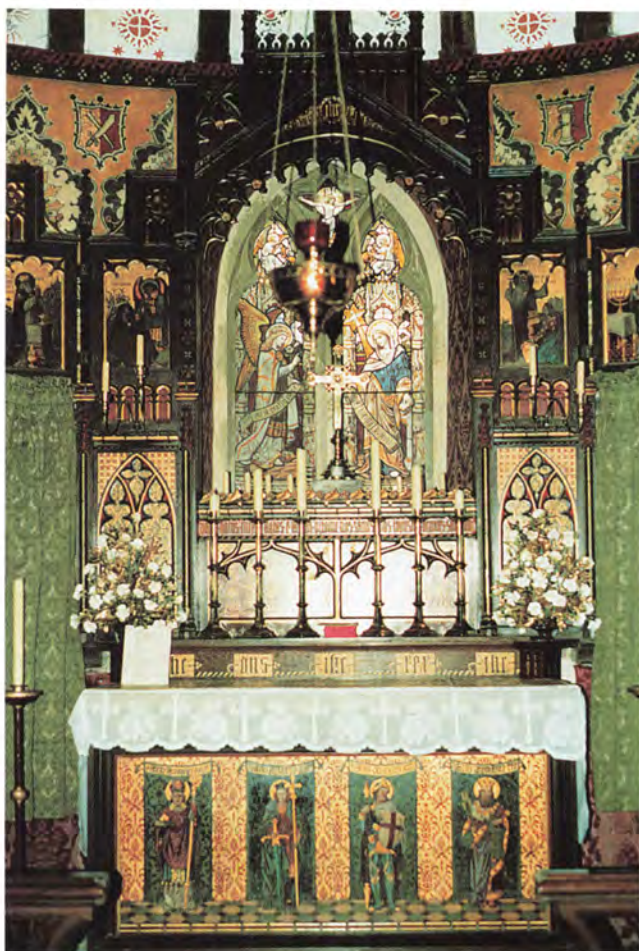


Plate IV Church of St Nicholas, Little Braxted: view of the altar and E window *James Bettley*

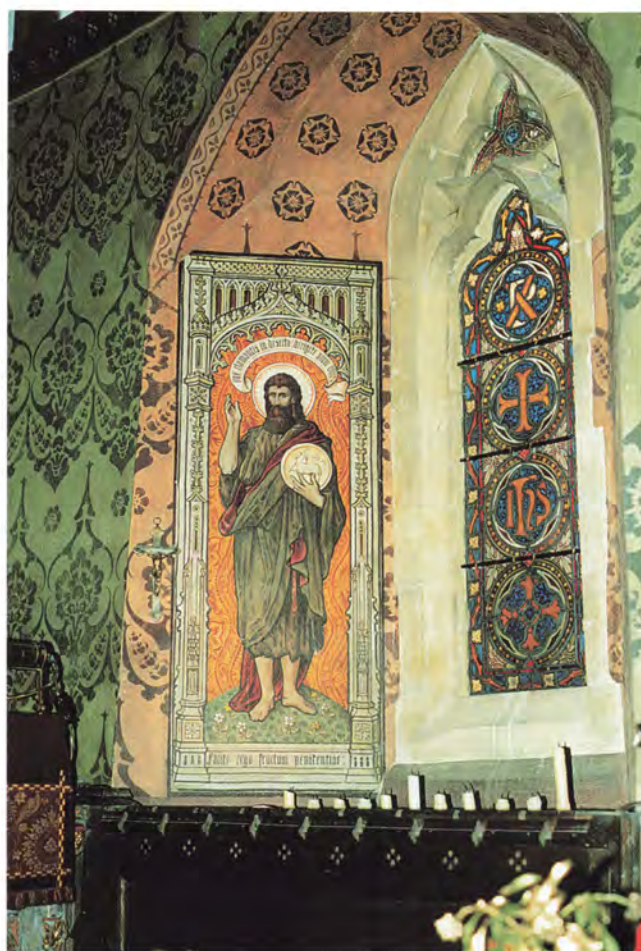


Plate V Church of St Nicholas, Little Braxted: 'Vox clamantis in deserto': Geldart's painting of St John the Baptist on the S wall of the chancel. The glass in the window is earlier, and probably dates from the restoration of 1856  
*James Bettley*

prosecutions under the Public Worship Regulation Act was of a priest in his diocese, Arthur Tooth, which, as bishop, he had the power to veto; but by 1878 he had come to see that the Act was not the answer and resorting to the law would not dispel 'this bitter root of controversy that has sprung up and troubled us, which causes so much mutual distrust and absolute disaffection to the best interests of the Church or Body of Christ' (Claughton 1878, 2-3, 32). We have seen that in 1884 he tried to curb Geldart's alterations at Little Braxted. Festing, on the other hand, was known for his High Church sympathies, and what gave rise to the Church Association's pamphlet was the appointment of E.N. Powell, Vice-Chairman of the Local Branch of the English Church Union, as vicar of St Stephen's, Upton Park, a church which was regarded proprietorially by the evangelicals. Festing was said to have signed three petitions in support of ritualism, and was patron of 34 of the 180 ritualistic benefices (*Ritualism rampant*, 2-4).

At the beginning of 1892, Geldart went to see Festing,

to whom I spread out all the circumstances of my position at Little Braxted. He listened very kindly promised he would do what he could, & gave me his

blessing. (Diary, 13 Jan 1892)

This resulted in the offer of Ashwell, in Hertfordshire (but at that time in the same diocese, St Albans), but although the income was £481,

I did not feel very responsive. [The bishop of Colchester] told me that neither "vestments nor vagaries" other than they would be possible there[.] I replied "May I say that I do not consider vestments to be vagaries at all!["]

(Diary, 14 Feb 1892)

On 17 March, he 'went to bed and stayed there for a fortnight', followed by convalescence at Walton-on-the-Naze ('the place is dreadful the Church alarming to a degree – but the air the sea & the beach are all splendid', he wrote on 24 March). While he was laid up, the Revd T.T. Carter

wrote to suggest my going to Clewer as 3rd Chaplain – answer a polite "no". This is all we are taken to be worth nowadays 150£ & no house & the junior of 3.

(Diary, 19 Apr 1892)





Plate VI Church of St Mary the Virgin, Ardleigh: the interior looking E, showing Geldart's decoration in the chancel and the earlier decoration of the chancel arch (Bell & Beckham, c.1886-8) *James Bettley*

Nonetheless, on Low Sunday, 24 April, '11th anniversary of my coming here in 1881... I read my Parish statement & announced my resignation'.

His resignation was later withdrawn, but this shows how low his spirits had sunk. He was in poor health, he was being harassed by the Protestant Hogben, and there were perhaps other, unspecified difficulties in the parish, suggested by his talk with the bishop of St Albans; but the main problem – or the problem which, if solved, could put everything right – was that he was in love, and he was finding the path of true love to be very rough. One of his pupils from Hatchford days – in fact, 'my old & best of pupils' – was Geoffrey Jackson, son of Colonel Raynsford Jackson, of a Lancashire cotton family. Geoffrey went on to Clifton and then, on 1880, he turned up at Cumbrae. Even at the time, Geldart knew it to be 'A day to be marked with a white stone' (Diary, 29 May 1880). After a fortnight's holiday he travelled south with Geoff to Lostock Hall, Lancashire, where, on 14 June 1880, 'I found Geoff's mother two sisters & a younger sister & a brother'.

This is his first recorded meeting with Catharine Jackson. His courting is recorded intermittently and poignantly over the following twelve years, including at least one 'final' rejection of his hand in 1889, but he eventually won her round and they were married in London on 7 November 1893.

Marriage changes most people's lives, and Geldart's was no exception. The Jacksons had money, and Catharine brought some of it with her; certainly enough to turn the rectory at Little Braxted inside out, and to install a grand piano (Diary, 6 Jan 1894), and presumably enough to free Geldart of the financial worries from which he had been suffering since his accident. It may be only a coincidence, but after the



Plate VII Church of St Mary the Virgin, Ardleigh: detail of chancel ceiling *James Bettley*

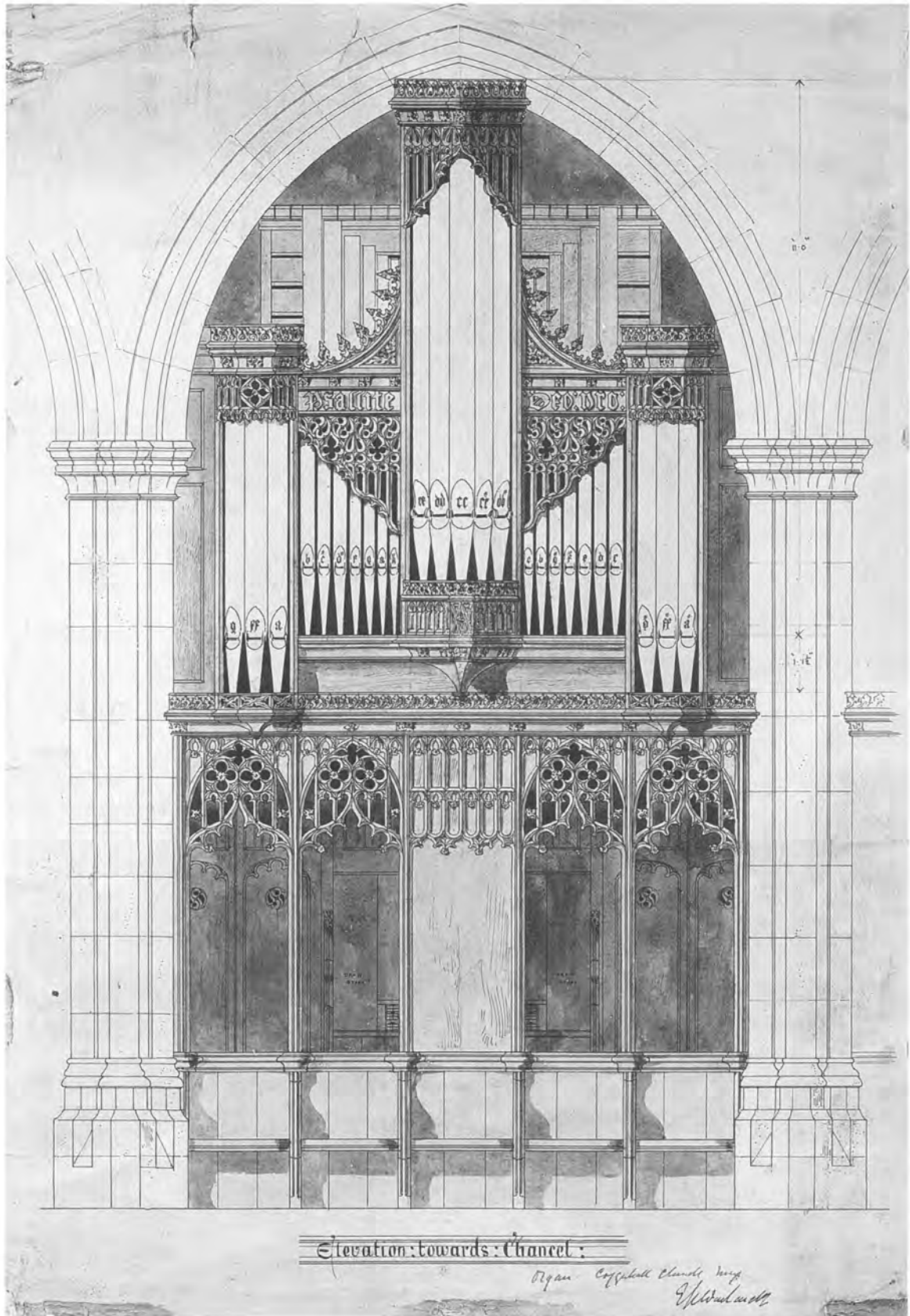


Plate VIII Church of St Peter-ad-Vincula, Coggeshall: design for the organ case, 1884 *The Metropolitan Museum of Art, Exchange, Royal Institute of British Architects, 1960 (60.724.45)*

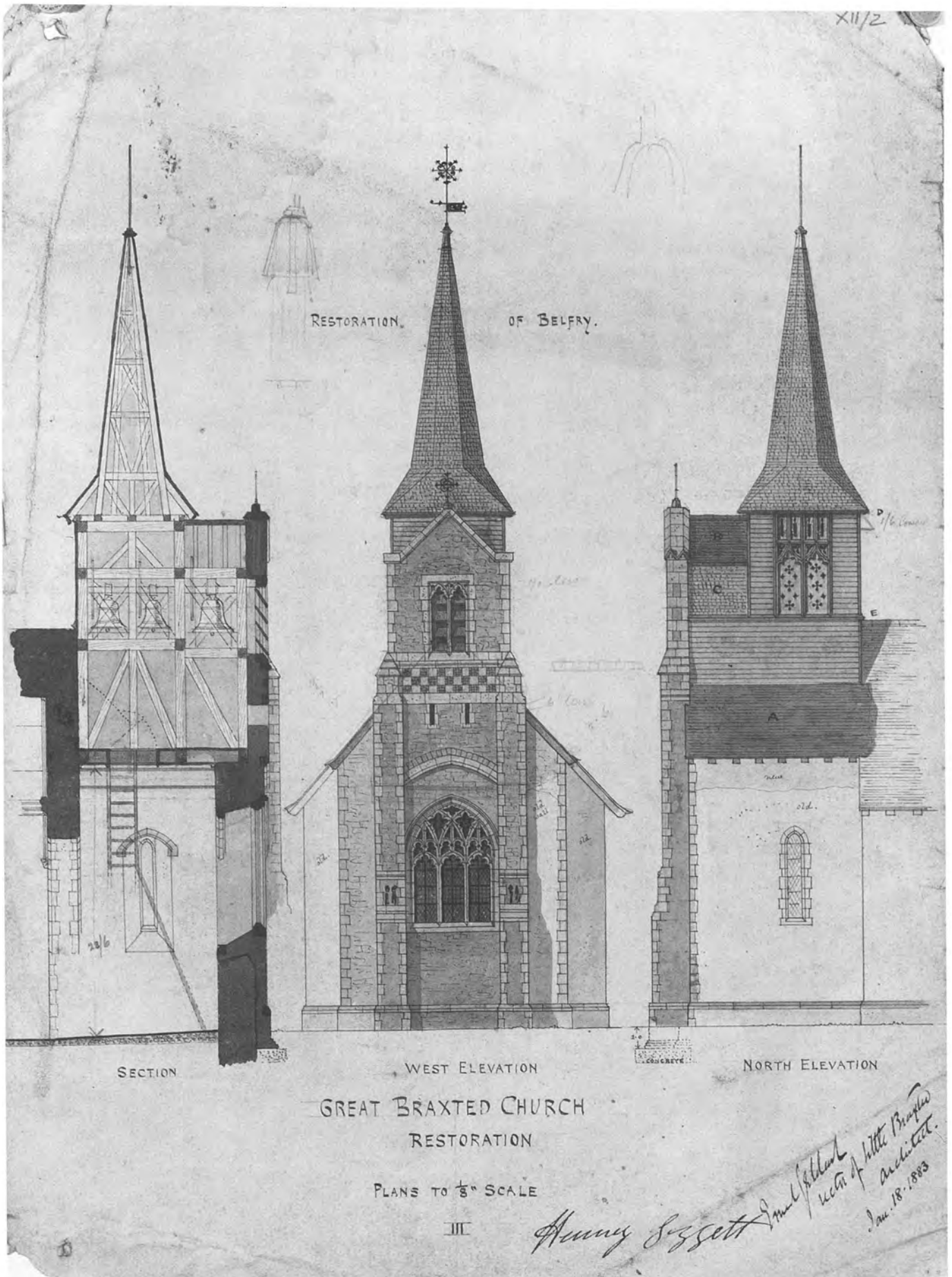


Plate IX Church of All Saints, Great Braxted: contract drawing for the rebuilding of the W end, 1883  
RIBA Library Drawings Collection

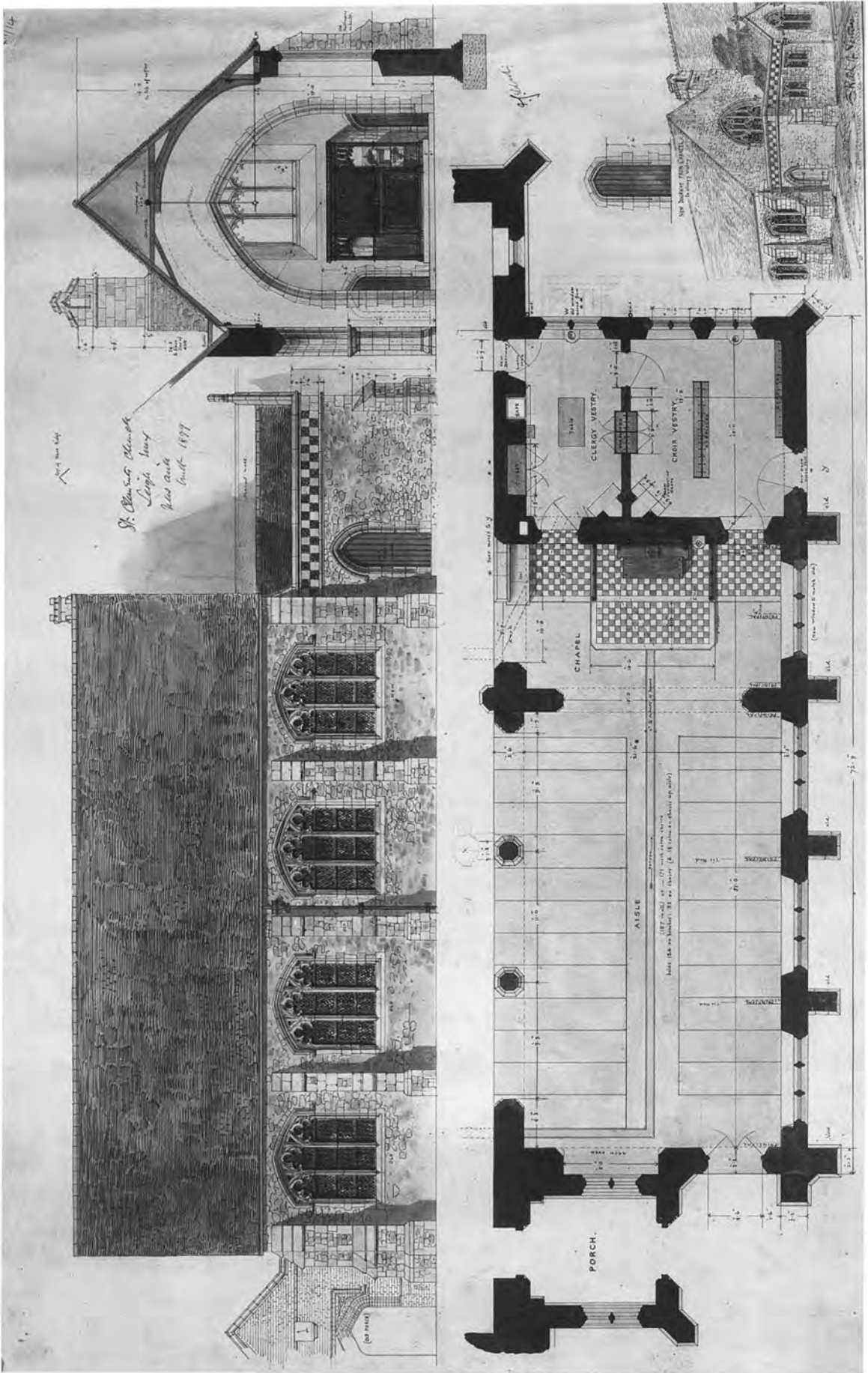


Plate X Church of St Clement, Leigh-on-Sea: design for the addition of the S aisle, c.1898 RIBA Library Drawings Collection

wedding, no more is heard of Cox Sons Buckley & Co, with whom his relationship had been primarily commercial. Instead, he began working with Percy Bacon & Brothers, whom he visited at their premises in Newman Street, London, but who also came down to Little Braxted on more or less social occasions. On 29 December 1894, for example, Catharine Geldart noted in her diary that 'The Bacon brothers came over to lunch & dinner – a merry day – after lunch they went over to Langford, E. going part way as guide, (object of walk new window under consideration in church)...'

However, even if he now had less need to supplement his income, there is no indication that Geldart reduced the amount of architectural work he took on, nor that he reversed his decision to charge fees. A number of larger projects were started in the years following his marriage, including work at St Clement's, Leigh-on-Sea (plate X), St Nicholas', Tolleshunt d'Arcy, St Stephen's, Great Wigborough (plate XI), and St Mary's, Wendens Ambo, as well as a number of minor projects for furnishings and fittings. The fact that he was, if anything, *seeking* work is demonstrated by the fact that in 1895 he made a notable return to the Ecclesiastical Art Exhibition, held that year in Norwich. Religious controversy no longer plagued Geldart at Little Braxted as it once had, but nonetheless it played a part in his life. The decoration of the chancel of St Mary's, Ardleigh (plates VI-VII), dedicated in May 1894 as a memorial to Canon T.W. Perry, provided an opportunity to promote the cause of the English Church Union, who paid for the work as a tribute to their late Vice-President, and these years also saw the genesis of what is perhaps his most famous work, the reredos of St Cuthbert's, Philbeach Gardens, in west London. This was designed in 1899 as a direct and explicit response to Protestant objections to the ritualism practised in that church and the subsequent prosecution of its vicar.

The problem at Little Braxted was less dramatic, and familiar: poor attendance. On Ash Wednesday, 7 February 1894, it was

Blowing hard. So hard that none of the faithful could come to Church apparently. Fewer than I ever remember to have seen. Only 9 people in nave at commination service.

That Easter, 25 March, was 'a poor day badly observed by the faithless here'. Perhaps this, combined with Geldart's new affluence, contributed to his decision to add a chapel, dedicated to St Mary, to the rectory. He had been allowed by his bishop to celebrate Holy Communion at the rectory since 1889, but the lack of proper facilities for doing so must have irked him. The chapel – which includes a painted reredos and ceiling – was opened in September 1896 and visited by the bishop (who was 'much pleased' with it) the following year (Diary, 8 Sep 1896, 2 Sep 1897). In the chapel, he had more freedom to hold services which might otherwise have attracted unfavourable comment, such as the Office of the Dead (Diary, 1 Nov 1896, 1-2 Nov

1897), but even in the parish church he became more adventurous, using incense for the first time at a normal service in October 1896 (Diary, 1 Oct 1896). There was even a sisterhood established in Little Braxted, but the extent of Geldart's involvement in this is not clear, and the sisters moved away after a year (Diary, 17 Jun 1896, 3 Jul, 8 Dec 1897).

The main reason for having a chapel attached to the rectory was that it saved him the strain of going down to the church, for his health continued to be poor. On 22 November 1894, writing up events since 12 September, he recorded his 'eleventh turn of influenza'. By 13 January 1898 this had increased to 'Influenza No. 17!', and on Ash Wednesday, 23 February, he 'went to the doctor who reported poorly of me'. At Evensong on 1 May, 'I broke down & turned so sick & faint that I had to go out into the Church yard'; three weeks later, on 22 May, 'Managed badly. In the evening turned up faint & bad.' The following Sunday, which was Whitsun,

Celebrated at 7.0 & served & preached at 10.30 miserable attendance of communicants only 8 at 7 o'clock. I did not go down to Evensong.

This is the last record of a Sunday at Little Braxted; after the entry for 1 June, the remaining pages of this volume of his diary are blank. He resigned the living, as he said in *Who's who*, 'on score of health', and in 1900 he, Catharine, and their daughter Barbara, who had been born in 1895, moved to the village of Holmbury St Mary in Surrey.

Here, Geldart continued to practise as a designer and, like many retired clergy, was still active as a priest as well, but little is known of his life after 1914. He died on 11 July 1929, at the age of 81, and was buried in the churchyard at Hatchford. Catharine lived on until 1955, dying at the age of 95.

\* \* \*

Although there were many clergymen in the nineteenth century who turned their hands to architecture on an occasional basis – W.H. Lowder at Southminster, J.H. Sperling at Wicken Bonhunt, and William Gibbens at Chignall Smealy are three examples in Essex – no one combined the roles to quite extent that Geldart did. His ecclesiastical work was never just a job, but was another form of divine service, and the work for which he was responsible was invariably intended either to enable the incumbent to perform his duties more effectively (by the provision of a vestry and organ chamber, for example, or by an improved layout of the chancel), or had some symbolic significance. The latter is perhaps the most rewarding aspect of Geldart's work, and it was one of which he made a special study; in 1899 he published his *Manual of church decoration and symbolism*, which he described in the preface as being 'the fruit of five-and-thirty years of my work in one field of God's

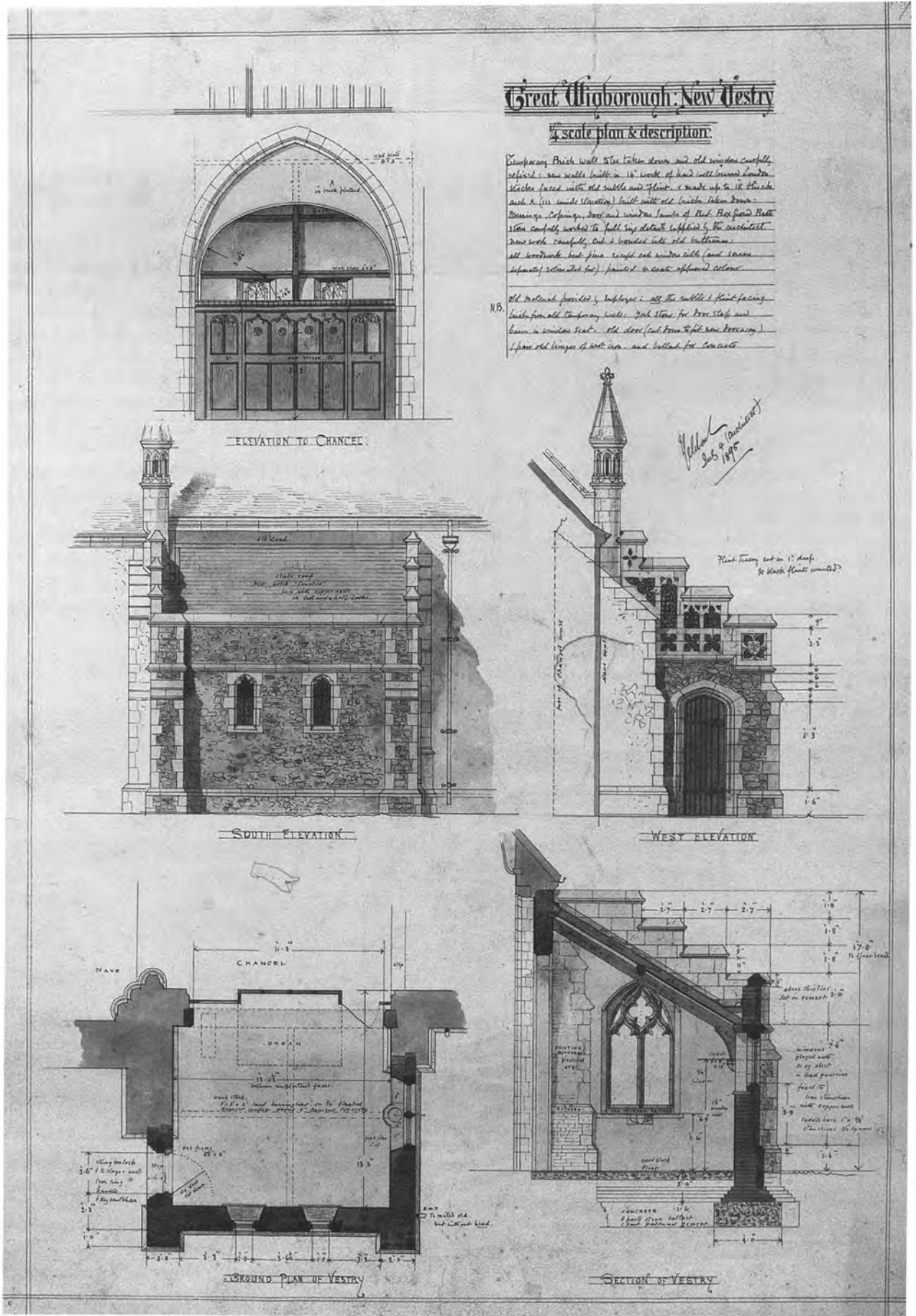


Plate XI Church of St Stephen, Great Wigborough: working drawing for the new vestry, 1895  
 RIBA Library Drawings Collection

fair earth'.

Little Braxted is undoubtedly the richest example of Geldart's symbolic decoration; as he was his own client there was no difficulty (other than financial) about carrying out his plans. His intentions here were more didactic than anything else. He would explain the meaning of the decorations to visitors, and published a full description in a 24-page book, *The story of the church for old and young told to the parishioners of S. Nicholas, Little Braxted in 1886 some of it by the church itself, and the rest by the rector the Rev. Ernest Geldart*; that is, he adopts the somewhat coy technique of having the early history of the church – up to the time he became rector in 1881 – told by one of the chancel windows. Geldart's work at Little Braxted did attract adverse comment, and although it is hard to separate hostility towards his ritualism (the use of vestments and so on) from hostility towards the decorations, at least one incident is recorded, and the general way in which the local newspapers reported the new work contrived to provide much ammunition for Protestant objectors:

The Rector referred to the pictures and the window, and said he would be happy to explain the meaning of them... On reaching a large picture representing the twelve apostles, the rev. gentleman said that some time since a lady visitor remarked to him that she was sorry to learn that the creed had been removed from the church. It ought, she contended, to be in every Protestant church. "I replied," said the rector, "that I did not know whether it ought to be in the church, but I told her she had made a mistake, as this church was not a Protestant church." We are informed that this statement was received on Sunday with some surprise and regret. (cutting in Diary, 11 Oct 1885)

It is the completeness of the scheme which is striking, as much as any individual element. There are certainly unusual aspects to the work. Texts and images are, where possible, related to relevant parts of the building, notably round the font ('I acknowledge one baptism for the remission of sins', etc), and this leads in places to a form of word play: the two pillars which separate the nave from the north aisle have squares of lettering which identify them as Boaz and Jachin, after those in Solomon's Temple (I Kings 7.21; II Chrons 3.17). In a similar vein, there are no fewer than five chronograms for 1884 in various locations round the church.

Nonetheless, everything has a serious point to make. The most conspicuous element of the decoration is three large paintings. The first, just inside the door, is of Bethlehem: the birthplace of Christ, the start of our tour of the church. There are three shepherds worshipping Christ, a boy, a full grown man, and an old man: all men can worship Christ, and all can go to Bethlehem, just as all men can come to church and worship at the altar.

The second picture is a representation of the Creed, drawn as a vine, with Christ in the centre, and the twelve Apostles each holding a scroll with a piece of the Creed

on it – a common way of portraying the Apostles in pre-Reformation churches and which Geldart explains in his *Manual of church decoration and symbolism*. So in the middle of the church, the Church's fundamental beliefs are expounded. Geldart makes the point, 'I am *quite sure* of this, that if the twelve Apostles came into this church with us now they would say, "Yes, this is our belief."' (Geldart 1886, 13). One of the principles upon which the Oxford Movement was founded was that of returning the Church of England to a form that would be recognised by its earliest members, and stressed continuity rather than change; Geldart is doing that here, by laying emphasis upon the Apostle's Creed, and he does it elsewhere in the church by means of something we now expect to find in every church (but which was then uncommon), a list of previous incumbents. Geldart, unusually, presented his list not in the form of a painted board, or illuminated parchment, but written in his distinctive hand on glazed ceramic tiles. To reinforce his point, he records during the Commonwealth 'Will: Hanson, haereticus', and writes the name in red rather than black. Apart from this sad interruption,

there has always been a Parish priest whose duty it was to pray and offer the Sacrament here, from that early time in 1120 till to-day, and ... though the Church has been altered it is the same Church, and the worship has been the same. Though before the restoration up to the year 1549, the prayers were said in Latin ... yet those prayers are really just about the same...

(Geldart 1886, 10-11)

The third main picture is in the north aisle, which Geldart added to the church in 1884 as a children's aisle. This is an allegorical picture of the 'three Trees': the Tree of Knowledge, planted in Eden; the Tree of Healing, planted on earth, which is the Cross; and the Tree of Life, planted in Paradise. The message here is one that is clearly intended to inspire the children to lead a good life: 'God made every tree to grow', and so every child has the opportunity to eat of the Tree of Life (Geldart 1886, 13-14).

There is one further picture, that of John the Baptist (plate V). This is placed in the embrasure of the window next to the pulpit (as the archetypal preacher, John the Baptist is often portrayed, literally or symbolically, on the pulpit itself), and it is tempting to regard this as another sort of pun, a private joke: perhaps Geldart regarded himself to be, like John, 'crying in the wilderness'. Otherwise, the walls are covered with diaper work, incorporating texts and symbols where appropriate: painted emblems of Christ on the chancel screen, and emblems of the Passion on the chancel wall; the arms of the bishops of London, Rochester and St Albans, in whose dioceses Little Braxted successively lay.

Geldart was unable to complete the scheme he intended for the windows, which was to illustrate the

Te Deum. Those he did manage to finish are generally conventional. The east window shows the Annunciation, but with a figure of the Saviour at the top being offered incense by two angels (plate IV). A small window in the chancel depicts St Nicholas, to whom the church is dedicated. The other window shows four

martyrs: Stephen, Cecilia, Agnes, and Alban. St Alban was of particular significance. He was the patron saint of the diocese, and for that reason alone is depicted in a number of Geldart's designs – for example at Rawreth, Leigh-on-Sea, and Stanford-le-Hope – but he had a special place in Tractarian theology as the English

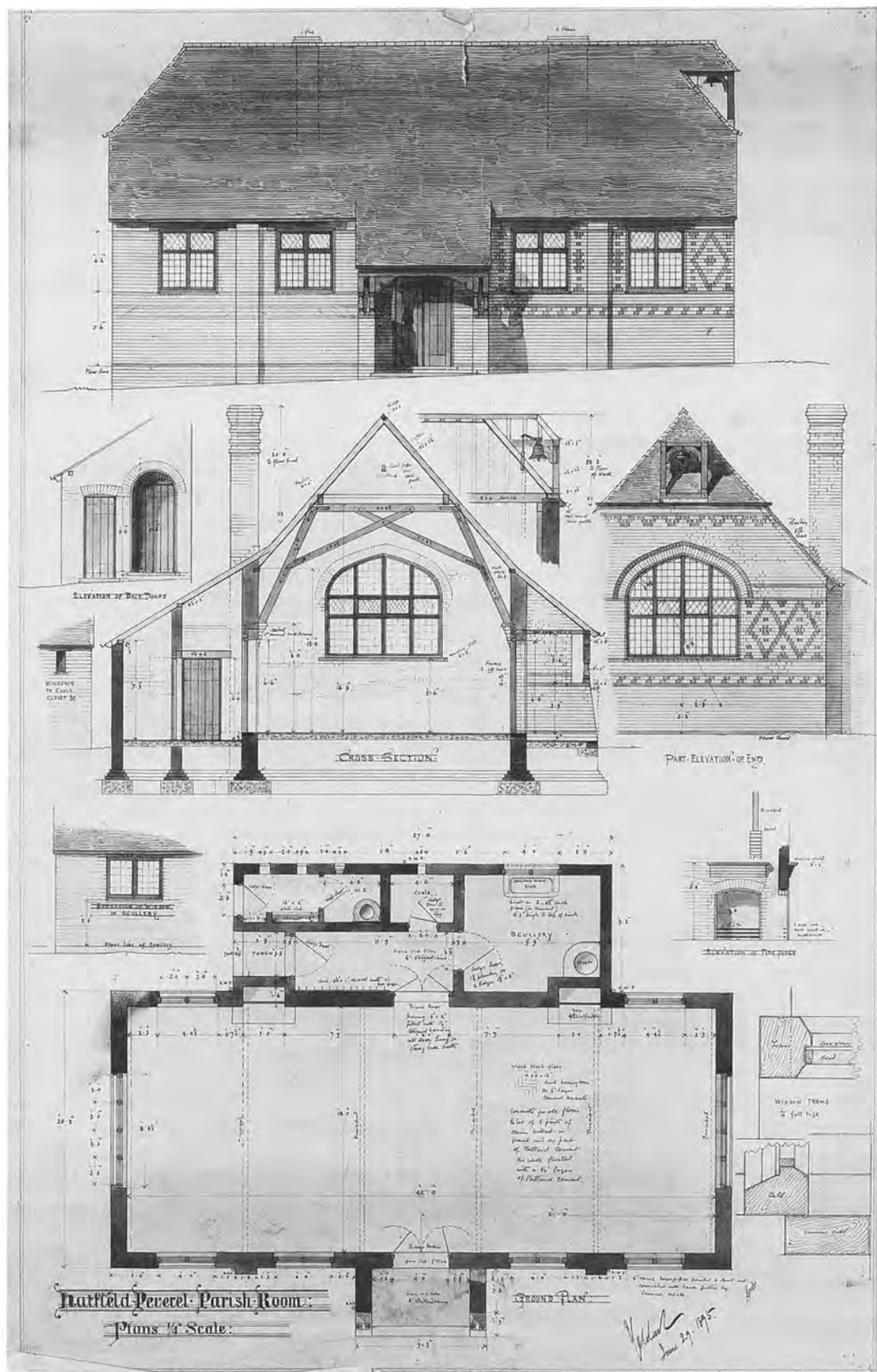


Plate XII Hatfield Peverel: working drawing for the parish room, 1895 *The Metropolitan Museum of Art, Exchange, Royal Institute of British Architects, 1960 (60.724.38)*



protomartyr, whose depiction was used to demonstrate the continuity of the English church. Geldart also had a personal devotion to the saint, through his membership of the Guild of St Alban. The painted panels of the altar depict Nicholas, Alban, George and Edmund.

The depiction of English saints is what, more than anything else, marks a scheme as being of this period, and nowhere is the choice put to better effect than at Ardleigh (plates VI-VII). The vicar of Ardleigh from 1872 until his death in 1891 was Canon Thomas Walter Perry, a leading High Churchman and authority on ritual. He was the author of *Lawful church ornaments* (1857), a member of the Royal Commission on Ritual, 1867-70, and a Vice-President of the English Church Union, a pressure group founded in 1859 that was pledged to work for the restoration of the eastward position, vestments, lights, mixing water with wine, incense, and unleavened bread – the so-called 'six points'. Geldart was commissioned by the ECU to provide a memorial to Perry in Ardleigh Church; he was a member of the Union himself and knew Perry. The church had been largely rebuilt by Butterfield in 1882-3, and he had decorated the nave walls but stopped short at the chancel; it must therefore have seemed most appropriate to decorate the chancel as Perry's memorial. The subjects chosen were St Irenaeus, Restitutus Bishop of London, St David Archbishop of Wales, St Columba, St Aidan, St Augustine, and St John the Evangelist, and the full-size paintings were dedicated on 29 May 1894. The sequence of saints is carefully chosen to demonstrate an unbroken tradition from the New Testament to the early English Church and, by implication, to the modern English Church through the doctrine of Apostolic Succession. We saw that at Little Braxted, Geldart differentiated between the lawful rectors and the intruders; at Ardleigh, where the list of previous vicars is painted on the wall behind the priest's stall, the latter are simply omitted altogether.

The portrayal of saints was a relatively subtle way of conveying a message, and the message in question was not a particularly contentious one. The 'six points', to which the English Church Union and the Protestant Association attached such great, and opposing, importance, were an altogether different issue, and there are a number of pieces of work where one or more of them is employed as subject matter. The Holy Eucharist, the central act of worship for the ritualists, is explicitly commemorated in the reredos of Rawreth Church. The fittings exhibited at the Ecclesiastical Art Exhibition in 1882 included

A Reredos of carved oak, with painted panels, representing the institution of the Holy Eucharist and its early sacrificial types. On the left hand is the accepted sacrifice of Noah; on the right the pure offering of Melchizedek; under the paintings runs the legend from Psalm cx.–

JURAVIT DOMINUS ET NON POENITEBIT EUM:  
TU ES SACERDOS IN AETERNUM:

The four niches separating the panels contain angels bearing shields of the Passion...

The Reredos, when in position, will stand on a carved stone base with shelves above the Altar. The composition will be completed by the subject of the east window, representing the fruits of the Sacrifice of Christ. The Tree of Life, springing from the Altar in Heaven, bears an image of the Crucifixion, while in the side lights the Prophets, Apostles, Martyrs, and Virgins of the Holy Church are to be represented with scrolls from the Te Deum. In the lower space there will be the Walls and Gates of the Heavenly Jerusalem, each gate bearing a shield of one of the Apostles. (EAE 1882, 71)

The sequence of imagery from the reredos to the east window conveys much. The origins of Holy Communion, celebrated on the altar below, go back further than the Last Supper, to the sacrifices of the Old Testament, which in turn foreshadow the sacrifice of Christ. The quotation from Psalm 110 – 'The Lord hath sworn, and will not repent, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchizedek' – reminds the celebrant that he is a priest in the tradition of the Old as well as the New Testament, a direct successor to Melchizedek. 'Melchizedek king of Salem brought forth bread and wine: and he was the priest of the most high God' (Genesis 14.18); he appears also on the reredos at Little Braxted (plate IV), together with Elijah being fed by the angel (I Kings 19.5), God sending manna (Exodus 16.15), and Aaron, whose vestments and the ritual he observed, including the burning of incense and lighting of lamps, are described in detail in Exodus 28-30: four Old Testament precedents for Holy Communion.

Geldart's purpose in each of these cases was to carry out his belief that 'God's house ought to be the finest house, and the most beautiful house in a parish' (Geldart 1886, 12), but they also illustrate very clearly that however much his work served to embellish and beautify the House of God and be generally uplifting, it was also, in a very direct and sometimes provocative manner, making a particular doctrinal point.

*Author:* Dr James Bettley, The Old Vicarage, Great Totham, Maldon, CM9 8NP

#### Notes

<sup>1</sup>This article is based upon the author's PhD thesis 'The Reverend Ernest Geldart (1848-1929) and late nineteenth-century church decoration' (Courtauld Institute of Art, University of London, 1999). The principal source for these years of Geldart's life are the diaries which he kept and which are in private hands. A copy of the thesis together with a partial transcription of the diaries (which include also some volumes kept by his wife Catharine) have been deposited in the Essex Record Office. Detailed references to sources for individual projects are given in the 'List of works in Essex'

<sup>2</sup>Geldart's original spelling and punctuation have been retained, except where the sense is unclear.

<sup>3</sup>Geldart used J.R. Vining (fl 1878-1901) on various occasions, usually

when he needed the services of a professional architect in seeking approval from the Ecclesiastical Commissioners. I have been unable to identify 'the sagacious Pitt'

<sup>4</sup>Walter Siggers, of Kelvedon, was a builder and contractor who also carried out minor works at the rectory

<sup>5</sup>Thomas Gooday of Hale's Farm, Little Braxted, was one of the churchwardens. Bannister is presumably a farmworker

<sup>6</sup>William Borley Polley, cabinet maker, many examples of whose work can be found in the church at Coggeshall, and who also worked for Geldart at Kelvedon and Witham

<sup>7</sup>The diaries at this point include cuttings from the *Essex Chronicle* and *Essex Weekly News*

<sup>8</sup>Sir Claude Champion de Crespigny, 4th baronet (1847-1935) was a flamboyant character, a renowned sportsman and hunter, with whom Geldart enjoyed a somewhat unlikely rapport. He lived at Champion Lodge, Great Totham. John Martin, A.B. Rudge and James Baker broke into Netherby Hall, Carlisle, the seat of Sir Frederick Graham Bt, on 28 Oct 1885 and on 29 Oct they shot and killed a police constable; they were hanged at Carlisle on 8 Feb 1886 (F. Boase, *Modern English biography*, 6 (1899), 167)

<sup>9</sup>Geldart's copy of this book was until recently kept at Little Braxted church, but has now been transferred to the Essex Record Office

<sup>10</sup>In a chronogram, which is usually (but not necessarily) in Latin, the letters which are used for Roman numerals (C, D, I, L, M, V or U, and X) are added together to make a date, regardless of the order in which they appear. Thus, at Stanford-le-Hope, C + C + U + I + L + I + M + D + U + U + X + I + V + C = 1883. A friend of Geldart's, the Revd James Hilton, compiled a massive work, *Chronograms* (1882), followed by *Chronograms continued* (1885); the latter includes the five chronograms by Geldart in Little Braxted church (all 1884) as well as the one from Stanford-le-Hope (3, 586-8)

<sup>11</sup>A copy of this rare work was discovered under the foundation stone of St Stephen's, Upton Park, when that church was demolished, and is now in East Ham library. A photocopy is in the ERO, Box H1

### List of works in Essex

This list includes works which, since 1965, have been in Greater London. Within each entry, references are listed in chronological order.

**ARDLEIGH:** Church of St Mary (plates VI-VII)

Decoration of chancel walls & ceiling, 1894-5

Proposed restoration of St Margaret's chapel, 1895 (unexecuted)

St Margaret's chapel, E window (attributed)

The chancel was decorated as a memorial to Canon T.W. Perry (1815-1891), paid for by the English Church Union (of which he had been a vice-president); cost, between £200 and £300 in 1894, with a further £110 in 1895. The work was executed by Percy Bacon & Brothers, who also quoted for decorating the chapel and may also have executed the chapel window

Ardleigh papers in ERO (Colchester), D/P 263/6/3-16; Diary (21 Nov 1891, 27 Apr 1894); Order of Service for dedication (29 May 1894), in ERO (Chelmsford), Box A1; *Essex Review*, 3 (1894), 158; 4 (1895), 141; Design for *Restoration of St Margaret's Chapel* (23 Aug 1895) (in church); Scarfe 1968, 45; Davey 1981, 42-4; J. Bettley, "'Foremost in action for the Liberties of the Church': the legacy of Canon T.W. Perry at Ardleigh", *Essex Journal*, 34 (1999), 50-54

**AVELEY:** Church of St Michael

Proposed restoration, 1884

Unexecuted. The church was restored by Ewan Christian, 1888

Diary (18 Nov 1884); Kelly's (1902), 22; G. Martin, *The parish church of St Michael Aveley: guide-booklet* (1957?)

**BARKINGSIDE:** Church of the Holy Trinity

Proposed reseating and other improvements, 1886

Diary (19 Aug, 30 Sep 1886); VCH, *Essex*, 5 (1966), 258

**BRAINTREE:** Church of St Michael the Archangel

Extension of N aisle to form organ chamber and vestry, removal of organ from S to N aisle, and insertion of windows in E and S walls of S aisle, 1886

Cost, including windows, £550. The attribution to Geldart is not

positive. Further work was carried out in 1893, but this does not appear to be Geldart's work. The E window is a memorial to the Revd Perryman Wakeham (1764-1852) and his wife Mary (1786-1833); the S window commemorates their children Mary (1811-1830), and Frances (born 1812) who gave the windows at Eastertide 1886 Diary (21 Jan, 13 Sep 1886); ERO D/CF 25/2 & D/CF 35/2 (faculties, granted 16 Apr 1886 & 1893, with accompanying drawings); *Transactions of the Essex Archaeological Society*, n.s. 4 (1893), 254-277; Kelly's (1902), 48

**CASTLE HEDINGHAM:** Church of St Nicholas

West window, 1891-9

The window (executed by Percy Bacon & Brothers) depicts two apostles (Peter and Paul), the four evangelists and four prophets. They were given by the Guild of St Nicholas, the Revd H.A. Lake (vicar, 1876) and by the sister of his successor J.J. Twist (vicar, 1895) Diary (9 Mar 1891); *Essex Review*, 2 (1893), 9; 4 (1895), 203

**COGGESHALL:** Church of St Peter-ad-Vincula (plate VIII)

Chancel and choir screens, painting in chancel, and organ case, 1889-96

The chancel screen was given in memory of Osgood Hanbury and his daughter Edith Marion Hanbury; the choir screens were erected by the vicar (Charles Craigie Mills) and his brother in memory of their mother. Carving by W.B. Polley of Coggeshall. Organ by Bishop & Son; cost, including case, £450. The patron of Coggeshall was Sir Charles Du Cane, of Braxted Park. The church was badly damaged by a bomb in 1940 and restored by Stephen Dykes-Bower. Much of the woodwork has been reused but not, apparently, the chancel screen, and certainly not the rood. Most of the surviving woodwork, the work of Polley, predates Geldart's connection with the church Diary (6, 14 Jun 1889, 23 Apr, 9, 14, 19, 21 May, 11 Sep, 4 Dec 1890, 20 Feb, 3 Mar, 18 Apr, 4 May 1892, 15 Jan 1896); MMA 60.724.45 & 49 (2, 9 Apr 1894); *Essex Review*, 1 (1892), 138-9; 3 (1894), 221; 5 (1896), 9; EAE (1895), 124; Kelly's (1902), 119; Warham Guild, *Some English altars* (no date, post 1936); Davey 1981, 47

**COLCHESTER:** Church of St James the Great, East Hill

Pulpit and font cover, c.1885

The pulpit has since been replaced

Diary (28 Sep 1885, 9 Feb 1891, 16 Dec 1895); ERO (Colchester) D/P 138/6/11

**COLCHESTER:** Church of St Martin, West Stockwell Street

Partial restoration, 1890-1

The exterior of the church had been restored by Sir Gilbert Scott in 1883. Geldart's proposals were part of a larger scheme for the completion of this restoration, to include the addition of vestries, organ chamber etc, but this appears to have been only partially carried out. Cost of executed work, £850; total estimated cost, £1000. The church is now in the care of the Churches Conservation Trust Diary (11 Nov, 15 Dec 1890, 21 Apr, 15, 27 May, 9-10, 28, 30 Jul, 19 Aug, 26 Oct 1891); ERO D/CF 30/2 (faculty, with accompanying drawing (21 Apr 1891), granted 28 Apr 1891); MMA 60.724.75 (15 May 1891); *Essex Review*, 1 (1892), 14; Davey 1981, 35

**COLCHESTER:** Church of St Mary-at-the-Walls

Organ case, 1899

Cost, £600. The rector was Greville Turner Hales, previously vicar of Ardleigh (q.v.). The church is now an arts centre V&A E.542-1956 (13 Jul 1899); Kelly's (1902), 123; Victoria & Albert Museum, *Victorian church art* (1971), 142; Davey 1981, 53

**COLCHESTER:** Church of St Paul, Belle Vue Road

Font cover, 1890

The vicar was William Frederick Clements, a clerical associate of the Guild of St Alban. The church is closed and condemned; the fate of the font cover is uncertain

Diary (27 Mar 1890)

**EAST HAM:** Church of St Mary Magdalene

Proposed restoration, 1909

It is not clear from the diary whether Geldart was visiting the church

'THE MASTER OF LITTLE BRAXTED IN HIS PRIME'

with work in prospect; the church had been restored by J.T. Micklethwaite in 1891-6, and further work was carried out in 1908  
Diary (10 May, 27 Sep 1909); VCH, *Essex*, 6 (1973), 28

**FAIRSTEAD:** Church of St Mary

Restoration, including removal of W gallery, 1890  
Diary (9-10 May, 15 Jul, 4 Sep, 13 Oct 1890); ERO D/CF 29/1 (faculty, granted 1 Jul 1890); Kelly's (1902), 177

**FARNHAM:** Church of St Mary the Virgin

Mosaic surround to existing font, font cover, and brass ewer, 1909  
The work was commissioned to celebrate the 50th anniversary of the opening of the church (designed by Joseph Clarke). Geldart received payment of £7.14.6 in October 1909. At the same time new oak gates and fence to the churchyard were erected, but these have not survived and cannot be attributed to Geldart  
Diary (8 May, 7, 24 Jun 1909 & monthly cash account); J.G. Geare, *Farnham, Essex past and present* (c.1909); *Essex Review*, 19 (1910), 47-8

**FINCHINGFIELD:** Church of St John

Memorial brass to Cecil Edward Ruggles-Brise, 1889  
Davey attributes the organ case to Geldart on stylistic grounds  
Diary (29 Jan 1889); Davey 1981, 56

**GOOD EASTER:** Church of St Andrew

Restoration of chancel, 1879-81  
The church had been badly damaged by lightning in 1877. Geldart's work included new stalls, chancel screen, and painted decoration; of the latter, traces survive round the restored piscina. The contractor was J.H. Wray of Chelmsford. The church was restored again in 1885, by Frederic Chancellor, following a fire which affected mainly the nave. The vicar of Good Easter, 1878-81, was Hollingworth Tully Kingdon (1835-1907), formerly curate St Andrew's, Wells Street, and a brother (in Holy Orders) of the Guild of St Alban. When Kingdon left Good Easter to become co-adjutor to the bishop of Edmonton, Canada, he took with him a set of eucharistic vessels designed by Geldart and presented to him by the Guild of St Alban  
Diary (22 Oct, 27 Nov 1879, 19 Jan, 24 Apr 1880, 13 Feb, 29 Mar, 3, 7 Apr 1881); EAE (1881), 43; (1882), 34; (1883), 85; ERO D/P 57/28/9 & 57/6/1; *Who was who*, 1897-1915 (1920), s.n. Kingdon, Rt Rev Hollingworth Tully; P.G.M. Dickinson, *The Churches of Good Easter High Easter and Margaret Roding Essex*, 3rd edn (1989); A. Holden, 'The 1885 restoration of St Andrews Church Good Easter, Essex by Frederic Chancellor' (Postgraduate Diploma in Building Conservation, Architectural Association, London, Feb 1993)

**GREAT BENTLEY:** chapel & school

Mission chapel and infant school, 1885-7  
The combined mission chapel and infant school at Aingers Green, an isolated part of the parish, was opened on 14 Nov 1887, and cost £378.7.4½ Assisted by J.R. Vining. The contractor was Everett (probably H. Everett of Colchester). The vicar, David Hughes Francis, had previously been curate and then vicar of Canning Town; he originally consulted Geldart with a view to restoring the parish church at Great Bentley. By 1902, the building had become a Wesleyan chapel, and since about 1971 has been a private house  
Diary (15 Dec 1884, 22 May, 2 Sep 1885, 11 Jan, 4 Feb 1886); MMA 60.724.37; ERO (Colchester) D/P 171/1/20, D/P/171/6/2 (minutes of committee) & D/P 171/28/4 (accounts); Kelly's (1902), 37

**GREAT BRAXTED:** Church of All Saints (plate IX)

Rebuilding of tower and belfry, desk and panelling in chancel, new seating in N transept and choir stalls, new E window and general repairs, 1883-93  
War memorial reredos, 1919  
Total estimated cost (excluding reredos), £800; contractor, Henry Gozzett. The E window was erected by Charles C. Du Cane in memory of his father Sir Charles Du Cane KCMG (died 25 Feb 1889), who was Geldart's patron; probably executed by Percy Bacon & Brothers. The reredos was executed by Samuel Marshall, cabinet maker, of Coggeshall, with figures by Nathaniel Hitch of Vauxhall  
RIBADC [4] (18 Jan 1883); ERO D/CF 21/1, 2 (faculties, granted 19

Apr & 27 Sep 1893); Diary (10 Jul 1888, 16 May, 6, 8 Jul, 22, 28 Dec 1889, 19 Apr 1890); EAE (1895), 124; Clarke; W.A. Gimson, *Great Braxted 1086-1957* (1958), 5, 8; Pevsner 1965, 195; Davey 1981, 25; NADFAS Inventory

**GREAT BRAXTED:** cottages, Lea Lane

Pair of cottages, for the Trustees of the Braxted Estate, 1899  
Geldart designed a pair of cottages which were intended for three separate sites, at Lea Lane, Broomfield Farm, and Dines (between Brickhouse Farm and Kelvedon Hall Farm). It appears that only the Lea Lane cottages were built; now a single dwelling  
ERO D/RMaPb2/81 (Maldon Rural District Council plan 97/1899, 28 Jun 1899)

**GREAT LEIGHS:** Church of St Mary

Visit, apparently in connection with proposed work, 1889  
Geldart stayed the night at Great Leighs and 'measured in the church all morning'  
Diary (7-8 Nov 1889)

**GREAT TOTHAM:** Champion Lodge

Supervision of decoration of dining room, 1891  
Champion Lodge was the seat of Sir Claude Champion de Crespigny, 4th Bt (1847-1935). The work was carried out by 'Lewis', presumably A.F. Lewis & Sons, decorators, Witham  
Diary (11 Nov 1891); Kelly's (1902)

**GREAT TOTHAM:** Church of St Peter

E window, addition of vestry, organ chamber, and de Crespigny pew, and painted clock, 1881-5  
The E window was erected by the vicar, H.T.W. Eyre, as a memorial to his mother, who is depicted as the Virtuous Woman (Proverbs 31.10); made by Cox Sons Buckley & Co. The de Crespigny pew is in the form of a S transept and has its own external door; the contractor for this and the other extensions was Henry Gozzett. Cost of E window, £200; of vestry and organ chamber, £240. The vestry had to be underpinned in 1914  
Diary (28 Dec 1881, 15 Jun, 5, 15 Jul 1882, 6 Apr, 25 Jul 1885); Great Totham Register of Burials 1869-1958; J. Bettley, *Guide to the parish church of St Peter Great Totham* (1993)

**GREAT WIGBOROUGH:** Church of St Stephen (plate XI)

Vestry, chancel screen and font cover, 1894-5  
Font cover, cost £20 or 22, made by Percy Bacon & Brothers, in memory of Godfrey Bird, rector 1832-79. Screen in memory of Georgina Philippa, wife of Gordon Watson, died 30 Dec 1887  
MMA 60.724.39 & 41; Diary (19 Jul 1894); RIBADC [26] (4 Jul 1895); EAE (1895), 124; Davey 1981, 45-6

**GREAT YELDHAM:** Church of St Andrew

Lychgate, 1894  
In memory of John M. Cripps, rector 1844-1887, died 21 Sep 1893; probably made by Percy Bacon & Brothers  
Diary (15 Nov 1894); EAE (1894), 206

**HADLEIGH:** Church of St James the Less

Window, 1885  
Erected by H.W. King in memory of his wife Jane Wood, died 1884  
Diary (29 Aug 1885); *Essex Review*, 3 (1894), 19-24

**HATFIELD PEVEREL:** parish room, Maldon Road (plate XII)

Parish room, 1895  
The building survives as a Salvation Army hall and has been much extended  
MMA 60.724.38 (29 Jun 1895)

**KELVEDON:** Church of St Mary

Alms box, 1897  
Made by W.B. Polley of Coggeshall out of fragments of old oak salvaged from alterations made in 1844  
*Essex Review*, 6 (1897), 5; Davey 1981, 51

LANGFORD: Church of St Giles

E window, 1894-6

Executed by Percy Bacon & Brothers, and signed with their rebus (a triangle and three bees)

Diary (CG, 29 Dec 1894); Diary (16 Jan 1896)

LEIGH-ON-SEA: Church of St Clement (plate X)

Decoration of chancel walls, reredos, brass plaque and W window, 1893

S aisle, 1898-9

The work of 1893 was a memorial to Canon Walker King, rector 1859-92; cost of murals, £70, of W window £130 (executed by Percy Bacon & Brothers) and of reredos £150 ('Belgian work', probably by de Wispelaere of Bruges). Geldart's design for the S aisle included vestries, which were not carried out at this time; the aisle was completed eastwards by Charles Nicholson, 1913, to form a Lady Chapel. The screen between the S aisle and the Lady Chapel was designed by Geldart and was formerly the chancel screen of Stanford-le-Hope (q.v.)

*Essex Review*, 2 (1893), 204; RIBADC [11]; Kelly's (1902), 270; J. Bundock, *Leigh Parish Church of St Clement: an historical description* (1978), 13, 21-3, 25; Davey 1981, 41

LEYTONSTONE: Home of the Good Shepherd

Altar for chapel, 1880-1

Made by Thomas Earp. Agnes Cotton, youngest daughter of William Cotton of Walwood House, Leytonstone, opened a Home for Friendless Girls in 1865, and in 1879 built the 'Home of the Good Shepherd' for young girls; after her death in 1899 it was run by the Clewer Sisters, and closed in about 1940. The Home was connected with St Andrew's, Plaistow

Diary (17 Jun 1880, 10 Feb 1881); *Guildsman*, 3rd ser. 3 (1886-7), 405; W.G. Hammock, *Leytonstone and its history*, 2nd edn (1904), 13-14; W. Addison, *Essex worthies* (1973), 48; VCH, *Essex*, 6 (1973), 238

LITTLE BRAXTED: Church of St Nicholas (plates I-V)

Alterations and additions, including addition of N aisle, organ chamber and vestry, painted decoration and stained glass, choir stalls, reredos and chancel screen, 1881-6. Estimate for N aisle, £255; expenditure on restoration to April 1885, £396.2.11.

The church had been restored in 1856 by Ewan Christian and was in sound structural order; Geldart's work provided him with the facilities he needed for conducting services in accordance with his principles, and made the interior fittingly beautiful. Preliminary work by Walter Siggers of Kelvedon; contractor for building work, Henry Gozzett. Windows and other fittings by Cox Sons Buckley & Co; organ by J.M. Corps & Co; paintings by Ernest Geldart, assisted by Dudley Lewis of Witham; clock case carved by W.B. Polley of Coggeshall; gilding by T.C.F. Hope. Wall paintings restored by Donald Smith, and brocade and raffia wall coverings by Rachel Ricketts, 1989-92

ICBS file 4961 (1856); Buckler 1856, 172-9; Register of Services; Diary (17-18 Jun, 30 Jul, 9-10 Aug, 9, 16-17, 24-25 Sep 1881, 3, 17, 29-30 Sep, 1-5, 7, 18 Oct, 23 Dec 1884, 3 Aug, 4, 11 Oct 1885, 1 Oct 1886); 'Little Braxted Church Minute Book of Vestry from 1882' (19 Apr 1884, 11 Apr 1885, 1 May 1886); Design for *Little Braxted / The North Aisle / New Vestry, Organ Chamber, Etc* (Easter 1884) (in church); *Building News*, 47 (1884), 648, 685; J. Hilton, *Chronograms continued* (1885), 586-7; Geldart 1886; *Transactions of the Essex Archaeological Society*, new ser. 11 (1911), 284; EAE (1920), 148, and letter from Geldart to Revd B.E. Rooke (6 Dec 1920), in private collection; Council for the Care of Churches, survey file; Pevsner 1965, 273; Scarfe 1968, 61; Clarke; Davey 1981, 26-31; J. Bettley, 'New light on St Nicholas', *Country Life* (15 Apr 1993), 78-9

LITTLE BRAXTED: cottages

Clarke states that Geldart 'designed two cottages in the parish'. This probably refers to the cottages in Lea Lane, Great Braxted (q.v.)  
Clarke

LITTLE BRAXTED: reading room

Reading room or parish room (extension to school), 1890

Builder, Candler; estimate, £65. Geldart usually refers to this as the

'reading room' in his diary, but the Register of Services calls it the 'parish room'. The Register has a reference on 10 Oct 1885, 'reading room opened' and a further reference on 23 Nov 1885; this must refer to a temporary structure or, more likely, the adaptation of an existing room

Diary (16-17 Jan, 12, 17-18, 24 Feb, 5, 14-15, 20-21 Mar, 2, 8, 13 Apr, 2, 22, 24, 26 May, 10 Sep, 11 Oct, 19 Dec 1890); Register of Services (20 Apr, 26 May 1890)

LITTLE BRAXTED: rectory

Addition of chapel, dedicated to St Mary, 1896

Includes reredos, stained glass and painted ceiling. The diaries contain a number of references to other work on the house, for the most part not structural. Now Braxted Place

Diary (8 Sep 1896); Davey 1981, 56-9; J. Booker, *Braxted Place* (1989)

LITTLE TOTHAM: Church of All Saints

Unidentified work, c.1883

Included in the list of Geldart's work, 1885. The chancel paving is characteristic; he preached at the reopening of the church, 2 Dec 1883 Register of Services (2 Dec 1883); *Portrait* 1885

PANFIELD: Church of St Mary

Rood and screen, 1898

In memory of Reginald Edward Lake Hill (1853-1897), captain of the liner *Aden*, which was lost in the Indian Ocean 9 June 1897, and brother of the rector, Richard Charles Hill. Instructions on the drawing to the carver of the rood figures are in French, which suggests that the work was done by de Wispelaere of Bruges

MMA 60.724.68 (18 Apr 1898); information from Keith Sutton, Panfield

PLAISTOW: Church of St Andrew

Binding of altar book and bible, 1875

Decoration of chancel, c.1876, completed 1880

The binding, 'in quaint and antique style', was executed by Edward Watson of Paddington Street. The decoration was started by Geldart while curate of St Andrew's, and left incomplete upon his departure in 1876. The church itself was designed by James Brooks (1867-70)

*Church Work*, new ser. 3 (1874-5), 435; Diary (7 Jan 1880); *Portrait* 1885

PLAISTOW: Ivy House, Balaam Street

Decoration of the oratory of the Brotherhood of St Dunstan, 1876

Chalice and paten, c.1879

The Brotherhood of St Dunstan, founded at Paddington in 1868, followed Geldart to Plaistow after he was appointed curate at St Andrew's in 1873. As well as decorating the oratory and its furniture, he is said to have done 'much in other ways to make an old and neglected House habitable and pleasing' (Moore Smith). The chalice and paten, of parcel gilt and in the late decorated style, were made by Barkentin & Krall

*Church Work*, new ser. 4 (1876-7), 74-5, 129, & 5 (1878-9), 581; Diary (6 Jan 1880); EAE (1880), 45; (1881), 37; (1882), 48; (1883), 83; *Building News*, 41 (1881), 454, & 43 (1882), 395; J.R. Moore Smith, 'A forerunner of the S.D.C.', *A Franciscan revival: the story of the Society of the Divine Compassion*, ed. A.C. Kelway (1908), 15-17

PLAISTOW: Orphanage of the Good Shepherd

Proposed new orphanage building, 1877

This scheme, to replace Ivy House, Balaam Street (q.v.), which was being partly used as an orphanage, probably never got as far as the drawing board, but subscriptions were invited and Geldart proposed as architect

*Church Work*, new ser. 4 (1876-7), 490-1 & advertisement (Dec 1877)

RAINHAM: Church of St Helen and St Giles

Decoration of chancel ceiling, 1885-6

Restoration, including removal of gallery, new porch, vestry, heating chamber and organ chamber, pulpit, lectern and seating, and windows, 1892-c.1902

## 'THE MASTER OF LITTLE BRAXTED IN HIS PRIME'

Restoration of tower, 1909

Painted decoration by 'Lewis', perhaps Dudley Lewis who worked at Little Braxted. Restoration estimated to cost £3000; over £2600 spent between 1897 and 1910. Stained glass and furnishings by Percy Bacon & Brothers. Geldart received payment of £20.7.6 in September 1909

Diary (15 Oct 1885, 18 Jan 1886, 20-21, 23 Jun, 7-8 Nov 1892, 8 Nov, 21 Dec 1897, 10 May, 29 Jun, 22 Jul, 17 Aug, 25 Sep, 13 Oct 1909 & monthly cash account); RIBADC [21] (23 Jun 1892, 23 Aug 1897, St Giles' Day [1 Sep] 1899); ERO D/CF 35/6 (faculty, granted 14 May 1896, with accompanying drawings); *Essex Review*, 7 (1898), 6-7 & 8 (1899), 176; Clarke; F Lewis, *The parish church of Rainham Essex* (n.d.); Pevsner 1965, 319; VCH, *Essex*, 7 (1978), 140; Davey 1981, 36-40

RAWRETH: Church of St Nicholas

Rebuilding, including furnishings, fittings and stained glass, 1880-2  
Repairs, 1886-94

Church previously rebuilt by Thomas Hopper, 1823, with only the fifteenth-century tower, W end of N aisle, and S arcade remaining and preserved by Geldart. Contractor, J.H. Wray of Chelmsford; furnishings, fittings and glass by Cox Sons Buckley & Co; screen made at Bruges, presumably by de Wispelaere; cost, £2500. Repairs, following earthquake of 1884, assisted by J.R. Vining. Condemned following bomb damage, 1943, but repaired (S aisle removed). The rector was Godfrey George Kemp, clerical associate of the Guild of St Alban, whose wife (and cousin) Harriett Anne Malim worked the frontals designed by Geldart; other embroidery by Mrs Beard, Brook Street, Hanover Square. Reredos dedicated to the memory of three sisters, Mary Baseley, Harriett Malim and Katharine Hodson, by the two sons of Harriett, i.e. George and Arthur Malim

ICBS files 472 (1823) & 8661 (1880); Diary (17 Feb, 19 Apr, 19 Oct, 6 Dec 1881, 17 Apr, 24, 26 Jun 1882, 18 Nov, 17 Dec 1886, 28 Jul 1890, 30 Aug 1894); ERO D/CF 20/2 (faculty, granted 19 May 1881, with accompanying drawings); EAE (1881), 43; (1882), 34, 71; (1883), 85; Kelly's (1902), 323; Clarke; Pevsner 1965, 321; Scarfe 1968, 151; Davey 1981, 19-20

RAYLEIGH: Church of the Holy Trinity

Curtains for altar, 1882

Worked by Mrs MacVicar, wife of the rector; Geldart had visited the church the year before

Diary (20 Apr 1881, 18 Apr 1882)

RUNWELL: Church of St Mary

Window in N aisle, 1909

Executed by Taylor & Clifton; commemorates Thomas Kemble (1815-1903), his wife Laura (1814-1908), their son Thomas Albert (1840-1898) and daughter Hester Blanche (1848-1909), of Runwell Hall

Diary (13-14 Mar, 17 Apr, 25 May 1909, 25 Jul 1911); *Essex Review*, 18 (1909), 218; L. Crook, *St Mary's Runwell: a history and church guide* (n.d.)

ST OSYTH: Church of St Peter & St Paul

'Went and inspected Church & priory', 1886

This might refer to a potential job, or simply a visit

Diary (4-5 May 1886)

SALCOTT: Church of St Mary

Proposed restoration, 1891

The church had been damaged in the earthquake of 1884. The job went to Frederic Chancellor after the rector, Edward Musselwhite, realised that Geldart would be charging a fee

Diary (15 Oct 1891); Kelly's (1902), 353

SHELLOW BOWELLS: Church of St Peter & St Paul

Unidentified work, c.1882

Included in the list of Geldart's work, 1885. Shellow Bowells was united with Willingale Doe (q.v.), so the work probably dates from the incumbency of A.R. Du Cane, 1873-82. Now a private house

*Portrait* 1885

STANFORD-LE-HOPE: Church of St Margaret of Antioch

Rebuilding of tower and addition to school, 1882-4

Vestries and porch, lychgate, and windows, 1890-2

Geldart modelled the new tower on nearby Prittlewell. Contractor for vestries and porch, J.H. Wray. Stained glass (two windows, W end of nave and N aisle) by Ward & Hughes. Lychgate in memory of the Revd F.A. Alban Wyld, of Romford. The rector, John Edmund Sedgwick, began the restoration of the church in 1874, using as architect H.M. Linklater, but he took Holy Orders in 1877 and ceased to practise as an architect. The screen in St Clement's, Leigh-on-Sea (q.v.) is said to have been the chancel screen of Stanford-le-Hope and designed by Geldart

Diary (21 Apr 1882, 19 Jul, 17 Nov 1884, 3 Jul, 10 Nov, 16 Dec 1890, 6 Apr, 1 May, 24 Aug, 30 Sep 1891); J. Hilton, *Chronograms continued* (1885), 586-7; RIBADC [24] (7 Nov 1890); *Essex Review*, 1 (1892), 15; Kelly's (1902), 391; E. Geldart, *A manual of church decoration and symbolism* (1899), 67; A.C. Kelway, *A Franciscan revival: the story of the Society of the Divine Compassion* (1908), plate opp. 18; Clarke; Pevsner 1965, 364; Scarfe 1968, 163; Davey 1981, 22; A. Saunders, *A short history of the church and village of Stanford-le-Hope* (1988); S. Jenkins, *A history of St Margaret's Stanford-le-Hope* (1983)

TOLLESHUNT D'ARCY: Church of St Nicholas

Restoration, including new vestry, decoration of nave and chancel roofs, and reredos, 1897-8

Nave ceiling now painted over, but decoration survives in chancel. Reredos now mounted on S wall of chancel

Diary (11 Nov 1897); *Essex Review*, 7 (1898), 7; Clarke; Pevsner 1965, 394; Scarfe 1968, 180; C.J. Dawson, *A guide to St Nicholas Church and parish* (1969); Davey 1981, 51

TOLLESHUNT MAJOR: Church of St Nicholas

Restoration, including new vestry and porch, 1888

Cost, about £600

Kelly's (1902), 419; Clarke; Pevsner 1965, 395; Scarfe 1968, 180; Davey 1981, 34

WALTHAMSTOW: Church of St Michael & All Angels, Palmerston Road

Altar in side chapel, 1889

*Ecclesiastical Arts Gazette*, 1 (1889), 8-10

WENDENS AMBO: Church of St Mary the Virgin

Restoration, including new organ chamber, 1895-6

Estimated cost, £600, but Kelly's says £900 and gives the date as 1898. Contractor, Bell & Son, Saffron Walden

ERO D/CF 34/7 (faculty, granted 27 Jun 1895, including drawings); *Essex Review*, 5 (1896), 12-13; Kelly's (1902), 447; Davey 1981, 47; J. Mackay, *Wendens Ambo Church Essex* (1987)

WENNINGTON: Church of St Mary & St Peter

Restoration, including new S aisle, organ chamber and reredos, 1883-6

New stone porch, decoration of chancel, and boundary wall, 1900

Restoration of tower, 1909

Estimated cost of restoration, £800; actual cost, about £1000. There had previously been a S aisle; Geldart's addition was on the old foundations. Reredos (memorial to Sir Antonio Brady JP FGS, died 1881, and father of the rector, Nicholas Brady) now removed, and decoration painted over. Porch (cost, £120) and wall donated by F.S. Hempleman

ERO D/CF 24/10, D/P 158/6/1-2, T/P 50/14 & T/P 50/4 (including faculty, granted 23 Apr 1885, with drawing dated 20 Jul 1883); Diary (24 Jul, 28 Aug, 16 Oct, 14 Dec 1885, 9 Feb, 13 Apr 1886, 29 Jun, 25 Sep 1909); MMA 60.724.52 (14 Oct 1885); *Essex Review*, 9 (1900), 173; Kelly's (1902), 448; Clarke; VCH, *Essex*, 7 (1978), 189; Davey 1981, 54; A. H. Wright, *Guide to Wennington Parish Church* (1996) (based on guide by F. Lewis, 1963)

WEST BERGHOLT: Church of St Mary

Proposed rebuilding, 1885-6

Geldart drew up plans for a new church (in association with J.R.

Vining) but, although a faculty was granted, nothing came of the proposals. The rector, Howell Pattison Lewis Blood, resigned the living in 1891 and was received into the Roman Catholic church; a new church was eventually built, in the centre of the village, in 1904. The old church is now in the care of the Churches Conservation Trust Diary (3 Sep 1885, 24 Nov, 1 Dec 1886); ERO D/CF 25/1 (faculty, granted 5 Jun 1886, with accompanying drawings); RIBADC [1] (23-28 Sep 1886); Davey 1981, 33

**WICKHAM BISHOPS:** Church of St Bartholomew  
Organ case, 1899. Cost. £250, executed by Percy Bacon & Brothers; organ by Beale & Thynne. The old organ was re-used at Faulkbourne *Essex Review*, 8 (1899), 176; Sir M. Currie, *Wickham Bishops: a social history of the parish* (1966), 9; Davey 1981, 53

**WICKHAM BISHOPS:** school  
Inspection of school 'with a view to removing a chimney breast', 1890  
At the request of the rector Alfred Snell, who was also the Rural Dean Diary (1 Sept 1890)

**WILLINGALE DOE:** Church of St Christopher  
W window, 1879  
Executed by Saunders & Co, who were also responsible for the earlier E window, 1878, not designed by Geldart. *Building News* describes another window by Geldart with Saunders & Co, 1880, in which 'Our Lord is represented as the Shepherd, King and Bishop of the Church', which corresponds to the mention in Geldart's diary of his 'new window of the Good Shepherd', but no window of this description survives in the church. Window in S wall commemorates Geldart's client, the rector, Alfred Richard Du Cane (died 19 Oct 1882); this is very much in Geldart's style  
*Ecclesiastical Art Review*, 1 (1878), 29; *Building News*, 36 (1879), 464 & 38 (1880), 150; Diary (27 Nov 1879, 17 Jan 1880); Davey 1981, 17

**WILLINGALE SPAIN:** Church of St Andrew  
Restoration, 1891-2  
Cost, about £630, paid by Miss Brocket of Spains Hall. Evidence of the work includes altar and reredos ('restored Nov 1891 in memory of Rev. W.R. Parker M.A. Rector 1853-90'), with side panels of heavy damask; traces of painted inscriptions; and paving. The church (which is adjacent to St Christopher's, Willingale Doe, q.v.) is now in the care of the Churches Conservation Trust  
Diary (1, 26 Jan, 2-3 Feb, 7 May, 18 Jun, 7 Oct, 4, 22-23 Nov 1891, 14-15 Mar, 10 Nov 1892); Kelly's (1902), 453; G.H. Marsden, *Willingale's two churches* (n.d.)

**WITHAM:** Church of St Nicolas  
Proposed reredos, 1889  
Restoration of chancel screen, 1890-2  
Geldart replaced the top section of the screen, which had been removed, as a memorial to John Bramston, dean of Winchester and formerly vicar of Witham (died 13 Nov 1889) and his sister Mary Anne Bramston (died 4 May 1886); executed by W.B. Polley of Coggeshall. It was altered again in 1919. The present reredos dates from 1927  
Diary (11, 16 Nov, 9-10 Dec 1889, 22 Mar, 12 Apr, 15 Jul 1890, 2, 7 Jan 1891, 5 Feb 1892); ERO D/CF 29/9 (faculty, granted 3 Sep 1890, with accompanying drawing); T. Henderson, *The Parish Church of Saint Nicolas, Witham, Essex* (1986)

**WITHAM:** houses  
Two houses, 1895-6 and 1912-14  
Both houses were for William Stevens, contractors for the first being William G. Richard and the second A. Ward & Son. The precise location of the houses remains unidentified and there is no indication whether they were for Stevens' own use or a speculative development RIBADC [28] (18 Nov 1895, 9 Jul 1912); Kelly's (1895-1914); Diary (16 Dec 1912, 3 Apr, 4 Jul 1913, 22-23 Apr 1914)

Banner, for the Plaistow branch of the Church of England Working Men's Society, c.1885  
Executed by Cox Sons Buckley & Co. The CEWMS was formed in

1876 under the aegis of the English Church Union at St Alban's, Holborn  
*Portrait* 1885; *Guildsman*, 3rd ser. 3 (1886-7), 405

Belfry and spire, no date  
This drawing of a wooden spire may be a design, or may be topographical. It is typical of Essex churches  
MMA 60.724.51

Chalice and paten, 1907  
Presented by the clergy of the diocese of Chelmsford to the Bishop of Colchester and his wife on the occasion of their golden wedding, 1907, with an album and illuminated address. It is not clear from the description whether Geldart designed the chalice and paten or just the album and address  
*Essex Review*, 16 (1907), 153

Font cover, no date  
Unidentified design; 'This was done for 25£ / the doors open for baptism / & the cover is *not* moved off'. Probably inspired by the font at Thaxted; see Geldart's article, 'Thaxted font', *Dawn of Day* (Apr 1890), 64  
MMA 60.724.42

### Bibliography and abbreviations

- Buckler, G. 1856 *Twenty-two of the churches of Essex*  
C.F.H.1878 *Thirteen years in the parish of S. Mary Magdalene, Paddington*  
Clarke, B.F.L. 'A Brief account of those clergymen of the Church of England who, in the 19th century, acted as architects or craftsmen in the building, restoration or adorning of churches in England, Wales, & Scotland, and overseas' (unpublished notes, preserved in the Council for the Care of Churches, London)  
Claughton, T.L. 1873 *A charge delivered to the clergy and churchwardens of the diocese of Rochester, in October, MDCCCLXXIII, at his second visitation*  
Claughton, T.L. 1878 *A charge delivered to the clergy and churchwardens of the diocese of St Albans at his primary visitation, October-November, 1878*  
Davey, J. 1981 'Ernest Geldart - the rector of Little Braxted' (unpublished thesis, Diploma in the Conservation and Repair of Historic Buildings, Architectural Association, London)  
Diary Diaries of Ernest Geldart, 1877-1914, and Catharine Geldart, 1889-1898 (unpublished; partial transcript in ERO)  
DNB *Dictionary of National Biography*  
EAE *Guide to the Church Congress, and Ecclesiastical Art Exhibition* (1879-1935; titles vary)  
ERO Essex Record Office (Chelmsford, unless otherwise stated)  
Geldart, E. 1886 *The story of the church for old and young told to the parishioners of S. Nicholas, Little Braxted in 1886: some of it by the church itself, and the rest by the rector the Rev. Ernest Geldart*  
ICBS Incorporated Church Building Society, files at Lambeth Palace Library, London  
Kelly's *Kelly's Directory of Essex*  
MMA Department of Drawings and Prints, Metropolitan Museum of Art, New York (with drawing number)  
Minute Book 'Little Braxted Church Minute Book of Vestry from 1882' (ERO)  
Pevsner, N. 1965 *Essex* (1954, rev. E. Radcliffe 1965)  
*Portrait* 1885 'The Rev. Ernest Geldart', *Church Portrait Journal*, new ser. 6, 40-42  
Register of Services 'Register of all Services & Sacraments whether in the Church or elsewhere ministered together with particular information as to Offertories, Communion, Sermons, etc - dating from Low Sunday 1881' (ERO D/P 224/1/7)  
RIBADC Drawings Collection, British Architectural Library, Royal Institute of British Architects, London (with drawing number)  
Scarfe, N. 1968 *Essex: a Shell guide*  
V&A Department of Prints, Drawings and Paintings, Victoria & Albert Museum, London (with drawing number)  
VCH *Victoria History of the Counties of England*

*The Society is extremely grateful to the Society of Architectural Historians of Great Britain for the award of a Dorothy Stroud Bursary towards the cost of this publication*

## Work of the Essex County Council Archaeological Service, 1999

Edited by S. Gale

The title change of this report from *Work of the Essex County Council Archaeology Section* to that of *Work of the Essex County Council Archaeological Service* reflects the restructuring that has taken place within the Essex County Council Planning Division. In April 1999 the Heritage Conservation Group (HCG) was established which incorporated the functions of the Archaeology and Historic Buildings Sections. The work of the new group is organised under four sections: Heritage Information and Records (HIR); Heritage Advice, Management and Promotion (HAMP); Historic

Buildings and Conservation (HB&C); and Field Archaeology Unit (FAU).

This annual report enables the HCG to publish notes on a number of chance finds made during the year, and current projects being carried out by the Archaeological Service. Summaries of excavations, evaluations and watching briefs can be found elsewhere in this volume (p. 210-232).

Reports for finds are arranged in parish order, and reports on projects follow. The Group is grateful to all who have undertaken work on its behalf, especially those museums and individuals who have allowed finds to be published here. The illustrations are by the following: Nick Nethercoat (Figs 1 and 2) and Roger Massey-Ryan (Fig. 3).

Full details of all sites can be found in the Essex Heritage Conservation Record (EHCR formerly ESMR).

### *Finds*

#### **Little Waltham** (EHCR 18849)

Pat Connell

An iron spearhead was discovered in the side of a newly cut drainage ditch close to the River Chelmer at Little Waltham. Mr Shaw, the finder brought the spearhead for identification and further study (Fig. 1). Investigation of the findspot could not identify any specific archaeological feature from which the object might have derived.

The tip of the spearhead is missing, the total length being 276mm. The blade has a flattened diamond cross-section with a central mid-rib, is c.32mm wide at its broadest point at the base of the blade and narrows gradually towards the missing tip. Projection of the blade edges would suggest that around 50mm of the spearhead has been lost giving an original total length of approximately 325mm. There is no indication of decoration on either the blade or socket.

There are two interesting features apparent on the spearhead. Firstly, although some of the socket may be missing, the remaining length shows no sign of being split. Such a split socket would be normal on a piece of early Anglo-Saxon manufacture. In addition, the blade form is inconsistent with an early, perhaps 5th-7th-century date.

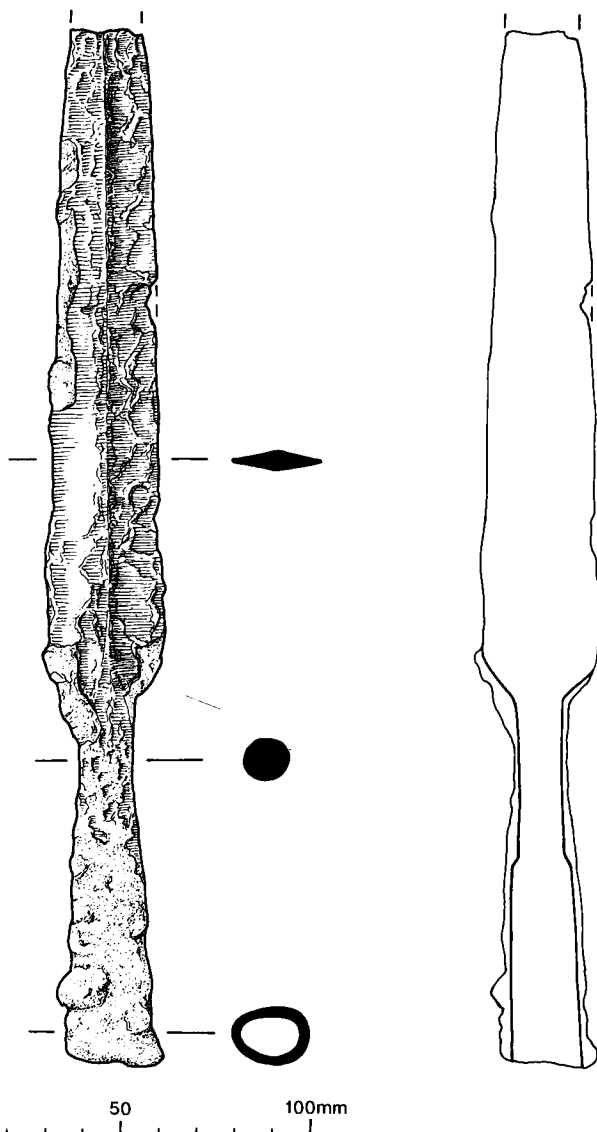


Fig. 1 Iron Spearhead from Little Waltham

Secondly, just visible on the object itself but quite clear on x-ray photographs is an obvious 'shoulder'. This shoulder starts immediately above the hollow, closed socket. Above this shoulder, a solid shank, *c.* 40mm in length connects the socket to the blade.

The British Museum suggests there are no known parallels in the Anglo-Saxon corpus for such a weapon with its closed socket, integral shoulder and solid shank below the blade. However, the blade form is consistent with a mid or late Anglo-Saxon date.

A spearhead of middle or later Saxon date would be of some interest. There are numerous examples both county and nationwide of well-dated early Anglo-Saxon spearheads from pagan burials but significantly fewer of later date. The cessation of the inclusion of grave goods in presumably Christian burials has ensured that relatively few examples of what must once have been a fairly common object survive from the later Anglo-Saxon periods. The findspot of the piece, close to the River Chelmer is perhaps not surprising, with many of the known weapons of the later Anglo-Saxon period having been recovered either from or close to rivers.

**Springfield** (EHCR 18850)  
N Brown

Two fragments of Late Bronze Age metalwork (Fig. 2), were recovered by Mr J. Basham using a metal detector prior to construction work east of the Late Bronze Age enclosure at Springfield Lyons (Buckley and Hedges 1987). The items were reported to Chelmsford Museum who passed them to Essex County Council Heritage Conservation Group for recording.

1. Part of a small copper-alloy tanged chisel or

leatherworking knife (Roth 1974) weighing 13g surviving length 4.8 mm. The upper part of the tang is broken off above the blade; the tang is swollen to form a stop ridge. Below the stop ridge the sides are concave and rectangular in section. The faces slope smoothly to a slight bevel just above the cutting edge, which is asymmetrical due to heavy wear on one side. All the surfaces are pitted with corrosion although some areas of smooth patina survive, particularly on the sides. There are horizontal striations above the stop ridge and some modern scratches on the faces.

2. Edge fragment of a plano-convex copper ingot weight 135g. All surfaces are eroded and affected by pale green active corrosion and most surface details are obscured, but remains of gas cavities are present particularly towards the upper surface.

These objects were recovered prior to development east of, and down the valley slope from, the Bronze Age enclosure. Contemporary settlement seems to have been kept away from the immediate vicinity of Springfield Lyons (Brown 1996). However, recent excavation by Wessex Archaeology down slope from the enclosure and close to the find spot of the metal objects has revealed extensive Late Bronze Age evidence. Whilst metalwork does not commonly occur on Late Bronze Age settlement sites, small items are sometimes found, tanged chisels/leatherworking knives and fragments of copper ingot being relatively frequent in such contexts (e.g. O'Connor 1980, 175) and it is likely that the two items from Springfield are a further indication of Late Bronze Age settlement on the valley slopes.

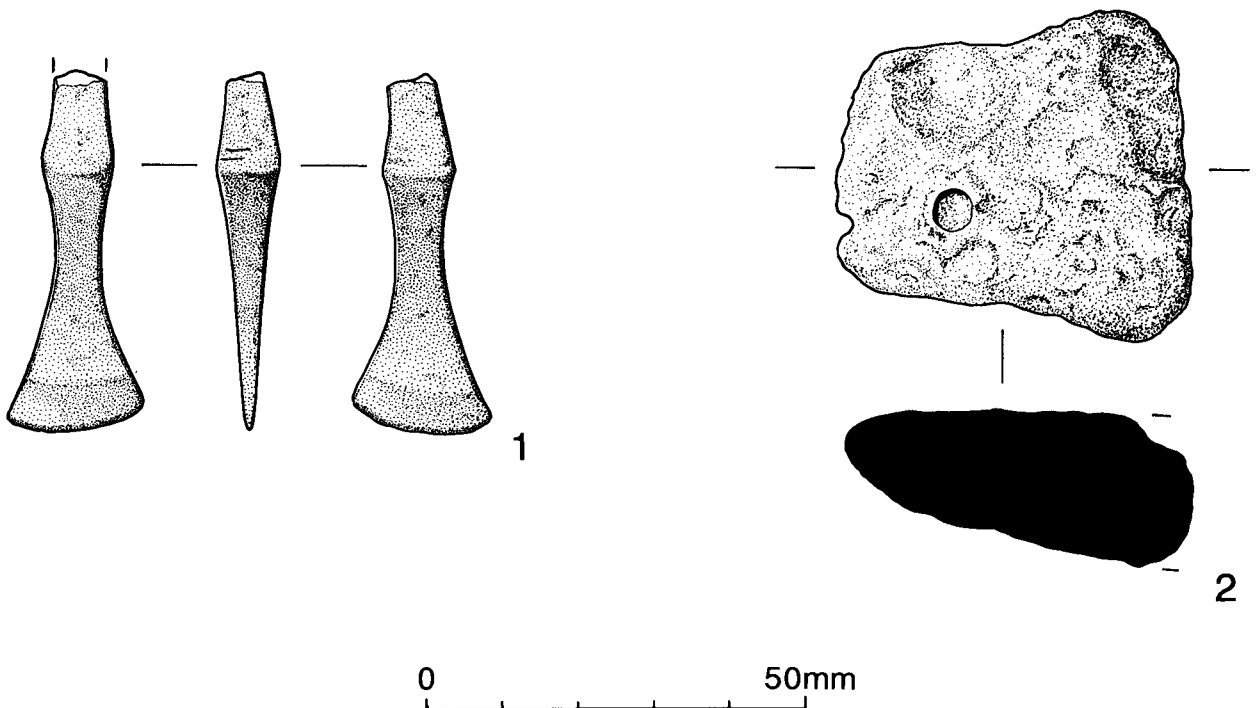


Fig. 2 Copper alloy tanged chisel or leatherworking knife Springfield and fragment of a plano-convex copper ingot from Springfield



*Projects***Aerial Survey 1999**

David Strachan

*Objectives*

The primary objective this year was to continue reconnaissance with a view to the discovery of new cropmark and soilmark sites, while assessing the potential for recording earthwork sites by winter flying over Suffolk. English Heritage (EH) funded survey in both Essex and Suffolk, while some survey over Hertfordshire was funded by the Archaeology section of Hertfordshire County Council. Copies of all prints are to be deposited both with the relevant Sites and Monuments Record, (in Essex the EHCR), and with the National Monuments Record Centre, Swindon.

*Results*

Over eighteen hours of reconnaissance were carried out in twelve flights over the region. Three flights in January and February were carried out in order to record earthwork sites in north Essex and Suffolk. The extensive salterns, surviving as earthworks, east of South Woodham Ferrers were recorded in some detail. A number of new possible moated sites in Suffolk were recorded at Hundon Thicks, Cowlinge (moat annexe?), Highham and Clevington. In addition, a number of probable World War I and World War II features were

recorded, including probable slit trenching and a possible search-light battery at Long Melford and World War II aircraft obstruction ditches surviving as earthworks (including mounds) on heath-land at Elveden.

Exceptionally low tides occurring in March were flown to continue inter-tidal monitoring of the Blackwater estuary, the Crouch and the Dengie Flats. A number of previously unrecorded wrecks were photographed, while record recording of the Blackwater estuary fish-weirs allows for monitoring and additional information for comparison with sonar survey carried out in 1998 (Strachan 1999). Two flights concentrating on the inter-tidal zone were carried out (1999/6 and 1999/7) covering the Blackwater estuary, the River Colne and the Dengie Flats. Flights were carried out at exceptional equinoctial tides affording the greatest expanse of inter-tidal zone to be exposed. A number of previously unrecorded wrecks were photographed, including two at Tollesbury Wick Marsh (EHCR 18844) and four on the extensive Dengie Flats (EHCR 18845-18848). In addition, three new timber alignments were recorded at Cobmarsh Island (EHCR 18840); East Mersea Flats (EHCR 18839); and at West Point, Heybridge (EHCR 18838). While it is entirely possible that such timber alignments are modern in date, the sites may relate to the concentration of Saxon fish-weirs in the estuary (Strachan 1998) and will be added to the EHCR as "possible fish-weirs" until a ground visit can



Plate 1 The newly identified sub-rectangular enclosure at Fyfield

verify. Four of the seven known Saxon weirs were also recorded for monitoring purposes, and to integrate with ongoing work on the sonar survey carried out by Southampton University in 1998.

While cropmark appearance was generally poor earlier in the summer, conditions improved over July and a flight over West Essex and South and East Hertfordshire produced a number of new sites on the clays. A single flight over West Essex and East Hertfordshire in July indicated that cropmark development had improved in that month and that cropmark sites were appearing on the boulder clay plateau in these areas. A good range of new sites was discovered, often with good definition considering the surface geology. These included ring-ditches at Eastwich, Little Blakesware, Aspendon, Buckland, Litlington and Chishill. Various enclosures were also recorded for the first time: sub-rectangular enclosures at Fyfield (EHCR 18842, Plate 1), Magdalen Laver (EHCR 18841) and Hatfield; curvilinear enclosures at Margaret Roding (EHCR 18843) and Pigsfoot Spring, Ardeley; a rectangular enclosure with an annexe at Hormead; and a double-ditched rectangular enclosure Buntingford. Areas of strip lynchets were visible on the chalk areas in Northwest Essex and Northeast Hertfordshire, a good example being at Sandon, Herts.

The appearance of cropmarks of such quality on the clays this year is something of an enigma. While cropmark appearance also improved in the gravel areas in July, their appearance on the clays had not been seen since the excellent conditions of 1995 and 1996. The clay-lands of this area clearly contain high numbers of undiscovered sites as shown by survey in 1995 and 1996 (Strachan 1996 and 1997), although it was generally thought that only very good conditions would allow their appearance. The results from this year would suggest that this is not necessarily the case, and that further sorties, during a variety of conditions, might aid our understanding of cropmark formation on clay soils.

### Essex Mapping Project

Caroline Ingle and David Strachan

Work has continued throughout 1999 on the Essex Mapping Project, as part of the National Mapping Programme (NMP), now co-ordinated and funded by English Heritage (following their merger with the RCHME in April 1999). The 22 sheets mapped in 1999 brings the total completed to 151 (see Fig. 3). The number of records on the MORPH database now stands at 9422, with 204 individual records being added during the year. In addition, 95 new sites have been

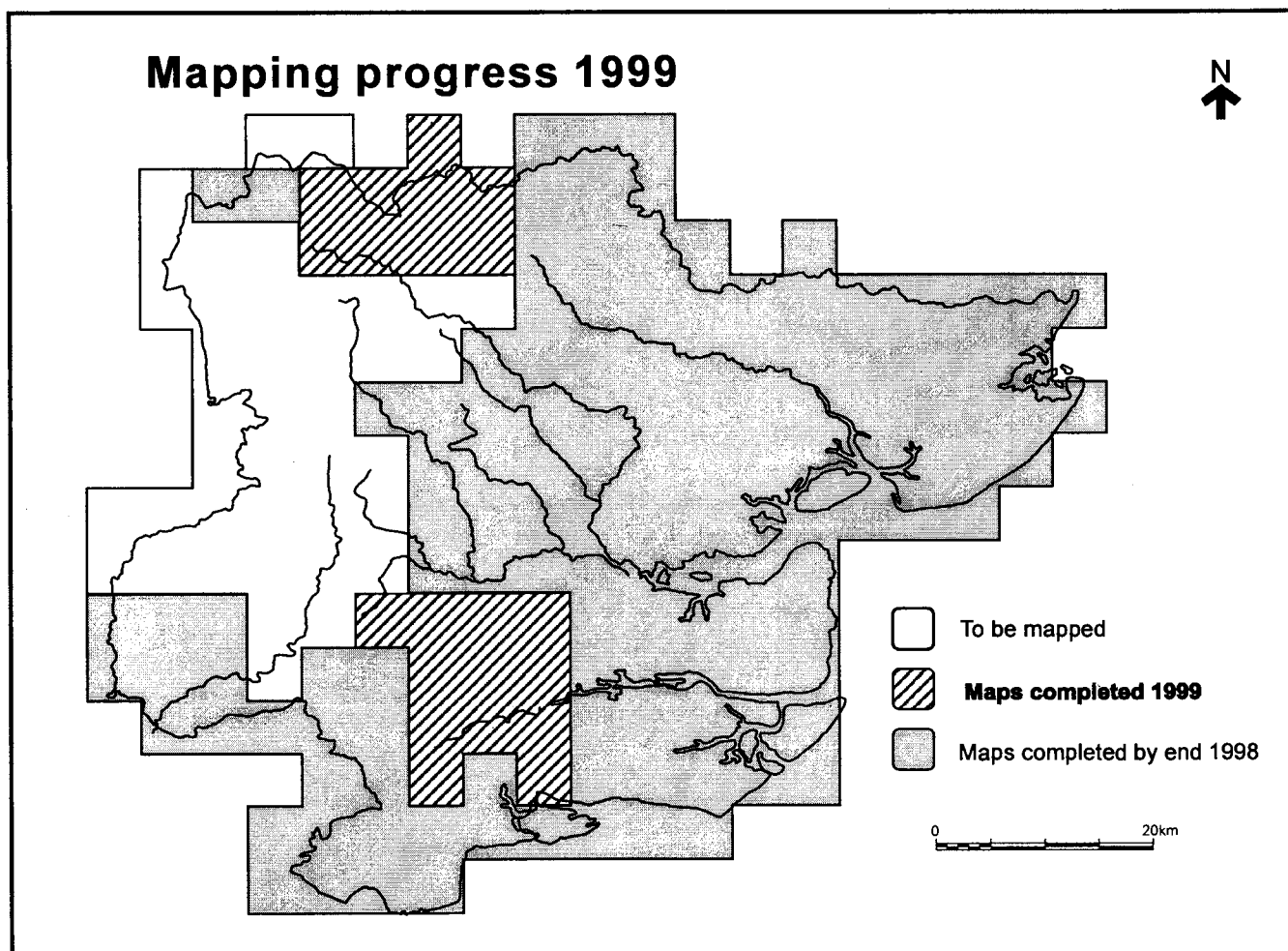


Fig. 3 Essex Mapping Project progress 1999

added to the Essex Heritage Conservation Record over the year.

This year has seen completion of mapping of Block 15, Basildon area, and Block 16 in the northwest of the county in the Haverhill-Saffron Walden area. The former lies largely on heavy clays, while the latter area borders with Suffolk and includes both areas of gravels in the Stour valley and Boulder Clay over much of the area. As a result, the density of features visible as cropmarks on aerial photography is lower than in many other parts of the county, including the Stour valley to the east where the gravel areas are broader, and the subject of an ongoing project (see this volume p.202). In the extreme northwest of the county, cropmarks are better developed on the chalk and a significant number of new features have been identified in this area.

#### *Chelmsford-Basildon area*

The heavy clay soils are not very amenable to the development of cropmarks, and there are relatively few features recorded from aerial photographs in this area. Cropmarks here tend to develop only on patches of lighter soils and features are generally seen in isolation. There are relatively few features identified as, or suggested to be of, prehistoric date. These do include, however, a D-shaped enclosure with an annexe and outer palisade ditch at Norton Heath, High Ongar (EHCR 17101) first recorded during aerial survey programme in 1996, a possible defended farmstead (Plate 2). A sub-rectangular enclosure at Sandon (EHCR 17186) has been tentatively interpreted as a possible mortuary enclosure, and a ring-ditch in the vicinity may represent the remains of a burial mound. A number of other ring-ditches were recorded, including examples at Sandon (EHCR 5808), Great Baddow (EHCR 5771) which has a central pit; and Rettendon (EHCR 17126). An example to the north of Hylands Park, Chelmsford (EHCR 858) lies near a rectilinear enclosure, which is bounded on one side by a trackway, and may represent a house site, although it is unclear as to whether they are contemporary.

Moated sites of medieval origin are relatively common across the area, the majority still extant, and although most were previously known, analysis of aerial photography taken over a period of 45 years enables some assessment of their survival since the Second World War. Examples of moats plotted include, Barn Hall, Wickford (EHCR 7515); Chichester Hall, Rawreth (EHCR 7521); and Withenden's Farm, Rawreth (EHCR 7523). Also of medieval date are the remains of a mill mound at Mill Hill, South Woodham Ferrers (EHCR 18264).

Perhaps one of the most common features plotted are former field boundaries, many of which were still extant at the time of the Ordnance Survey First Edition 6 inch survey. These include a woodland boundary at Ramsden Back Common, South Hanningfield (EHCR 18238) which appeared as a large irregular enclosure, later re-used for animal catchment; the site also appears as a tree-lined enclosure, with an avenue entrance, on the OS 1st edition six-inch map (sheet 76).

Defensive features include the remains of the Napoleonic defences, or Star Battery, of Chelmsford (EHCR 5742). The Star Battery was built in



Plate 2 A D-shaped enclosure with an annexe and outer palisade ditch at Norton Heath, High Ongar

1803 and described as a 'field fort'. It was to accommodate 600 men with a detached openwork protecting its south-western flank. This was to overlook and command the Great London Road, which passed through Widford. The battery lay at the western end of a defensive chain 2.8 km long, which terminated at the larger artillery fort at Galleywood Common. The defences were never used and were dismantled prior to Napoleon's final defeat in 1815. Most of the Star Battery was obliterated by the Chelmsford to London railway built in the last century, but part of the easternmost ditch survives within Chelmsford Golf Course.

The other main category of sites mapped in this area are World War II features. The most prominent feature running across many of the sheets is the anti-tank ditch (EHCR 8893) which runs south from Chelmsford and formed part of the GHQ line. Back-filled shortly after the war, this feature is now invisible from the ground, but parts still appear as cropmarks in dry years. Associated with this is what may have been a searchlight emplacement near Sandon (EHCR 18212).

Also of probable World War II origin but uncertain function is a line of earthwork enclosures, of various shapes, around 15-20m across, at East Haven Creek, Castle Point (EHCR 18286). The site, which has been largely destroyed by the 'Canvey way' by-pass, is probably the remains of a searchlight battery. Another class of anti-invasion site recorded are the expanses of aircraft obstruction ditches on the marshes in the southern part of the block, examples being on Bowers Marsh (EHCR 18288), near Waterside Cottages (EHCR 18283), and on Benfleet Downs (EHCR 18280). Numerous bomb craters, probably dating from World War II were also recorded, both as earthworks and as cropmarks. These included two large examples southwest of Hanningfield reservoir, South Hanningfield (EHCR 18240), and near Rawreth (EHCR 18276). Of later date is an example of a Cold War anti-aircraft battery at Elmshaws Farm (EHCR 17047), not plotted for purposes of NMP (which covers only the period up to 1945) but one which, without the benefit of the full range of photography may have been mis-recorded as a World War II feature. Almost identical in layout to many batteries of World War II date, this clearly is of post-war origin as it is absent from the 1940s photography.

#### *Northwest Essex*

In the blocks mapped in the Northwest of the county this year, the underlying geology is predominantly boulder clay, with some gravels and lighter soils particularly along the river valleys. The densest cropmarks (although still generally isolated groups of cropmarks rather than "landscapes") have been in the Stour valley and in the areas to the west, which are underlain by chalk.

The nature of sites is similar to those seen in the in the Stour valley further east (Strachan and Ingle 1999). Ring-ditches, mainly suggested to be the remains of

prehistoric barrows, are found across the area, but mostly as isolated examples, including one at Ridgewell Hall (EHCR 7032) which sits within a larger rectangular enclosure although this is not necessarily contemporary. Other examples were recorded at Chadwells Farm, Birdbrook (EHCR 7028), although field-walking here produced only medieval and post-medieval pottery; Birdbrook (EHCR 7026); Steeple Bumpstead (EHCR 18077); Ridgewell (EHCR 7351); Toppesfield (EHCR 7350) where the site was intersected by a series of rectilinear features; and Helions Bumpstead, a penannular example (EHCR 17085). Illustrating the difficulties of interpreting date and function of ring ditches, is an example at Popesmill Farm, Sturmer (EHCR 1625), where a penannular ring ditch (c 22m in diameter) appears with cross trenches in the centre, indicating a post-mill. Flint tools have been recovered from field walking in the area, however, including a scraper, piercers, and numerous retouched pieces. It is possible that a prehistoric barrow was re-used as a windmill mound in the medieval period. Other barrows plotted, but which lie outside Essex, include a barrow cemetery, now visible as a cluster of 11 ring ditches at Chapel Street (Suffolk) on a meander of the river Stour; and the Bartlow Hills, a series of Roman barrows formerly in Essex, but now in Cambridgeshire following boundary changes.

Numerous rectilinear and curvilinear enclosures, as yet of unknown date and function, were recorded. These include an oval enclosure (EHCR 7034) near Ridgewell; a large double ditched enclosure near Saffron Walden (EHCR 4842); and an unusual kidney-shaped enclosure, also near Saffron Walden (EHCR 360) which remains of undetermined date.

Moats are also a common feature of this landscape, and many remain extant. An example at Whitleys House, Birdbrook, Braintree (EHCR 6968) is rather trapezoidal in shape and included a house which survived until the 19th century, when the remains of building materials were scattered on the surface of the island's western side. Other examples include Latchley's Farm, Steeple Bumpstead (EHCR 1456); Helions, Helions Bumpstead (EHCR 1591); Bendish Hall, Radwinter (EHCR 1423); Wincelow Hall, Hempstead (EHCR 1427); The Howses, Great Sampford (EHCR 1450); Parsonage Farm, Wimbish (EHCR 1951); Tiptofts, Wimbish (EHCR 161) and St Aylotts, Saffron Walden (EHCR 145). In addition, a number of cropmark features were interpreted as medieval moats, including a site near Ridgewell (EHCR 7024), and one at Ashdon (EHCR 227), which sits within a series of other rectilinear enclosures.

World War II sites recorded in this area were the airfields at Ridgewell (EHCR 16608); Castle Camps, Helions Bumpstead (EHCR 16524); Little Walden (EHCR 16573); Great Sampford (EHCR 16569); and Debden (EHCR 16539), where a gun emplacement and an associated stretch of anti-tank ditch were also recorded.

**Historic Towns Survey**

Maria Medlycott

The Essex Historic Towns Survey has been completed. Thirty-two towns have been assessed as part of a nation-wide reassessment of the management of the urban archaeological resource. The County Council has adopted the accompanying Supplementary Planning Guidance, which delimits the Historic Town Extent and provides advice on the management of the areas of urban archaeological potential within the planning process. At present the Supplementary Planning Guidance is being presented to the relevant District or Borough Councils for adoption within the local plan framework; approximately half of the Districts have already done this.

**Monuments Protection Programme**

Sue Tyler

The Additional Scheduling Project of the Monuments Protection Programme funded by English Heritage continues to progress; this Project is running in conjunction with the work of English Heritage's own MPP Archaeologists. The Programme is now beginning to bear fruit with 22 new monuments added to the Essex Schedule since March of last year, and ten revisions to existing scheduled monuments. Categories of monument visited and assessed for scheduling include decoy ponds; selected prehistoric and Roman cropmarks (hengess, long mortuary enclosures and discrete barrow complexes); dovecotes; icehouses; coastal fish weirs and World War II Heavy Anti-Aircraft gunsites.

Recently notified scheduled sites include several from the prehistoric and Roman cropmark category, including the prehistoric henge at Boxted; the long mortuary enclosure at Feering and the Iron Age/early Roman square barrows at Great Dunmow. Newly scheduled decoy ponds include two on Old Hall Marshes and one at Lion Point, near Jaywick. In due course more will filter through from English Heritage's Scheduling Section to the Essex Heritage Conservation Record.

Scheduling proposals have been prepared for four dovecotes, one icehouse and five coastal fish weirs. The dovecotes include one at Wendens Lofts which has exceptional preservation of internal features, including a fine array of wooden nest boxes (Plates 3 and 4).

The category of monument currently being assessed is World War II Heavy Anti-Aircraft gunsites. From an original wartime deployment of some 40 World War II Heavy Anti-Aircraft gunsites (sited across Essex in a pattern designed to combat German bombers en route to the capital, the Thames Estuary and other military targets in the south east of England) the nine most complete are being assessed for scheduling. So far seven have been visited and scheduling documentation has been prepared for six of these. Most are in south Essex, in defensive positions along the river Thames and outskirts of London, including two on Canvey Island. The most northerly example visited is in Tendring District sited at Little Oakley; here a line of four square emplacements survive complete with wood and canvas ammunition racks.

The next category of monument to



Plate 3 The dovecote at Wendens Lofts

be looked at will be churches; an initial scheduling list of some 30 medieval/post-medieval ruined churches has been drawn up and site visits will commence shortly.

### Stour Valley Project

David Strachan and Nigel Brown

This project arises from the preparation of a regional research framework for the eastern counties (Glazebrook 1997; Brown and Glazebrook 2000), and builds on the work of the National Mapping Project and recent aerial survey. The first stage of the project comprises the accurate mapping of the cropmark sites from aerial photographs and the creation of a terrain model of the study area, within a GIS environment, as the basis for synthesis and interpretation. The work is

funded by English Heritage as part of the implementation of the Monuments at Risk Survey (MARS).

### Survey of modern archaeological and architectural remains

Shane Gould

The project was launched in 1994 in order to identify, record, protect and manage the County's rich and diverse 'industrial' heritage. Since its inception the parameters have been widened to consider all aspects of past human activity from the period 1750 to date. This not only includes the site of the 'factory', but also communications, housing, welfare, leisure, retail and religious activities. In order to reflect this diverse range

of interests the title of the project has been changed to the Survey of Modern Archaeological and Architectural Remains.

In the past five years 727 'new' sites have been added to the EHCR as a result of the project. With the completion of extensive surveys of Essex maltings, World War I and II airfields, limekilns, historic boundary markers, iron foundries and workhouses, further reports have been completed on Essex hospitals, the public water supply industry and the buildings of the radio electronics industry in Chelmsford; these are all available for public consultation at the EHCR, Essex Records Office or the National Monuments Record Centre, Swindon. Similar surveys are now underway for brick and tile works, the archaeology of the Chelmer and Blackwater Navigation and textile mills. Once an assessment of all the surviving monuments of a given type have been completed, informed policies can be implemented on their importance, protection and ultimately, preservation.

### Essex Hospitals 1800-1948

A. Garwood, Essex County Council Field Archaeology Unit.

Drawing on the earlier survey of workhouses and the perceived threat posed by the re-structuring of the NHS, historic hospitals were seen as a site type that was becoming increasingly vulnerable. Seven main categories were eventually identified which included general hospitals, cottage hospitals, convalescents homes, sanatoria, isolation hospitals, military hospitals and lunatic asylums.

The Essex and Colchester General Infirmary (EHCR 15632, Plate 5) is the



Plate 4 A fine array of wooden nest boxes in the dovecote at Wendens Lofts



Plate 5 A view of the original 1819-20 Late Georgian hospital building at Essex and Colchester General Infirmary showing two of the later Victorian (1879-80) diagonally set sanitary blocks.



Plate 6 The High Victorian Gothic architecture of the 1865-6 hospital building at Saffron Walden General Hospital.

earliest surviving general hospital in Essex. Built between 1819-20 to plans prepared by M. Greystone-Thompson, the building adopts a late Georgian architectural style. From the mid-eighteenth century onwards many hospitals were built to this plan with a central block flanking separate male/female wards; the

former usually contained the administrative offices, boardroom, staff and service rooms together with stairwells. The use of cross-ventilated wards subsequently became a key feature of the pavilion plan which dominated hospital design from the 1850s. Pioneered by Florence Nightingale, this was seen as a



Plate 7 The Herbert Dowsett Ward at Southend Municipal Hospital, Rochford with one of the now dry ornamental ponds in the foreground.



Plate 8 The front facade of Abbey House, the main school building at Elmbridge Boarding School, Fyfield

major advance on the corridor plan whose back-to-back wards were thought to encourage cross-contagion. Although Saffron Walden General Hospital (EHCR15633, Plate 6) was built in 1865-6, the High Victorian Architectural style belies a backward looking corridor plan.

The design of the pre-NHS hospital in Essex peaked with the erection of the Southend Municipal Hospital, Rochford (EHCR 15012, Plate 7) in *c.* 1940. Designed by the architect F. W. Smith, the buildings are reminiscent of the International Style and the complex was intended to act as a national model. The main block



exhibits pavilion planning with four south facing wards which terminate with semi-circular sun lounges. New methods of construction using ferro-concrete and steel framing provided vast uninterrupted areas of glazing which were ideal for sunlight treatment. To the west stands a two-storey TB isolation block with its nationally unique arrow shape; the use of sunlight treatment is again evident in the large south-facing windows and the circular day room and sun balcony.

Detailed site surveys continue to be undertaken within the planning framework in order to inform future schemes of re-use or to make a permanent record of those elements that will be destroyed. These are available for public consultation from the repositories listed above, but those that are of exceptional interest will appear as published articles in future issues of Essex Archaeology and History or Industrial Archaeology Review.

**Elmbridge Boarding School, Fyfield  
(EHCR 18534)**

A. Garwood, Essex County Council Field Archaeology Unit.

Elmbridge School (Plate 8) was built between 1884-5 by the West Ham School Board to cater for persistent truants. Erected in the Arts and Crafts architectural style it is of two-and-half-storeys and adopts an H-shaped plan. The main building with its ornate Dutch gables is predominantly constructed of yellow stock bricks laid in Flemish bond. Red brick dressings are used to accentuate all the apertures and quoining, and as decorative detail on the gables and stacks. The school was closed during the First World War, but was re-

opened in 1923 as a residential open-air school for children with respiratory problems. It was acquired by Essex County Council in 1957 and officially closed in 1994.

Much of the internal spatial configuration survived in a relatively unaltered state and this provided useful information on both room status and circulation. Staff occupied the west range and the status of these spaces is reflected by the use of cast iron fireplaces, decorative staircases and deep skirtings. The schoolrooms stood on the ground floor with the dormitories above; interestingly a series of observation portals enabled staff to maintain a watchful eye on the children throughout the night. The presence of these features may also have conditioned the behaviour of the children who could have been under surveillance at any time.

**Feltimores Farm, Harlow (EHCR 15013)**

Anne Padfield

Feltimores is a typical courtyard model farm built on a new site by John Perry-Watlington, an improving landlord from a shipowning family, at a date between 1850 and 1880. It was carefully designed and well-built, mainly in brick (Plate 9). Originally intended for a predominantly stock-rearing system, the buildings were soon adapted to reflect the shift to dairying at the end of the nineteenth century and beyond. With the same Scottish family in occupation for 60 years, there was little change or capital investment until 1966, when Feltimores became part of a larger arable enterprise. The surviving buildings were converted to pig rearing which ceased in 1981.



Plate 9 Two Victorian cowsheds with haylofts above separated by a high archway at Feltimores Farm, Harlow

# SURVEY OF WORLD WAR TWO DEFENCES IN THE BOROUGH OF BRENTWOOD



Plate 10 A comprehensive record of World War II defences in the Borough, the front cover of the Brentwood report shows a wartime photograph of Home Guard training at Weald Park

The plan was approximately symmetrical, with a barn to the north and a two-storeyed range with a central archway to the south. Between the two were two enclosed courtyards formed by brick buildings, which comprised mainly open-sided stock sheds. Behind the barn to the Northwest was a very large open-sided 'Dutch' barn with a lean-to. The two barns were timber-framed and weather-boarded, but the rest of the complex was built externally in yellow stock bricks, with cheaper local orange-red brick used where it would not be seen. All the roofing was originally of slate.

The visual attractiveness of the site from the chase was obviously important hence the symmetry, archway and surmounting square tower above the Front Range (now demolished). The design is however, fairly severe and not as decorative as the model farms of; for example, the architect Frederic Chancellor. Felthams may not even have had its own architect: it could have been a copy or adaptation of a published design

The following survey reports have also been received during 1999

Howe Green Moat Farm, Great Hallingbury (EHCR 4430 & 4431); this volume p229.

St. Andrews Hospital (formerly Billericay Union Workhouse), Billericay (EHCR 15372)

St. Michaels Hospital, Braintree (EHCR 15373), this volume pp212-213.

Saffron Walden Union Workhouse, Radwinter Road (EHCR 15384)

Cromptons Second Arc Works, Writtle Road, Chelmsford (EHCR 15670), this volume pp227-228.

## World War II Defences Survey

Fred Nash

The early part of 1999 saw the continuation of the survey of the GHQ Line, Britain's major defence line in World War II. In Essex, this traces a 40-mile path from Great Chesterford in the Northwest to Canvey Island on the Thames. During January and February, one of the final sections to be surveyed, from East Hanningfield to Sandon, was completed with the recording of 45 pillboxes and anti-tank barriers. Over the total length of this line, only a short two-mile stretch, around the East Side of Wickford, remains to be surveyed.

In the spring, the project moved to Brentwood where a survey of the Borough revealed 55 wartime sites, the great majority built as "town defences" concentrating around Brentwood and Shenfield. In the event of a successful German landing on the East Coast, the capture of Brentwood, astride the direct route to London, would have been a valuable asset and the town was particularly well protected. Constructed during the summer of 1940, there were concrete and steel road barriers on all the approach roads, in a complete ring around the town. Eighteen months later, spigot mortar anti-tank emplacements were added as further protection. Issued to the Home Guard in early 1942, these weapons could fire a heavy "bomb" with devastating results – although accuracy was somewhat dubious.

South of the town, Warley Barracks was guarded by road barriers sited on steep hills and in woods along the narrow lanes around the area. The Cable and Wireless radio station at Pilgrim's Hatch had its own small army



Plate 11 The concrete hard at The Stone, on the River Blackwater, built to accommodate four Landing Craft, Troops, in preparation for the D-day Normandy landings.

detachment and the site was guarded by pillboxes, road barriers and at least one spigot mortar. From 1941, Weald Park was a major training area for the Essex Home Guard. With an assault course, rifle ranges, spigot mortar range and facilities for training on all kinds of weapons, there were sometimes as many as 1,000 Home Guards under canvas at the Park. Evidence of its World War II role is still being revealed. In the spring of 1999, Explosive Ordnance Disposal divers, engaged in the clearance of World War II ordnance from the Upper Lake, recovered over 200 rounds of ammunition.

Brentwood is the first Borough to be surveyed in its entirety by the project and a report (Plate 10) containing historical information, assessment of results and details of all the sites has been written. This has been distributed to the Borough Council and local libraries as a permanent record of Brentwood's part in Britain's World War II defence.

In the summer the survey moved to Maldon District and concentrated on the Chelmer Valley – the area of Woodham Walter, Ulting, Langford, Heybridge and West Maldon. A total of 24 sites were visited and recorded, including two road bridges over the Chelmer and Blackwater Navigation Canal which still retain demolition charge holes, probably bored during the summer of 1940 to hold linked explosives for blowing the bridge in the face of an imminent German attack.

Prior to the D-day Normandy landings in June 1944, 68 “hards” were built around southern England to provide dry berthing for the hundreds of invasion craft needed. Two of these were constructed on the River

Blackwater, at The Stone and Stansgate Abbey (Plate 11). At the request of English Heritage, these have recently been surveyed by the Essex project. Designed to hold four L.C.T's or Landing Craft, Troops, on a concrete base some 250 feet wide by up to 150 feet in depth, both were found to survive in good condition as landing areas for local sailing clubs.

During the autumn months the project undertook a thematic study of a little known aspect of the war against the German Luftwaffe – the county's bombing decoys. Throughout the early wartime years hundreds of decoy bombing sites were constructed across Britain. These simulated airfields, docks, railway yards and industrial complexes in an attempt to persuade German bombers to drop their loads onto the open fields of the decoy rather than their intended target.

Initially, the programme concentrated on the simulation of daytime airfields, with false hangars, dummy aircraft and mown runways. This proved to be unsuccessful and the decoy effort turned to the replication of sites at night – runway illumination, street lamps, moving vehicle lights and effects to simulate furnace flares, engine fire-boxes and tram flashes. When it became apparent that blazing fires usually drew more bombers to an area under attack, ready-made fires were added to the decoy sites. These fires, in many variations, were ignited electrically from a control bunker located, hopefully, outside the bombing area. After the bombing of Coventry on the night of 14/15 November 1940, the programme was expanded to cover large centres of population. At the outset of a raid, fires on a huge scale were lit at “Starfish” (SF = Special Fires) sites around



Plate 12 In an attempt to divert some of the German bombers away from the refineries, both Thames Haven and Shell Haven were provided with decoys. After almost 60 years, the control bunker of the Shell Haven decoy still survives. The sloping entrance allowed earth to be piled up all round as a protection against stray bombs.

Britain's cities. Multiple effects created by burning oil, paraffin and creosote added essential variety.

By June 1944, decoy sites had been attacked on 730 occasions ranging from a single bomb on a dummy airfield to a massed attack on a Starfish site. In drawing the high explosives and incendiaries onto themselves, they were undoubtedly responsible for saving the lives of thousands of people.

There were 15 decoys built in Essex. Chelmsford and Colchester were both potential targets for German "Baedeker" raids – the bombing of Britain's historic cities – and they were protected by dummies at Little Baddow and Great Bromley. The airfields at North Weald, Debden and Chipping Ongar were also covered – North Weald's decoy at Nazeing had a flight of plywood and canvas "Hurricanes" to complete the deception. The oil installations at Thames Haven and Shell Haven had their decoy shadows on the marshes nearby (Plate 12).

The survey of these sites is now complete. Although nothing remains of the actual decoy apparatus six of the large control bunkers, which housed the electrical generators, switchgear and necessary personnel, still remain – until now largely unrecognised for the secret and vital role they played during World War II.

## Bibliography

- Brown, N. 1996 'The Archaeology of Essex, c. 1500-500 BC' in Bedwin, O. (ed.) *The Archaeology of Essex: Proceedings of the Writtle Conference* 26-37
- Brown, N. and Glazebrook, J. 2000 *Research and Archaeology: A framework for the Eastern Counties 2. Research Agenda and Strategy*, E. Anglian Occ. Pap.
- Buckley, D. and Hedges, J. 1987 *The Bronze Age and Saxon Settlements at Springfield Lyons, Essex: An Interim Report* Essex County Council Occ. Pap. 5
- Glazebrook, J. 1997 *Research and Archaeology: A framework for the Eastern Counties 1. Resource Assessment* E. Anglian Archaeol. Occ. Pap. 3
- O'Connor, B. 1980 *Cross Channel Relations in the Late Bronze Age*, BAR Int. Ser. 91
- Roth, H. 1974 'Em Ledermesser der Atlantischen Bronzezeit aus Mittelfranken', *Archaeol. Korr.* 4, 37-47.
- Strachan, D. 1999 'Aerial Survey 1998' in Bennett (ed.), 1999, 'Work of the ECC Archaeology Section' *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* 30, 196-209
- Strachan, D. and Ingle C. 1999 'Essex Mapping Project 1998' in Bennett (ed.), 1999, 'Work of the ECC Archaeology Section' *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* 30, 196-209
- Strachan, D. 1998 'Inter-tidal stationary fishing structures in Essex: some C14 dates' *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* 29, 274-82
- Strachan, D. 1997 'Aerial Survey 1996' in Bennett (ed.), 1997, 'Work of the ECC Archaeology Section' *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* 28, 186-90
- Strachan, D. 1996 'Aerial Survey 1995' in Bennett (ed.), 1996, 'Work of the ECC Archaeology Section' *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* 27, 250-3

*The Society is extremely grateful to Essex County Council for a generous grant towards the cost of publishing this article.*

# Archaeology in Essex 1999

Edited by A. Bennett

This annual report, prepared at the request of the Advisory Committee for Archaeology in Essex, comprises summaries of archaeological fieldwork carried out during the year. The longevity of many projects often results in a lengthy post-excavation and publication process. The publication of these summaries therefore provides a useful guide to current archaeological research, and the opportunity to take an overview of significant advances. This year 109 projects were reported to the County Archaeological Section (Fig. 1).

Sites are listed by category of work and alphabetically by parish; the directors of excavations,

organisations involved and information regarding the location of archives, including finds, are listed where known. Projects continuing from previous years are indicated by reference to previous summaries in the relevant 'Archaeology in Essex 19' (N.B. prior to 1992 this report was entitled 'Excavations in Essex 19').

Contributors are once more warmly thanked for providing information. The illustration is by Alison Bennett (Fig. 1). The original summaries, and any associated limited circulation reports, have been added to the Essex Heritage Conservation Record (EHCR, formerly SMR) held by the Heritage Conservation Group at Essex County Council, Planning Division,

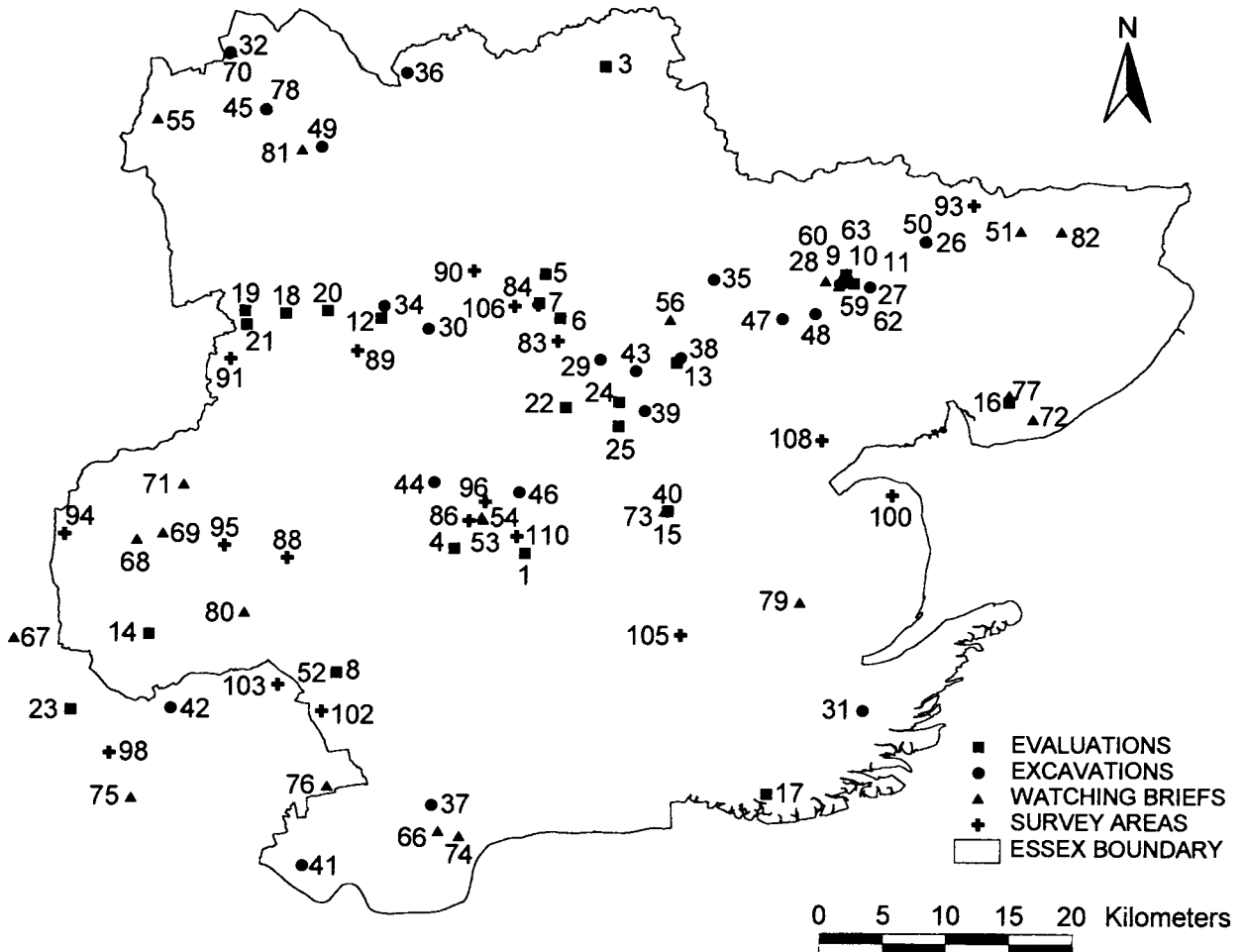


Fig. 1 Location of archaeological projects in Essex 1999

County Hall, Chelmsford CM1 1QH. Regarding sites in the London Boroughs of Barking and Dagenham, Havering, Newham, and Redbridge, enquirers should contact the Greater London SMR, English Heritage London Region, 23 Savile Row, London, W1X 1AB.

## Progress in Essex Archaeology 1999

### *Introduction*

This year the total number of summaries reported here is 109, a rise of six from last year. Evaluations have fallen again, this time from 34 to 25, but excavations have increased from 15 to 24. Four of these excavations follow on from evaluations in previous years. Another four excavation projects have been carried out by local societies. There is also evidence of a growing expertise in building recording, reflected in the number of projects (16) carried out by 6 organisations plus one individual. Three further individuals have assisted the Survey of Modern and Architectural Remains (No. 97 below). This compares with 14 projects and 6 organisations in 1998, and 10 projects and 3 organisations in 1997.

Only the most significant summaries are mentioned in the following period paragraphs.

### *Prehistoric*

Further work at the Dolphin Pit at Purfleet (41) has revealed worked flints of both Levallois and Acheulian type, plus fossilised remain of animals and plants. Evidence of Mesolithic activity comes from Shoeburyness (17). Probable Neolithic activity is seen at Stansted (18) and Stanway (47), whilst there is redeposited Neolithic material from Springfield (46). Bronze Age settlement features were noted at Roxwell (44) and Springfield (46), and excavation continued at Great Tey (35). Evaluation of the Old Ranges at Shoeburyness (17) showed that the remains of a multi-phase defended Iron Age settlement survive within the Scheduled area. There is a Late Iron Age enclosure at Cressing (29), and a large defensive ditch at Kelvedon (38). The Late Iron Age to Roman transition is seen at Stansted (18), with dense intercutting features representing several phases; Cressing (29), with a second modified enclosure; and Stanway (47), where enclosures and other features of this period were excavated. More red hills, representing Iron Age/Roman salt production sites, have been discovered at Tollesbury (108).

### *Roman*

Urban Roman remains have come from Colchester, Great Chesterford and Stanway. At Colchester there is evidence for the Roman fort (9), a building within the west cemetery (28), a road between two insulae (57), a cremation in a pot, and further evidence of an extra-mural suburb (63). At Great Chesterford there are features to the east of the walled core of the Roman town (32). At Gosbecks Archaeological Park, Stanway,

excavation continued with trenches to determine the location of the theatre and temple enclosure boundaries.

Evidence from rural sites includes a site at Rettenden (1), structures at Shoeburyness (17), settlement features at Takeley (20), enclosures at Felsted (30), a Roman road at Great Tey (35), further features at Redbridge (42), and features possibly indicating the Roman fort at Saffron Walden (45).

### *Saxon*

Evidence of Saxon occupation has come from Maldon (40) where there are the remains of late Saxon timber buildings. Mid-Saxon graves were found at Rivenhall (43), and Saxon activity was noted at Witham (25). A find of a single sherd of Saxon pottery has come from near a previously excavated early Saxon site at West Hanningfield (1). Residual finds of pottery also came from St Osyth (16), Roxwell (44) and Springfield (46).

### *Medieval*

Further work in several of the historic towns took place this year. In Witham (25) there are features indicating possible roadside settlement adjacent to Maltings Lane. In Horndon-on-the-Hill (37) excavation in the area of the medieval market showed that there was already buildings there in its earliest phase. In Maldon (40), evidence of medieval timber building were found fronting onto the High Street.

Outside the towns, investigations at Thremhall Priory at Takeley (21) revealed a probable back-filled fish pond; at Little Braxted Hall (39) an excavation was carried out in the medieval kitchen; several phases of medieval building were found on a moated platform at Wimbish (49); the remains of a possible sluice system between a fish pond and the river were recorded at Coggeshall (56); and at Corringham (66) the presence of medieval features suggest a late medieval farm nearby.

### *Post-medieval*

At Witham (24), the remains of a water mill were recorded. Further work was carried out at the site of Great Burwood Farm on Foulness (31). A watching brief at St Mary's Church in Colchester (58) showed that the foundations of the building relate to the rebuilding of the church in the 18th century. Hall Farm at Great Saling (90) was reorganised as a 'model farm' in the Victorian period. The remains of a fernery were recorded at Warley Place (102).

Building recording included hospitals at Black Notley (83), Braintree (84), and Brentwood (85); a model factory in Chelmsford (86); and Cottage Homes at Chipping Ongar (88).

## Evaluations

### 1. A130 Improvements, Sandon to Rettendon (TL 742 034 to TQ 773 954)

R. Dale, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

Fieldwalking and trial trenching evaluations are continuing on this road scheme project. Work is programmed to continue into the new year and will include area excavation both of the newly discovered sites and of the known site at Downhouse Farm. So far the following sites have been identified:

#### • West Hanningfield, Downhouse Farm (TL 747 013)

Trenching to the south of the Roman and early Saxon site excavated in 1994-5 have located a major medieval field boundary and other medieval features, and a sherd of Saxon pottery.

#### • East Hanningfield, Canon Barns (TQ 756 990)

Trenching of a possible prehistoric site suggested by fieldwalking located a small number of Roman features in the north of the site.

#### • Rettendon, Curry Hill (TQ 768 956 to TQ 773 954)

Extensive trenching of an area of high potential indicated by fieldwalking located Iron Age and Roman occupation.

Archive: Ch.E.M.

### 2. Ardleigh, Millennium Green (TM 0525 2922)

R. Wardill and M. Peachey, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

A geophysical survey was carried out in an area of extensive cropmarks, including field systems and ring ditches, near the well-known Bronze Age cemetery excavated by English Heritage's Central Excavation Unit in the 1970s. The survey identified a possible trackway crossing the site, together with other ditches, some of which may be correlated with cropmarks. A fieldwalking survey was carried out to evaluate these results, but although worked and burnt flint were recovered, these did not represent a significant assemblage. No archaeological features were identified during subsequent excavation of a pond by R. Dale.

Archive: C.M.

### 3. Belchamp Otten, land adjoining The Old Rectory (TL 802 418)

D.A.G. Gadd, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

Trenching in advance of a housing development has located a prehistoric ditch.

Archive: Bt.M.

### 4. Billericay, Billericay School, Southend Road (TL 6865 0380)

M.J. Peachey, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

Trenching near an area of known Late Iron Age and Roman activity (EHCR 5392-5406 and 16074-5) located a single Late Iron Age/early Roman pit. The site was extensively disturbed by post-medieval quarrying and modern dumping of industrial waste.

Archive: Ch.E.M.

### 5. Bocking, The Old Deanery, Deanery Hill (TL 756 255)

M.J. Peachey, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

Trenching behind the Deanery, whose north wing incorporates 14th-century timbers, recorded a 13th-century ditch and a pit, giving some support to the theory that the present building succeeded an early medieval priest's house.

Archive: Bt.M.

### 6. Braintree, Mill Hill (TL 768 220)

C. Cavanagh, A.O.C.

An archaeological evaluation was commissioned by David Monk Architects, on behalf of Course Design, and undertaken by AOC Archaeology Group on the site of a proposed housing development, situated within two fields on the eastern side of Braintree. Seventeen evaluation trenches were opened, four of which contained significant archaeological features cut into natural deposits of clay and flint. Three main periods of activity were identified in the northern field commencing with the Bronze Age, which was represented by a single pit and residual finds. Iron Age remains were encountered on the higher ground in the north-east part of the site, which may represent evidence for settlement. This appears to have continued into the Romano-British period, to which the majority of securely dated features were attributed. The field in the northern part of the site is surrounded by ditches that may represent survival of an earlier settlement boundary. Post-medieval activity seems to have been confined to agricultural practices and the southern field was previously used as a golf course.

Archive: A.O.C., to go to Bt.M.

### 7. Braintree, St Michael's Hospital, Rayne Road (TL 7515 2320)

D. Hart, A.O.C.

Eleven trenches were fully investigated within the area of development. All trenches exhibited a sequence of topsoil, subsoil and natural, although it should be noted that Trenches 4, 7 and 8 also displayed a degree of landscaping in the form of made ground. Small ditches were observed in trenches 3, 4 and 8, with evidence of recutting identified in trench 3. These are perhaps best interpreted as field boundaries (a hypothesis that can be seen to be substantiated by the evidence of possible plough scarring in Trench 1, and, on the basis of a sherd of Mill Green Coarse Ware retrieved from the recut in Trench 3, are probably medieval in date). Post-medieval



features in the site consisted of postholes in Trenches 2, 3 and 8 and a juvenile pig inhumation in Trench 4 that is presumably related to the keeping of pigs by the Union Workhouse from c. 1850 onwards.

Archive: A.O.C., to go to Bt.M.

**8. Brentwood, 125-127 High Street (TQ 5945 9388)**

J. Wood, M.o.L.A.S.

During the evaluation, two trenches were excavated on disused land to the rear of properties fronting onto the high street. Historically the site had been open ground, and more recently had become over grown with shrubs and trees.

A pebbly subsoil was located c.0.70m below ground level in which a single sherd of late medieval pottery was found. This layer has been tentatively interpreted as ancient cultivation/plough soil. Above was a layer of post medieval garden soils and debris into which was cut a brick wall and associated brick pavement/drive way.

The watching brief recovered further evidence for medieval cultivation in the form of a possible furrow filled by the cultivation soil seen in the evaluation. An 18th-century well was also recorded.

Archive: M.o.L.A.S.

**9. Colchester, 29-39 Head Street (TL 9936 2508)**

J. Moore and T. Howe, A.O.C.

Five trenches were opened on the site of the former Post Office. Three trenches were taken down through the complete sequence of archaeological deposits to the underlying glacial (pleistocene) gravels and sands. The other two trenches confirmed that the basements of the building fronting Head Street have destroyed all archaeological remains in a swathe 18-21.5m back from Head Street.

The glacial sands and gravels were found at levels between 32.71-31.70m OD, above which were remains of the Roman fort, established c.44 AD. This appeared to demonstrate two phases of construction and demolition prior to the Boudican uprising of AD 60. Evidence for the revolt was seen in the form of burnt structures and surfaces in two trenches. Post-Boudican 1st- and 2nd-century construction and occupation in the town was noted, principally in the form of mortar foundations and an apsidal bath relating to a presumed residential structure. Evidence for the decline of Roman Colchester c.350-410 AD was recovered, including a severed human head discarded in a small pit.

Little evidence for medieval activity was seen, although some residual pottery sherds were found in later contexts. Post-medieval pitting and construction across the site was extensive, damaging the upper Roman sequence. The existing ground surface was recorded at levels between 33.66-24.29m OD.

Archive: C.M.

**10. Colchester, Middleborough House, 21 North Station Road (TL 9927 2560)**

H. Brooks, C.A.T.

An archaeological evaluation by two trial trenches in the garden west of 21 Middleborough has revealed post-medieval dumped soils sealing archaeological deposits at depths between 1.8m and 2.0m below modern ground. These deposits consist of archaeological finds mixed in with riverside silts and gravels, and date between the later Roman period and the 16th century. Finds were plentiful, and included medieval leather fragments, Roman pottery and tile, and two large timber pieces which may be Roman in date.

Archive: C.M. (accession 1999-136)

**11. Colchester, St Botolph's Priory grounds (TL 999 249)**

C. Crossan, C.A.T.

A 2 x 2.5m trench was manually excavated to a depth of 1m to establish the archaeological implications of a proposed church hall extension located 50m south of the 12th-century priory church. The uppermost 60cm of the trench was occupied by modern deposits, sealing a thick layer of dark soil which extended beyond the bottom of the trench. Finds from the lowest exposed level of the dark soil indicate that its deposition occurred no earlier than the 19th century.

Archive: C.M. (accession 1999-102)

**12. Great Dunmow, The Saracen's Head Hotel, High Street (TL 6271 2193)**

M. Germany, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

Trenching in the area of an extension to the rear of the hotel recorded part of a post-built structure dating to the 13th-14th century, and rubbish and cess pits of the 13th-14th and 17th centuries.

Archive: S.W.M.

**13. Kelvedon, land adjacent to 16 High Street (TL 8600 1851)**

L. Capon, A.O.C.

An archaeological evaluation was conducted in June 1999 on behalf of Adams Homes Ltd. by AOC Archaeology Group at land to the west of 16 High Street, Kelvedon. A single trench approximately 30m x 1.65m revealed a single archaeological feature containing medieval pottery. This feature was deemed to be a tree-pit, and the pottery residual, as post-medieval pottery was also recovered from the fill. No other features of archaeological significance were encountered.

Archive: A.O.C.

**14. Loughton, West Essex New Secondary School, Willingale Road (TQ 4465 9690)**

T. Vaughan and J. Smith, H.A.T.

Geophysical survey revealed general faint linear anomalies. These are probably field drains of modern origin. Two features in the central south-east part of site are possibly of archaeological origin. There is no evidence for the continuation of the Roman villa complex to the NNE of the site.

Fieldwalking revealed an extensive tile spread across the site, much of it of post medieval date. There was small-scale Roman building materials on the site, probably residual. Other finds included 2 struck flints, a single burnt flint, a single animal bone fragment, iron nail and a rod. Some alluvium and/or colluvium expected to mask deposits at the bottom of the slopes in the south and west periphery of the site.

Archive: H.A.T.

**15. Maldon, land to rear of 140-142 High Street (TL 8538 0683)**

E. Heppell, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

Trenching of a backlands area extending from 20m to 70m to the south of the High Street recorded only a thick layer of topsoil, suggesting that the site had been gardens until modern times.

Archive: C.M.

**16. St Osyth, Old School Chase (TM 1230 1551)**

C. Crossan, C.A.T.

A field evaluation was carried out in advance of proposed housing on a 0.25ha site adjacent to St Peter and St Paul's churchyard, St Osyth, Essex. Approximately 10% of the site was examined, revealing a Late Bronze Age or Early Iron Age ditch, traces of a medieval clay floor and medieval and later pits. Residual Roman and Saxon pottery were also recovered from the site.

Archive: C.M. (accession 1999-107)

**17. Southend, The Old Ranges, Shoeburyness (TQ 9340 8440)**

J. Perkins, G.& P.L.

Evaluation of this site consisted of geophysical survey of the whole area and excavation of trenches. These showed that archaeological remains survived in four of the areas and that the remains within the Scheduled earthwork were both numerous and well preserved. The observed features could be divided into three phases:

- Evidence of Mesolithic activity occupying the low-lying levels of Gunners Park was sealed beneath layers of alluvial deposits. This comprised a grey silt layer containing numerous fragments of burnt and worked flint.
- Remains of a multi-phase Iron Age defended settlement site is situated within the Scheduled earthwork. There was evidence of post-built structures, hearths, roundhouses and industrial

activity such as weaving, spinning, salt manufacture and food processing.

- Features of possible Roman origin were situated in both Gunners Park and within the Scheduled earthwork. These included a Roman saltern and the fragmentary and re-deposited remains of a Roman structure.

Archive: S.M.

**18. Stansted, proposed Mid-Term Car Park, Stansted Airport (TL 552 223)**

C. Bell, F.A.

Framework Archaeology has been commissioned by BAA to design and implement a programme of archaeological mitigation in advance of the proposed construction of a mid-term car park to the south of the main terminal at Stansted Airport. The development site is an area of known archaeological potential situated on the gentle east-facing slope of a shallow valley. However, prior to the evaluation a single cropmark was the only direct evidence for archaeological remains within the development site.

The trial trench evaluation comprised the excavation of 92 trenches and revealed varying densities of archaeological remains throughout the area of investigation, representing a wide range of deposits, dating from the early prehistoric through to the post-medieval period. Two particularly significant concentrations of deposits were discovered; a cluster of Neolithic and Bronze Age pits and postholes in the north-west segment of the site, and an area of dense inter-cutting features, representing several phases of late Iron Age/Romano-British settlement in the central area of the site. In addition, there were numerous ditches associated with prehistoric, Romano-British, medieval and post-medieval field systems and an area of medieval ridge and furrow cultivation.

Archive: F.A.

**19. Stansted, Long-Stay Car Park, Stansted Airport (TL 5200 2248)**

R. Brown, F.A.

A fieldwalking survey was carried out at the site of a proposed car park. Finds from the survey consisted of worked flint, burnt flint, pottery and ceramic building materials. These were surprisingly sparse given the known archaeology adjacent to the site. At face value, only general, low-level prehistoric activity can be deduced from the finds, but the results may have been biased by poor ground conditions.

The trial trench evaluation revealed nine linear and curvilinear potentially archaeological features, two of which contained small and abraded sherds of prehistoric (probably Late Bronze Age - Late Iron Age) pottery. Two pits - one of which contained small and abraded sherds of prehistoric (probably late Neolithic to Early Bronze Age) pottery - and a third pit containing burnt

clay and fire-cracked flint and a dried-up stream channel are also of archaeological interest. These features may represent field systems and a low intensity of prehistoric activity associated with and/or earlier than the previously excavated occupation sites adjacent to the phase one development area.

Archive: F.A.

**20. Takeley, Frogs Hall Farm (TL 585 225)**

T. Ennis, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

Thirty-eight trenches and seven test pits were excavated to evaluate land proposed for mineral extraction. Evidence of prehistoric activity was represented by a group of Early Iron Age ditches/gullies in the west of the site, and a single Early Iron Age post-hole. A Roman ditch was recorded in the north of the site, but most of the ditches in this area are undated. The main centre of Roman activity was in the east of the site, and is represented by ditches, gullies and other features dated to the late 2nd-4th centuries. A substantial tile spread dated to the 3rd century is interpreted as hard-core laid down to provide a firm yard surface in a poorly drained area. The tile presumably came from a nearby building. It may be significant that evidence of Roman activity has been found immediately to the east of the site (EHCR 9140), while R. Havis has located a scatter of surface finds from the ploughed field to the east, on the opposite side of the river Roding. The Roman evidence could therefore be part of a wider area of activity.

Trenches were positioned specifically to examine possible medieval house plots adjacent to the Lower Bampers Green track which crossed the site from north to south, and then turned to the west. Trenching of a possible house plot to the west of the track revealed a single gully containing 13th-century pottery but no evidence for a house. Several other trenches also proved negative in the search for possible medieval house plots. Trenching of the known house plot located to the south of the track revealed gullies dated to the 13th century, suggesting that this house plot had its origins in the medieval period. Post-medieval activity on this plot was indicated by 17th-century pottery (with residual sherds dated to the 15th/16th century) from the lowest fills of a ditch. The more northerly known house plot failed to reveal any conclusive medieval evidence but did produce a small amount of post-medieval evidence in the form of 17th- and 18th-century pottery. The ditches around both known house plots contained 19th- or early 20th-century material.

Archive: S.W.M.

**21. Takeley, Thremhall Priory (TL 5215 2140)**

P. Doel, H.A.T.

Ten trial trenches and a section across the moat were excavated. A significant spread of mortared flints and clunch, with a possible remnant of a wall, located in Trench 3, may be from the Priory or an associated building. A pit of medieval date was located in Trench 4 in which *in situ* burning had occurred. A large feature of

probable medieval date was observed in both Trenches 1 and 2. This was not seen fully in plan but was probably a backfilled fishpond. Two limestone architectural mouldings were recovered from the top fill which contained primarily early modern to modern brick rubble. A lower fill produced the base of a 12th- to 14th-century cooking pot.

The section through the moat revealed that it had been re-cut in recent times though there was an undated remnant of an earlier primary fill. The trenches adjacent to the moat (Trenches 5, 6, 7 and 8) all contained a substantial dump layer which may be from the cutting or re-cutting of the moat. A rutted and repaired metalled track of probable medieval origin was observed in Trenches 5 and 6.

Trench 10 contained a road/path and probable garden features of post-medieval date probably contemporary with the 18th-century house. Trench 3 contained a foundation cut which ran parallel with the walled garden, possibly a remnant of a lean-to structure.

Truncation and disturbance was present across much of the site, principally as large dumps of brick and tile rubble associated with a probable levelling exercise (Trenches 1, 2, 4 and 9).

Archive: Bt.M.

**22. Terling, The Estate Yard (TL 773 149)**

D. Kenyon, Cw.A.T.

Six trenches were mechanically excavated, between 1.5m and 3.0m wide, with a total length of 79m. One possibly prehistoric linear feature was identified on the south-west side of the site. Several other linear ditch features, and a pit, were excavated but all were found to contain post medieval material. The footings of a probable 19th-century building were also uncovered. No other deposits of archaeological interest were identified.

Archive: Bt.M.

**23. Walthamstow, Hale Brinks South Allotment site, Hale End Road (TQ 3858 9084)**

J. Murray, H.A.T.

Four trenches were excavated on the site. A hamlet is believed to have existed at Hale End by the medieval period. The site is shown on the 1865 OS map as Beech Hall Farm, later listed in a 1960s trade directory as Beech Hill Works.

No archaeological features were revealed. Moderate oil contamination was revealed across the site; c.0.5 m of recent overburden overlay London Clay. Two brick soakaways of 19th/20th-century origin were located.

Archive: M.L.

**24. Witham, Mill House, Chipping Hill (TL 8151 1536)**

A. Robertson, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

A desktop study and trenching was carried out on the

site of a proposed extension to the Mill House in order to evaluate the survival of any remains associated with a water mill, which is known to have stood on the site since at least 1552. Two trenches were excavated: Trench A along the east wall of the present Mill House and Trench B on the eastern bank of the mill race.

Trench A revealed the remains of a wall at a depth of c.0.1m, which is presumed to be the back of the Mill itself. Also a possible floor surface was uncovered at a depth of c.0.8m. The remainder of the trench was comprised of demolition rubble presumably from the destruction of the Mill.

Trench B was excavated to a depth of 0.6m. The eastern end of the Trench comprised mainly of dredgings from the millpond, apart from a small gully and a presumed garden path. The western end however contained the remains of a wall construction/robber trench that was back-filled with building rubble. To the west of this wall were possible remains of earlier mill structures.

The excavations identified the line of the 1882 phase of the mill to the north and east, and a floor surface dating from the 17th century. The presumed front of the building probably lies under the modern garden railings and driveway. The west wall of the mill is now under a previous extension built onto Mill House.

Archive: Bt.M.

### **25. Witham, Richardson & Wood land, Maltings Lane (TL 8147 1345)**

R. Clarke, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

Twenty trenches were excavated to evaluate the northern area of a large housing development. The evaluation area lay immediately to the north of the 1996 evaluation, which recorded evidence of prehistoric, Roman and early Saxon settlement. Although the same intensity of archaeological features was not found, significant discoveries were made. An inhumation burial was uncovered in Trench C in the western field. This is of uncertain date and could be Roman, Saxon or medieval. A daub wall was partially revealed in Trench Q in the eastern field, which could be part of the foundation for a large building, probably of Roman date. In addition to this, prehistoric features were identified in the eastern field, and a concentration of medieval features was located in the western field, both in trenches adjacent to Maltings Lane. The medieval features, comprising a possible roadside ditch, gullies and post holes, appear to date from the 12th-14th centuries, whilst the prehistoric features are not closely datable. Some evidence for Saxon activity in the form of pottery and pieces of antler, some of it worked, was also found in a ditch in trench K, in proximity to the 1996 evaluation.

The majority of features, especially those located away from the Maltings Lane frontage, contained very few associated finds. This, in addition to the presence of the grave in the western field, suggests that the activity represented was of a peripheral nature, perhaps relating

to occupation on the outskirts of any contemporary settlement. However, the location of a possible Roman building and Saxon ditch in the eastern field indicates that occupation during these periods probably extended northwards into this area from that identified in 1996 evaluation. The features identified in the less-intensively sampled eastern field suggest medieval roadside settlement adjacent to Maltings Lane with associated activity to the south.

Previous summaries: Bennett (ed.) 1997, 214-5  
Archive: Bt.M.

## **Excavations**

### **26. Ardleigh, Martell's Pit (TM 0558 2825)**

C. Crossan, C.A.T.

A 157-metre long trench for an electricity cable along the southern boundary of the Ardleigh Scheduled Ancient Monument (SAM 199) was excavated under archaeological supervision. The trench was 60cm deep and 30cm wide. Six features were observed within the confines of the trench: one was post-medieval and three were ditches or pits of indeterminate but possibly early date. The remaining features were of questionable archaeological significance. A small quantity of Roman pottery was recovered from the subsoil.

Archive: C.M. (accession 1999-59)

### **27. Colchester, 64-76 Hythe Hill (TM 012 246)**

S. Benfield, C.A.T.

The site is located opposite St Leonard's church and involved the excavation of the foundation trenches only for a new building, situated on the road frontage, which is part of a larger housing development. There was a very small quantity of Roman material, however the earliest activity on the site can be dated to the late 12th-13th century, extending into the 14th-15th, consisting of a number of pits, some possibly representing clay quarrying, and early soil layers extending across the excavation area. From the late medieval or earlier post-medieval period the site was occupied by a number of buildings, the foundations for which consisted of mortared peg-tile and/or cobble wall plinths. A few pieces of brick associated with some of these plinths are of 16th to 17th-century date. Some clay floors and hearth sites were located within buildings and areas of external yard surfacing were also encountered. Several of the plinths continued in use as the bases for brick walls constructed in the 18th-19th century. One area near the road frontage may have been used for light industrial activity during a late phase of the site. Overall the sequence of activity appears to be similar to that recorded from more extensive area excavation just to the east of the present site at 79 Hythe Hill.

Previous summaries: Gilman & Bennett (eds) 1995, 249; Bennett & Gilman (eds) 1996, 267  
Archive: C.M. (accession 1999-143)

**28. Colchester Royal Grammar School, Lexden Road (TL 9880 2486)**

A.J. Fawn, C.A.G.

In 1964 an excavation by Mr P.W. Crittenden on the Headmaster's lawn revealed evidence of what was interpreted as a burnt floor of Roman date. In 1999, limited investigation in the same area during the preparation of new classroom foundations uncovered more of the fired clay layer. It is now thought to have been the collapsed walls of a low-grade Roman building destroyed by fire. The area is in the Roman west cemetery which was evidently not devoid of occupation by the living. Other features included trenches, shallow rubbish pits and light flint path-metal. No burials were found. A sandy-gravel layer in one corner of the site may have been part of the known Roman road running south-west from the Balcerne Gate, although previous evidence suggests it probably ran to the east of the area. (See below for watching brief by C.A.T., no. 61)

Archive: C.M.

**29. Cressing, Temple Barns (TL 7999 1875)**

D.A.G. Gadd, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

A second season of the training excavation investigated a Late Iron Age enclosure in the north-east of the field, to the east of the enclosure investigated in 1998.

A Middle Iron Age pit was excavated, containing a copper-alloy brooch dated to the 4th century BC. A significant quantity of residual earlier prehistoric pottery was collected but no other features of such date were found.

Excavation was focused on the south-west corner of the enclosure, which had two phases (early 1st century and mid 1st century), and cut a Late Iron Age roundhouse. The enclosure ditch was very large at 2.5m deep and as much wide. No identifiable structures were present within the interior of the enclosure, though a small number of pits lay just outside it. As in the 1998 excavation, the southern side of the enclosure ditch was possibly deliberately infilled, while the west side was incorporated into a new enclosure which extended off to the west. A minor Late Iron Age ditch ran south from the enclosure corner. It had been recut twice. Its first phase contained part of a human skull which had been redeposited in the ditch; it is likely that at least one inhumation burial was located in the vicinity. Its final recut contained imported Gallo-Belgic pottery and was probably associated with the second, modified enclosure dated to the Late Iron Age/early Roman transition (mid 1st century). A relatively major east-west ditch was added to the enclosure system. There was no further evidence of activity until the late Roman period when a few seemingly isolated pits were cut. The east-west ditch also contained late Roman material in its upper fills.

Previous summaries: Bennett (ed.) 1999, 218-9

Archive: Bt.M.

**30. Felsted, The Old Sugar Beet Works (TL 6644 2115)**

J. Valentin and J. Hawkes, A.C.A.

Excavation in advance of proposed housing development was undertaken on land within the boundaries of the former sugar beet works in accordance with previous recommendations.

Excavation on a larger scale disproved the interpretation made as a result of the evaluation that masonry structures of Roman date were present; stone and concrete foundations can now be shown to be of modern origin located within areas of deep disturbance. The investigation did establish the presence of a network of small enclosures - to be interpreted as infields, yards or horticultural plots - extending over an area of some 0.5ha. These are of Roman date, principally 1st to 2nd century AD, although later activity is also represented. A large buried Roman wooden structure (probably a cistern or vat with a wooden pipe leading from it) was also examined and recorded, but left *in situ* in an area where proposed development will involve only superficial landscaping works not affecting this feature.

Substantial quantities of building material, principally flue and hypocaust tile, imply that a sophisticated building lay close by, almost certainly under the site of the former Felsted railway station immediately to the north where earlier finds of both artefacts and structural remains have been made.

Previous summaries: Bennett & Gilman (eds) 1996, 264  
Archive: A.C.A., to go to S.W.M.

**31. Foulness, Great Burwood Farm (TR 009 911)**

R.H. Crump, F.C.A.S.

Documentary evidence gathered from the E.R.O. Southend-on-Sea, provided a plan of the dwelling at Great Burwood, from a sale particular dated 1899. Anecdotal evidence tells us that this building was demolished in 1924. The farmer who currently farms Great Burwood has related to the author over a period of time discoveries of brick and tile fragments in the paddock at the rear of the current Great Burwood Farm Cottages.

The probe survey carried out in 1998 enabled the positioning of two trial trenches which were located within a 20 m grid area. Excavation work commenced in April 1999, but it was not possible to use mechanical equipment as the probe survey revealed a foundation often not more than 5-10 cm below the surface. Trench (I) revealed what appeared to be a building foundation, and part of a courtyard, these features were repeated in Trench (II). At this point it was decided to trace the extent of the building foundation by a series of trenches; to date we have uncovered the complete profile of the building foundation which we now know to be the Bailiff's House. The south front of the house was 15 m long.

The remaining foundation is of soft red bricks 21cm x 10cm x 5cm, *c.* late 17th century. Other artefacts

recovered from the vicinity of the building include clay pipe bowls c.1680-1700AD, bone buttons c.1700-1800 AD, pottery fragments including rims, bases and sherds, coins with a date range George II 1744 - Edward VII 1902. In consideration of all the evidence available, it would seem that this important building was constructed c.1698-1700 AD, at a time when Foulness was growing economically, born out in the variety of land reclamation projects, and construction of substantial houses. The sale particular for 1899 tells us that the building contained 5 bedrooms, 2 sitting rooms, kitchen, and wash house; there was also a supply of water from an artesian well (the location of which we have identified close to the house).

In conclusion, the project has found that the building is strategically located with a good supply of fresh water, (there is also a fresh water pond close to the house). There is a track leading from the farm to the sea-wall and Asplins Head formerly Burwood Head. These Headlands provided access to the "Broomway" the ancient track on the Maplin Sands which lead to the mainland. There is also a track to Great Burwood from the Shelford Creek in the south-west of the Island, which passes on through the Island to give access to the River Roach. The farm is 1.63 m above sea-level, an important fact for this area. So it will be seen that this immediate area would be a suitable place for continuous occupation. The project will continue throughout 2000. The objective therefore will be to establish the earliest occupation at Great Burwood.

Archive: F.C.A.S.

### **32. Great Chesterford, Bishop's House (TL 5058 4268)**

A. Garwood, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

A small excavation before construction of a swimming pool revealed a Roman sequence to the east of the walled core of the town. A well and pits dating to the mid 2nd - early 3rd century were sealed by a thick levelling layer, and part of a timber building dating to the 3rd - 4th century. This was succeeded by a stone building represented by robber trenches, dated to the later 4th century. A few sherds of early Saxon pottery were recovered from demolition rubble sealing the Roman buildings.

Archive: S.W.M.

### **33. Great Chesterford, The Old Vicarage, Church Street (TL 5064 4277)**

P.E. Dey, G.C.L.H.A.S.

The location by Adam Garwood of a Roman wall foundation by the entrance to the churchyard adjacent to The Old Vicarage prompted an investigation by Great Chesterford Local History and Archaeology Society. The purpose was to establish whether this might prove to be the north-east corner of 'The Stone Fort'. This was observed by John Horsley and Dr Foote-Gower in the 18th century, and later confirmed by A.E. Collins at

various points including two under the churchyard wall.

Trial trenches were dug adjacent to the Roman foundations under the wall of the house and where the flint churchyard wall starts at its eastern end from the house wall. No evidence of the Roman foundation was seen between these two points, though a 6m pea shingle drainage trench had been recently installed. It is possible that the foundations could have been removed or that it may have been the location of an entrance to the fort. Pit No. 1 was adjacent to the churchyard wall and produced 20 fragments of animal bone, 2 metal objects, 1 oyster shell, 12 fragments of tile, and 29 fragments of Romano-British pot, mostly 4th century in date.

The foundations of the churchyard wall are flush with the wall above on both sides. The wall is 0.4m thick and within the churchyard stands to 1.38m. The foundations extend 0.6m below the surface. Within the garden of the house, the wall and foundations were fully exposed, measuring 2.0m from ground level. The foundations consisted mainly of large flints and stones bound with mortar.

A cellar occupies the north-west corner of the house. Its walls are fully lined with stones and flints which have been covered with a thick white wash. However, the Roman wall foundation appears to extend into the cellar by 0.95m, starting at a depth of 0.46m, and tapering upwards to 0.24m by the brick surround of a north facing window. This foundation consisted of larger stones/flints.

Justification for thinking that the southern wall of 'The Stone Fort' may lie under the flint wall of the churchyard is in the existence of what appears to be a section of wall foundation within the grounds of the Old Country Club (now The Bishop's House). This lies at a point where the wall curves away towards the west and has been levelled with bricks before building the present flint wall on top. This requires separate investigation.

Archive: G.C.L.H.A.S.

### **34. Great Dunmow, 36 Church Street, Church End (TL 6294 2291)**

J. Murray, H.A.T.

Excavation was undertaken of a 12m x 6.5m area within the grounds of 36 Church Street, Great Dunmow. A number of residual struck flint flakes were present in the subsoil, which was substantially disturbed and contained post medieval material. A single domestic medieval rubbish pit was revealed, with a small quantity of pottery sherds and animal bone. The subsoil was found to contain a similar small amount of early post-medieval pottery sherds and animal bone, in association with post-medieval building debris and china fragments. The site is interpreted to have been heavily disturbed by post-medieval activity, most probably during construction of the recently demolished former house in the 19th century. The vestiges of a post-medieval floor layer of clay, mortar and daub were revealed to have been heavily disturbed by later activity.

Archive: S.W.M.

**35. Great Tey, Teybrook Farm (TL 8886 2515)**

A.J. Fawn, C.A.G.

Excavation has continued on the line of the Roman road running north-north-west (not north-north-east as previously given) across Teybrook Farm. As reported previously, the triple-tracked road was cut by a large excavation, perhaps for a pond. However, another road surface in a more westerly direction may prove to be a deviation made later in the Roman period to replace the interrupted section. Unlike the original, the replacement appears to be a single track road.

Further excavation of the ring ditch reported previously, near the road, has yielded one fragment of Middle Bronze Age pottery in its ditch fill.

Previous summaries: Bennett (ed.) 1998, 205-6; 1999, 225

Archive: C.M.

**36. Helions Bumpstead, Helions Farm (TL 6456 4124)**

T. Ennis, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

A small excavation has been carried out within this medieval moated site, which is a Scheduled Ancient Monument. Excavation prior to underpinning of the kitchen of the existing house, built in the mid 19th century, has revealed an 18th-century cobbled surface and earlier, possibly 16th-century yard surfaces.

Archive: Bt.M.

**37. Horndon-on-the-Hill, Mill Lane and High Road (TQ 6698 8333)**

M. Peachey, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

A small excavation in the area of the medieval market, first documented in 1281, recorded a gravelled market surface dated to the late 13th-mid 14th century. This represents an open market area before it became mainly infilled with buildings. Even so, a flint wall-base and a sequence of hearths or ovens suggest that the market area was partially built-up even in its earliest phase.

Archive: T.M.

**38. Kelvedon, rear of Lawson Villas (TL 8630 1891)**

T. Ennis, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

Two narrow trenches were excavated in advance of a small housing development, located across the line of the very large Late Iron Age ditch found during evaluation of the site in 1996. The ditch was not bottomed in the evaluation, but its full profile was recorded in the further trenching. In the northern trench the ditch was 4.2m wide and 1.2m deep with a regular V-shaped profile. It was both wider and deeper in the southern trench, however, measuring 9.5m wide and 2.1m deep, with a less regular U-shaped profile. It would appear that in the south the ditch was either

extensively recut or enlarged to serve as a quarry. The ditch was open in the Late Iron Age (late 1st century BC-mid 1st century AD), and deliberately infilled in the Flavian period (later 1st century AD). Because of its size, the ditch is thought to represent earthwork defences for the Late Iron Age settlement, although the extent of this settlement and the line of any defensive circuit is open to debate.

Previous summaries: Bennett (ed.) 1997, 211

Archive: Bt.M.

**39. Little Braxted Hall (TL 835 147)**

H. Cooper-Reade, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

A small excavation was carried out within a building identified as a medieval kitchen, which has been dated by dendrochronology to 1398-1410 (felling date of the timbers). Although the building was used as a dovecote in the recent past, a medieval clay floor partially survives below the modern floor, sealing a pit containing a large quantity of medieval pottery. There is evidence of burning particularly towards the centre of the building, but no distinctive hearth structures remain.

Archive: C.M.

**40. Maldon, former Bus Station (TL 8540 0683)**

R. Dale, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

Evaluation and excavation in advance of a housing development has recorded a sequence of late Saxon and medieval timber buildings fronting onto the High Street. Unfortunately, only part of these buildings survived and their ground-plans are not understood. A relatively large number of rubbish and cess pits were excavated to their rear. These contained good pottery groups and well-preserved remains of plants and fish bones, which will add important information about diet and economy in late Saxon and medieval Maldon.

Archive: C.M.

**41. Purfleet, Dolphin Development, Armour Road (TQ 5684 7851)**

R. Wardill, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

A transect was excavated through Pleistocene gravel and silt deposits infilling a palaeo-channel of the Thames prior to the construction of an access road for development of a disused quarry. It is known from previous work in the area that the gravels belong to the Corbets Tey formation, dated to *c.* 270,000 years ago. Human activity is represented by worked flints of both Levallois and Acheulian type, but although it was thought that Clactonian material might be present, none was found. Sampling of sand and silt deposits within the gravels has produced a good range of fossil remains, including horse and birds. The full range of animal and plant remains will not be known until the samples have been analysed, although it is clear that they reflect the environment of the Thames during an interglacial.

Previous summaries: Gilman (ed.) 1994, 246  
 Archive: Natural History Museum

**42. Redbridge, Fairlop Quarry (TQ 4643 9100)**

A. Robertson, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

The long-term investigation of the quarry began with an evaluation by the Newham Museum Service in 1996, and has progressed through several stages of excavation by E.C.C. (F.A.U.) in 1997-8. These previous excavation areas have recovered evidence of Bronze Age ring ditches and cremations, Late Iron Age and Roman cremations, and a Roman field system with enclosures and a late Roman agricultural building used for crop processing. A further area of the quarry was investigated to the west of the 1998 excavations, but the density of archaeological features was much less than over the areas to the east. Roman gullies and a possible structure were recorded in the north of the site, as well as several undated cremations.

Previous summaries: Bennett (ed.) 1999, 220-1  
 Archive: contact G.L.S.M.R. for location

**43. Rivenhall, St Mary's Churchyard (TL 8281 1785)**

R. Clarke, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

Part of the churchyard to the east of the church, which is of Saxon origin, is being excavated prior to extension of the graveyard. Although outside the scheduled area, the site lies between two Roman villa buildings excavated by Rodwell in the 1970s and to the south of a medieval priest's house.

Rodwell did not find any features related to the Roman villa in the east of his excavated areas, and this appears to be borne out by the results of the current excavation. The Roman layers on the site are represented by spreads of gravel lying immediately above the natural subsoil.

Graves presumed to be of Middle Saxon date (7th-9th century) are currently being excavated in the northern area of the site. These were cut by a ditch dated by Rodwell to the 12th century, which was itself cut by an east-west ditch dated to the 14th century. Deposits to the north of the ditch contained a large amount of domestic rubbish and late medieval pottery dated to the 15th century, including some highly decorated wares. These deposits are most likely related to the priest's house identified by Rodwell to the north of the current site.

To the south-west, nearer the church, were several post-holes and possible slots, and eight graves containing poorly preserved skeletons. These were orientated north-west to south-east, and lay close to the church and apparently outside the medieval churchyard boundary. The graves are probably dated to the late Saxon/Norman period (10th-12th century), and were sealed by clay and gravelly layers dated to the 13th century, and a silty layer dated to the 15th century. The entire site was covered with a thick layer of overburden, formed by grave-digging upcast and probably also

alterations to the church in the 1830s.

Archive: Bt.M.

**44. Roxwell Quarry (TL 6700 0901)**

S. Gibson and M. Germany, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

Excavations at the quarry, which is 1.5km south of Chignall St James Roman villa, are being carried out in stages as the quarry face is stripped of topsoil. Excavation in December 1998 recorded what was thought to be a Late Iron Age/early Roman field system cut by a double-ditched trackway leading towards the river Can, but this is now dated to the medieval period. Several 13th-14th century pits adjacent to the trackway were also excavated. The medieval features contained a few sherds of early and mid Saxon pottery. A group of prehistoric pits was recorded to the west of the main concentration of features. A short distance to the north of this pit group, Bronze Age post-hole structures, pits and a cremation urn, were recorded in a second stage of excavation in July 1999. Further excavation of this area of Bronze Age settlement is planned for early 2000.

Archive: Ch.E.M.

**45. Saffron Walden, 22 Gibson Way (TL 535 383)**

R. Humphrey, H.A.T.

An adjacent Saxon cemetery, excavated in 1830 and 1897, was believed to extend into this area. No Saxon archaeological features were revealed within the area of development. A ditch/pit and a gully were excavated. A small quantity of pottery dated these to the Roman period (probably 2nd century). A further ditch, two post holes or pits and a further post hole were undated, but were probably also of Roman date.

A number of Roman burials had been previously found in the area of the Saxon cemetery. The presence of additional Roman features in the 1999 excavation may add supporting evidence for the possible presence of a Roman fort in the area of the Saxon cemetery.

Archive: S.W.M.

**46. Springfield, Ind 1, Sheepcotes, Fordson Road (TL 7370 0825)**

A. Manning, W.A.

The site is partly situated on the northern slopes of the River Chelmer valley, focussed within a slight plateau at a height of c.32m OD, dipping down further immediately to the east and north. Both the important Neolithic causewayed enclosure and excavated Late Bronze Age circular defended enclosure of Springfield Lyons lie within 200m to the west of the site.

The excavation concentrated on the route of the proposed new road. Excavation revealed a well-preserved series of working surfaces/floors, c.7m in width and at least 9m in length, defined by a heavy concentration of *in situ* Late Bronze Age pottery, flint cores and struck flakes. These were sealed by a thick artefact-rich deposit, possibly comprising a mixed



plough-soil. Traces of a linear gully, containing a regular arrangement of post-settings, was observed running the length of the eastern and part of the northern limits of the floor/surface. This, together with an additional line of postholes running the length of the western limits of the surface, would suggest a rectangular structure containing a series of internal floors and features.

Immediately clustered to the east, west and north of the possible structure was a tightly clustered group of pit features and a large hearth. Many of these features contained large quantities of Mid-Late Bronze Age material.

Spatially the eastern half of the site appears to have been well ordered. At least two fence lines were evident, running east from the possible structure. These are possibly associated with two small ditched boundaries running north-south and east-west. These subdivided the easternmost area of the site into smaller units, one of which contains a four-posted structure and further pit and posthole features.

Finds recovered during the excavation cover a relatively restricted range of material types, the most common categories being pottery and struck flint. A small number of loomweight fragments and unidentifiable burnt clay objects have also been recovered from the area of the floor/surface and adjacent area. There was a very much smaller quantity of redeposited Neolithic, Romano-British, Anglo-Saxon and medieval pottery from the general area of the excavation.

Additional phases of evaluation are planned to the north.

Previous summaries: Bennett (ed.) 1999, 215  
Archive: W.A., to go to Ch.E.M.

#### **47. Stanway, Abbotstone Quarry (TL 943 227)**

H. Brooks and S. Benfield, C.A.T.

The Abbotstone Quarry site lies 1400m west of the important Stanway burial sites, and 2500m from the Late Iron Age and Roman site at Gosbecks. Research interest focuses on the inter-relationship between the three sites and the defended area of *Camulodunum*, and the extent to which they were native or Romanised sites. In advance of mineral extraction, Colchester Archaeological Trust excavated part of the Abbotstone site (Stage 1) in 1999, and the rest of the site is scheduled for excavation in 2000 (Stage 2). The work was sponsored by Tarmac Quarry Products Ltd.

Like Stanway and Gosbecks, Abbotstone has been known for some time as a cropmark site. Fieldwalking surveys in 1997 and 1998 identified thin spreads of prehistoric flints, and a thin concentration of Roman brick and tile north of the cropmark site. Following an unsuccessful geophysical survey in 1998, the site was extensively trial-trenched in early 1999 to pinpoint surviving subsoil features, and full-scale excavation followed in summer 1999.

The earliest activity was represented by a few worked flints of probable late Neolithic or Bronze Age

date and a small pit containing Late Bronze Age or Early Iron Age pottery, daub and loomweight fragments. The earliest major feature was a ditch defining a subcircular enclosure. The ditch fill contained Middle Iron Age pottery, but there were no internal features.

The principal site features were three enclosures of Late Iron Age or Roman date, dating from the early-mid 1st century to the mid-late 3rd century. The first was an irregular and badly defined enclosure 80 x 80m in extent. Its ditches contained pottery of Late Iron Age or early Roman date. The second enclosure was rectilinear and complete. It measured 60m east-west by 50m north-south, with opposed entrances in the centre of the north and south sides, the former flanked by post holes suggesting a gate. Pottery from the ditch terminals dates to the 2nd or 3rd century AD. There were a few small scattered groups of pits, but the finds indicate that they may belong to the earlier enclosure, and only one pit can definitely be attributed to this enclosure.

The larger enclosure measures approximately 140m east-west by 110m north-south. Only a small part on the eastern edge was excavated this season. A central pair of ditches define the course of a 5m wide metallised E-W track. Other small ditches and gullies divide up the interior into a number of zones whose function is unknown. Several other lengths of the latest phase of the enclosure ditches contained discontinuous short lengths of gravel metallising or consolidation. A second track or road was also located alongside the southern edge of the enclosure.

Apart from two large shallow pits and a few scattered small pits or post-holes the only other features associated with the northern enclosure were three cremation burials, and a post-burial (a deep post hole which contained cremated bone), which may be associated with several lengths of broad shallow ditch on its south and east sides defining a small enclosure.

Features of post-Roman date were limited to three curving medieval ditches on the south edge of the large enclosure.

Previous summaries: Bennett (ed.) 1998, 203; 1999, 215-6

Archive: C.M. (accession 1999-48)

#### **48. Stanway, Gosbecks Archaeological Park (TL 969 225)**

C. Austin, C.A.T.

In the fifth season of exploratory excavations at Gosbecks Archaeological Park nine small trenches were excavated with the aim of establishing the nature and exact locations of boundaries to the Roman theatre and temple enclosures. Ditches to the south and south-east of the theatre were located and sectioned. The south-eastern ditch was 2.5m wide and 1m deep and found to contain pottery ranging from residual late Iron Age to mid-late 3rd century. Trenches to the north and north-west of the temple located the robbed line of a north-south wall and the probable north-west corner of the temple enclosure, which lay 28m north of the outer

temple portico.

Previous summaries: Bennett (ed.) 1997, 220-1; 1998, 206-7; 1999, 216

Archive: C.M. (accession 1999-93)

**49. Wimbish, Parsonage Farm (TL 5795 3544)**

D.A.G. Gadd, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

See this volume, Shorter Notes, p. 300-6.

**Watching briefs**

**50. Ardleigh, field east of Slough Lane (TM 0558 2825)**

C. Crossan, C.A.T.

A 157m long trench for an electricity cable along the southern boundary of the Ardleigh Scheduled Ancient Monument (SAM 199) was excavated under archaeological supervision. The trench was 60cm deep and 30cm wide. Six features were observed within the confines of the trench: one was post-medieval and three were ditches or pits of indeterminate but possibly early date. The remaining features were of questionable archaeological significance. A small quantity of Roman pottery was recovered from the subsoil.

Archive: C.M.

**51. Bradfield Hall (TM 1310 2912)**

D. Knopp, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

A watching brief was undertaken by E.C.C. (F.A.U.) on behalf of Mr. Schweir. The site was located on the moat platform of Bradfield Hall, where the construction of a split-level outbuilding was proposed.

The groundwork consisted of excavation of an area approximately 7m by 17m by machine with a toothless ditching bucket. The northern part of the site was excavated to a depth of 0.2m and the southern part to 0.4m. Then footings were dug around the edge of the excavated area to a total maximum depth of 0.6m.

The southern part of the site was a flower bed which was cleared to the top of the subsoil. This area was scattered with residual post medieval pottery, peg tile and bone. No structural features were revealed. There was a possible pit located in the east footing, but it was not feasible to record or excavate this feature. The northern part of the proposed building was located on the site of a garage built in the 1950s. Since the proposed building was to be at a higher ground level in this area, no subsoil was revealed.

Archive: E.C.C.

**52. Brentwood, 125-127 High Street (TQ 5945 9388)**

M. Roberts, M.o.L.A.S.

During the evaluation, two trenches were excavated on disused land to the rear of properties fronting onto the

High Street. Historically the site had been open ground, and more recently had become over grown with shrubs and trees. A pebbly subsoil was located c.0.70m below ground level in which a single sherd of late medieval pottery was found. This layer has been tentatively interpreted as ancient cultivation/plough soil. Above was a layer of post medieval garden soils and debris into which was cut a brick wall and associated brick pavement/drive way.

The watching brief recovered further evidence for medieval cultivation in the form of a possible furrow filled by the cultivation soil seen in the evaluation. An 18th-century well was also recorded.

Archive: C.M.

**53. Chelmsford, 15-18 High Street (TL 7090 0609)**

S. Gibson, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

An archaeological watching brief during the construction of two new buildings located post-medieval floodplain reclamation deposits to the rear of the property, and a small brick-lined culvert leading towards the River Can. Also observed was the original plaster finish on one external wall of No.18.

Archive: Ch.E.M.

**54. Chelmsford, Wig and Mirkin P.H., Moulsham Street (TL 7078 0628)**

T. Ennis, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

A watching brief during extensions to the public house recorded a Roman slot and post-hole, and other post-holes of medieval and post-medieval date, and an undated ditch. No evidence was found of the side-road leading from the Roman London-Colchester road (Moulsham Street) to the *mansio*, most likely because its line ran under the main part of the public house and outside the area of the watching brief.

Archive: Chelmsford Museum

**55. Chrishall, Chiswick Hall (TL 4501 3755)**

D. Bescoby, H.A.T.

A watching brief was undertaken within the moated site of Chiswick Hall during groundworks associated with the construction of a link building between the main house and an outbuilding. A wall footing of mortared flint and chalk was revealed in one of the foundation trenches. Its alignment compares to the wall footing revealed during the archaeological evaluation, and is likely a continuation of the same structure.

Previous summaries: Bennett (ed.) 1999, 213

Archive: H.A.T., to go to S.W.M.

**56. Coggeshall, Abbey Mill (TL 8545 2195)**

R. Havis, E.C.C. (H.A.M.P.)

In February 1999 the Environment Agency were restoring a medieval fish pond at Abbey Mill,

Coggeshall, during which a series of timbers were identified at the northern end of the pond. The pond was being restored to create a backwater which will hopefully increase the biodiversity and conservation value of the area. The Heritage Conservation Branch at Essex County Council were informed and a small-scale excavation was undertaken on the timbers.

The timbers were sited on the embankment which was positioned between the river and the pond. They were identified during the excavation of an inlet channel. The timbers comprised a series of upright posts and two horizontal planks. At least six of the upright posts were positioned between the two horizontal planks. These posts were of a square section compared to those outside the area of the planks which had a round section. The position of the timbers at the northern end of the pond would suggest this may represent the remains of a sluice system. The only dating for the timbers was a single piece of pottery trapped between the two planks which was of 14th-century date.

**57. Colchester, Freda Gunton House, Balkerne Gardens (TL 9923 2524)**

C. Crossan, C.A.T.

Foundation trenches for an extension to the west side of Freda Gunton House revealed part of the north-south Roman street between insulae 17a and 17b. The exposed street metalling was sealed by deposits of burnt daub. A robbed north-south orientated wall foundation was also plotted.

Archive: C.M. (accession 1999-107)

**58. Colchester, St Mary's Arts Centre, Church Street (TL 9925 2506)**

C. Crossan, C.A.T.

Installation of new drains enabled the recording of a brick and mortared rubble foundation below the north wall of St Mary's Church. The foundation appears to date to the 18th-century rebuilding of the church.

Archive: C.M.

**59. Colchester, 54 Creffield Road (TL 9872 2470)**

C. Crossan, C.A.T.

Part of Roman greyware jar containing cremated bone was recovered from the foundation trench for a bay window extension at the rear of 54 Creffield Road.

Archive: C.M. (accession 1999-83)

**30. Colchester Institute car park (TL 9893 2535)**

C. Crossan, C.A.T.

The site lies on the lower eastern slope of Hilly Fields, within the boundary of the Sheepen Scheduled Ancient Monument. A 45m long by 3.5m wide trench for a drain on the site of a new car park for Colchester Institute revealed early linear features and pits at a typical depth of approximately 1.1m. The date range of the small amount of pottery recovered suggests that the features

belong within the known main period of the adjacent Late Iron Age - early Roman occupation at Sheepen (i.e. c.5-60 AD).

Archive: C.M. (accession 1999-84)

**61. Colchester Royal Grammar School, Lexden Road (TL 9879 2488)**

H. Brooks, C.A.T.

The site is located about 500m beyond the south-west corner of the walled town, close to the actual and postulated routes of several Roman roads. Foundation works for a school extension revealed gravel patches and burnt surfaces of Roman date. No evidence for a road was found (see above for excavation by C.A.G., no. 28)

Archive: C.M. (accession 1999-144)

**62. Colchester, The Lindens, 126 Lexden Road (phase 1) (TL 977 251)**

C. Crossan, C.A.T.

The site lies approximately 2km west of Colchester town centre. A short distance to the south is the probable route of an east-west Roman road and in the vicinity are burials and earthworks dating to the late Iron Age and Roman periods. Foundation and services trenches for five new houses revealed a ditch and at least eighteen early pits. Associated pottery indicates that most, or possibly all, of the features belong within the Late Iron Age - early Roman period.

Archive: C.M. (accession 1999-46)

**63. Colchester, Poultry Market, North Station Road (TL 9931 2570)**

C. Crossan, C.A.T.

This 0.28 hectare site lies on the west side of North Station Road, close to the North Bridge and c. 400m beyond the north gate of the walled town. In 1998, an evaluation revealed a Roman wall foundation near the present road frontage, also evidence of post-medieval buildings at the frontage and centre of the site. The 1999 watching brief on redevelopment work recorded a parallel Roman foundation at the site frontage, along with further plots of post-medieval structures. The Roman foundations lie 30 m from the bank of the Colne and are the southernmost of a series of discoveries since the 19th century which indicate the existence of a Roman extra-mural suburb to the north of the river.

Previous summaries: Bennett (ed.) 1999, 213

Archive: C.M. (accession 1999-6)

**64. Colchester, Nunns Road (TL 9943 2544)**

C. Austin, C.A.T.

This site located between Nunns Road and the car park to the rear of the Marquis of Granby Public House has been reduced to a new level which is now 2.65m below the present height of Nunns Road. The southern section along Nunns Road shows that archaeological deposits of

Roman origin survive beneath the road at a depth of 2.05m, though later activity has probably destroyed much of this. The archaeology at the reduced level on the site itself appears to survive as "islands" which are the result of subsequent activity cutting into the Roman contexts. A considerable amount of Roman building demolition was seen at a depth of approximately 2.60m; this included tile, mortar, septaria and tesserae. A small area of a possible crude prepared surface was also recorded. Beneath the eastern site section (outside the proposed development area), two small patches of *in situ* Roman tessellated floor surface were uncovered at 2.65m below the modern street level.

Archive: C.M. (accession 1999-135)

#### **65. Colchester, 40 Osborne Street (TL 9968 2495)**

S. Benfield, C.A.T.

Observations during contractors' machine reduction of the north-eastern area of 40 Osborne Street revealed a sequence of post-medieval deposits and occupation. At the base of the excavation were dark brown sandy loams (between 1.0m and 0.7m below the modern pavement level) which possibly represent accumulation into the small valley of the now infilled stream south of the town. The upper part of these deposits (between 0.9m and 0.7m below the pavement level) appear to be of at least 17th century date. No features were observed pre-dating the brick foundations of a building which had been cut into these accumulation layers. The building had a brick-built cellar at its west end and a room to the east of this contained a fireplace. All of these foundations appeared to be contemporary with one another and the bricks (recorded samples taken from the cellar wall) were thin and unfroged and suggest that the building is of earlier post-medieval date. The frontage of this building, represented by the foundations, was set back about 1.0 m from the present frontage line on Osborne Street. To the west of the building were a series of yard surfaces (at between 0.8m and 0.55m below the modern pavement); initially of brick, which was replaced by cobbles, and finally a softer mortar surface which may indicate that this area was later covered over.

#### **66. Coryton to Mucking Gas Pipeline (TQ 675 813 to 740 823)**

R. Dale and M. Peachey, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

The route of the pipeline was monitored following a desktop assessment by E. Heppell. At its west end the pipeline ran close to the Late Bronze Age Mucking North Ring, excavated in 1978. There is also evidence of Neolithic, Middle Bronze Age, Iron Age, Roman, Saxon and medieval activity on the gravel terrace to the west of Mucking Creek, recorded during watching brief work. The central part of the pipeline, south of Stanford-le-Hope and Corringham, runs along the margin of the coastal marshland. Archaeological evidence is sparse, although several small farms are known, at least one of which is medieval in origin. The

east end of the pipeline is dominated by the Coryton Oil Refinery, and is of interest only for its industrial history and World War II defences.

Only limited time was allowed for archaeological work between topsoil stripping and pipe-laying. Excavation was restricted to the pipe-trench, which was 1m wide, although in some places it was possible to record features over the stripped 20m wide easement as well. Unfortunately, there was no provision for machine-stripping to archaeological standards, so that only partial coverage of the archaeology was possible. In particular, recognition of the archaeology was difficult over the lengths of pipeline either side of Butts Lane due to the presence of a subsoil which masked the natural and features cut into it. The sites investigated were as follows:

- **Mucking, west of Butts Lane (TQ 6808 8110)**

A group of prehistoric pits were excavated. It is likely that further features were present to the west, but were not recognised in the subsoil.

- **Mucking, east of Butts Lane (TQ 6819 8111)**

A large late medieval quarry pit dating to the 14th-16th centuries was excavated. Again, it is likely that features were missed because they were not recognised in the subsoil.

- **Mucking, west of the London Tilbury and Southend railway (TQ 6825 8125)**

A large Bronze Age ditch was excavated, sealed beneath the subsoil. Although this feature was identified, other features may have been missed.

- **Corringham, Great Garlands Farm (TQ 7055 8225 to 7071 8244)**

Medieval features dating to the 14th-16th centuries were recorded to the east of Great Garlands Farm, extending as far east as a track known as the Manor Way. The features were excavated over a 200m long length of the pipeline, and towards the east of this area were recorded across the full 20m width of the easement. They consisted of field boundary ditches, a possible building, pits, and spreads of slag, suggesting that a late medieval farm was located nearby. This could either have been on the site of the present farm at Great Garlands, or have been related to Manor Way and a complex of barns on its line at Old Garlands.

Archive: T.M.

#### **67. Enfield, Southbury Pool, Kingsmead School, and Enfield Town Football Club (TQ 3415 9655)**

R. Dale, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

An evaluation in 1998 did not locate any evidence associated with Ermine Street, which was believed to run across or near the site, although two gullies, one of which contained prehistoric pottery, were recorded in playing fields to the south of Kingsmead School. A subsequent watching brief failed to locate any further

features. The entire area appears to have been extensively disturbed by modern landscaping.

Archive: contact G.L.S.M.R. for location

**68. Epping Upland, Chambers Manor Farm  
(TL 4370 0440)**

S. Gould, E.C.C. (H.A.M.P.)

Watching brief undertaken during sewage pumping installation adjacent to a possible moated enclosure. Chambers Manor is first recorded in 1228 and a medieval timber-framed dwelling now occupies the site. Within the north side of the pipe trench between the house and a modern steel-framed agricultural building a substantial area of brick walling was observed. The wall was located 0.8m beneath the surface and seven courses (0.7m high) were visible which probably continue beneath the floor of the trench. The soft reds were laid in an irregular bond and fixed with a lime mortar; the top course was set back from the wall with the area above comprising made-up ground.

Given the length of the wall and its position this may represent a later revetment to the north side of a moat. However, the EHCR is inconclusive about its existence and due to the narrow nature of the pipe trench the south side was not exposed. There were no obvious changes in the soil matrix.

The brickwork had been dated by David Andrews to the Tudor period, but an 18th-century date cannot be discounted. The bricks measure 18cm by 11cm by 5.5cm

**69. Epping Upland, Hayleys Manor Farm,  
Upland Road (TL 457 049)**

P. Connell, E.C.C. (H.A.M.P.)

Watching brief on trenches dug for underpinning the house as part of a new extension revealed a brick wall under the present building. Dangerous conditions negated any possibility of detailed recording, but samples of brick were of the 15th-century and of Tudor 'place' brick type. Also recovered was a small assemblage of late medieval and post-medieval pottery plus one sherd of shell-tempered medieval coarseware.

The owner has a small collection of Roman and medieval hammered coinage and small finds from the fields around the farm.

**70. Great Chesterford, Southview, South Street  
(TL 5076 4278)**

R. Havis, E.C.C. (H.A.M.P.)

Watching brief was carried out on an extension to the rear of the property. A single trench was excavated, c.5m in length and 1m in depth. Natural subsoil was visible in the trench although it was water filled at the base. A depth of c.0.7m of dark soil was visible above the natural, containing mainly post-medieval material.

**71. Harlow, Glen Avon, Potter Street  
(TL 473 088)**

R. Havis, E.C.C. (H.A.M.P.)

Watching brief on housing development resulted in the collection of a group of 13th- to 14th-century Mill Green Ware. This was possibly from a clay extraction pit. There was a considerable amount of modern disturbance on the site.

**72. Jaywick sewage treatment works  
(TM 1420 1420)**

M. Germany, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

Two post-medieval/modern field ditches and a small cut feature of indeterminate date and function were discovered during the construction of a new access road and operational area to the west and north of the existing sewage works. No other archaeological features were discovered.

Archive: C.M.

**73. Maldon, land off Tenterfield Road  
(TL 8515 0680)**

M.J. Peachey, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

In the north-west corner of the site a large, rectangular timber-lined pit was discovered. This had canted corners and measured 15m by 6m. It lay at a depth of 1.28m from the modern surface and was itself 1.26m in depth. The sides were three planks deep and were possibly composed of reused timbers. The planks were 0.03-0.05m thick and varied in length and depth. They were held in place with wooden posts to front and back. The pit had been filled with ash, coke, gravel and early 20th-century bottles over a clay base. The pit can be dated to the late 19th century as it appears on the 1897 second edition OS map but not on the 1873 map, when the land was a field. It is almost certainly an industrial feature, possibly a tanning pit, and may have been reused when the site became a coalyard, its use prior to the current development. No other archaeological features were discovered by the watching brief.

Archive: C.M.

**74. Mucking Marshes (TQ 692 809)**

R. Havis, M. Medlycott and N. Brown, E.C.C. (H.A.M.P.)

During a site visit to look at a potential development site, a timber structure was identified within the Mucking Creek. The structure was formed by a linear arrangement of posts with horizontal timber planks attached. This is positioned near a modern sluice gate.

**75. Newham, Wallend Recreation Ground,  
Barking Road (TQ 4335 8385)**

P. Fitz, A.O.C.

An archaeological watching brief was carried out in May and June to observe the cutting for 185m of sewer pipeline being installed by Thames Water Utilities Limited. In the course of several site visits, a buried peat horizon was encountered at 0.45m OD, possibly representing the edge of long term flood action that affected the nearby River Roding. Sealing the peat were

various layers of silty clay, buried topsoil, and modern levelling. No features of archaeological interest were encountered.

Archive: contact G.L.S.M.R. for location

**76. North Ockendon, Hall Farm, Church Lane (TQ 5876 8483)**

D. Palmer, A.O.C.

Three phases of archaeological work were carried out, the first of which was a watching brief in 1997 during the excavation for service trenches. The final two phases of work involved the excavation of a single evaluation trench within the footprint of a barn and the observation of ground reduction for its foundation slab during October 1998. Where archaeological remains were encountered above natural sand, they comprised logs lying in a black clay layer dated to between 1500 and 1700. Post-dating this layer were substantial layers of chalk rubble interpreted as bedding for the existing concrete surface. One north/south ditch was recorded cut into natural deposits. A large feature, which may have been an infilled pond associated with the medieval manor house, contained late 15th-/16th-century brick.

Previous summaries: Bennett (ed.) 1998, 210

Archive: contact G.L.S.M.R. for location

**77. St Osyth, 50 Colchester Road (TM 123 161)**

P. Connell, E.C.C. (H.A.M.P.)

A watching brief on trenches for a new house revealed a pit/deposit disturbed by machine. This produced large quantities of oyster, animal bone, and a small quantity of post-medieval Rhineland stoneware.

**78. Saffron Walden, Raynhams Garage, 11-17**

**High Street (TL 5362 3842)**

C. Cavanagh, A.O.C.

An archaeological watching brief was conducted by AOC Archaeology Group during groundworks associated with residential development by Little Bros. Ltd. on the site of the former Raynhams Garage. Excavations revealed 2.25m of made ground above natural chalk, which appeared to have been deliberate levelling prior to the construction of the cellars for the existing maltings building. Brick and flint foundation walls, cut through the levelling layers, were interpreted as footings for the 19th century extension to the maltings building, which had recently been demolished. The site was sealed by a layer of rubble. Neither the watching brief nor the preceding evaluation found evidence for activity pre-dating the post-medieval period, despite the site's proximity to the medieval castle.

Previous summaries: Bennett (ed.) 1999, 229

Archive: A.O.C., to go to S.W.M.

**79. Southminster, 8 High Street (TQ 959 997)**

P. Connell, E.C.C. (H.A.M.P.)

Inspection of the site took place after foundations had been cut and filled, due to not being informed of the start of groundworks in advance. A spread of oyster, bone and post-medieval ceramics over the site suggested that an archaeological feature had been disturbed.

**80. Stanford Rivers, Shonks Mill to Navestock Water Pipeline (TQ 5215 9865 to TQ 5435 9800)**

M. Bennell

Monitoring of the pipeline revealed several areas of interest:

- **TQ 5230 9845** Sub-circular pit 3.30m diameter and up to 500mm deep, filled with crushed burnt flint/charcoal. C14 date of CAL BC 1530 to 1190, 95% probability (3120±80BP Beta 133493).
- **TQ 5430 9800** Two small fragments of Romano-British tile and two small pieces of Roman brick.
- **TQ 5410 9807** Spread of abraded medieval pottery consisting of 85 sherds of mid 13th-century to 14th-century date, including Mill Green and Harlow ware.
- **TQ 5285 9805** Three post-medieval sherds of mid 17th- to 18th-century date.
- **TQ 5430 9800** One fire-cracked flint; one struck flake.

Archive: Ch.E.M.

**81. Wimbish, Abbots Moat, Thaxted Road (TL 5636 3521)**

R. Havis, E.C.C. (H.A.M.P.)

A watching brief on a rear extension identified archaeological deposits of medieval date. A single pit/ditch contained a very dark fill with a large amount of charcoal and some pottery. The feature cut the upcast of the moat indicating the presence of the moat certainly during the late medieval period. Two rim sherds of sand-tempered pottery were recovered, dating to c.1200.

**82. Wix Abbey (TM 163 291)**

P. Connell, E.C.C. (H.A.M.P.)

A watching brief on an extension revealed substantial septaria with occasional brick and tile bonded with lime mortar, c.0.65m deep. This probably represents a foundation for the lost west wing of the existing 16th-century building.

**Building Survey**

**83. Black Notley Hospital (TL 766 202)**

H. Cooper-Reade, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

Black Notley Hospital was a well-preserved example of a 1930s sanatorium and 1940s Emergency Medical Scheme (EMS) hospital, located in extensive grounds to the south-west of the village beside Witham Road. Recording of the buildings was undertaken prior to

demolition. The sanatorium was built in two main phases completed in 1930 and 1937-40 to designs drawn up by the County Architect, John Stuart. Subsequent building work mostly involved extending or modernising existing buildings and, during the Second World War, the creation of a hutted EMS hospital on a separate site to the north of the hospital.

The assistant engineer's house (later assistant medical officer's house and most recently known as White Cottage) was the earliest building on site. Erected sometime between 1912 and 1919, this formed part of the earlier isolation hospital on the site. The sanatorium which opened in 1930 included two adult female pavilions, two children's pavilions and two surgical pavilions either side of an operating block. All were constructed in similar fashion and were all south-facing. Built with a long south-facing ward range with a central projecting cross-wing, each of the wards had large french windows which opened onto a veranda or sunning space. The 1937 extensions to the sanatorium included a female surgical pavilion, an ambulant children's pavilion and a female pulmonary pavilion with a small maternity unit. Although some of the detail of these pavilions was different, they were basically built to the same designs as the pavilions opened in 1930. The accommodation buildings and memorial hall show the most mix of style. The central office block, which included nurses' and maids' accommodation on the upper floor, was built around a central square quadrangle with elements of the vernacular style and Arts and Crafts inspired ornament. The nurses' accommodation opened in 1937 is a typically moderne, flat-roofed building finished in white stucco and with large glazed stairwell areas.

Archive: E.C.C., to go to E.R.O.

#### **84. Braintree, St Michael's Hospital, Rayne Road (TL 751 231)**

S. Richardson, A.O.C.

Following a proposal to develop this site, an Historic Building Impact Assessment was carried out of St. Michael's Hospital (formerly the Braintree Union Workhouse).

The workhouse was built between 1837-1838 to a design by the architect William Nash. Nash was a minor workhouse specialist who designed another six Union workhouses, mostly in the East Anglia region. His design for Braintree was a variation of the Y-shaped 'hexagon' model plan for housing 300 paupers drawn up by Sampson Kempthorne for the Poor Law Commission. The earliest workhouse buildings included a small detached infirmary but a larger infirmary was built soon afterwards, possibly in 1849. The buildings underwent constant modifications throughout the mid to late 19th century. In 1896-1897, new casual and receiving wards and a new boardroom were built to the south of the workhouse; at the same time, the flanking wings of the entrance block were rebuilt as infirmary accommodation. A nurses' home was built before 1930

and hutted buildings erected to the west of the main buildings in or soon after 1948, when the workhouse became part of the newly formed National Health Service. Parts of the workhouse remain in use for geriatric treatment.

The standing buildings on site comprise the Y-plan hub and three main ranges, with a front entrance block flanked by the later infirmary wings. Remains of the exercise yards, and the outbuildings and boundary walls arranged around their perimeters survive, as does part of the original infirmary. The later infirmary, casual and receiving wards and board room stand detached from the main complex, with the nurses' home and hutted buildings to the west. The entrance block is Listed grade II. The Y-plan hub and main ranges largely preserve their original floor layout and limited evidence for interior finishes related to room function also survives, although this has been mostly destroyed by modern refurbishment. The vast majority of the original outbuildings have been destroyed, with only one retaining its early form. Of the other buildings, the interior floor layout of the later casual and receiving wards is probably least altered.

On a national level, Y-plan workhouses were less commonly built than those based on the other model plans designed by Kempthorne. Regionally, this is the only Y-plan workhouse to survive in Essex and is one of four of Nash's other designs known to be still extant in 1980.

Archive: E.R.O.

#### **85. Brentwood, Warley Hospital (TQ 5890 9250)**

A. Garwood, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

The first phase of a survey on the Victorian lunatic asylum has been completed, and the site's architecture and development as an institution is being analysed. The site is to be redeveloped for housing, and the first stage of the recording has concentrated on ancillary buildings due for demolition. Recording of the main hospital block, built in 1886, will take place after the hospital is closed down in 2000.

Archive: ERO

#### **86. Chelmsford, Crompton's Second ARC Works, Writtle Road (TL 6980 0600)**

D. Hawkins and J. Lowe, CgMs

The Crompton Second Arc works was established as a model factory in 1896 on what had been agricultural land and clay quarries. This factory was the direct successor to the first Crompton factory at Anchor Street, Chelmsford established in 1878 and destroyed by fire in 1895.

The initial phase of factory expansion from 1896 to 1919 saw the establishment of the two principal factory components: the main machine shops to the west and the switchgear shops to the east. The latter had formerly been lamp shops which were converted during World War I. Although limited physical expansion took place in

the period 1919 to 1933 a number of changes were made with the conversion of the whole factory to electric power (from 1920) and the innovative use of electric-powered precision tooling. A major phase of expansion took place in the period 1933 to 1940, almost certainly coupled with the British re-armament programme prior to the Second World War.

Following the Second World War and the factory's acquisition by Hawker Siddley only minor additions were made to the factory buildings. Internally, however, major changes must have occurred as virtually all the heavy lift cranes on the site recorded in the 1999 survey date to this period. In the 1960s the factory became obsolete as new technology demanded dust-free, temperature-controlled, work environments, and the site closed as a working factory in c.1969. Following purchase by GEC Marconi the site was used as an administrative and testing centre finally closing in c.1992. During this period most of the Crompton Parkinson fixtures and fittings were removed, the last significant features being sold off at auction.

It was at this time that much of the Crompton Parkinson archives were salvaged from the site by John Jay and officers of Chelmsford Museum. This part of the archive was later transferred to the Essex Record Office. Prior to closure however, the contents of the Crompton Parkinson on-site Museum, containing examples of the most significant factory products for the period 1878 to c. 1940 and associated documentation, had been transferred directly to the Science Museum, London. The combined archive for Crompton Parkinson and GEC Marconi is believed to total several thousand individual records.

Archive: CgMs, to go to E.R.O.

### **87. Chelmsford, Buildings of the Radio Electronics Industry**

W. Cocroft and A. Menuge, E.H. (N.M.R.)  
Chelmsford is the Marconi company's main manufacturing and research centre. This has grown from its origins in 1896, when Guglielmo Marconi brought his radio telegraph apparatus to Britain in search of backers to exploit his invention commercially. This led to the formation of the Wireless and Signal Company, who acquired a former silk mill in Chelmsford in 1899 for the manufacture of Marconi radio equipment.

Buildings surveyed associated with the radio electronics industry in Chelmsford were: The Anchor Works (Crompton's Arc Works), Anchor Street; The Old Silk Mill, Hall Street; Marconi Radar (Crompton's Second Arc Works), Writtle Road; Marconi Communications, New Street; Marconi Research Centre, Great Baddow; English Electric Valve Company, Waterhouse Lane; Elettra House, New London Road; Marconi, Waterhouse Lane.

Archive: E.H.

### **88. Chipping Ongar, former Hackney Cottage Homes (TL 555 030)**

A. Upson, A.O.C.

The principal buildings of the former Hackney Cottage Homes, to the north of the town centre, are being converted to private residential accommodation. A national survey of Poor Law Union buildings by the R.C.H.M.E. had identified the site as being one of the best preserved examples of a Cottage Home Village in England, and, in view of this significance, the Archaeology Advisory Service of Essex County Council advised that a Historic Building Record should be made of the buildings prior to their conversion.

The cottage home village system was introduced from the continent to provide a significant improvement in the standard of childcare beyond that originally provided either within the general mixed workhouse, or in the huge 'Barrack Schools' that were constructed following the Poor Law Amendment Act of 1834. The rationale behind the new system was to provide a less institutionalised environment in which the children could develop, living in domestic scale buildings, in more family-sized groups.

The village was designed by the architect W. A. Finch, who had carried out a number of other commissions for the Hackney Union. The original buildings of the village, which included the porter's lodge, all of the children's cottages including the probationary cottage, the administration block, one of the workshop buildings and the infirmary, were constructed between 1902 and 1905. The buildings were laid out around a central oval, a later development from the more formal earlier villages with buildings either side of a linear street. A school was added to the village in 1907, and further buildings such as a gymnasium, an additional workshop building, garages and grounds maintenance buildings were subsequently added to the site.

The buildings were all constructed in a domestic style of architecture, using the same basic palette of materials: red brick, white rough-cast render, timber and tile. The buildings are highly articulated, with complex roof configurations incorporating hips, half-hips, dormers and gables, a far cry from the monolithic slabs of the 'Barrack Schools'. The buildings are testament to the perceived importance of natural light and ventilation, and the floor to ceiling heights indicate an adherence to Poor Law guidance on the cubic space allocated to each child. The interior detailing of the buildings was simple, but of good quality, and has survived remarkably well to the present day.

On the abolition of the Poor Law administration in 1930, the institution was transferred to the London County Council, and was renamed the Ongar Public Assistance School. However, this was closed in March 1939 due to declining numbers, and re-opened as the Ongar Residential School for educationally sub-normal boys, known as Great Stony School, which continued in operation until 1994.



**89. Great Dunmow, barn at Brands Farm, Ongar Road (TL 6085 1939)**

J. Murray, H.A.T.

An historic building recording exercise was undertaken on a Grade II Listed barn at Brands Farm, Great Dunmow. The barn was in a relatively poor condition structurally, and consisted of a primary braced timber-framed and weatherboarded building of four bays, with a gabled wagon porch or midstrey to the east. Elements within the building indicated that there had been re-use of timbers, possibly from an earlier barn on the site. Several features revealed techniques of construction which broadly dated the building to the 16th or 17th centuries, in keeping with known alterations to the farmhouse. Some 19th-century consolidation works and alterations were also apparent.

Archive: S.W.M.

**90. Great Saling, Hall Farm (TL 7002 2574)**

A. Letch, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

A photographic record and architectural description was made of the buildings of a redundant farm before conversion into houses and cottages. A documentary and cartographic survey was also carried out to establish the farm's historical background. The farm was established as the estate farm to Saling Hall between 1777 and 1790, and several of the buildings date to that period, although one of the barns predated the farm. It was extended and re-organised on 'model farm' principles in the Victorian period, and a large barn was added in the 20th century. Three of the farm buildings are listed: the late 17th-century farmhouse, a probable 16th-/17th-century barn, and an 18th-century cart lodge. The farmhouse was converted with minor alterations, but the barn had been extensively damaged by the 1987 hurricane, and was rebuilt as a house. A further barn and a cowshed, built before 1790, were converted into cottages, and three completely new houses were built.

Archive: ERO

**91. Great Hallingbury, Howe Green Moat Farm (TL 5092 1870)**

J. Ayre, M.o.L.A.S.

The timber barn and later brick farm buildings were discovered to have been extensively altered in this century. The surviving sections of the original frame to the barn, including carpentry marks, allowed the original form to be reconstructed. The farm house had also been extensively altered and added to. The only features that may be of any age were the two plain brick fireplaces and chimney stacks. They had no dateable features however.

The archaeological watching brief of landscaping within the moat found no archaeological material. The modern boundary ditch was found to have destroyed any evidence of the northern arm of the moat. The 1970s backfill of the eastern arm of the moat was

exposed.

Archive: M.o.L.A.S.

**92. Harlow, Feltimores Farm Buildings, Chalk Lane (TQ 4920 1130)**

A. Padfield

See No. 97 below

**93. Mistley, Lawford Place (TM 0935 3115)**

A. Garwood, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

Recording of a late 18th-century mansion with a 19th-century west wing and stables was curtailed because of the dangerous state of the building, which had suffered from both arson and damp. A documentary and cartographic survey was carried out to establish the mansion's historical background, and a walkover survey was carried out in the gardens. Further recording may take place when the mansion has been made safe to enter.

Archive: E.R.O.

**94. Nazeing, Langridge Farm (TL 3804 0482)**

M. Peachey, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

A photographic record was made of three 19<sup>th</sup>-century farm buildings which were part of a moated farmstead before conversion into housing. Underpinning trenches were inspected, but there was no evidence of the moat or internal features.

Archive: E.R.O.

**95. North Weald Bassett, North Weald Redoubt (TL 5056 0396)**

L. Barker, E.H.(C.)

A 1:500 survey of the redoubt together with 1:100 survey of the magazine casemates was carried out. Flooding and the overgrown nature of the site meant that the survey was only partial. Although there is some later disturbance on the site as a result of the radio station, the majority of the redoubt is in reasonable condition.

The survey covered much of the outer ditch; rampart, within which a number of hollows (possible gun pits) were located; casemated magazines; marshalling yard; blast wall; gorge; internal road and ramps; exterior buildings such as the caretakers cottage. The gorge casemates and caponnier could not be surveyed due to flooding. The magazine casemate was fully recorded revealing much of the original fittings and signs.

A photographic record of the site was also undertaken.

**96. Springfield, Marconi School of Wireless, Arbour Lane (TL 717 075)**

A. Garwood, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

A photographic and written record has been made of the Marconi School of Wireless site prior to

redevelopment for housing. Established on the site of the former Chelmsford College in Arbour Lane in 1921, the site was extensively increased in 1935 by the addition of further accommodation to the existing lodge and the erection of a new college block. The new buildings adopted an Art Deco style and were designed by architect William Walter Wood (who was responsible for the façade of Marconi's main premises in New Street). The new college building included laboratories, lecture rooms, a common room, library, workshop and administration offices. Detached transmitter huts were erected around the site and by 1950 a new drawing office was built. In 1953 work commenced on a further college block and the 1930s block was converted into a residential facility. The college remained active until its recent closure in 1999.

Archive: E.R.O.

#### **97. Survey of modern archaeological and architectural remains**

S. Gould, E.C.C. (H.A.M.P.)

See this volume, pp.202-205

#### **98. Wanstead Park Temple (TQ 4162 8740)**

R. Dale, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

Trenching was carried out on the west, north and east sides of the temple to provide information to assist in its restoration. The temple was built in the mid 18th century during landscaping of the grounds of Wanstead House following rebuilding in 1715. The mansion was demolished in 1824, but the temple survives as a feature of the park, which was acquired for the public by the Corporation of London in 1882. The temple is built in classical mock-Tuscan style and has a central portion with a west-facing portico flanked by wings of plainer design extending to north and south. The central portico forms a decorative landscape feature and probably served as a summer-house, but documentary references show that the rest of the building was more utilitarian in purpose, housing the keepers and the poultry. Restoration work on the upper floors had suggested that the north and south wings had been added at a later date, but the evaluation showed that despite detailed differences in the brickwork the foundations of the north wing were keyed into those of the central part of the building. It is difficult to tell whether this represents a single build, or the careful integration of two distinct structural phases. A timber extension to the north wing, built in the 19th century and demolished in the 1950s, was located. The mound in front of the temple had not substantially changed from its original form, and had been consolidated by turfing over when new. The original gravel path running along the west frontage was also recorded. The existing gravel surface to the east (rear) of the temple had a relatively modern brick rubble base, and the original surface has probably been destroyed.

Archive: contact G.L.S.M.R. for location

### **Field Survey**

#### **99. Aerial Survey**

D. Strachan E.C.C. (H.I.R.)

See this volume, pp. 197-207

#### **100. Bradwell Saxon Shore Fort (TM 031 082)**

R. Wardill, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

Work is continuing on this English Heritage-funded survey around the Roman Saxon Shore fort of Othona and the Anglo-Saxon church and monastery. The work comprises desk-based assessment, aerial photographic plotting, geophysical survey, fieldwalking and total station survey. In addition to locating the position of previous excavation trenches, it is hoped that the work will establish the extent and nature of the archaeological deposits in and adjacent to the scheduled area. This will provide a basis for developing the management and research priorities for both the scheduled area and its environs.

Archive: C.M.

#### **101. Great Warley, Filmy Fern Cave, Warley Place (TQ 583 908)**

T. Ennis & ER. Heppell, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

Survey and limited excavation was undertaken, with the aid of volunteers from the Essex Wildlife Trust. The trenches clearly showed the line of a sandstone pathway leading through the cave with the east and west ends blocked off by wooden gates. The fill over the majority of the cave was not excessively deep though it did contain a number of large fallen rocks. A number of rock alcoves and niches, raised and at ground level, appeared to have acted as receptacles for growing plants in.

The structure appears to originally have been roofed by half inch thick roof glass probably supported by T-shaped glazing bars connected to the five long girders. Some of the thinner glass may have been used for a window or for in filling at the two ends of the cave. The base of the cave was not investigated below the depth of the pathway.

Parts of the cave structure, such as the two main arches, appear fairly solid whereas a number of rocks on the north and south sides appear less stable. The two central girders are particularly badly corroded. Overall, the cave is in a poor state of repair.

Archive: E.C.C.

#### **102. Havering, Dagnam Park Moat, Harold Hill (TQ 5481 9294)**

P. Rauxloh, M.o.L.A.S.

The exercise recorded four transects across Dagnam Park moat and succeeded in gauging the depth of sediment build up within the ditch itself. An estimate was made of the quantity of silt present in the northern arm of the ditch circuit, from statistics generated by the three dimensionally recorded survey data. The average silt thickness has been calculated to help guide the

proposed conservation works in the moat habitat of the Great Crested Newts.

**103. Historic Towns Survey**

M. Medlycott, E.C.C. (H.A.M.P.)

See this volume, p. 201

**104. North Fambridge, Blue House Farm**

(TQ 865 970)

P. Pattison, E.H. (C.)

Survey of some 242ha of unimproved and improved coastal grazing marsh was undertaken to locate and record any extant archaeological features. The principal features comprise a series of counter walls which were built during reclamation of the marsh. The report will concentrate on trying to establish the sequence of reclamation.

**105. Rayne, Hall (TL 7322 2296)**

A. Oswald, A. Cooper and A. Menuge, E.H. (C.)

In 1998-9, field survey was carried out of the environs of the late medieval manor house of Rayne Hall in Essex. At a fairly early stage in the use of the site, perhaps before the earliest part of the surviving timber-frame was built, the house was probably surrounded by a moat. The whole manorial complex underwent major expansion between the late 15th and early 17th centuries, under the ownership of the wealthy and powerful Capell family. These changes included extensions of the house, the creation of a series of ponds and a walled garden, the addition of a brick west tower to the adjacent church and the construction of two barns and a third agricultural building, all of which still survive. Documentary evidence suggests the existence of other ancillary buildings that have been demolished. With the departure of the Capell family in c.1622 the manorial complex became essentially a farm, and many of the later agricultural buildings still survive.

Archive: E.H.

**106. Stour Valley Project**

D. Strachan and N. Brown, E.C.C.

See this volume, p. 202

**107. Tollesbury, Old Hall Marshes Nature**

**Reserve (TL 975 125)**

L. Barker, E.H. (C.)

Survey work consisted of a full ground reconnaissance to locate all visible sites of archaeological interest; a topographical survey at 1:2500 scale showing all archaeological features; and selected surveys of sites of particular archaeological interest at 1:1000 scale. Documentary research was also undertaken.

The survey located eight further mounds on the marsh, which are thought to represent red hills - remnants of salt production dating to the late prehistoric/early Roman period. This brings the total of proposed red hill sites on the marsh to 13. Twenty-two sections of internal banks were recorded, dating to the

medieval/post-medieval period. They are likely to represent counter walls constructed during the different phases of reclamation on the marsh. Of the two duck decoys on the marsh, the smaller square pond decoy was surveyed at 1:1000 scale. Two earthwork complexes were also surveyed at 1:1000 scale, comprising a further salt-working site and a midden/structural platform.

Archive: E.H.

**108. World War II Defences Survey**

F. Nash, E.C.C. (H.I.R.)

See this volume, pp. 207-9

**Geophysical Survey**

**109. Great Baddow, land at Newport Close**

(TL 7360 0480)

R. Wardill, E.C.C. (F.A.U.)

A magnetometer survey was conducted as an initial stage in the evaluation of a proposed housing development on the east side of Great Baddow, over two fields covering 3.3ha. Cropmarks are known to the east and south-east, including a ring-ditch, while prehistoric flint axeheads and Roman tesserae have been recovered as surface finds. The survey recorded extensive interference over the north field, a sports ground, but detected faint anomalies over the south field, which is rough grass. The anomalies indicate a D-shaped enclosure 17m wide, a possible trackway, and a large rectilinear enclosure 40m across.

Archive: Ch.E.M.

**Abbreviations**

A.C.A.	AC Archaeology
A.O.C.	AOC (Archaeology) Ltd
Bt.M.	Braintree Museum
C.A.G.	Colchester Archaeological Group
C.A.T.	Colchester Archaeological Trust
CgMs	CgMs Consulting
C.M.	Colchester Museum (formerly Colchester and Essex Museum)
Ch.E.M.	Chelmsford and Essex Museum
Cw.A.T.	Cotswold Archaeological Trust
E.C.C.	Essex County Council
E.C.C. (F.A.U.)	Essex County Council (Field Archaeology Group)
E.C.C. (H.A.M.P.)	Essex County Council (Heritage Advice, Management & Promotions)
E.C.C. (H.I.R.)	Essex County Council (Heritage Information and Records)
E.H.	English Heritage
E.H. (C.)	English Heritage Cambridge Office (was R.C.H.M.E. pre April 1999)
E.H. (N.M.R.)	English Heritage National Monuments Record (was R.C.H.M.E. pre April 1999)
E.R.O.	Essex Record Office
E.S.A.H.	Essex Society for Archaeology and History
FA.	Framework Archaeology

F.C.A.S.	Foulness Conservation and Archaeological Society
G.C.L.H.A.S.	Great Chesterford Local History and Archaeology Society
G.& P.L.	Gifford and Partners Ltd
G.L.S.M.R.	Greater London Sites & Monuments Record
H.A.T.	Hertfordshire Archaeological Trust
M.L.	Museum of London
M.o.L.A.S.	Museum of London Archaeology Service
R.C.H.M.E.	Royal Commission on the Historical Monuments of England (now part of English Heritage)
S.M.	Southend Museum
S.W.M.	Saffron Walden Museum
T.M.	Thurrock Museum
W.A.	Wessex Archaeology

### **Bibliography**

- Bennett, A. (ed.) 1997 'Archaeology in Essex 1996' *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* 28, 205-227
- Bennett, A. (ed.) 1998 'Archaeology in Essex 1997' *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* 29, 194-215
- Bennett, A. (ed.) 1999 'Archaeology in Essex 1998' *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* 30, 210-31
- Bennett, A. & Gilman, P. (eds) 1996 'Archaeology in Essex 1995' *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* 27, 261-276
- Gilman, P. & Bennett, A. (eds) 1995 'Archaeology in Essex 1994' *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* 26, 238-258

*The Society is extremely grateful to Essex County Council for a generous grant towards the cost of publishing this article.*

# Historic Buildings Notes and Surveys 1999

Edited by D.D. Andrews

The buildings described below have mostly been recorded either in the course of listed building development control work, or as part of the on-going survey of buildings in Cressing parish based on Cressing Temple, or by the Essex Architectural Research Society in their work in the west of the county. We should like to thank the owners for their patience and indulgence, and the contractors for their co-operation.

## The Essex Tree-Ring Dating Project

D.D. Andrews

Relatively few dates have been commissioned specifically within the framework of this project, but it is pleasing to note that dendrochronology is more and more being routinely requested by English Heritage and owners to inform restoration work and alterations to listed buildings. Amongst points to note are the continued failure to date urban buildings; the 18th-century date for the Harwich crane, disproving the traditional link between its construction and the visit of the Duke of York to the Navy Yard in 1667; and the date for Moone Hall at Stambourne, showing that this long-wall jetty house is contemporary with Cann Hall, Clacton, with which it shares its distinctive plan form.

## Bocking, 92 Bradford Street.

### A long-wall jetty house

D.D. Andrews

#### *The frontage building*

Located at the north end of Bradford Street, just before the bend beyond which the street begins to wind up the side of the Blackwater valley towards Braintree, this is a plastered and timber-framed two-storey house which in recent times has been a butcher's shop (previously J. Sargent, until 1997 R.L. Gallop). Two entrance doors indicate that before this use it had been divided into two cottages. It is characteristically Georgian in appearance, with a bay window and, more unusually, a projecting shop window with a flat canopy above. There are two main elements to the property, which is in effect T-shaped: a three-bay building parallel to the street, and to the rear of it a long three bay building at right-angles to the street (Fig. 1).

The frontage building was two-storeyed throughout. The bays are approximately equal in size, the north one being the shortest. The studs are about 150mm wide, and set about 300mm apart. The joists have soffit tenons and simple stop chamfers. Relatively little of the frame either survives or is visible at the ground floor. A passageway through to the rear of the property has been

Parish	Building	Date	Timbers	Report	Analysis
Colchester	52 North Hill	Rejected			I. Tyers
Dedham	Old Assembly Rooms	1744/45		ARCUS 472	I. Tyers
Greensted (Colchester)	St. Andrew	Rejected	Rafters		I. Tyers
Harwich	Treadwheel crane	1739-1769	Wheelhouse post		M. Bridge
		1792-1824	Jib		
Plaistow	Essex Lodge	after 1589	Cellar joist	AM Lab 44/98	M. Bridge
Stambourne	Moone Hall	1488-1515	Storey posts		I. Tyers
Stambourne	St. Peter	1508-44	Bellframe		I. Tyers
		1580-1614	Bellchamber floor		
Steeple	Moyns Park:			ARCUS	I. Tyers
Bumpstead	1) N range	1591/92	Roof	471	
	2) E range	1573-93			
	3) W range	1552	Rafter		
	4) W gallery	after 1552			

Notes 1) Ancient Monument Laboratory Reports available from English Heritage, 23 Savile Row, London W1

2) Archaeological Research and Consultancy at the University of Sheffield Research School of Archaeology (ARCUS) Project Reports, available from West Court, 2 Mappin Street, Sheffield S1 4DT

Table 1. Recent tree-ring dates for Essex buildings.

cut through the north bay. The building must have been jettied to the street, though the only visible sign of this is the impression of a bressumer on the soffit of one of the binding joists. At the rear of the southern bay, there is a four-light window with thick diamond mullions.

More is evident at the first floor. The northern two

bays formed a single chamber, with an arch-braced and slightly cambered tie-beam. This can be inferred from the absence of peg holes in the tie-beam, with the exception of the characteristic groups of three for the braces. The original partition wall at the south end of this chamber preserves a large curving compression

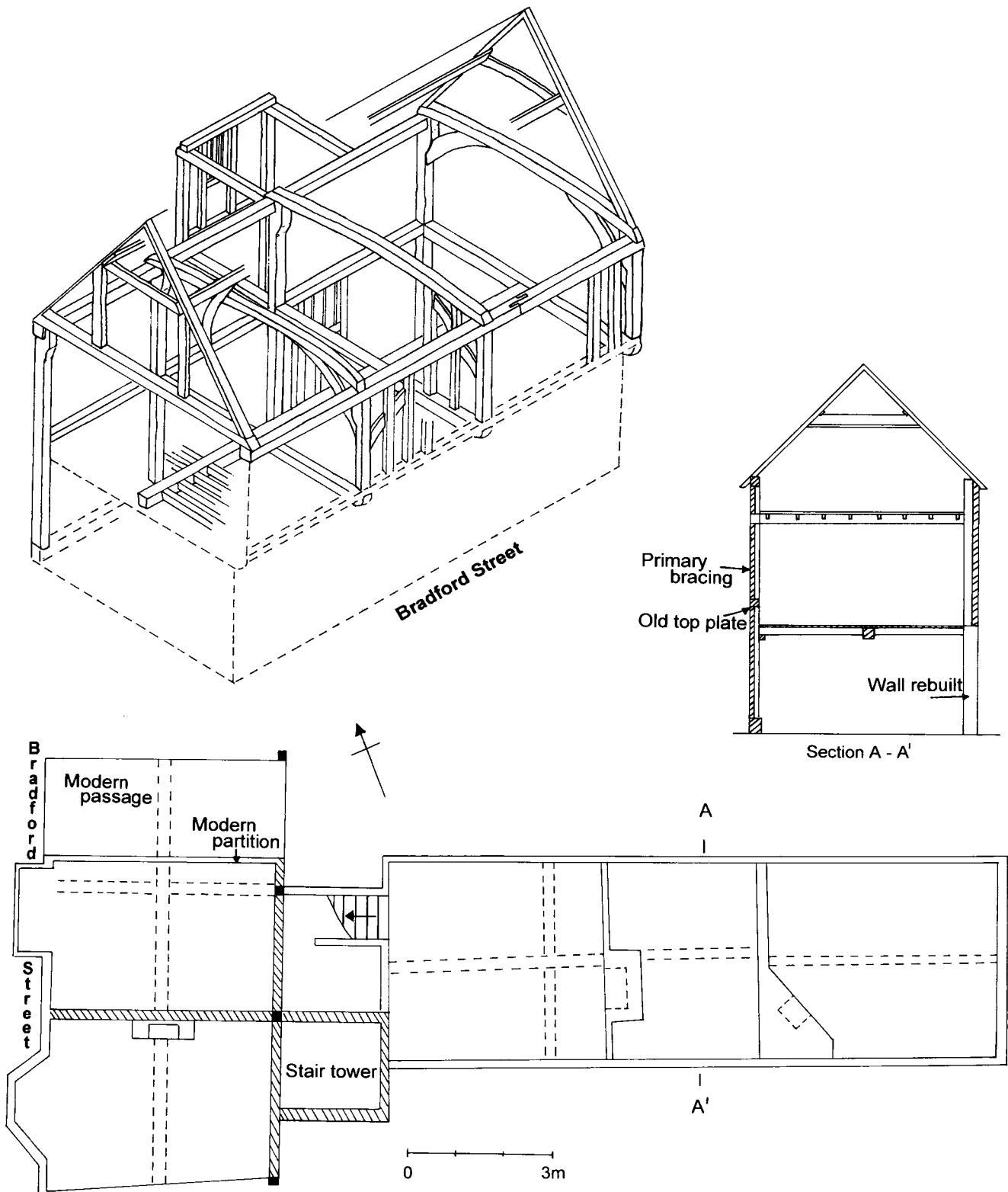


Fig. 1 Bocking, 92 Bradford Street. Ground plan, with an isometric drawing of the timber frame on the frontage and a cross-section through the rear extension

brace. There is another brace in the frontage wall; the full extent of this cannot be traced, but it is noteworthy that it is an internal brace. To the south, the building terminates in a bay with an open truss, now filled in with a solid partition. The house must have been cut through at this point, losing one bay of another two-bay chamber in the process. The first floor was open to the roof, which is of clasped purlin type, the principals reducing in thickness above the purlin, with windbraces at the corners of the rooms.

Examination of the roof of the four cottages on the south side of no. 92 shows that the first of these was originally a cross-wing also with a collar purlin roof. The tie-beam has an empty mortice for a crown post: either the beam is reused or the roof has been rebuilt. The front of the building has subsequently been raised and it has been given a roof with a ridge parallel to the street. From this it can be inferred that the original building was provided with a cross-wing on its southern side, an in-line bay at this end being removed in the process. Subsequently the cross-wing must have passed into separate ownership.

At the back of the range on the frontage, the framing of the top of a stair tower is preserved at first-floor level. It has a three-light diamond mullion window in its rear wall. The relatively slight scantling of its timbers, and the fact that it must have obscured the surviving ground-floor window, indicate that the stair tower was an addition, though one made not long after the construction of the house.

#### *The rear extension*

To the rear, or east, of the frontage building is a three-bay extension (Fig. 1). This was not fully opened up and the history of its development is not entirely clear. The western bay is two storey. Relatively little of this could be seen. It may have been built separately to, and slightly before, the other two bays. These are three storey. The first floor is set below the level of the mid-rail in the side wall and supported by clamps. There are dovetails on the top of the mid-rail: either this timber is reused, or more probably it was the top plate of a single storey building. The existing first floor is made with flat section joists which are set into a spine beam supported at its west end by a chimney stack built of 2-inch Tudor bricks. The joists indicate that this floor should date from the 16th century, as could the stack. If this building was originally single storey, then it may have had an attic, the floor for which could have been at the existing level, or else has been lowered slightly when the second floor was created. The chimney is either original or inserted when the floor was lowered. Above the mid-rail (or former top plate), there is primary bracing which supports binding joists which in turn support the second floor which is formed partially in the roof, which is of clasped purlin construction. The primary bracing, narrow section floor joists, and lamb's tongue chamfers on the binding joists, indicates that this raising in height occurred in the 17th century.

#### *Discussion*

The oldest part of this building was thus a long-wall jetty house of at least four bays, with two large two-bay chambers at the first floor. The ground floor may have replicated this, but may have been divided into more units. Practical arrangements, such as doors and stairs, are unclear. Since the stair tower was an addition, there were presumably internal stairs, but insufficient was exposed of the floors to check satisfactorily for the position of these. The internal braces, and the clasped purlin roof, suggest a date in the later 16th century. (The building was assessed for tree-ring dating, but rejected as being of low potential). At this time, there must have been many long-wall jetty houses in Bradford Street. About four are still recognisable today. The construction of the cross-wing at the southern end of the property reflects the popularity of the gabled façade in the late 16th and 17th century. The cross-wing plan probably also had the advantage of being readily extendable into the rear of the plot. The later passage of this cross-wing into different ownership illustrates how complex the subdivision of urban properties could be. The long-wall jetty house is about 32 ft or 2 rods long. Presumably this represents the break-up of an original plot with a frontage width of 4-5 rods, as in many other medieval towns. The 17th-century rear extensions constitute a very considerable provision of extra space, though how these buildings were used is far from clear.

### **Cressing, Jeffreys Farm**

D.D. Andrews, P. Ryan and D. Stenning

Jeffreys Farm is situated on the west side of Mill Lane, Cressing, and is aligned approximately north-south (Figs 2 and 3). From the front it presents a uniform facade, pebbledashed with old sash windows and a cross-wing at the southern end. The rear has a cat-slide roof over an outshot and a gabled extension towards the north. The outwardly Georgian exterior conceals an H-plan house with a 14th-century cross-wing to the south, a hall, and a later, probably 15th-century, cross-wing to the north. In the 17th century, a brick stack was inserted in the cross-passage adjacent to the early cross-wing and it became a lobby-entry house. At the same time, a floor was inserted in the hall and the hall roof was raised. In the 18th century or the early 19th century, an extra bay was added to the north, and the rear extensions were made.

#### *The early cross-wing*

Only the front bay of this survives intact. The posts do not have jowls except in the front first-floor wall, which has tension joists. The floor joists are lodged on the main binding joist. They are substantial, but dramatically waney, timbers. The jetty at the front has been underbuilt in 19th-century brick. The most striking feature of the building is the round-arched tie-beam at the first floor reinforced by solid brackets. The roof is smoke-blackened and of trussed common rafter type,

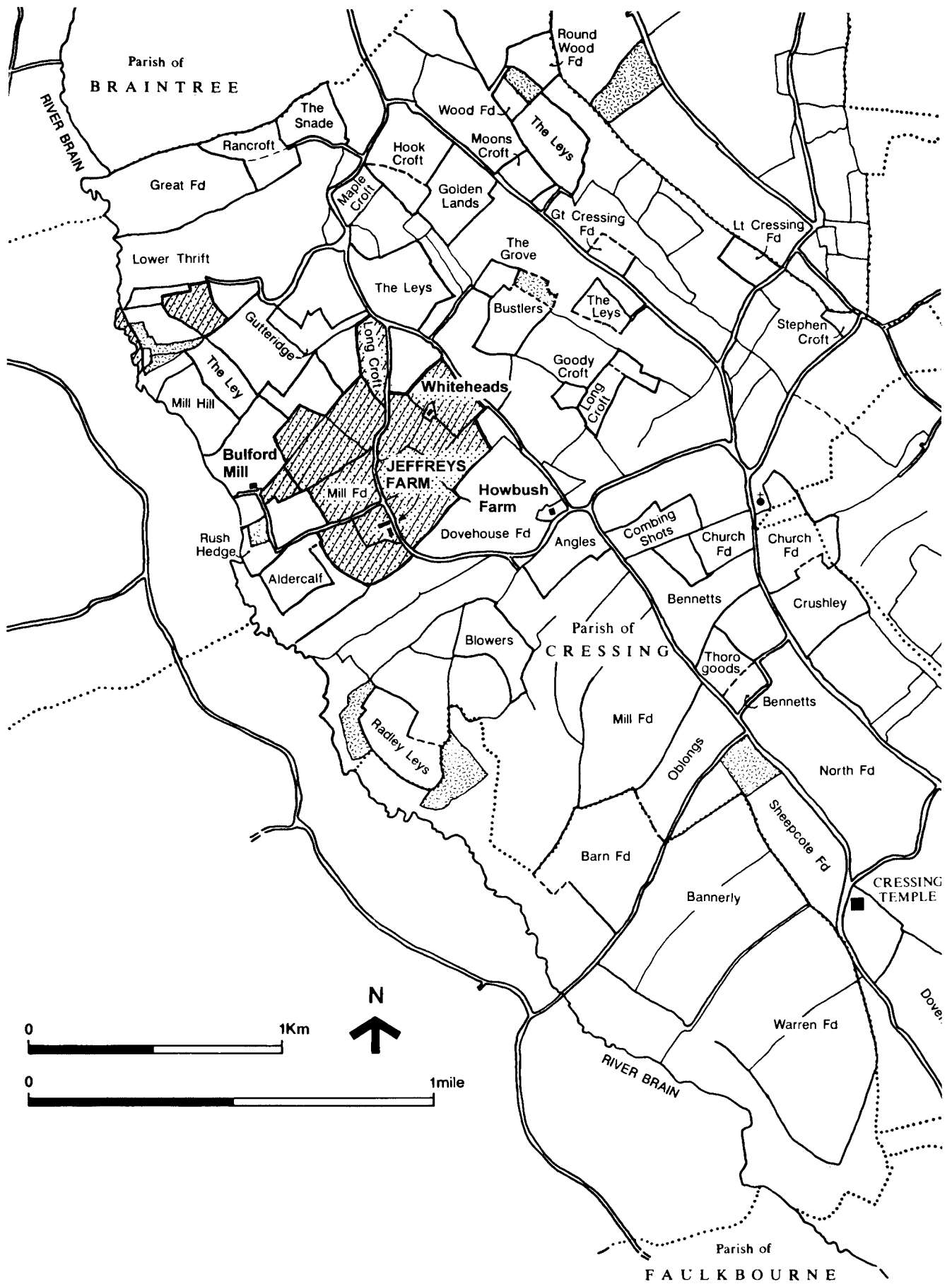


Fig. 2 Plan of Cressing parish, to show location of Jeffreys, and the lands held by William Eley (indicated by stipple and hatching) at the time of the 1847 Tithe Map (ERO D/CT 109)



the collars being lap-jointed to the rafters. It shows no evidence of having had a crown post, though there is a stud in an analogous position in the front gable. At the ground floor, at the corner of the brick chimneystack, there is a large mortice in the side of the storey post for a door head. This would have led to the cross-passage which must have flanked the cross-wing.

Dating features are few, but the wide studding, the first-floor tie-beam, the roof, and its general modest dimensions point to the cross-wing having been constructed in the first half of the 14th century.

*The hall*

Virtually nothing survives of the hall contemporary with the cross-wing. A rail on the front or east side is a former top plate and has a dove-tail joint with a hole for a peg which would have been fixed vertically through the end of the tie-beam, something which tends to be an archaic feature. However, the timber is not smoke-blackened and cannot be regarded as being *in situ*. In the roof, which has been raised in height, there are a number of smoke-blackened rafter pairs which are clearly reused from the original roof.

*The later cross-wing*

This is built of substantial good quality timbers. The posts are jowled. The storey posts at the first floor are chamfered with plain step stops. In the rear wall and flank, there are tension braces. The tie-beam over the first floor has a pronounced camber and a mortice in its upper surface is for a crown post which no longer survives. This structure also lacks diagnostic dating features, but its general character and the relatively wide stud intervals suggest it was built in the 15th century.

*The 17th-century lobby-entry house*

The bricks of the chimney stack are fairly small and precisely made. Some have diagonal pressure marks. They look 17th century in date. The main longitudinal bridging joist of the floor inserted in the former open hall is seated on a timber pad in the brickwork of the chimney, showing that this floor is contemporary with it. The floor has narrow section joists. At the same time, the roof over the hall was raised, the walls being made with primary bracing. In the front wall there is evidence for a frieze window. All these features point consistently to a major 17th-century remodelling of the farmhouse.

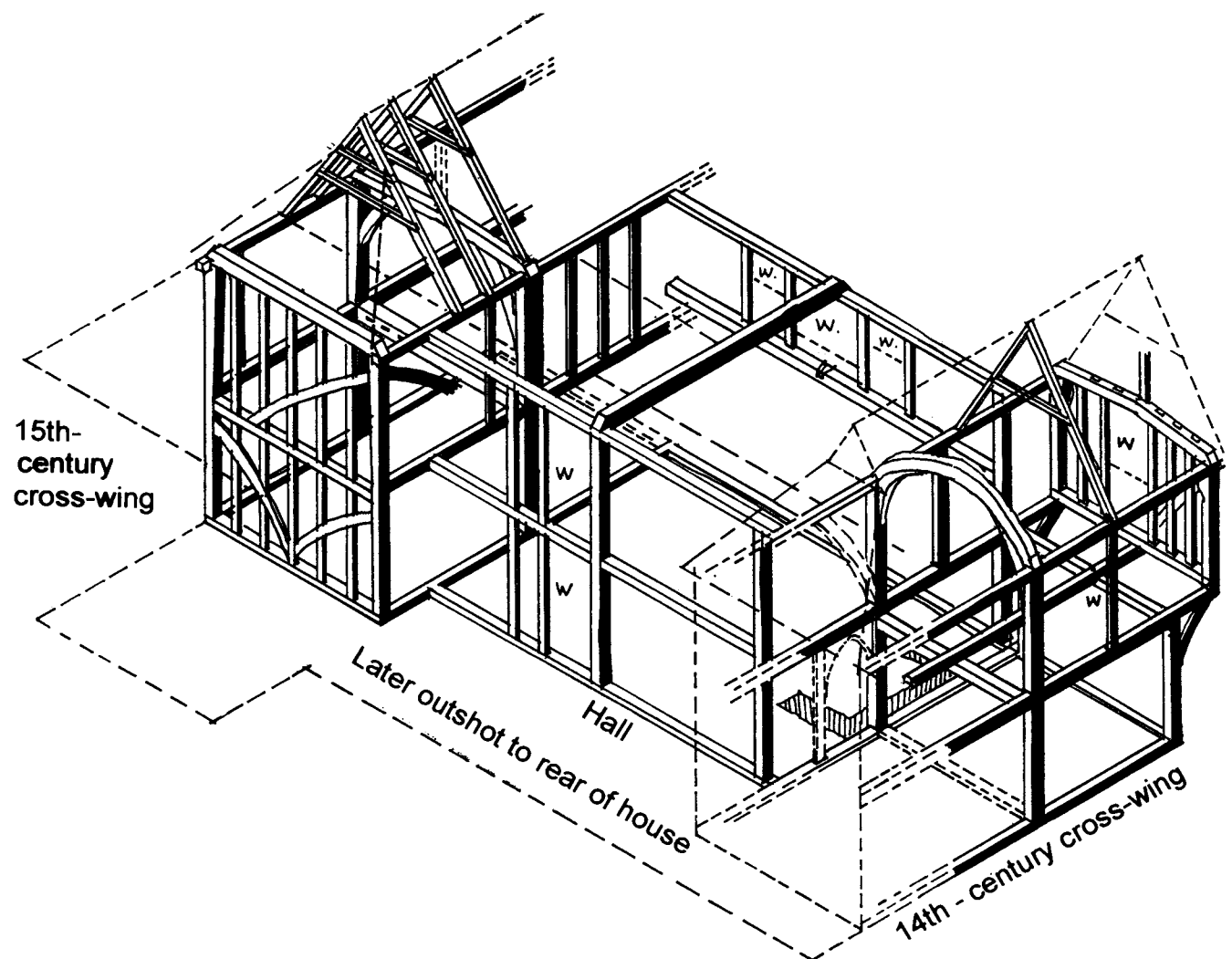


Fig. 3 Cressing, Jeffreys Farm, the timber frame (W = window).

It became a lobby-entry house, the chimney being inserted into the former cross-passage.

#### *The 18th and 19th centuries*

The house was extended northwards by a bay, probably in the late 18th or early 19th century. The chimney stack here, where it appears above the roofline, looks of this date, as do all the stacks, but the base of it could be older. The ground-floor room at this end has a superb Victorian tiled floor, perhaps by Minton. The 15th-century cross-wing has also been extended to the rear by a bay, the top plates being reused moulded 15th or 16th-century timbers. To the south of this extension, an outshot was provided along the back of the house beneath a catslide roof. Notable interior fittings include two late 18th or early 19th-century fitted cupboards, one of which has chinoiserie fretwork decoration. They reflect a programme of improvements to the house at this period, which included the early 19th-century 20- and 16-pane sash windows, and the underbuilding of the jetty. The large cedar tree must also date from about this time. One would have expected it to be part of a landscaping scheme, but of this there seems to be no evidence.

#### *The environs of the farmhouse*

Areas of uneven ground seem to be of recent formation and not to represent earthworks. However, there ought to have been other buildings round the farmhouse for which archaeological evidence may survive below ground. The ponds and ditches raise the possibility that the farmhouse was originally moated. The two rows of walnut trees in the field to the north-west cannot be an avenue as they are not linked to any other elements in the topography, and instead must represent a 19th-century nuttury.

Surviving outbuildings comprise a granary and two barns. The former is an interesting little building which seems to have been open at the ground floor. The two barns are located to the north of the house and stand in line east-west at right angles to the road. That nearer the road can be dated to the second half of the 18th century on the evidence of the brickwork of its plinth. The irregularly spaced roof battens indicate that it was originally thatched. The more westerly barn has a high brick plinth which may be dated to about the middle of the 19th century. Both barns are in fairly good condition and are built largely of new, but slight and waney, timbers. The 18th-century barn is interesting because its south side preserves its original external plaster with a fan-shaped pargeted pattern. Below this are square butted weatherboards which seem original, valuable evidence for the appearance of the barn when first built. (Similar plasterwork occurs on the back of the farmhouse).

#### *Documentary evidence*

No references to a property of this name have been traced in late medieval documents. The earliest mention of it found so far is of the 17th century. In 1653, the

Cressing Temple court rolls record that Mary Woodwards and Ann Bacon, the daughters of the late Thomas Bacon jun. and his wife Ann, were admitted to a property described as 'a parcel of pasture and wood containing 2 acres called Lambards Grove and one croft of customary land as it was enclosed called Longfield containing 7 acres lying under an orchard late of Thomas Bacon and one pasture called Clamtrees Bushetts containing 6 acres and a croft of arable land called Betts and one customary garden with a house built thereon containing 1 rood, parcel of a tenement called Jefferys' (ERO D/DU 191/67, p.3). Thomas Bacon had been admitted to the property in 1621 on the death of his father, Thomas Bacon senior.

In 1701, Henry Woodwards, heir of John Woodwards and his wife Mary, was admitted to 'Jefferys Tenement and five crofts of customary land containing 19 acres' (ERO D/DU 191/67, p.30). Four years later, Henry was admitted to his mother's share of his grandfather's property, 'parcel of pasture called Clamtrees Bushetts alias Fenns containing 6 acres and one croft called Betts containing 6 acres' (ERO D/DU 191/67, p.30).

In 1733, John Woodward of Faulkbourn inherited his uncle Henry's property. He achieved a measure of prosperity, acquiring the farm of Whiteheads, other lands in Cressing ('a close called Lower Field containing 5 acres, parcel of Grimeland near the Hawke'), and also land in St. Lawrence and Bradwell in the Dengie. In his will proved in 1768, he was described as 'yeoman of Cressing.' He left his daughter, Mary Eley, Whiteheads and the St. Lawrence property. To his grandson, John Woodward Eley, then under 21 years, he left his 'messuage, farmhouse and lands' in his own occupation in Cressing, of which the principal component was Jeffreys (ERO D/ACR 17/84).

In 1795, John Woodward Eley reconstituted his grandfather's estate by purchasing Whiteheads and the other properties from his parents. In his will made in 1816, he left his lands to his son, William Eley (ERO D/ABR 32/372). His wife was to have an annuity of £80 out of 'his copyhold messuage and tenement and farms called by the names of Jefferies, Whiteheads and particularly the the close called Lower Field, containing 5 acres, parcel of Grimes.'

In 1831, William Eley added to his Cressing lands with the purchase of 'a customary messuage and 7 acres called Cranmers' for £450 (ERO D/DU 191/66, p.49). The history of this property can be traced back to 1710 when Robert Tabor of Black Notley bought it from William Whitehead. In the title award of 1842, William Eley was listed as the owner and occupier of Jeffreys. His lands, including smaller properties such as Cranmers and Lower Field, totalled 124 acres.

According to his will proved in 1843, William Eley left his property to his son John Woodward Eley, then a minor (ERO D/ABR 35/257). By 1861, Jefferies Farm was occupied by a tenant, Edmund Sache, who employed five men and three boys on the 120 acre farm.

*Discussion*

It is curious that the history of a building which dates back to the 14th century, and the holding with which it was associated, cannot be traced earlier than the 17th century. Jeffreys is situated in the northern part of the parish of Cressing, an area of woodland and smallholdings representing the lands of the men, in contrast with the large open fields of the manorial demesne in the south of the parish. The most significant holding in this part of the parish centre is the moated site at Hawbush Old House. Jeffreys seems to be below this status, though the ponds and ditches raise the possibility that it was moated. On the premise that the 19th-century farm represented the gradual accretion of small properties and their incorporation into a larger one, it could be speculated that the 14th-century farm was one of the freeholdings in the parish and so not mentioned in the court rolls.

The house to which the 14th-century cross-wing belonged was clearly quite a substantial property. There was no doubt a house on the site before this time. It is unfortunate that so little survived of the hall. There was, however, nothing to suggest that this was aisled. The later development of the house is fairly standard, with the remodelling of the parlour end with a new or larger cross-wing in the 15th century, creating an H-plan house, the conversion of the dwelling to a lobby-entry plan with the construction of a stack in the cross-passage, and the later extensions and outshot to the rear.

**Bibliography**

- ERO Essex Record Office  
 Ryan, P. 1993 'The history of Cressing Temple from the documentary sources', in D.D. Andrews (ed.), *Cressing Temple. A Templar and Hospitaller manor in Essex*, Chelmsford: Essex County Council

**Great Bardfield, wall paintings at Great Pitley Farm**

Muriel Carrick

Pitley was the lesser of the two manors of Great Bardfield. Both originally belonged to the FitzGilbert family. Pitley was granted to the Norman abbey of Bec, thereby becoming attached to the priory of Stoke by Clare. At the reformation, it was amongst the properties given by Edward VI in 1551 to Sir John Cheke. He only enjoyed possession of it briefly, the manor subsequently having a rapid succession of owners (Morant 1768, II, 520). The farmhouse is a long-wall jettied house with a cross-wing datable to the 16th century, but its external appearance has been much altered.

Removal of lath and plaster revealed polychrome paintings around the walls of the first-floor bedroom in the former cross-wing at the south-west end of the house, covering both the studs and the wattle and daub infill between them. They have a frieze approximately 11 1/2 inches (290mm) in depth above the main motif,

and a skirting decoration. On the north-east wall chimney breast, there are two fragments of a bordered text. There is also evidence of painted decoration on the bridging joists, but as the ceiling has been removed, it is not now possible to know if it was also painted.

The frieze depicts a repeated pattern of luxuriant foliage, fruits and flowers, scrolling outwards from a large central red flower which has a white centre (Plate 1). In places, the painting can be seen to extend upwards onto the top plate suggesting that the upper border (not now visible) was painted on it. The lower enclosing border of the frieze is divided from it by a thick white line, beneath which is a continuous loose cable motif, then a strong black line dividing it from the main painting.

The main painting depicts a repeated decorative motif of squares with foils at the top, bottom, and sides (Plates 2 and 3). The whole is outlined in black with a blue outer line. Each foil interlaces with the foil of the adjacent motif. This creates a space between motifs in the form of a cross which becomes an independent motif in its own right. Enclosed in all the compartments thus formed are plants, some in flower, others have seed heads, and some both. Because of the condition of the painting, it has not been possible to establish a pattern to the arrangement. At the base of the painting, divided by a black line, is a lower border which appears to relate to the frieze, but again the condition of the painting makes it difficult to see what is going on.

The brickwork on the chimney breast is very confusing. It is a mixture of English bond and bricks placed on edge to present their widest face. They have been crudely lined out and finally plastered over in preparation for the painting of the text which is in English and written in Gothic or Black Letter script (Plates 4 and 5). Too little of it is left to suggest whether it is Biblical or composed of moral sentences. An argument could be made for the existence of further writing on the lower section of the chimney breast. What little remains of a black and white border on the right of the text suggests that it was originally surrounded by a border. It consisted of a continuous floral decoration enclosed by a diaper pattern containing an elongated dash (Plate 5).

To the right of the chimney breast is a vertical floral decoration that does not relate to the main pattern, though it does bear a close relationship to the frieze (Plate 6). The turning of the white line at a right angle at the top of this decoration suggests that it was to be seen as a downwards continuation of the frieze. This, together with the differing decoration to the left of the fireplace and the lower border, suggests that perhaps originally it formed a complete border to the main decoration in the same way that tapestry was bordered, as can be found, for example, in a recently uncovered wall painting at 5 Friars Street, Sudbury, Suffolk (Carrick *et al.* 1998).

The interlacing of shapes was very popular in wall painting decoration in the late 16th and early 17th century. There are examples at 3 Cornmarket street,



Plate 1. Great Pitley Farm, detail of frieze decoration (photo Muriel Carrick).



Plate 2. Great Pitley Farm, detail of main decoration (photo Muriel Carrick).



Plate 3. Great Pitley Farm, detail of main decoration (photo Muriel Carrick).



Plate 5. Great Pitley Farm, detail of remaining text and border (photo Muriel Carrick).



Plate 4. Great Pitley Farm, detail of remaining text on chimney breast (photo Muriel Carrick).

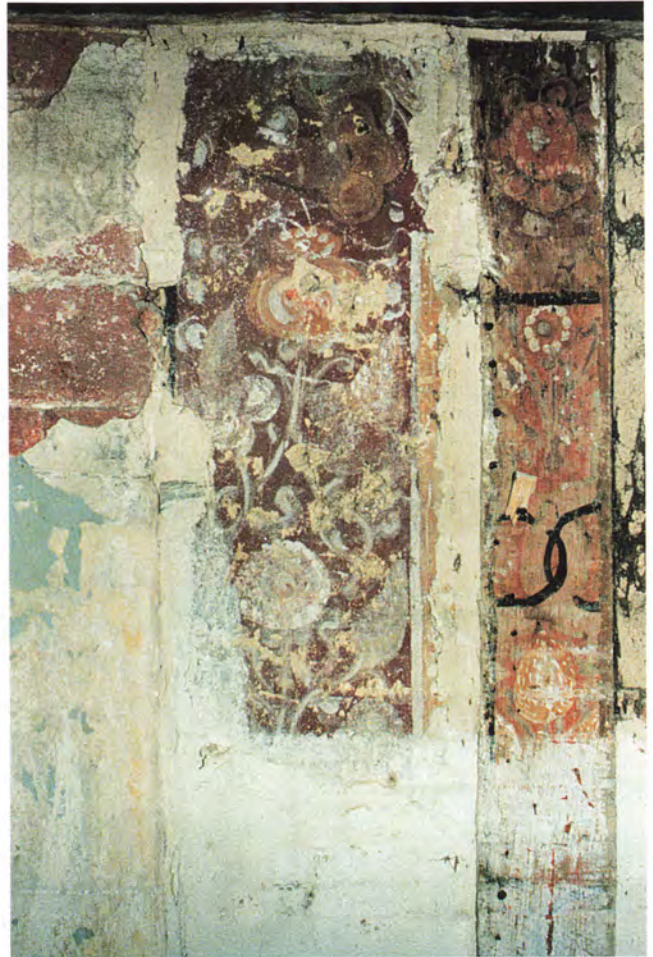


Plate 6. Great Pitley Farm, vertical decoration on right hand side of chimney breast (photo Muriel Carrick).

Oxford, dated to between 1560 and 1581 (Johnston 1932; Leeds 1936), and Great Pednor Manor, Bucks., dated to a similar period (Rouse 1948; Plate 7). Both these examples enclose sprays of flowers painted in a comparable way, and both have skirtings or lower

borders. Another example is in a room above the council chamber at Ledbury Council's offices, Herefordshire (Plate 8). Perhaps a closer parallel for the flowers are those in feigned niches at the Old Rectory, Great Yeldham (Plate 9). The latter in turn can be linked

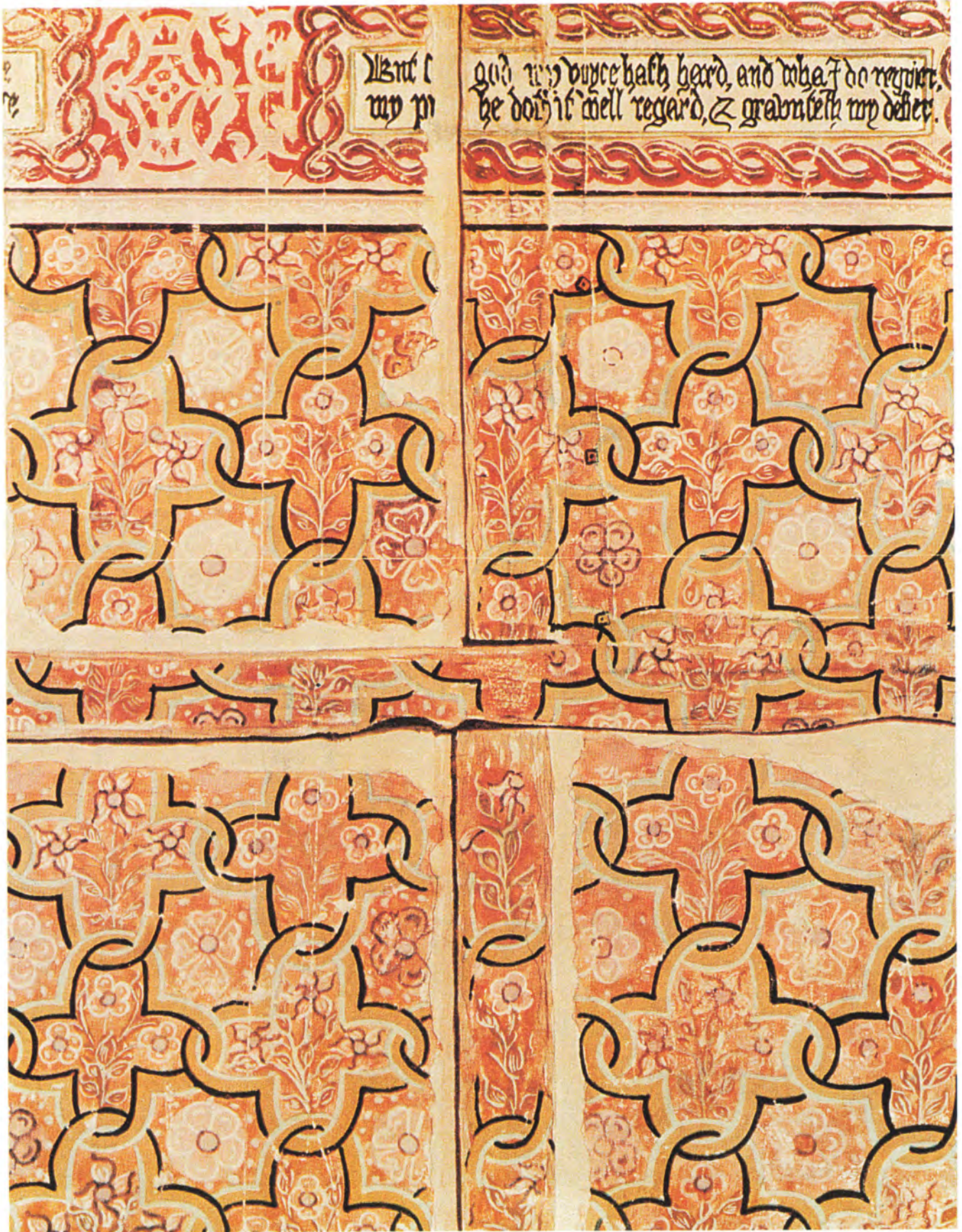


Plate 7. Wall painting at Great Pednor Manor, Buckinghamshire (courtesy of *Records of Bucks.*)



Plate 8. Wall painting at the offices of Ledbury Council, Herefordshire (courtesy of Perry Lithgow)

to paintings on a door removed from Coopersale House, Coopersale, Essex, now in store at the Victoria and Albert Museum (W226-1923; Carrick 1998). An example of the enclosing of plants and flowers, but set in a geometric framework, can be seen a short distance from Great Pitley at Byeballs Farm House, Great

Sampford.

Flowers were the most popular subject for depiction during the period under discussion, not only in wall painting but also in embroidery and other forms of decoration, as is demonstrated in Thomas Trevelyon's commonplace books of 1608 and 1616.<sup>1</sup> They were given different levels of meaning: they could be seen as a tribute to the Crown, as symbols of love and sensuality, or they could be reminders of mortality, all of which is demonstrated in poetry of the period. Because of the stylised painting of the flowers, and the condition of the paintings at Great Pitley Farm, it is not possible to identify the species of the flowers with any certainty, or to suggest meanings. The paintings date to the latter part of the 16th or the early 17th century, and although it has been possible to cite comparisons, no exact match for them is known.

**Notes**

1. Only two copies are known to exist, the 1608 Folger Shakespeare Library MS, and the Boies Penrose 1616 MS.

**Bibliography**

- Carrick, M. 1998 'Wall paintings at Great Yeldham, Essex', *Historic Buildings in Essex* 10, 14-19
- Carrick, M. and Ryder, C. 1998 'The wall paintings at 5 Friars Street, Sudbury', *Historic Buildings of Suffolk* 1, 7-24
- Johnston, P.M. 1932 'Mural paintings in houses: with special references to recent discoveries', *Journal of the British Archaeological Association* 37, 75-100
- Leeds, E.T. 1936 'A second Elizabethan mural painting in no. 3 Cornmarket Street, Oxford', *Oxoniensia* 1, 144-50
- Morant, P. 1768 *The history and antiquities of Essex*, London
- Rouse, E.C. 1948 'Domestic wall paintings at Chalfont St. Peter, and elsewhere', *Records of Buckinghamshire* 15, 81-97



Plate 9 Detail of wall painting at The Old Rectory, Great Yeldham, Essex (photo Pete Rogers, Essex C.C.)

## Hockley, The Bull public house

D. D. Andrews

A major refurbishment programme in 1999 uncovered the remains of the timber frame, which was best preserved in the rear wall, of the building which forms the nucleus of the pub (Fig. 4). The following features were evident:

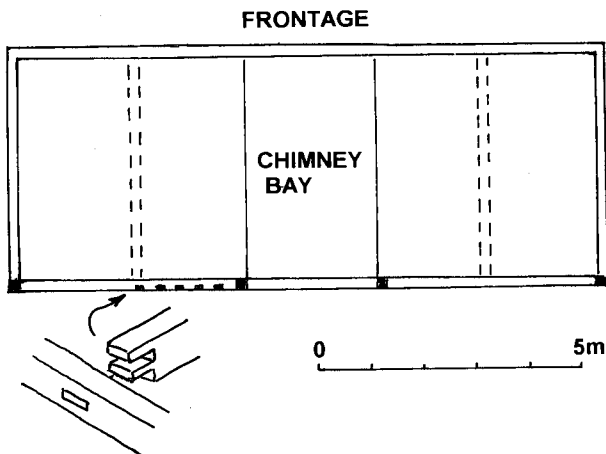


Fig. 4 Hockley, The Bull. Ground plan, with detail of joint in rear wall.

1. the frame is primary braced, the braces passing through the studs.
2. the frame is well made. The timber is all new oak, the joints marked with chisel-cut carpenters' marks. The studs are all tenoned into the main timbers; some of them are pegged.
3. the storey posts divide the back wall into three bays, measuring approximately 4.0m, 2.5m, and 4.0m. The narrow middle bay indicates that this was a lobby-entry house, the middle bay containing the entrance and the stair, with a chimney stack between them. The large rooms either side of the narrow bay would have been a main kitchen/living room and a parlour. The binding joists running across these rooms survive. That in the kitchen/living room is connected by an unusual joint, comprising a barefaced tenon and a central tenon, to the mid rail.

The original clasped purlin roof also survives, although much repaired. This roof, the primary bracing, the carpenters' marks, and the lobby-entry plan, all indicate a 17th- or perhaps early 18th-century date.

## Nazeing, Netherkidders

John Walker

### Introduction

Netherkidders is a small three-bay rectangular timber-framed farmhouse built as a hall house in the later 15th century or 16th century, with a wing added behind on the north-east in the late 17th/early 18th century (Fig. 5). The original framing is unusual for Essex. The

house stands on an isolated rural site at the south end of Nazeing parish, its west side parallel with the road (NGR TL 394 048). It is now owned separately from the farm buildings which stand to the south-east. The building is important because of its unusual Kentish-style framing.

### Form and size

It is suggested the middle bay was open to a crown-post roof with an open hearth, with the two end bays floored. On the east side, the entrance was at the north end of the central bay. It is not known if there was a similar doorway on the west side. The house is 38ft (11.58m) long, 16ft (4.87m) wide and 14ft (4.26) high to the top of the wall plates, of three bays, and rectangular under a single roof. The middle bay is just over 13ft (3.96m) long, the north bay just over 11ft (3.35m) between principal posts, and the south bay slightly shorter, 10ft (3.04m).

The two end bays were floored, and the ground floor rooms appear to have been the most important. This is because, first, the ceiling was 8 ft (2.43m) above the ground floor with the first-floor rooms partly into the roof, the tops of the wall plates being only 4ft 8in (1.42m) above the floor. There is no evidence that the ground floor has been lowered in relation to the ground level outside the farmhouse. Second the framing has very close studding on the ground floor with wider Kentish-style framing on the first floor. However, against this the ground-floor windows in the end bays are very small, while those on the first floor are deeper and wider (Fig. 5).

### Centre bay

Interpretation of the middle bay is difficult. It is suggested it was open to the roof because the empty mortise for a stud in the southern tie-beam (B) appears to be smoke blackened on the central bay side - none of the other mortises are visible - and the first-floor partition under this tie-beam appears not to have had any door in it originally. Its studs are at 2ft 6in (760mm) centres, apart from two at 2ft 10in (860mm) centres, but this is not wide enough for a door. On the other side of the bay, tie-beam (C) is not *in situ*, but may be reused 10in (250mm) to the north of its original position. If so, in the 5ft (1.52m) length of it which is visible, there is a peg consistent with a stud wall at 2ft 6in centres. The finished face of both partitions is to the centre bay, suggesting this is the most important room. No evidence survives at either end of the centre bay to show if there were partitions on the ground floor. Of the side walls, the only framing visible is of the ground floor of the rear wall. As shown in the elevation drawing, there was probably a door at the north end of the centre bay, and the stud spacing is not inconsistent with a large window or windows to the south of the door. Unfortunately, not all the studs are pegged at the first floor, so the lack of pegs in the mid-rail of the centre bay does not mean there were not any studs in the gaps originally.



*Timber framing*

The framing of the first-floor walls is Kentish in style, consisting of wide spaced studs with primary tension braces 4in (100mm) wide, the same width as the studs, with the studs nailed to them (Fig. 5). Also, not all the studs or window sills are pegged. On the ground floor, there is very close studding, at 12-13in (300-330mm) centres. All the studs are 6-7in (150-180mm) by 4in (100mm). This type of framing has not been previously recorded in Essex.

Of the original framing, much of the east wall survives as shown in Fig. 5, plus most of the ground floor studs in the external walls of the southern bay. All the six principal posts survive, together with the mid-rail and wall plate in the front (west) wall, the mid-rail and central storey posts in the end walls, plus the tension braces on the first floor of the north end wall. Only one tie-beam survives (B). None of the binding joists survive in the partitions at the ends of the centre bay. Both end bays had bridging joists running north-south

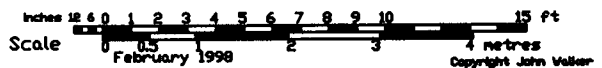
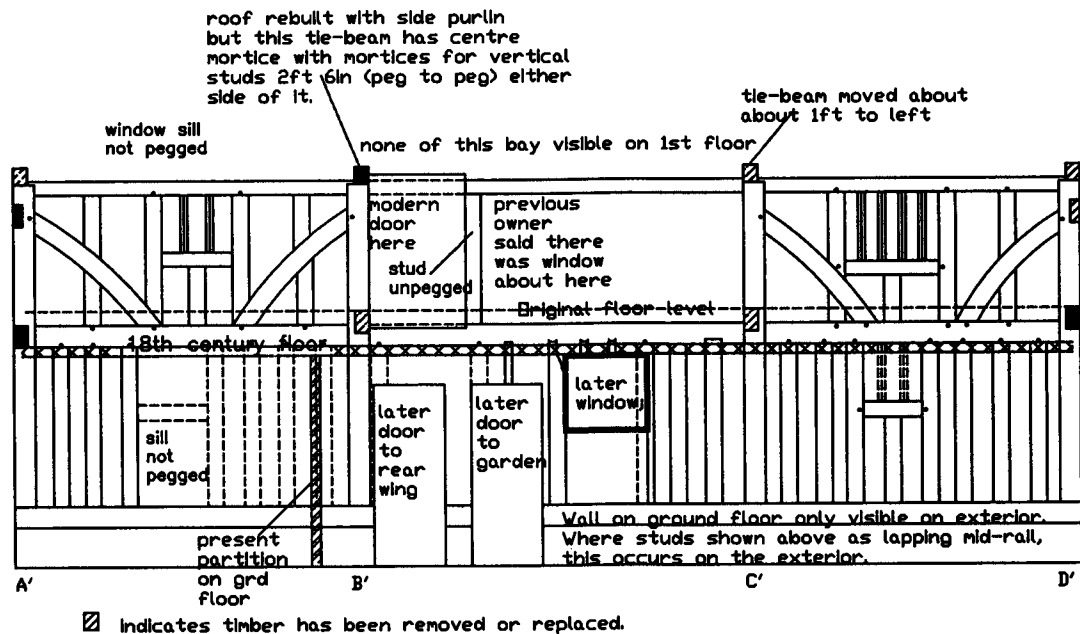
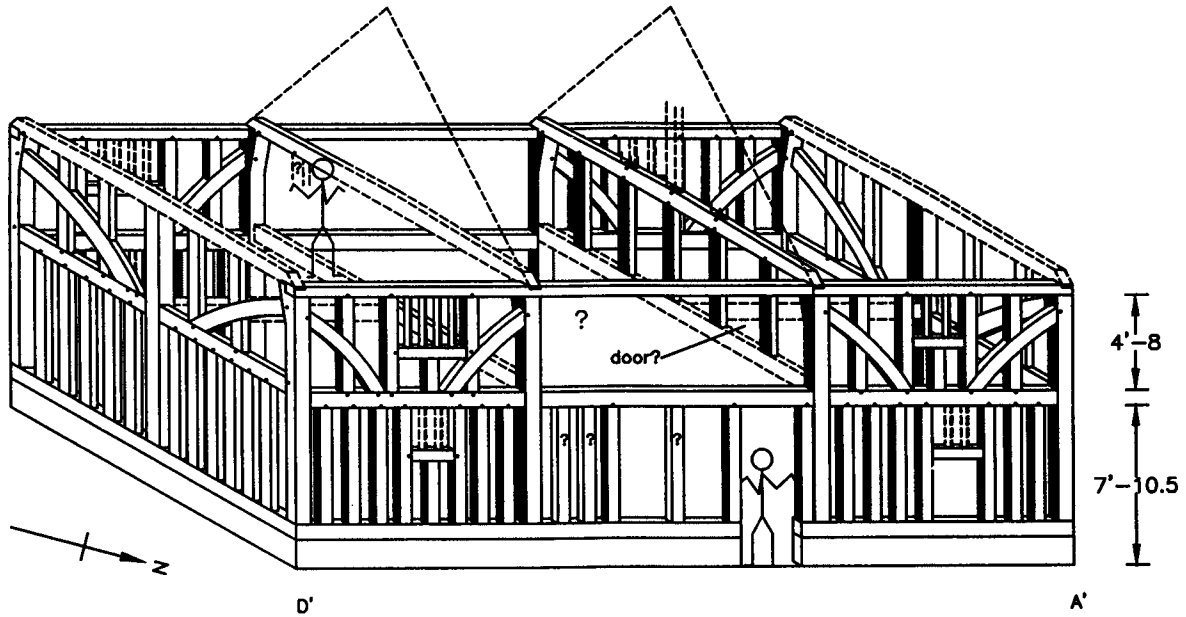


Fig. 5 Nazeing, Netherkidders, a reconstruction of the timber frame with an elevation of the rear or east wall.

down the centre of the bays, the mortises for which are visible in the centre posts of the end walls. One slightly unusual feature is that the mid-rail in the north end wall is set level with the mid-rail of the side walls, unlike the more usual form which is used in the south end wall where it is higher and level with the original floor.

In the central bay on the ground floor, the south wall today is 1ft (300mm) south of the original partition on the first floor (B). It may have been moved there as part of later alterations, but it raises the possibility that the original wall was also undershot.

#### *Roof*

The building has been completely re-roofed. The one surviving tie-beam has mortises for a central post flanked either side by a square cut mortice, the centres of which are 2ft from the centre post. It is suggested the centre mortise is for a crown-post, with the flanking mortises either for studs or for tension braces from the crown-post. These flanking mortises are too close to the centre to be queen struts for a side-purlin roof.

#### *Later developments*

In the late 17th or early 18th century, the house was made into a central entrance house, the front door being placed central in the west side wall and entering directly into the middle of the central bay. A chimney stack was built on the wall (C) on the north side of the central bay, heating the central and south-east bay on the ground floor only, and stairs were placed behind the stack. All three bays were re-floored, and the floor lowered by 1ft (300mm) to give more first floor height. This gave the house a plan form very similar to Nazeingbury, a house

altered to this form in the late 17th century. At the same time, or later, a two-storey one bay timber-framed wing was added behind the north-west bay, making the house L-shaped. This wing was extended further at a later date.

### **Stambourne, Moone Hall. A distinct type of long-wall jetty house**

D. Andrews and B.J. Crouch

#### *Background*

Moone Hall is a long-wall jetty house which stands opposite Stambourne church. For a long time a public house, The Red Lion (Plate 10), it was converted back to a dwelling in the 1990s. Refurbishment in 1999 provided the opportunity for a detailed examination of its fabric.

Moone Hall was one of the three manors of Stambourne. The county historian Morant says that by 1398 the manor belonged to the Mackwilliams, and certainly by 1479 they were in possession of all three Stambourne manors (Morant 1768, II, 355). By Morant's time, Moone Hall's lands had been sold and it was an ale house.

#### *Tree-ring dating*

In July 1999, cores were taken by Ian Tyers of Sheffield University. Three of these were dated, two being from the storey posts in the cross-wing and one from the end of the binding joist in the jetty at the rear of the house. The heart/sapwood boundary of these timbers gave a



Plate 10 Stambourne, Moone Hall (formerly The Red Lion)

date of 1478, from which it is possible to estimate a felling date of 1488-1515.

*The timber frame*

The house is of four bays, the most southerly being in the form of a gabled cross-wing of three bays' depth (Figs 6 and 7). The jetty to the street frontage is continuous, with the stack bay and the two hall bays being jettied on both sides. To the north, there was a service end, probably also a cross-wing in form; now demolished and replaced by a modern extension, its existence is attested by two service doors in the flank of the original frame. The bay adjacent to the southern cross-wing is narrower than the others (2m as opposed to 3.75-4.00m) and contains a chimney stack, located at what was effectively the high end of the hall.

The studs are 6 1/2 -7 inches (165-180mm) wide, 4 inches (100mm) deep, and located at 13 1/2 -14 1/2 inch (340-370mm) centres. The floor joists are of similar dimensions, wider than they are deep, with deep hollow chamfers at their edges. The main binding joists, which are 13-14 inches (330-335) square, have swept run-out stops. The joists have central tenons with housed soffit shoulders. The posts are generally, but not always, jowled. There are surprisingly few braces in the frame; they only occur, or survive, at the first floor of the north wall where there are tension braces which are jointed into the bottom of the studs rather than the rail, in the fashion of what is sometimes called Suffolk or Colchester bracing. The bressumer has a leaf scroll

pattern, now very eroded. The storey posts of the facade are carved with shafts with embattled capitals. The daub infill between the studs is applied to vertical rods with riven oak staves. A surviving deep oak cill beneath a sash window on the facade is evidence for the former existence of oriel windows.

The cross-passage doors are adjacent to the missing cross-wing. There is no trace of a screen to partition off the passage, which must have been about 4 feet 2 inches (1.27m) wide. A pair of doors with four-centred heads either side of a central post gave access to the service end. A gap in the studwork at the west end of the north wall may have communicated with a stair trap in the service end.

The narrow spaces either side of the stack served on the north for communication through a door to the two-bay parlour of the cross-wing, whilst on the south evidence was found for the former existence of a spiral stair to the first floor of the hall. This stair explains why in this space at both ground and first floors there were windows. Of these, only the first-floor one survives; it is two-light with a hexagonal mullion. This tight stair was later superseded by a stair tower built in the angle between the back of the hall and the cross-wing.

The cross-wing comprised a two-bay parlour with a further room to the back, in which there was a stair, indicated by a trimmer in the floor framing. This rear room had plain flat-sectioned joists and, as far as it is possible to tell, could be entered only by an external door. The binding joist in the parlour has a bowtell and

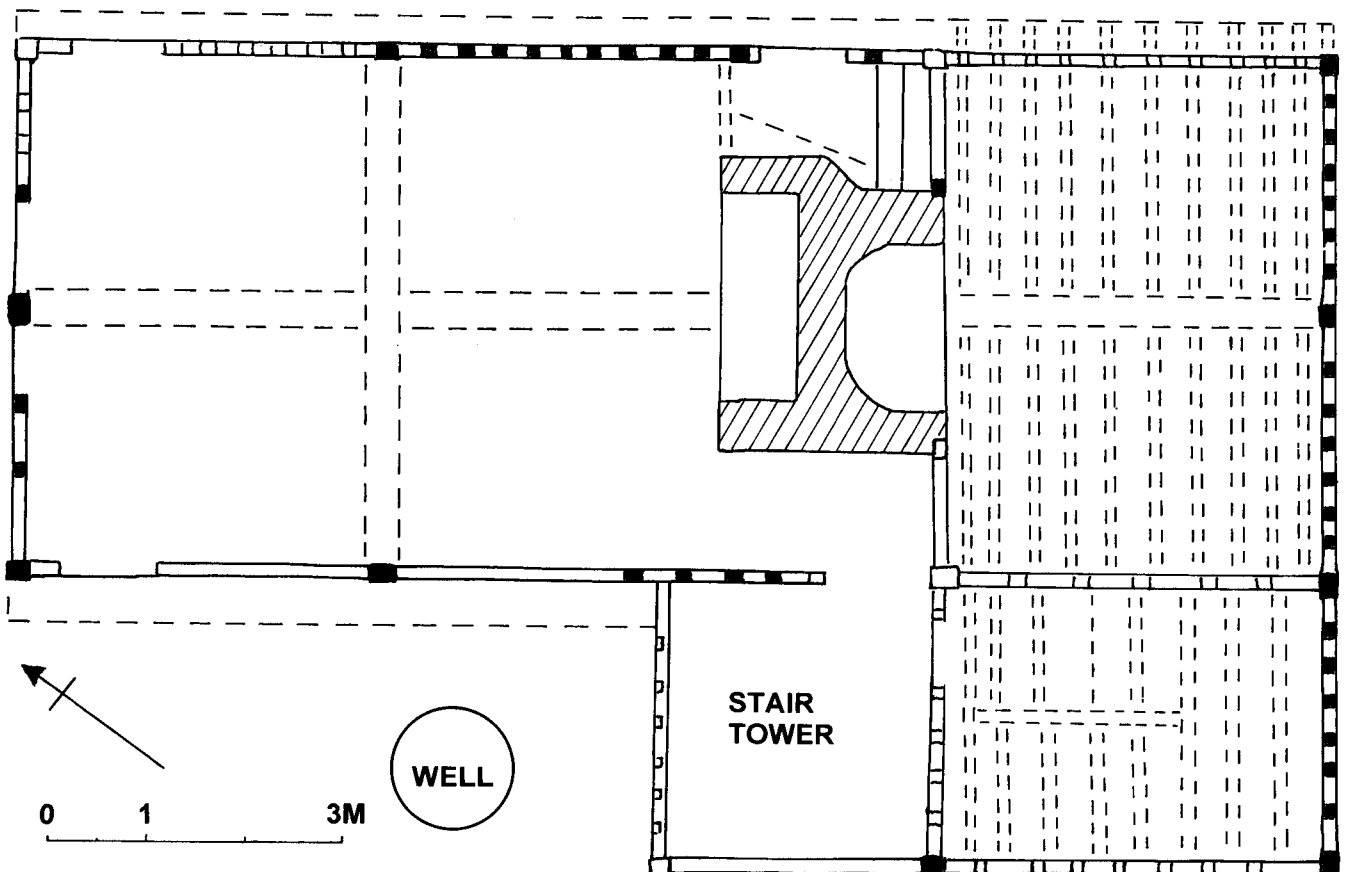


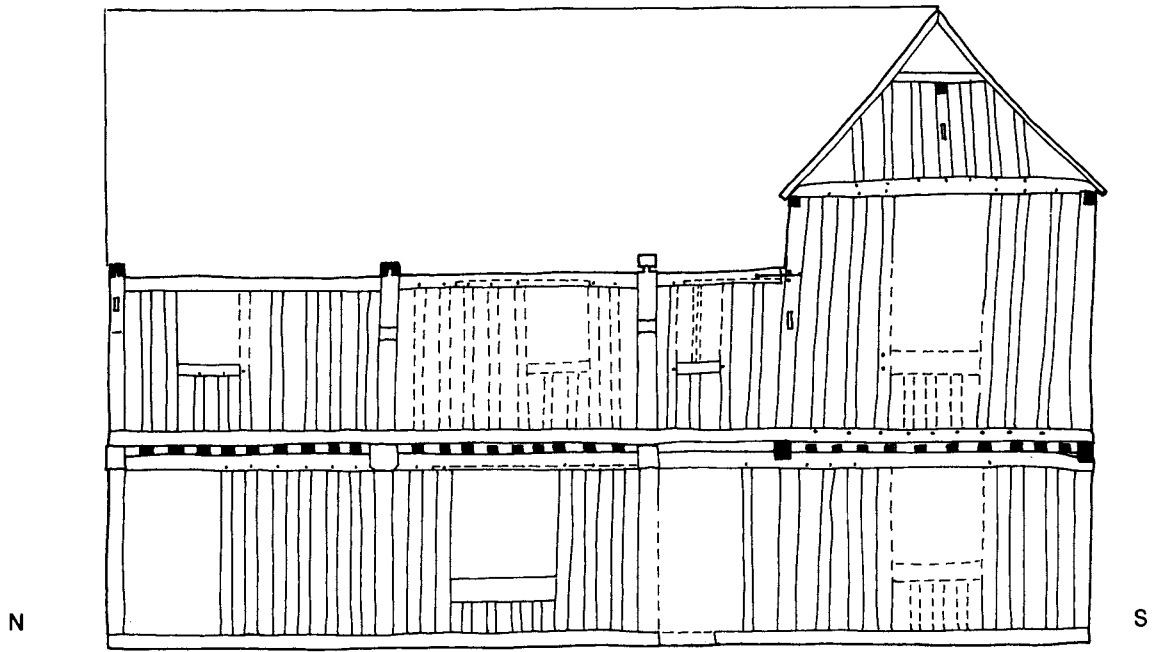
Fig. 6 Stambourne, Moone Hall, ground plan

hollow chamfer moulding. The bressumer over the hearth, both in the parlour and the hall, has a crenellated top and a deep chamfer embellished with rosettes.

A notable feature of the cross-wing is the extraordinary height (about 3.25m) of the first floor chamber, probably the result of making the ridges of the roofs of the cross-wing and the hall equal in height. Curiously, despite its height, this chamber has no braces

between the storey posts and the central tie-beam. It had two diamond-mullioned windows in its flank wall.

The cross-wing has a crown-post roof, with thin braces to the collar purlin occurring only on one side of the crown posts. The hall had a crown-post roof originally, as empty mortices in the tie-beams show, but this was replaced in the 17th century by a clasped purlin roof (with pegged purlins) to provide an attic storey.

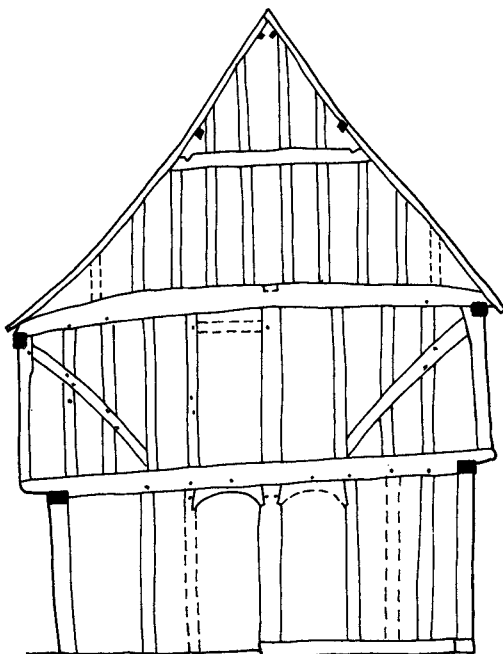


Hall and Cross-wing Interior

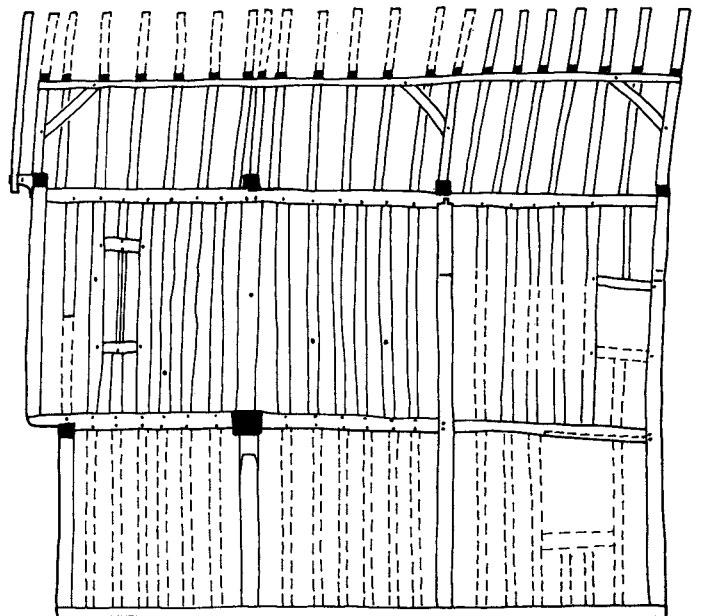
Moone Hall, Stambourne. Frame reconstruction from larger survey.



BJC 1999



Hall North Wall Interior



Cross-wing South Wall Interior

Fig. 7 Stambourne, Moone Hall, reconstructed elevations of the timber frame

The chimney-stack is built of relatively large Tudor bricks (9 1/4 x 4-4 1/4 x 2 1/2 inches; 235 x 100-110 x 64mm). There are traces of ruddling on the brickwork at the first floor. The twin octagonal stacks have been rebuilt in the 20th century; there is no evidence as to their original shape.

#### *The well*

Reconstruction of the rear extension in 1999 uncovered a well which was excavated to a depth of about 40 feet. It is just over 4 feet (1.2m) wide, and built of stretcher bricks measuring 230 x 55-60mm. The bricks are quite well made and have diagonal pressure marks. These features and their appearance indicate a 17th-century date. The bricks are distinct from the larger and less regularly shaped Tudors used in the chimney stack which is original to the construction of the house. The well (or at least its existing lining) may be about 100 years or more younger than the house.

In the 19th century, the well was capped off with a brick dome, a standard procedure at the time and usually associated with connection of a pump to it. A series of patches in modern brickwork on the south side of the well may be associated with the attachment of a pump. A lead pipe was found inserted in the south side about two-thirds of the way down, turning and running vertically into the bottom of the well. This too is presumably something to do with a former pump. In the 20th century, when the rear extension was built (or enlarged), the dome was removed and the well filled with concrete rubble and modern rubbish.

#### *Discussion*

Moone Hall is a well preserved example of a long-wall jetty house which combines the feature of the continuous jetty with a gabled cross-wing. It is very similar in plan, appearance, status and date to Cann Hall, Clacton. Both are sub-manors. Cann Hall is slightly larger and has more elaborately moulded joists. Cann Hall has been tree-ring dated to 1511, Moone Hall to 1488-1515. Both have the chimney stack at the high end, something unusual in Essex though more common in Suffolk. This arrangement allowed for easy modification to a lobby-entry house at Moone Hall by the removal of the stairs adjacent to the stack when the stair tower was constructed at the rear of the house. Another Essex building of this type is Roundhill House, Lamarsh.

#### *Acknowledgements*

We should like to thank Brenda Watkin for drawing this house to our attention and commenting on the report; to the owner Vicky Clay for her co-operation and indulgence during the survey; and Ian Tyers for sampling a structure which, like so many Essex buildings, did not seem promising.

#### *Bibliography*

Morant, P. 1768 *The history and antiquities of Essex*, London (2 vols)

### **Willingale, Dukes Farmhouse. An important 16th-century transitional house**

John Walker

Dukes Farmhouse is an interesting transitional 16th-century rural timber-framed farm house (NGR TL 594 080; Fig. 8 and Plate 11). It originally had a 1 1/4 storey hall between two jettied cross-wings built in the second quarter of 16th century. The hall was replaced very quickly around the mid 16th century, and, no later than 1575, by the present two-storey hall with a crown-post roof, heated on the ground floor only by a rear wall brick chimney stack. A stair tower was built at the same time beside the stack. All parts of the house have close studding with stud-to-stud bracing, including the later hall.

#### *Plan*

The house faces south and the original building had a medieval plan of two service rooms in the west cross-wing, hall and parlour, but with variations. The hall was 20ft 9in wide by 22ft 6in long (6.32 x 6.86m). It had three doors at the high eastern end (Fig. 8). Two led into the parlour, one either side of the bench along the high end. The parlour appears to have been a single, probably unheated, room. The third in the north corner was for the stairs to the parlour chamber. There may have been a lean-to along the back of the parlour as there were no windows in the back wall on either the ground or first floor. If so it must have been entered from outside. At the low end, the first floor seems to have formed a separate apartment as it was divided into two rooms with the stairs, which rose along the back wall, enclosed by a fully framed partition (Fig. 8). Alternatively this upper floor was intended for storage as there was an open gablet for a projecting hood over the rear hip. This was presumably to improve air circulation - it was not for the removal of smoke as there is no smoke blackening - and thus help preserve any food stored there.

#### *Date of first build*

Both cross-wings were built after 1512 as the floor joists have soffit tenons with diminished haunch (Hewett 1980, 281-2) while the later hall is before 1550, or at the latest 1575, as it has a crown-post roof and uses the medieval edged-halved and bridled scarf joint (Hewett 1980, 267). The original hall may have been contemporary with or earlier than the two cross-wings - it is not possible to see if it had been integral with the cross-wings. Whatever, by the time the wings were built, the hall was likely to have been heated by a fireplace, not an open hearth. Few open hearths were built after the first quarter of the 16th century. Also there is no smoke blackening on the two walls of the wings facing into the hall.

#### *The new hall*

The new hall was slightly narrower (18ft 6in, 5.6m)

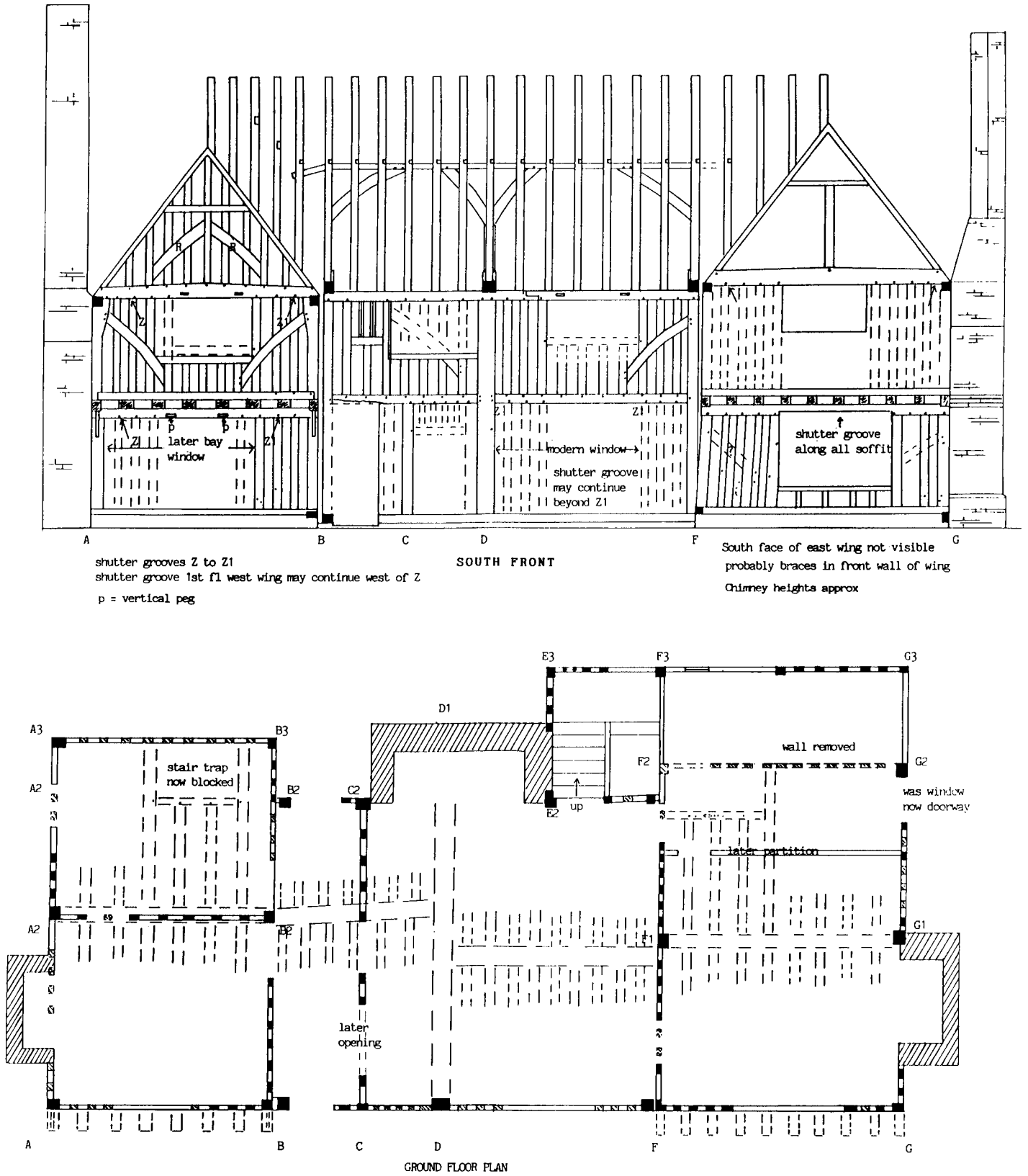


Fig. 8 Willingale, Dukes Farmhouse, plan and elevation of the south front



Plate 11 Willingale, Dukes farmhouse, from the south.

than its predecessor, its corner post blocking the stairs to the parlour chamber (Fig. 8). It was heated only on the ground floor with a single chamber above. The latter was lit by an oriel window in the high end bay but by diamond mullion windows in the west bay, suggesting this chamber was not a principal living room. The hall on the ground floor probably also had an oriel window in the high end bay (the frame is not fully visible at this point) and another smaller window with moulded mullions in the west bay. It also had a plank and muntin "spere" screen dividing the hall from the cross-passage (the planks have not survived) (Fig. 8). At this time, or possibly some time after, a chimney with shafts set diamond-wise was added to heat the parlour on both the ground and first floor, at which time the parlour chamber must have become an important living room (Fig. 8).

The stairs in the tower to the rear rose directly to the hall chamber, and a doorway was cut through into the parlour chamber. At some stage doorways were also cut into the two rooms over the services, the northern one of which survives today, the other now blocked. However it is not possible to say if this was done when the hall was raised or later. It was fairly common to retain part of the first floor partitioned off from the rest with its own separate stairs.

#### *Hall fireplace*

One very interesting feature is the hall fireplace. The mid-rail in the north wall expands from 6in wide by 10in deep (150 x 250mm) to 1ft 2in wide by 1ft 11/2in deep (360 x 340mm) across the brick chimney stack (Fig. 8). This rail projects 8in (200mm) out into the hall

and is supported at each end by jowled posts (Fig. 8). Immediately below this massive rail there is a timber mantel beam over the present fireplace. It raises the question of whether this mid-rail was originally the mantel beam for the fireplace, the original opening being more like a firehood than a fireplace. It is unlikely to have been to support a brick wall above the fireplace as the beam extends into the hall and thus carries very little of the brick wall. There are a small number of other 16th-century buildings where the floor joists over the fireplace appear to have been part of an earlier chimney, suggesting initially there was some form of hood later replaced by a conventional fireplace. More examples and evidence are needed before this proposition can be confirmed and properly developed.

#### *Timber framing*

The timber framing in both the cross-wings and the later hall are almost identical. All have crown-post roofs, though slightly different; external stud to stud tension bracing halved across the outside of the studs; and, with the exception of two walls of the service cross-wing, all have close studding at 1ft or 1ft 1in centres (300 – 330mm). In the service wing there is identical spacing in the front and side wall, but wider spacing around 1ft 4in (400mm) centres in the rear wall and the wall facing into the hall. Both cross-wings had doorways with flat heads but the rear cross-passage door in the hall has a segmental head. There were oriel windows along the south front on both the ground and first floor of both the service wing and the hall, and probably on the parlour wing - it is not possible to be certain as the front has been rebuilt. All other windows

in the service wing were diamond mullions. It was not possible to see the form in the parlour wing. One unusual feature of the oriel windows of the service wing is that they are off centre, to the east on the first floor and to the west on the ground (Fig. 8).

A small area of wall painting survives on the soffit of the central tie-beam in the east wing, consisting of a line of circles or apple shapes joined by the apple stems with two small circles between each apple.

### *Conclusions*

The importance of this building is that it shows the steady development of the post-medieval house, rather than its sudden appearance. As originally built it has almost, but not quite, a standard medieval plan with a low hall. In appearance externally it was a medieval house but probably with a chimney stack rising from the hall. This low hall was quickly replaced by a full two storey building, but the upper floor was unheated and thus still not very important. Nor at this stage did the builder feel the need for an attic, possibly because the additional storage space was provided by the hall chamber. The stairs became more prominent, now in a separate stair tower beside the chimney, but were still plain without any decorative balustrades which come later. Another interesting feature is that the hall fireplace may have been like a fire-hood with the mid-rail acting as the mantle beam. Similar features have been noted in other buildings and may indicate that the development of the fireplace was even more protracted than originally thought.

### **Bibliography**

Hewett, C. A. 1980 *English Historic Carpentry*, London and Chichester: Phillimore

## **Willingale, a re-erected barn at Shallow Cross Farm**

John Walker

In the farm yard of Shallow Cross Farm is a barn of reused timber (NGR TL 616 081). The timber could originally have been part of a late 16th-century malting, similar to the Boyes Croft malting at Great Dunmow.

### *Barn*

The barn is 70ft (21.33m) long by over 18ft (5.48m) wide, of 6 bays running south to north, with a midstrey on the east side against bay CD and large doors opposite in the west wall (Fig. 9). It has a crown-post roof, of plain rectangular posts with thin curved braces rising either side to the central collar purlin. All posts are jowled. The two mid-rails and the west wall plate have mortises and shutter grooves for diamond mullion windows which are now blocked by full height studs mortised and tenoned and pegged at top and bottom. These studs could only be mortised in if the building had been taken down and re-erected. Chase mortises in the principal posts indicate the original building had

arch braces halved across the inside of the studs. The few braces now used are all straight tension braces. Halvings in the studs for arch braces show that many studs in the west wall have been re-erected in their original position. The west wall plate is part of the original building, but the east plate was replaced when re-erected.

The present barn was probably erected in the 17th century as the new east wall plate uses the full face halved and bladed scarf joint, and all the new studs are of the same size as the original studs - 5 to 6in (120-150mm) by 3in (75mm) deep - and most important are all mortised and pegged. If the erection were later, then we would expect thinner studs to have been used<sup>1</sup> and fewer of the mortises to be pegged. The west wall plate also uses a face-halved and bladed scarf which appears to be identical to that in the later east plate, but none of these could be fully seen and need to be checked to see if they are an earlier version of this joint.

### *Original building*

This was two storey. All principal posts have mortises for binding joists, and these would have supported a central bridging joist down the middle of each bay. The six bays are of unequal sizes. From the south AB is 9ft (2.74m), the next two both 13ft 10in (4.21m), DE 9ft (2.74), EF just over 9ft and FG 11ft (3.35m). On the ground floor at truss D, there is evidence of a partition, with external doors in the east and west walls against the south side of the posts. There was no partition at truss C, but it is not known if there were any further ground floor partitions as none of the other posts are fully visible on the ground floor. Truss A appears to be closed, though this could be part of the re-erection. Truss G was open, and either the original building was longer or was built against another building. If the only partition was at D, the room to the south would have been 38ft (11.58m) long, and that to the north 31ft (9.45m). On the first floor there was only one partition, at truss F, with an off-centre doorway, dividing it into an 85ft (25.9m) room to the south and an 11ft (3.35m) one to the north.

The size of the windows, around only 2ft 3in (690mm) high, suggests the building was not a meeting hall - such as a guildhall which was sold after the suppression of the religious guilds by Edward VI in 1548. It has more similarities with the 80ft (24.38m) long range of Boyes Croft Malting, Great Dunmow, tree-ring dated to 1557-80 (Essex Historic Buildings Group 1994; Bridge 1999). This has a similar roof, and a series of diamond mullioned and shuttered windows, with the first floor divided into two rooms, one 22ft (6.7m) long of two bays, the other 57ft (17.37m) of 5 bays. The main difference is that all the bays are of equal size at Boyes Croft, unlike Shallow Cross. Also the ground floor was a single room, with a low ceiling less than 6ft (1.8m) high, whereas at Shallow Cross the ceiling height is 8ft (2.4m). In addition, Boyes Croft had an external first floor door in the north wall, but it is possible one existed at Shallow Cross now obscured



by the later re-studding of the side walls. These differences may indicate a different use, but information on 16th-century maltings is scarce and their design is possibly less predictable than it became in later centuries.

1 Unless the original building was much longer leaving many spare studs for use elsewhere.

**Bibliography**

Bridge, M.C. 1999 *Tree-ring analysis of timbers from Boyes Croft Maltings, Great Dunmow, Essex*, Ancient Monuments Laboratory Report 10/99  
 Essex Historic Buildings Group 1994 *The Maltings, Boyes Croft, Great Dunmow*, Issue no. 8

*The Society is extremely grateful to Essex County Council for a generous grant towards the cost of this publication.*

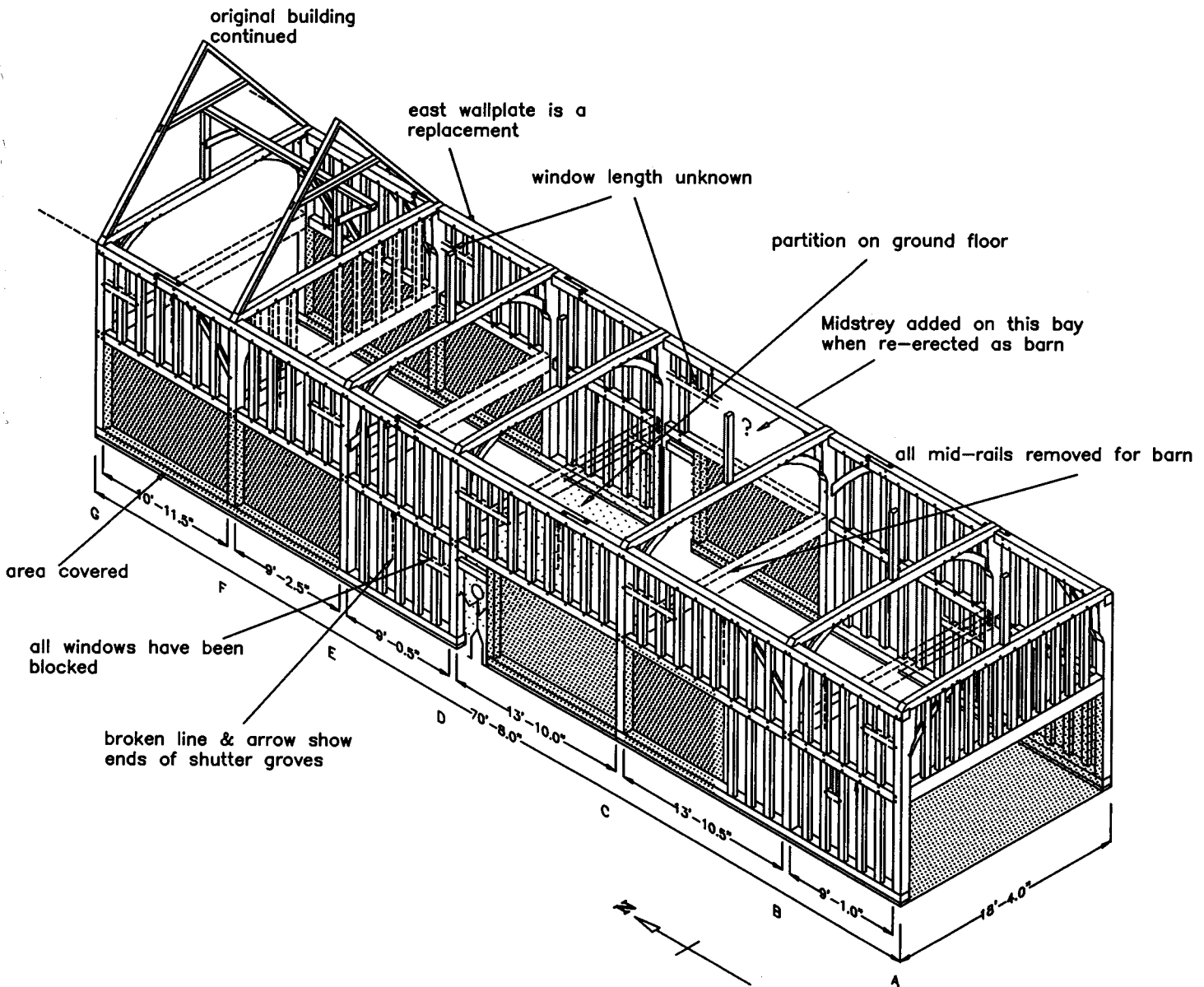


Fig. 9 Willingale, Shallow Cross Farm, reconstruction of the original form of the barn (not to scale)

## Church Miscellany 1999

Edited by D.D. Andrews

The reports brought together here are mostly observations on, or excavations occasioned by, works at churches approved under the Faculty Jurisdiction. More detailed accounts of what is reported here can be found in the Essex Heritage Conservation Record curated at County Hall. We are grateful to the incumbents, parochial church councils, and contractors whose help and co-operation has been essential to the success of this work.

### **Bulphan St. Mary. Excavations on the occasion of the 1997 restoration**

Trevor Ennis

#### *St. Mary's church*

St. Mary's Bulphan (NGR: TQ 637 859) is a typical small rural parish church comprising chancel, nave and timber tower (Fig. 1). The Royal Commission (RCHME 1923, 16-17) regarded the entire church as dating from the 15th century, although extensively

rebuilt in the 19th century. The small size of the nave suggests that it replicates the footprint of an earlier building, and that its walls might incorporate earlier fabric. The plan of the chancel indicates that it has been altered and certainly enlarged. Seventeenth-century work to the church is recorded by brick panels in the south nave wall with the initials 'TM' and 'MWS' and the date 1686.

When Bulphan church was visited by H.W. King in 1859 (ERO T/P 196/3), he commented on the foundation of the building being insecure because 'the walls, in places are considerably thrust out from the perpendicular.' To counter this 'large brick buttresses have been added in modern times to give additional support'. He also mentioned that the north side of the building exhibited 'flint and rag admixed in rubble work,' that the whole of the south side was plastered, and that much of the flint work in the chancel was 'modern reparation.' A visitation of 1685 ordered that repairs should be carried out to the 'first Arch against y<sup>e</sup> South side of y<sup>e</sup> Church,' a description which implies that there

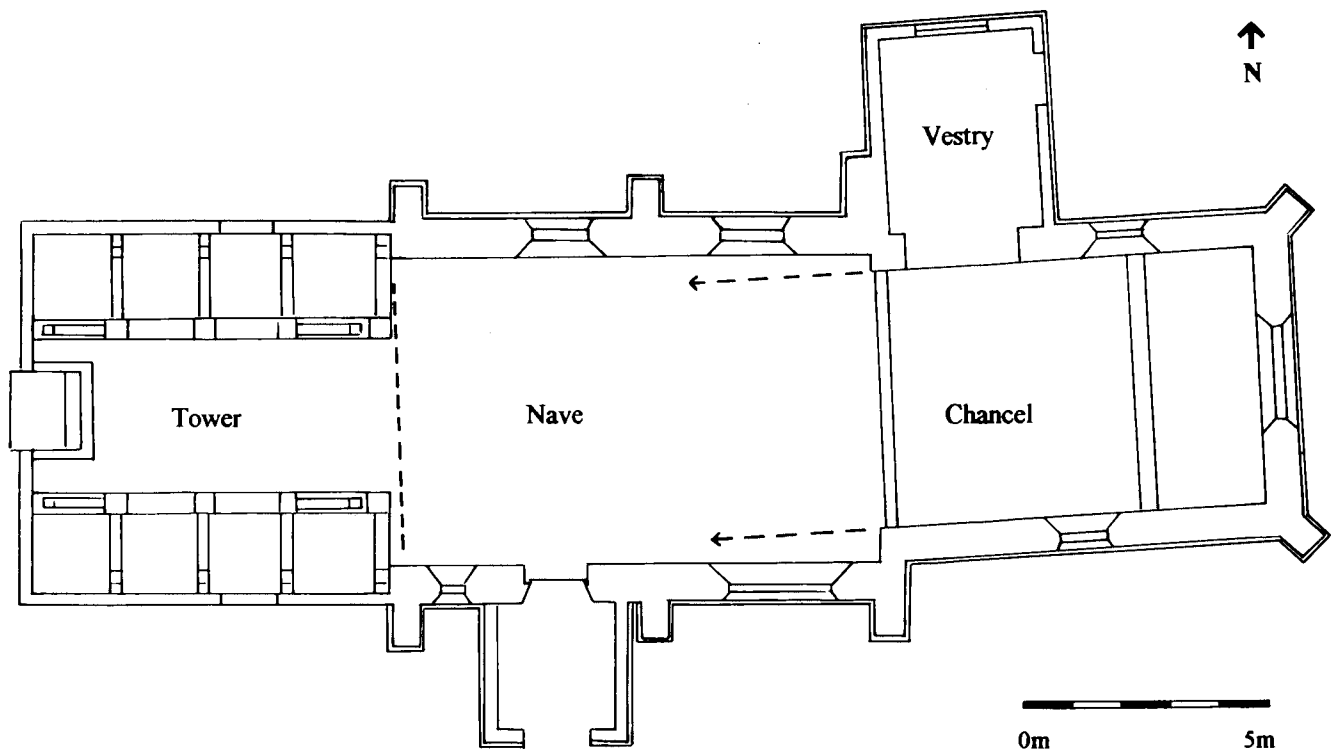


Fig. 1 Bulphan St. Mary, plan of the church. The dashed lines show the apparent shared alignment of the chancel and the medieval foundations of the nave. This suggests that the nave has been rebuilt on an alignment different to that of the chancel.

was a south arcade and aisle (Pressey 1933, 108). If this was the case, then evidence for it would have been concealed by plaster in King's time and then removed by the Victorian rebuilding. The dated bricks in the south nave may well be associated with this work.

The poor condition of the church was addressed in 1874 when an extensive restoration took place due to the 'dilapidated state of the walls of the nave and of the tower' (ERO D/CF 13/3). This work involved the restoration and opening up of the tower (formerly used as the vestry); the removal of the gallery; the taking down and rebuilding of the north and south nave walls; the provision of additional seating in the ground floor of the tower; and the building of a new vestry on the north side of the chancel. The bulk of the chancel was excluded from the 1874 work perhaps because it had already been restored, presumably before 1859 in view of King's observations on it. There can be no doubt that it has been extensively, if not totally, rebuilt, and probably made wider. Observation of the top of the east wall when re-roofing was carried out indicates that its fabric is probably entirely 19th century in date (pers. comm. D. Andrews).

A plan of the church before work commenced in 1874 (ERO D/CF 13/3) shows that the heating furnace was already in place in the centre of the main nave aisle. However, the culvert leading to the new vestry was an 1874 improvement, as possibly was the digging of the two breather pipe trenches which appeared to be later than the original furnace construction.

#### *The 1997 excavations*

Another major restoration was carried out in 1997, made possible by a generous legacy. The work included the relaying of the floor in the nave and the tower, which was preceded by an excavation undertaken by the Essex County Council Field Archaeology Unit. The existing flooring was removed by the builders prior to the archaeological investigation. Hand-excavation of the underlying ground surface then commenced, but this excavation was limited to a depth of 0.35m below the previously existing floor level. The nave was partitioned off into seven areas (Fig. 2, Areas 1-7) by the late 19th-century brick sleeper walls for the timber floors. Once the entire nave surface had been reduced by 0.35m, then a series of five narrow sleeper beam trenches (Fig. 2, Trenches A-E) for the new floor were hand-excavated a further 0.45m below this level.

The depth restriction, and the partitioning of the interior into areas by the sleeper walls, made it difficult to investigate satisfactorily features and trace relationships across the church. The northern side of the nave was lower than the south at the commencement of the excavation and it seemed likely that some truncation had taken place to the deposits on this side.

Only a limited number of finds were recovered from the excavation. These included five sherds of medieval pottery, fragments of 16th to 17th-century floor tiles, pieces of lead and copper associated with 17th-century window glazing activity, and fragments of 19th-century

brick. Finds of relevance are mentioned in the excavation results which are presented below in probable chronological order. The excavation records and finds have been deposited in Thurrock Museum at Grays.

#### *The site*

The church is situated at the north end of the present-day village of Bulphan. The uppermost natural deposit was a firm dark brown clay, probably the top of the London Clay which outcrops locally. Bulphan is situated in a low-lying area with a high water table. The *fenn* element in the place-name means marsh. A trench excavated at the north-west corner of the nave filled with water, though this did not occur elsewhere.

#### *The medieval church*

The earliest deposit identified in the nave was a grey-brown silty clay flecked with mortar which appeared to represent a disturbed subsoil. The best preserved medieval sequences were found in the south-west corner of the nave. In area 2 the subsoil was overlaid by an orange-yellow mortar up to 140mm thick which was almost certainly the remains of an early floor level. Two stratified sherds of 10th to 13th-century pottery (shell-and-sand-tempered ware) were recovered from a charcoal patch lying upon this deposit. Overlying the subsoil in area 1 (Fig. 3) was a buff white mortar deposit (112) interspersed with a brown clay (108). Above these was a sequence of a mortar surface (111) with clay silt (110) above it followed by another mortar surface (109) with clay silt (103) above that. Silt deposit 110 was cut by an unexcavated, probably late medieval, foundation or repair trench (115) running along the inside of the south nave wall. A whitish mortar deposit was also excavated in area 2 with a patchy sequence of mortar surfaces and clay silts above it. The mortar surfaces appear to be the remnants of former floors with the clay silts probably resulting from activity upon those floors. No impressions were seen suggesting the presence of floor tiles, the material most commonly used for medieval church floors.

At the western end of the nave, a substantial north-south wall foundation (152) was revealed, constructed out of chalk, flint, occasional ferricrete (or indurated conglomerate) and re-used Reigate stone bonded with a buff coloured mortar (Fig. 2). This was probably the west nave wall which existed before the construction of the tower, an event which can be assigned to the 15th century. That it had been removed when the tower was built is suggested by an injunction in the 1685 visitation to make a partition between the nave and the tower (Pressey 1933, 108). To the east of this wall ran a vague linear band of orange sand with rounded pebbles (140) which may represent the back-fill of a construction trench for this wall, or the remains of an earlier phase of the wall on a slightly different alignment.

At the eastern end of the nave, two compact foundations (134 and 135) were found in trench E. They were built of similar materials to wall (152) set in

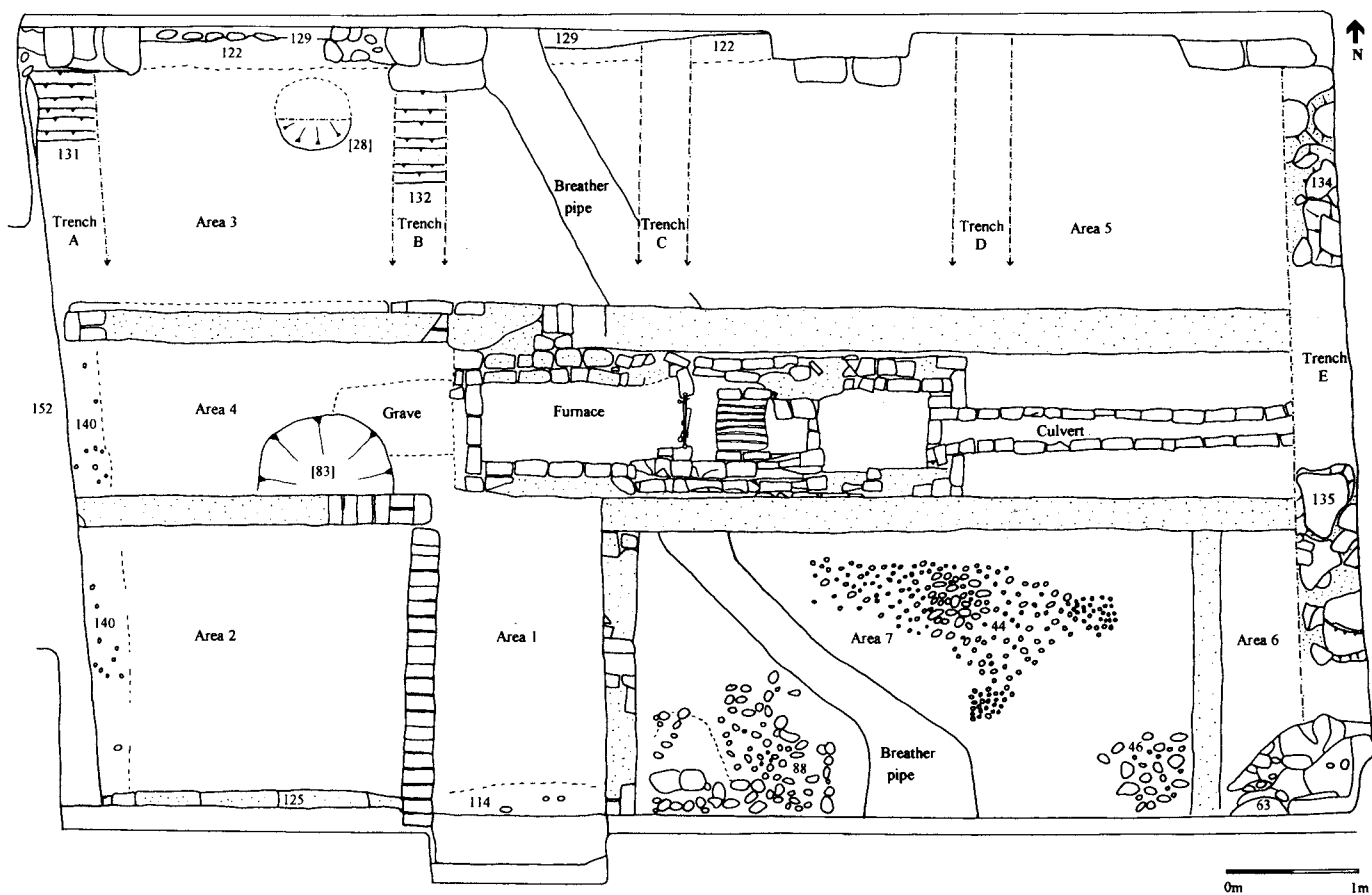


Fig. 2 Bulphan St. Mary, plan of nave showing excavations and principal features discovered.

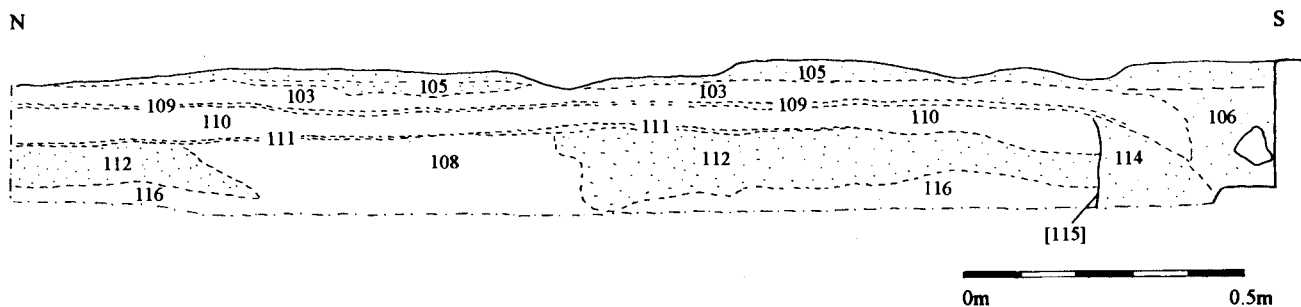


Fig. 3 Bulphan St. Mary, north-south section through floor deposits in area 1

a yellowy buff mortar matrix. These foundations appear to represent an earlier east wall of the nave, the gap between them probably indicating the position of a narrow archway through into the chancel. A 12th to 13th-century date may be suggested for these foundations.

Along the northern nave wall a mortared flint foundation (129), probably also of medieval date, protrudes southwards from beneath the western half of the wall. This mortared foundation was also exposed at the northern end of sleeper wall trench C.

Exposed below the southern nave wall at the south end of trench A was a mortared flint foundation overlying a deposit of orange sand and pebbles. At the end of trench B, a linear east-west cut filled by an orange pebbly sand appeared to represent the fill of a

foundation trench, which continued in plan as fill (114) and was also seen at the southern end of trench C. Further east, at the southern end of trench E, a deposit of rounded pebbles in orange sand was seen to extend below the mortared flint foundation (63). These footings were consistent in character, and seem to represent a medieval phase of the south nave wall. The position of this medieval foundation relative to the current nave walls, taken with the protruding foundation under the northern nave wall, suggests some realignment of the nave walls has taken place and that the nave was originally aligned at the same angle as the existing chancel (Fig. 1).

The construction of the south nave wall appears to differ from that of the east and west in that the footings of the latter are deeper and appear more substantial than

those of the former. If the south wall foundations were made of sand and pebbles packed in a trench, and the west and east wall foundations were mortared, then the technique of the south wall implies an earlier date, being characteristic of the 12th and 13th centuries.

#### *The post-medieval church*

In areas 2, 3 and 4, there was a deposit of grey-brown silty clay up to 0.10m thick which seemed to represent a major make-up layer marking a significant phase of floor renewal. It contained fragments of 16th to 17th-century floor tile. In the north-west of the nave, there were two lead-working pits (83 and 28) overlying this make-up deposit. These were circular hearths measuring 0.87m and 0.45m in diameter. They contained melted lead, window came, short lengths of copper wire, melted glass, and 16th or 17th-century floor tile. They must have been associated with window glazing activity. Repair work is known to have occurred certainly to the south nave wall in the 17th century and it seems possible that these deposits date from about that time.

The linear cut running along the north nave wall and back-filled with (122) appeared to be a foundation cut associated with the probable medieval mortared flint foundation (129). However, the evidence from sleeper beam trenches C and D suggests that this may be a later repair cut as the base of the cut does not extend down to the base of the flint foundation.

In the south-east of the nave, the spread of cobbles and rubble (44, 46 and 88) could relate to disturbed flint foundations of the nave, perhaps associated with 17th-century repair work to the nearby stretch of south nave wall, though no firm dating evidence corroborates this. Other undated deposits may also date to the medieval or post-medieval periods, particularly those in the south of the nave in areas 2 and 7.

#### *19th-century alterations*

Many alterations and repairs to the main structure were made in the 19th century. Along the north wall were four roughly equally spaced protruding stone and brick foundations. These appeared to be the bases of internal brick buttresses to support the faltering north nave wall as mentioned by King in his 1859 description.

Running along the eastern edge of the nave was a narrow linear cut feature believed to be associated with 19th-century brickwork below the chancel screen. A number of other small cuts also appeared to be related to 19th-century repair work.

No clear evidence was found for any sort of support for the gallery mentioned in the 1874 schedule of works. It is possible that the stepped foundations (131 and 132) interpreted as brick buttress bases, at the north of trenches A and B, could really be supports for the gallery.

In the 1874 restoration, both the north and south nave walls were totally rebuilt from the top of the medieval foundations. A ledge (125), made out of re-used window surrounds, running along the south-west

side of the nave must also date to this time. Two late post-holes in this area are probably evidence of temporary scaffolding. The 1874 work also included the construction of the brick lined heating culvert and the insertion of the two breather pipe trenches for the heating furnace.

#### *The watching brief*

A watching brief was undertaken in the late spring of 1999 on foundation trenches excavated for a new parish room to the immediate west of the church. Underlying the topsoil were a number of dumped soil deposits, the earliest containing fragments of 19th-century brick, that may have accumulated during the 1874 restoration work to the church. Beneath these deposits were two inter-cutting east/west aligned graves located in the north/south foundation trench nearest to the church. Neither burial showed any evidence for a coffin. No other features were recorded.

#### *Conclusions*

Mortared flint foundations, probably medieval in date, protrude from and underlie both the north and south nave walls. Under the south nave wall the mortared flint foundation was seen to overlie a foundation trench filled with orange sand and pebbles, a technique suggestive of a 12th or 13th-century date. Two stratified sherds of 10th-13th century pottery from the base of the excavated sequence in the south-west of the nave may be from contemporary deposits. Two walls revealed at the west and east ends of the nave are probably late medieval in date. Surviving within the south-west of the nave were a number of deposits of medieval origin, including some patchy remains of floor levels.

The nave has undergone a number of alterations and repairs during its lifetime. Repair work is known to have taken place in the 17th century. Two lead-working pits associated with window glazing activity probably date to this time.

Unusually, only one probable grave cut was recorded. It continued beyond the depth of excavation and was located to the west of the heating furnace in trench B. A few non-articulated human bones were also recorded at the base of trench D, below the heating culvert, perhaps disturbed and re-buried by 19th-century workmen.

Many repairs and alterations occurred in the 19th century. The four stone and brick foundations along the north wall are probably the bases of internal buttresses as recorded in 1859. In the 1874 restoration, both the north and south nave walls were totally dismantled and rebuilt from the medieval foundations.

#### *Acknowledgements*

The excavation was undertaken by the Essex County Council Field Archaeology Unit and directed by the author with the assistance of M. Peachey, D. Smith and C. Tripp. The parish room watching brief was undertaken by A. Letch. We are grateful to the

contractors, Lodge and Sons Ltd, and to David Andrews, for their help and co-operation.

**Bibliography**

ERO Essex County Record Office  
 Pressey, W.J. 1933 Visitations held in the archdeaconry of Essex in 1685, *Transactions of the Essex Archaeological Society*, 21, 100-119  
 RCHME 1923 *An inventory of the historical monuments in Essex. Vol.4. South-east Essex*, London: HMSO

**Faulkbourne, St. Germanus**

D.D. Andrews

A trench 400mm deep was dug for a new heating duct from the east end of the central alley diagonally to the south-east corner to a point behind the organ. The existing wood block floor was found to be laid on a bed of lime concrete and hardcore, which in total was about 360mm deep. This represents a major reflooring probably carried out when the church was restored by the Revd. Spurrell in 1886, an operation which, it seems, involved the removal of earlier floors. Beneath the floor make-up, on the bottom of the trench, there was an orange-brown brickearth which contained small stones and at least two Tudor bricks.

**Hadstock St. Botolph. Mains drainage, 1999**

D.D. Andrews

Drainage trenches were dug from the east side of the parish hall northwards, round the building and then down the east side of the shingle and tarmac path that runs through the churchyard. The machine dug trench was 0.5m wide and 0.7-1.2m deep.

Little of significance was noted beyond a brick foundation associated with the hall; another representing a southward continuation of the churchyard boundary; a possible feature and an area of burnt clay east of the hall; building debris associated with the construction of the hall or possibly the chancel of the church; and two earlier surfaces of the track running through the churchyard. Nowhere apart from the south end of the trench east of the hall was natural certainly identified. Very little bone was found and no grave cuts were noted, although in the main trench through the churchyard there was a deep dark brown clay loam typical of a graveyard soil. Three sherds of late medieval pottery were recovered from the spoil. No other artefacts were noted other than modern building materials. The area of greatest archaeological potential seems to be to the east of the hall, where of course any deposits would not have been disturbed by burials.

The plot of land immediately south of the church had been stripped by a mechanical excavator to a depth of 2-3 feet. This is to be a churchyard extension and drains are being inserted because the ground is wet. The overburden consisted of chalky clay, and archaeological features seemed absent. No artefacts other than 19th-20th century building materials were

noted in the spoil.

**Halstead St. Andrew. The Bouchier vault**

D. D. Andrews

The bringing forward of the altar into the east end of the nave involved the removal of the two front rows of pews, and the timber platforms on which they stood being replaced with solid flooring finished in black and white tiles to match those existing in the alleys. The earth beneath the pew platforms had to be reduced in level by about 100mm, and the tiles at the east end of the central alley had to be relaid on a concrete base to modern standards. This earth was clayey in texture, but very dry and mixed with stones and building debris. Its surface was trampled, and it was possibly make-up associated with a phase of late medieval flooring. Of earlier floors, there was no evidence as it became clear that in the course of a late Victorian re-ordering, the floor level had been lowered by about 150mm. This can be deduced from the rendered bases to the piers of the arcades, but it also was evident from damage done to the top of two vaults that were discovered.

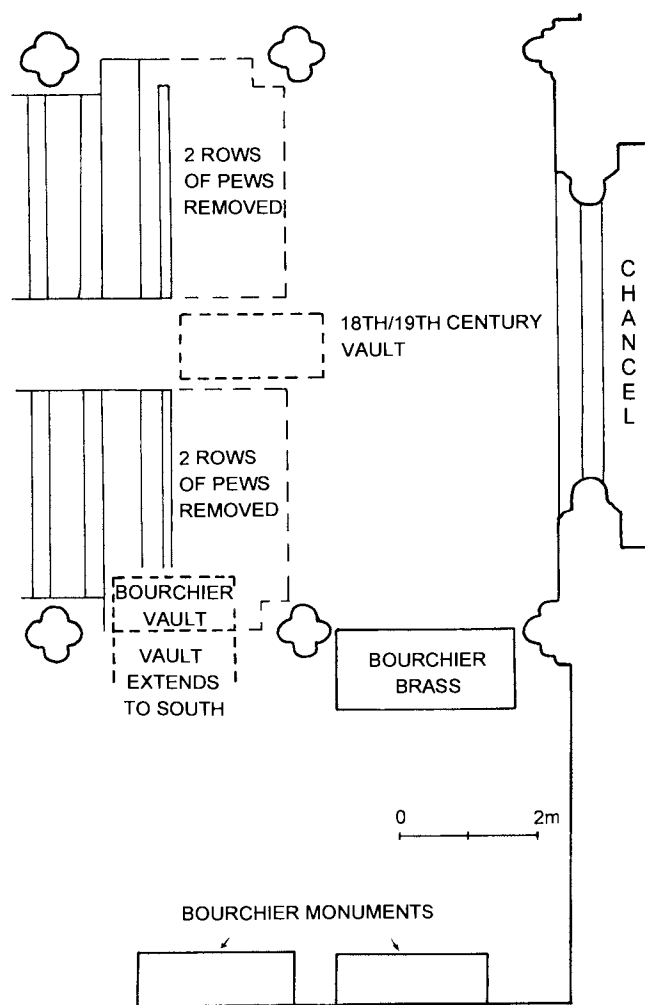


Fig. 4 Halstead St. Andrew, east end of nave and south aisle, showing position of Bouchier vault.

The more recent and predictable of these vaults was located in the middle of the east end of the central alley (Fig. 4). It was built of bricks measuring 220x100x62mm. They were laid to English bond and included a number of flared headers. The vault had been made of two courses of brick. Most of the outer course had been removed when the floor level was lowered in the 19th century. The estimated internal dimensions of the vault were 1.5m by 2.1m. It was filled to the level of the vault springing where there were a mass of wooden boards, apparently the remains of coffins. Curiously, there were no lead coffins visible, nor any evidence of coffin furniture. As a consequence, there was nothing to identify the occupants of the vault. Its location suggests that they would have been a prominent family in the town, an inference which is at odds with the lack of expensive funeral furniture. On the evidence of the bricks, the vault may be dated to the late 18th or early 19th century. The bricks associated with the pew platforms were different and of 19th century type. They had very shallow frogs, and measured 225x110x70mm.

At the south-eastern corner of the area of the renewed floor, a portion of vaulted brickwork was found close to the base of one of the piers of the second arcade. The ground here was very soft, a mix of flint, fragments of brick and tile, mortar debris and earth. Partial removal of this loose fill revealed an east-west wall about 1.8m long made of small bricks. It was located directly beneath the arch of the arcade, and at the ends of it were walls about 0.76m long which returned to the north. A parallel east-west wall was not found. Presumably it had been demolished or robbed to a level below that of the excavation. A low east-west vault had been constructed between the return walls. Normally, the vault of a burial chamber springs from the long sides, not the short ones. This circumstance suggested the possibility that the long wall was in fact a partition in a larger vault aligned north-south and divided off into compartments by east-west walls. To check this, a brick was removed from the wall, indicating that there is indeed another vaulted chamber to the south. This too had been infilled to about the level of the vault springing.

The bricks of the long side of the vaulted space were somewhat crudely made and measured 210x120x30mm. They were bonded with earth. Bricks of this type are rare today. Comparable examples can be seen in the tower of All Saints, Stanway, built *c.* 1400, in buttresses in the churches at Little Yeldham and Bulmer, in the arch of the porch of Thorington church, and in foundations excavated at the moated site of King John's Hunting Lodge, Writtle. The available evidence suggests that they were in use *c.* 1350-1430. The bricks surviving at the vault springing were slightly larger, measuring 230x135x40mm. They were bonded with a good white mortar. This difference in size may indicate a later date, the vault having been finally sealed some little time after its construction. From the fill of the vault were recovered some bones, including a skull and

seven long bones probably representing two individuals, and some fragments of clunch with traces of limewash, one of which was a delicate piece of quatrefoil tracery. These must have belonged to a late medieval monument or screen.

The south aisle was the Bouchier chapel and, as is so often the case, was formerly grander and more populous than it is today. The 18th-century antiquary Holman was able to describe six tombs (ERO T/P 195/12). Today, only one monument is intact, a canopied monument against the south wall with the effigies of a man and a woman generally identified as John, second lord Bouchier, and his wife Maud (*cf.* Jones 1995). To the east, against the same wall, there is a table tomb which the heraldry on it suggests is that of Robert first lord Bouchier and his wife Elizabeth Prayers (RCHM Essex 1916, 150). The effigies on the tomb do not, however, belong to it and are thought to be Sir John Bouchier and his wife. Beneath the arch of the nave arcade to the east of the vault, there is a brass to Bartholomew, the third lord Bouchier, and his two wives. Holman records this brass as being in this position but set on a table tomb.

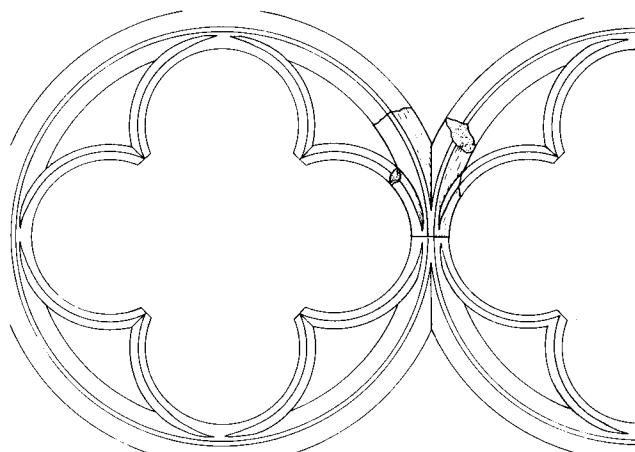


Fig. 5 Halstead St. Andrew, fragment of tracery from a screen or monument in the Bouchier chapel.

A vault built of medieval brick is unusual, and it must have been the last resting place of someone of importance. The proximity of the vault to the Bouchier monuments leaves little doubt that it belonged to that family. Holman recorded that one of the Bouchier tombs was 'Betweene the pillars of the Church.' Whether this tomb was one of those now against the south wall, or another which has disappeared entirely, is uncertain. As to which member of that family it belonged, it is not even possible to speculate. Sir John Bouchier died in 1328. The third lord died in 1409. In the present state of knowledge, the bricks of which the vault are built could belong anywhere within that time range. A small fragment of stone tracery in clunch indicative of a quatrefoil pattern was found in the top of the fill of the vault (Fig. 5). It must have belonged to a screen or monument in the Bouchier chapel and hints at its former magnificence.

**Bibliography**

ERO

Jones, M. 1995 The fortunes of war: the military career of John, second lord Bourchier (d.1400), *Essex Archaeology and History*, 26, 145-61

RCHM Essex 1916 Royal Commission on Historical Monuments (England) *An inventory of the historical monuments in Essex. Vol. 1. North-west Essex*, London: HMSO

**Hatfield Broad Oak, St. Mary. R. C. Carpenter's restoration of 1843 and observations on the recent re-ordering**

D. W. Lloyd and D. D. Andrews

*Introduction*

St. Mary's church occupies the nave of the old abbey church, the crossing and presbytery of which are no longer standing. It dates mainly from the late 14th century and the early 15th century (RCHM Essex 1921). In 1999-2000, the church underwent re-ordering which included the provision of a toilet in the tower, renewing the floor and panelling in the south aisle, and removal of pews at the front and rear of the nave. This was probably the most extensive alterations to the church since the restoration by R. C. Carpenter in 1843 which had involved new seating, a new roof, and a screen in the tower arch.

*R.C. Carpenter's restoration*

Richard Cromwell Carpenter (1812-55) was one of the most influential figures in the High Victorian Gothic Revival. The initial inspiration for the Revival came in the 1830s, through A.W.N. Pugin with his fanatical belief, based on his ardent Catholicism, that Gothic was the only true architectural style. Carpenter was a friend and admirer of Pugin, but a man of very different character. His obituary in the 'Ecclesiologist' says "He never seemed to dream of producing a sudden or startling effect, and yet his works ... are all ... original and varied ... and devoid of mannerism ... the harmony of parts and general unity of proportion (run) through the entire building ... Nor was Carpenter merely an architect; his acquaintance with symbolism and the *instrumenta* of worship was great ..." Carpenter was influenced by the Oxford Movement, and by the newly founded Cambridge Camden Society with its emphasis on liturgy and its architectural setting, and he helped to make Puginian precepts accepted broadly by the Church of England. In quantitative terms he did not achieve as much as the first Gilbert Scott or G.E. Street, but his buildings were generally better than many of the former's and as good as most of the latter's.

Carpenter's first church, in Birmingham, does not survive; his oldest extant church, St. Andrew's in the same city, was started in 1844. St. Paul's in Brighton was begun in the following year, and was the first of the great Victorian churches which make Brighton and Hove one of the main treasuries of ecclesiastical architecture of the period. Two of his finest creations

are strictly secular, Hurstpierpoint College of 1851-3 and Lancing College (but not the later chapel) from 1854; both are Anglican foundations. He was also notable for church restorations – that at Hatfield Broad Oak was his first. He restored parts of Chichester Cathedral, conservatively; his more thorough restoration of the fine medieval church at Algarkirk, Lincs., was called in the 'Ecclesiologist' "so good that it could hardly be improved upon". At Sherborne he remodelled some of the remaining monastic buildings for the expanding School and restored the nave of the Abbey. After his early death his partner William Slater took over the firm and restored the choir at Sherborne (superbly), as well as continuing the restoration of Chichester. (Unfortunately Slater was in charge of the Chichester restoration when the spire collapsed, not through his fault). From 1863 R.C. Carpenter's son, Richard Herbert, was partner to Slater and later took over the firm; his masterpiece is Lancing College Chapel.

The restoration of Hatfield Broad Oak church was a major work. *The Victoria County History of Essex*, vol. 8 (1983), refers to the embellishments of 1708, probably designed by John Woodward, a pupil of Grinling Gibbons – which include the superb reredos and panelling in the sanctuary – and to the restoration of 1843 by R.C. Carpenter. It mentions the features from 1708 which Carpenter retained, but does not describe his own work.

A footnote, however, refers to P. F. Anson's 'Fashions in Church Furnishing' – which has a chapter on R.C. Carpenter, emphasising his "great influence on the furnishings of Anglican churches", and citing Hatfield Broad Oak as his first restoration of a medieval church. The leaflet on the Hatfield Broad Oak church, obtainable there, does not mention Carpenter or any of his work, except the roof of 1843.

In some ways Carpenter's furnishings at Hatfield Broad Oak are conservative. There are box pews – typical Georgian features which the Victorian church builders and restorers abhorred – but they are impressively Gothic in their detail, and have medieval style tops to the bench ends. Carpenter (or was it a later restorer?) inserted some of the carved figures of 1708, which were moved from elsewhere, on the ends of pews to good effect. Particularly interesting are the churchwardens' pews at the back of the nave – enlarged box pews which are certainly unusual in this form and position.

The pulpit and choir stalls, both Carpenter's, are outstanding in their design. The chancel screen of 1905 (designer unknown) is not remarkable, and in the recent re-ordering has been moved to form the forward division of the newly cleared space at the west end of the church. Carpenter clearly did not design a screen, and through the Victorian period there was an open view into the chancel, with Carpenter's stalls and Woodward's sanctuary. There has been, on balance, a gain in restoring this open view.

Altogether Carpenter's scheme was a notable transformation of the interior of a major medieval



church at the beginning of the Victorian High Gothic period. The form of the box pews was conservative, but the arrangement of choir stalls followed the then newly established ecclesiological principles. With great good fortune Woodward's splendid arrangement of the sanctuary, with the reredos and communion rail, was retained and fits perfectly into the 1843 liturgical arrangement. The relocation of the medieval effigy of Robert de Vere in the middle of the chancel in 1891 was an intrusion, which Carpenter could not have foreseen.

*Observations on the 1999-2000 re-ordering*

The main works involved in the re-ordering were the installation of a toilet in the tower; removing pews at the west end to form a circulation space and enclosing this with the screen moved from the chancel; moving a richly carved 18th-century settle to the south chapel; and clearing the south chapel of pews.

Where boarded flooring was lifted, a chalk surface was exposed. The apparent ubiquity of this, and the fact that it seems to have been little disturbed by burials, suggests that it is part of Carpenter's work. The cream pammets 14 inches square and 2 inches thick in the alleys in the church were probably also the work of Carpenter. The only burial positively identified was at the east end of the south aisle. It consisted of a coffin-shaped brick-lined cist covered with York stone slabs. The masonry of the south aisle wall exposed where the panelling was removed consisted of tightly packed flintwork, including some reused clunch blocks, bonded

with a whitish fairly lime rich mortar. This is consistent with the late 14th-century date assigned to the church (RCHM Essex 1921). A slight change in the masonry at the east end, barely distinguishable but bonded with a much harder mortar and about 5 feet (1.5m) wide, seemed to correspond with the position of the external stair turret to the rood, and may indicate a blocked doorway to it. A patch of clunch blocks occurs beneath the window east of the porch, apparently a repair.

In the south chancel chapel, several concrete paving slabs adjacent to a very large Purbeck slab were replaced in more sympathetic materials. Beneath these was a lime rich bedding layer blinding a rubbly fill (including yellow paving bricks, black and white stone tiles of the type found in the chancel, at least one fragment of cream pammets, and some large blocks of stone) which sealed a vault. This probably belonged to the Chamberlayne family whose memorial tablets line the chapel walls.

In the tower, the York stone slabs were lifted and drain trenches 150-300mm deep were excavated. Throughout most of the interior of the tower, there is a layer of brown chalky clay, probably redeposited natural laid down as a levelling layer when the tower was built early in the 15th century. This was probably cut by the foundations of the tower which were well made, consisting of flints in a hard white lime rich mortar, and projected from the base of the walls by 330-360mm. The clay was directly overlain by the silty sand and lime bedding for the York stone slabs. The drainage trenches

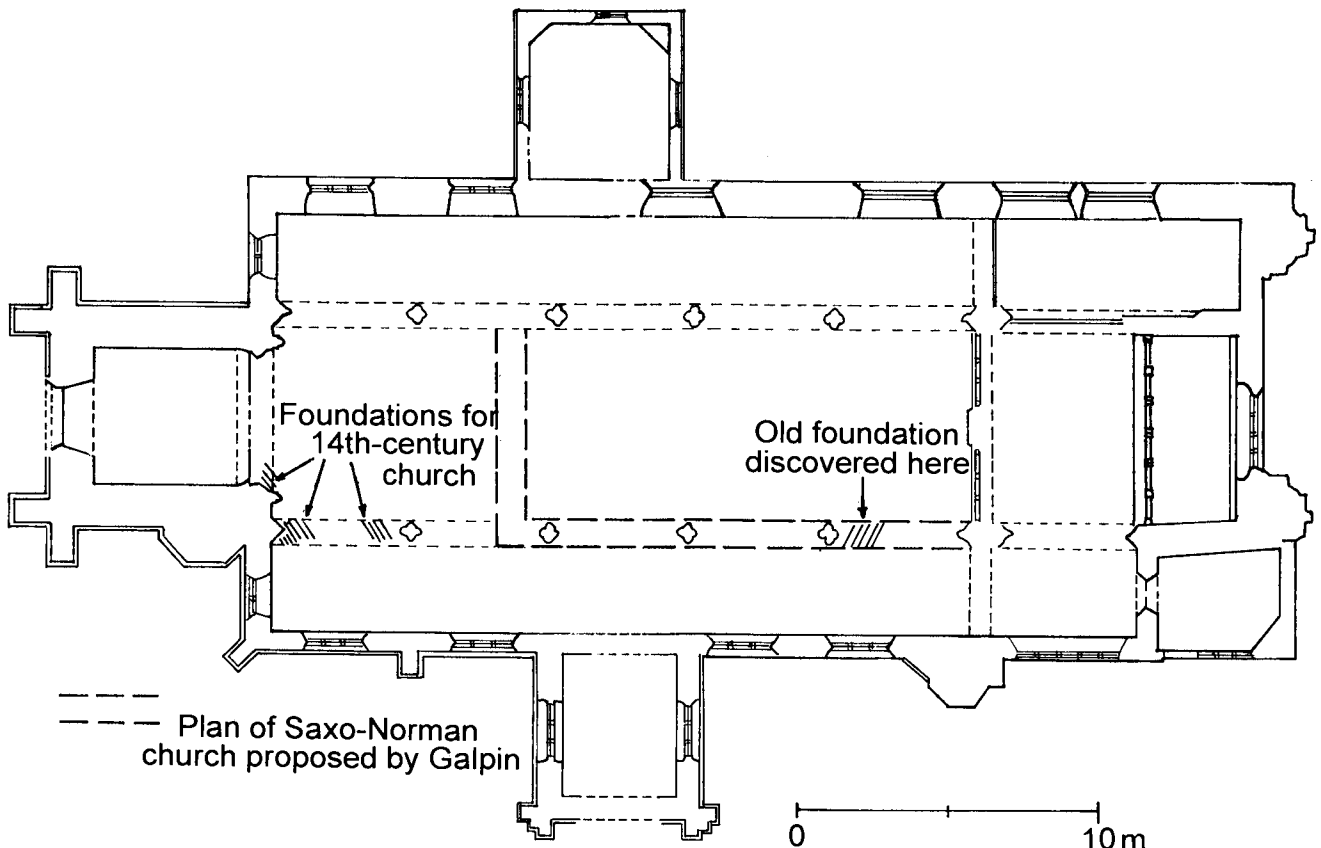


Fig. 6 Hatfield Broad Oak, St. Mary, plan to show probable development of the church and recent observations in the course of building work.

in the churchyard only revealed an apparently homogeneous dark brown chalky soil. Grave cuts were only recognised in the south-east part of the churchyard, evident from the presence of yellow-brown clay upcast in the sides of the trench.

The removal of timber bases at the front and back of the nave made it possible to examine superficially the foundations of the piers of the arcade. The height of the substantial foundations at the west end of the south arcade, and the flint masonry exposed at the base of many of the piers, suggests that the floor level in the church has been lowered slightly, no doubt by Carpenter. This conclusion was supported by the discovery of a large north-south aligned vault at the west end of the church directly beneath the paving slabs. It was no doubt as part of this operation that Carpenter renewed the bottoms of the piers in cement, removing their bases so that on their sides facing into the aisles, they simply terminate at ground level. The vault was not opened. At its south end, there were access steps roofed over with stone slabs. A process of elimination, comparing records of vaults in the church with those whose location is known today, suggests the vault belonged to the Selwin family.

A flint foundation bonded with a weak mortar located at the foot of the west pier of the easternmost arch of the south arcade could be the remains of an earlier wall on the line of the arcade (Fig. 6). It was quite different in character to the foundations at the west end of this arcade, which were bonded with a very hard mortar like that found in the foundations of the tower. It is only possible to speculate as to the age of this foundation. The evidence available suggests the arcades may have a continuous foundation beneath them, in part consisting of this earlier foundation. If so, then the clearly contemporary footings seen at the west end could represent a westward extension of an earlier smaller church. This would be consistent with the conclusion of Galpin, who found a north-south wall on the line of the second arcade from the west and inferred that the two western bays of the church were a late 14th-century extension to an earlier building of Norman or Saxon date (Galpin 1896-98).

#### Acknowledgement

David Lloyd thanks Peter Howell of the Victorian Society for information on Carpenter. We are grateful to Kay Pilsbury and the Revd. Crispin White for some of the observations on the probable Selwin vault.

#### Bibliography

- Galpin, F.W. 1896-98 The history of the church of Hatfield Regis or Broad Oak, with some account of the Priory buildings, *Transactions of the Essex Archaeological Society*, n.s. 6, 327-345  
 RCHM Essex 1921 Royal Commission on Historical Monuments (England), *An inventory of the historical monuments in Essex*, vol II, London:HMSO

### Layer de la Haye

D.D. Andrews

A first floor was inserted into the tower, a former door through to the stair turret at this level being unblocked. This door seemed to be inserted into the spiral stair. Its stonework was in excellent condition and looked 18th or 19th-century in date. However, it was blocked with bricks of 18th century type. It seems most probable that the door was constructed to serve a short-lived gallery in the 18th or early 19th century, and then blocked with reused bricks when the gallery was removed.

### Little Yeldham, St. John the Baptist. The nave roof and the early brick buttress

D.D. Andrews

The 1999 restoration involved works to the roofs and the west wall. A large crack was found between the west wall and the north-west buttress, prompting an assessment of the building history of this part of the church and leading to the discovery of a rare type of medieval brick.

St. John's was restored in 1874 and 1891 according to the church guide book. It is rather difficult to assess the age of the church walls, as the masonry looks as if a certain amount of refacing was carried out in the 19th century, but both nave and chancel are probably substantially medieval. The RCHM (Essex 1916) argued that the nave was 12th- 13th-century, and the chancel 15th-century. The recent uncovering of the roofs and the analysis of the north-west buttress suggest that the nave is 14th century, whilst a 14th- or 15th-century date is quite acceptable for the chancel. It is generally accepted that the west wall was rebuilt in the 19th century, in 1874 according to the guide book, and

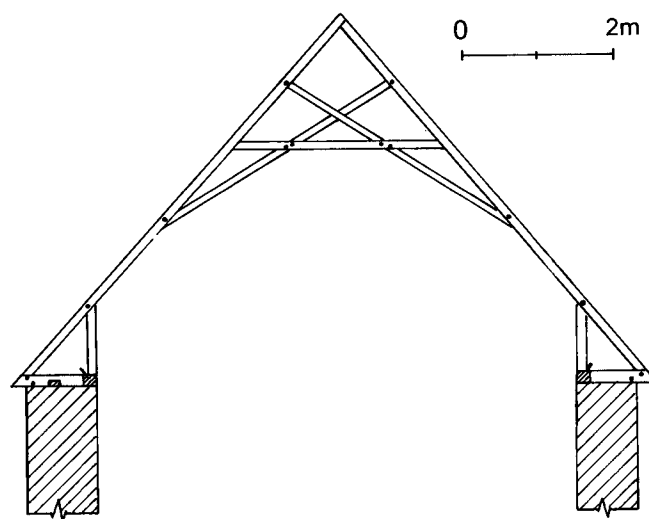


Fig. 7 Little Yeldham St. John, the nave roof

an examination of it during the current works confirmed this dating.

The south pitch of the chancel, and both pitches of the nave roof, were stripped of tiles. Inside the church, both nave and chancel have boarded ceilings dating from the 19th century, probably from the 1891 restoration by J.P. Seddon which, according to the church guide book, included the re-roofing of the chancel, as well as the construction of the porch, vestry, and the stone screen and pulpit.

The nave roof is scissor-braced (Fig. 7). The braces are not single timbers, but instead are made up of separate soulaces below the collar and cross braces above it. The rafters are fast grown trees, about 40 years old, often rather thin and waney. At the eaves, there is a wall plate running down the middle of the wall, and another on the inside face of the wall. At the outer end of the sole plates, there are dowel holes. It seems unlikely that these served for lining up the eaves assembly since this function was fulfilled by the central wall plate which is halved under the sole plates. Instead, they may have been for rods to support daub infill in the external eaves projection. There is, however, no evidence, in the form of nicks or dowel holes, for daub infill in the internal eaves void, though this probably existed. Carpenters' marks occur on the inner wall plate and sole plates, on the opposed edges of the timbers. Scissor-braced roofs are regarded as early, potentially 13th century though none so far in Essex has been tree-ring dated. The occurrence of composite braces suggests that this may be a relatively late example of the 14th century.

The chancel roof is later, being a plain seven cant common rafter roof which could be assigned to the 14th or 15th century. The wall plate construction is similar to the nave. Dowel holes also occur at the outer ends of the sole plates. There are extensive remains of daub infill at the eaves, being formed round rods for which the dowel holes survive in the sides of the ashlar.

The belfry can be seen to have been inserted into the west end of the nave roof. It incorporates reused timbers which look original to its construction which can be attributed to the 17th century. The bellframe, which has arched bracing reinforced by cross braces, is probably contemporary with the belfry.

The top of the east gable of the nave (at the junction with the chancel) has been rebuilt with bricks measuring 230 x 65mm with diagonal pressure marks which might be early 19th century in date. The west wall of the nave is only about 350mm thick, and thinner still in the gable. It incorporates a certain amount of brick, and is clearly a 19th-century rebuild. The chancel is rather short. The existence of brickwork at the base of the east wall implies that this wall has been rebuilt, and the chancel possibly shortened.

The buttress at the north-west corner of the nave is a clasping buttress, the northern part of which is entirely of 19th-century brick, and the western part of which had the cement render removed to reveal a brick and stone construction. It was this western part which was

moving away from the west wall. The buttress is bonded with a brownish mortar which contrasts with the whitish mortar of the west wall. It is remarkable because its corners and west face are built of small bricks measuring 220-225 x 120 x 30mm. They tend to be irregular and misshapen, and often somewhat curved. These are not Roman, nor are they post-medieval pavers. They are true medieval bricks, comparable to those in the tower of All Saints, Stanway (now located in Colchester Zoo), which are datable c.1380-1400. Bricks of this type are very rare, Stanway church being the only surviving building in which they are known to have been extensively used. The western part of the buttress seems thus to be a late medieval survival, a column of masonry butted by the modern brick of the northern part and the modern rubble masonry of the west wall.

It is noteworthy that the clasping buttress at the south-west corner of the nave, which was rebuilt with stone dressings in the 19th century, also incorporates some of these small bricks. (The RCHM, understandably, but erroneously, regarded these as Roman). From this it can be inferred that the nave acquired the buttresses at the same time, built in the same style and of the same materials. It may be that there was an extensive rebuild of the nave, to which the roof also belonged. If so, then the date of the roof may be later than has been proposed, nearer 1400 than 1300. Alternatively, the bricks are earlier in date than previously supposed, nearer 1300 than 1400.

#### **Bibliography**

RCHM Essex 1916 Royal Commission on Historical Monuments (England) *An inventory of the historical monuments in Essex. Vol. 1. North-west Essex*, London: HMSO

### **Maldon, St. Peter. Excavation within the tower, 1999**

W. J. R. Clark

St Peter's tower presently provides access to the Maldon Heritage Centre located on the ground floor of the library building erected by Thomas Plume, on the site of the old nave, in the late 17th century. The Maldon Archaeological Group were invited to investigate the cause of recent subsidence noted in the York stone floor of the tower and undertake an archaeological excavation, with assistance from the Essex County Council Field Archaeology Unit.

Whilst the earliest historical reference to St Peter's church is contained in a charter of Richard I dated 7 December 1189, the tower is believed to date from the 15th century (RCHM Essex 1921, 178). It originally had a west door, now blocked but incorporating a window, and a south door widely believed to have been inserted at the time Dr Plume pulled down the nave of the old church to build his grammar school. Access is also possible from a north door opening into the tower stairs via the Heritage Centre.

The archaeological sequence showed that the original floor of the tower was of compacted dark brown clay located some 500mm below the modern paved floor level. It was very hard except for an irregular feature, filled with loose soil and well rotted wood, located directly below where the subsidence had occurred. This was not a structural feature but had evidently been caused by the roots of a large tree which had spread underneath the tower foundations. Over a long period the roots had almost rotted away, leaving a void into which the upper layers had eventually subsided.

A subsequent floor of tiles 114mm square had been laid on a thin layer of sand and mortar, surviving intact in the region inside the present south door but only as fragments, or impressions in the mortar, inside the west door. Most were plain, but at least one tile had a distinct gyron pattern enabling it to be reliably dated to 1273-1350 (Drury and Pratt 1975), which is at least a century before the tower was built. Tiles from the same Danbury kilns, and indeed also one with the same gyron pattern, are known to have been found in Maldon's Carmelite Friary, destroyed soon after the Reformation in 1538 (Isserlin 1999). It seems quite possible that the tiles salvaged from the Friary were re-used in St Peter's tower after 1538 and before the dissolution of the Guild of the Assumption of Our Lady in 1549.

Directly above the floor of medieval tiles, again on a thin layer of sand, a floor of Kentish Ragstone slabs was found. These were roughly dressed to about 230 x 230 x 30mm. Inside the present south door there was evidence of a very neat repair, further re-using medieval tiles, but inside the original west door, areas of missing or badly fragmented slabs had been repaired on no less than 7 occasions with compacted earth and a thin layer of mortar or sand. An unusually early clay pipe stem, datable to 1600, found in the same context as these slabs, suggests a possible date for the Ragstone floor. The tower is known to have been in use as a 'Public school' by 1628 and so the laying of the Ragstone floor could well have been associated with this change of use.

A thin layer of burnt material covered much of the Ragstone floor and above this was a layer of brick, stone, peg-tile and flint rubble all with mortar adhering. This layer was thickest inside the south door, becoming thinner towards the north side of the tower. We can identify this as the core of the tower wall having been pushed inwards during the insertion of the south doorway. A substantial quantity of dark soil was imported with the soil providing a *terminus post quem* for the date the floor level was raised. A clay pipe stem reliably dated to 1850, supported by numerous early 19th-century examples and pottery shards of 18th-century to later 18th-century dates, conclusively disproves the common belief that refurbishment of the tower occurred at the time Dr Plume built his Grammar School. We now know that in 1864 the St Peter's Lodge Freemasons and the powerful 'Principals' of the Plume Chapter of the Royal Arch Freemasons began to hold

their meetings in the tower (Fitch 1894). The evidence overwhelmingly supports the view that it was they who refurbished the structure, burning discarded woodwork on the old Ragstone floor, inserting the south door and raising the floor to its present level.

As well as demonstrating the cause of the subsidence, the excavation disclosed a well preserved archaeological sequence providing links with the written history of the church. It proved important insofar as early paved floors in Essex church towers are unusual, especially of decorated tile or Ragstone slabs, the latter being exceptional in Essex.

#### *Acknowledgements*

This report was prepared by the author for the Maldon Archaeological Group. The work was carried out by members of the Group, with assistance from Ruarigh Dale of the Essex County Council Field Archaeology Unit. The excavation was commissioned by Maldon Town Council.

#### **Bibliography**

- Drury, P. J. and Pratt, G. D. 1975. A late 13th and early 14th century tile factory at Danbury, *Medieval Archaeology*, 92-164  
 RCHM Essex 1921 Royal Commission on Historical Monuments (England), *An inventory of the Historical Monuments in Essex Vol 2 Central and South West Essex*, London: HMSO.  
 Fitch, E.A. 1894 *Maldon and the River Blackwater*, Maldon  
 Isserlin, R.J.M. et al 1999 The Carmelite Friary in Maldon: Excavations 1990-91, *Essex Archaeology and History*, 30, 44-143

## **Mundon, St. Mary. Underpinning and moulded stone**

D.D. Andrews

St. Mary's is a small church with a medieval nave with a blocked Tudor arch to a former chapel, an 18th-century brick chancel, and a belfry and porch both in timber and of the 16th-century (RCHM Essex 1923, 95). In 1999, underpinning was carried out to the three buttresses on the south side, which from west to east range in date from the late Middle Ages, the 18th century and the 20th century. The diagonal buttress at the south-east corner of the chancel was found to overlie both a mortared flint foundation which seems to represent an earlier buttress belonging to the chancel that existed before the 18th century, and at its outer edge an extensive footing or platform in Tudor brick. The latter can most satisfactorily be explained as part of the foundations of the chapel which, on the evidence of the blocked Tudor arch, existed on the south side of the church. This chapel had probably been demolished by 1612, as it seems not to be represented on the Walker map of that date. This is a fairly accurate depiction of the church, as it shows two steeples, a possibly unique feature independently documented in a visitation of 1684.

Clearance of scrub on the south side of the church has brought to light two fragments of moulded stone,

one from a window with handsome tracery, and the other a probable reveal with holes for ferramenta or a grill, but no glazing groove. These must come either from the chancel before it was rebuilt, or the now demolished Tudor chapel. The window fragment resembles a stone at present in the chancel; the other piece could be from a stone screen such as may have existed in the chapel.

#### Bibliography

RCHM Essex 1923 Royal Commission on Historical Monuments  
(England) *An inventory of the historical monuments in Essex.*  
Vol. 4. South-east Essex, London: HMSO

### Rainham, St. Helen and St. Giles

D.D. Andrews

This is an outstanding and very complete late Norman church, which was restored in 1896 by Ernest Geldart (RCHM Essex 1923; ERO). In 1999, a drain run to serve a toilet in the tower was inspected subsequent to excavation. Externally, the drain ran from the south side of the tower due south to the paved footpath, where a cess pit was to be installed. Outside the tower, the trench was 500mm wide and 1.2m deep. It was cut through a brown silty loam containing flints, chalk, charnel and pegtile, a typical well mixed graveyard soil. At the south end of this trench, just before the footpath, a small vault or brick-lined cist was encountered. It dated probably from the late 18th or early 19th century.

The floor of the tower was at the same level as the nave and made of wood block set in asphalt on a hard concrete base 70-80mm thick. Beneath this was a light yellow-brown layer with pieces of chalk about 200mm deep which looked like it might have been an old floor make-up. It seemed to butt the tower walls, which are bonded with a firm orange-brown mortar, deeply founded, and at their base are 1.2m thick. Of old floors there was no trace; they had probably been removed in the 1896 restoration. Beneath this layer, in the west side of the trench in the tower (which was 700mm deep) two features were evident cut into the brown pebbly silty loam. One was square in section, measuring 800mm wide and 400mm deep and filled predominantly with chalk. This looked like the robber trench of a foundation. At the bottom of the opposite side of the trench, there were some stones which looked structural, though at a greater depth. The other feature also contained chalk and looked like a posthole 150mm in diameter.

Thus, within the tower, although no deposits associated with the standing building seem to survive from before 1896, there are remains apparently predating it and most probably associated with an earlier church.

#### Bibliography

ERO Essex Record Office D/CF 35/6  
RCHM Essex 1923 Royal Commission on Historical Monuments

(England) *An inventory of the historical monuments in Essex. Vol. 4. South-east Essex*, London: HMSO

### Stambourne St. Peter. The 1999 refurbishment and the bellframe

D.D. Andrews

St. Peter's consists of an 11th-century tower, a nave which might date from the 14th century, and a 16th-century north aisle, north chapel, chancel and south porch (RCHM Essex 1916, 271; Plate 1). Work carried out in 1999 involved rebuilding the tower parapet, repointing the upper part of the tower, stripping the render from the Tudor brick porch, renewing the render on the main body of the church, and putting a screen in the tower arch.

#### *The porch*

Removal of render from the porch shows it to be of Tudor brick (220-230 x 55-60mm) laid mainly in stretcher bond. The mortar joints are struck, with lines cut in them between the bricks, as with penny pointing. This mortar seems original. To the south of the window in the east wall, it is possible to detect what seems to be original plaster outlining stone dressings to the jambs. If so, then the windows were probably rendered. This must have been true of the arch over the main entrance, as the jambs are brick and the arch itself of clunch. To the right of the entrance archway, there is a blocked feature, probably a stoup, with a triangular head made of reused oolitic blocks. In the east wall, there is a vertical joint to the north of the window, beyond which the bricks are bonded with a harder and whiter mortar than that in the rest of the structure. It looks as if this part of the porch has been rebuilt. The brickwork was at some point limewashed, and then covered in a gritty hair plaster probably dating from about the mid 19th century, in places being repaired with a harder and browner lime-based render.

#### *South nave wall*

Between the porch and the first buttress, this is built of ill-sorted flint, field stones and Roman brick (including a lump of *opus signinum*), bonded with a brownish, firm mortar containing pieces of unburnt lime. A putlog hole exists in this masonry, which is very irregularly laid, the bricks being laid in undulating courses rather than levelling ones. This is partly due to a tendency for the elements of which it is made being laid herringbonewise. This part of the wall is clearly not 14th century, as the RCHM suggests, but instead 12th or 11th. It may be much the same date as the tower; the relationship between wall and tower is obscured by the porch.

The buttress makes a straight joint against the wall. East of the buttress, the wall is different, being made of small well sorted and coursed flints. It was presumably rebuilt when the Perpendicular window was inserted. East of the window, there is a vertical joint defining an

area of masonry about 2.1m high and 0.93m wide at the corner of the nave. This has Roman bricks at its left hand side (and also a reused stone which looks like the head of a romanesque window), but stones on the right at the corner. It is possible that this was a buttress which has been cut back flush with the face of the wall when this end of it was rebuilt. If the stone is indeed a window head, then the buttress, if correctly interpreted, must be 13th or 14th century.

#### *The tower*

The massive Norman tower originally had Roman brick quoins, but these have been mostly replaced in oolite. The original mortar is firm and sandy, with conspicuous aggregate which includes some shell. It has weathered well. Evidence was only noted for a single phase of shallow cement repointing.

At the first floor, there are pairs of windows in all but the east side. These are round arched and relatively wide; presumably they were originally two-light, but there is no evidence to indicate this. (Reused oolitic shafts 130mm in diameter incorporated in the masonry of the west wall could come from these windows or from those of the second floor). In the east side, there is a doorway just below the nave roof. It has a flat lintel made of boards, and jambs made of Roman brick. The second floor (the bellchamber) has central two-light windows with cinquefoiled heads made of oolite which the RCHM attributes to the 15th century. The rounded tops of these windows (and the absence of evidence for other blocked windows) suggests they replace Norman

ones in the same position. It can be postulated that the tower was overhauled in the later 15th century, the quoins, parapet and bellchamber windows being renewed in oolite.

In the north side, and north part of the west side, there is evidence of a major repair or rebuild in the form of extensive use of reused ashlar, much of it clunch, as the facing stone. (There has continued to be movement in the tower in this area, a deep crack on the north side being stitched and grouted in 1999). This patch extends down to the level of the first floor, and could be associated with the insertion of the bellchamber floor which has been tree-ring dated to *c.* 1580-1614 and the installation of the bell frame possibly in 1583 (see below). Whatever the case, such quantities of reused stone are only likely to have become available after the Reformation. It is difficult to suggest where they might have come from within the church. However, a moulded piece of clunch was noted in the parapet which had a saddle bar hole but no glazing groove (Fig. 8). It seemed to be from an opening, not a window but possibly the reveal of a stone screen for a chapel. The only place where such a screen could be located in the church is the north chapel, where in fact the RCHM noted evidence in the arch responds for a screen. It is probable that the altar of the Holy Trinity was located in the north chapel, and possible that this was maintained by the Mackwilliam family who owned the manors of Stambourne in the 15th century. Their heraldry is conspicuous in the church, and their coat of arms was formerly attached to the chapel arch. The owners of



Plate 1. Stambourne St. Peter

Stambourne Hall also formerly owned and repaired part of the north chapel (ERO T/P 195/14; Morant 1768, II, 358).

The tower parapet has dressings of oolitic stone. The copings are of two profiles, one being simply triangular, with the longer side to the exterior, the other having this longer side stepped down in three weathering tables. The latter are probably the older. The parapet is one stone thick, and cement rendered on the rear. The copings of the embrasures simply abut those of the merlons, and there is no trace of any stooling where they abut. From this it can be inferred that the parapet has been rebuilt, almost certainly on several occasions. One of these must have been at the time of the major rebuild of the north-west corner which dates probably from 1580-1614, which could not but have involved much of the parapet. A change in the character of the mortar at the level of the string course at the base of the parapet suggests a repair subsequent to this rebuild.

*The bellframe*

At the second floor of the tower is a spacious bellchamber containing a well preserved bellframe for four bells, later extended northwards for a fifth (Fig. 8). The observation that the timbers of the bellframe might be suitable for tree-ring dating prompted the taking of cores and an examination of its structure. The dating of bellframes has proved difficult both on stylistic grounds and using dendrochronology, and problems of

chronology proved a stumbling block in the compilation of the Essex Bellframes Survey (Watkin 1996).

The tower roof is of two low pitches covered with lead. Its construction is modern. The bellchamber floor is old: consists of joists about 1 foot (300mm) square, on which are laid elm boards 2 inches (50mm) thick.

The bellframe trusses are of the long-headed type, the heads being supported on large curving braces beneath which are slightly smaller braces which intersect just below the top of the truss. At the west end of the middle sole plate, there is a through-splayed scarf joint with undersquinted abutments which is not quite complete, apparently having been cut through. This can only readily be explained as a reused timber, but it is the only one evident in the bellframe.

The extension to the bellframe is of slight scantling and of elm. It contains a bell made by Henry Pleasant dated 1705, and possibly it is of that date. There are two more contemporaneous bells by Pleasant in the old part of the frame. The other two bells are dated 1583 (by Thomas Draper of Thetford) and 1734 (by Thomas Gardiner of Sudbury). The headstocks in the two northern bays of the old frame have forelock bolts, indicating that the ironwork may be 18th century or earlier in date. The other headstocks are fixed with square-headed bolts. The bells are no longer rung, but they are chimed and linked to the clock mechanism. The results of tree-ring analysis by Ian Tyers of Sheffield University are given in Table 1.

A date of 1580-1614 was successfully obtained for

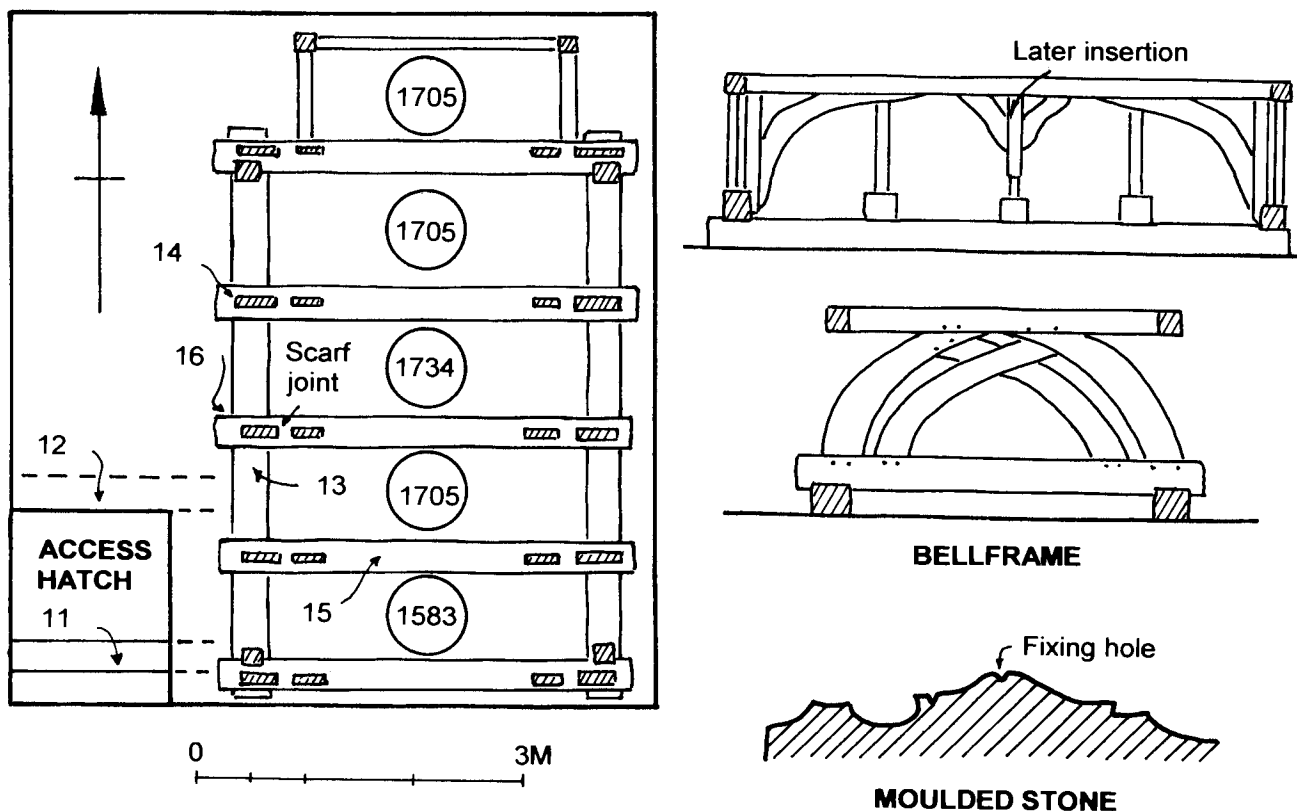


Fig. 8 Stambourne, St. Peter, plan of bellchamber with elevations of the bellframe. The numbers refer to the tree-ring dating samples. At bottom right is a sketch (not to scale) of a moulded stone incorporated in the tower parapet which may be from a screen in the church.

Core no.	Provenance	Date
11	Floor joist	1580-1614
12	Floor joist	1580-1614
13	Bellframe, N-S sole plate	1508 1544
14	Bellframe, truss sole plate	Undated
15	Bellframe, truss sole plate	Undated
16	Bellframe, truss sole plate (scarfed end)	Undated

Table 1. Results of tree-ring dating of the bellframe and bell chamber floor. (See Fig. 8 for location of cores).

the bellchamber floor. The insertion of these massive joists must have been a major operation, and, as has been suggested, may well have occurred at the same time as the repairs to the top of the tower. It would be logical to assume that the bellframe was contemporary with the floor, but this need not have been the case, and indeed the analysis indicates a date of 1508-1544 for one of the main sole plates. Unless this was a reused timber (and it has been shown that the bellframe includes reused timber), then the bellframe must have been taken down and re-installed in the rebuilt top of the tower. It could be argued that the date of 1583 on one of the bells provides an absolute date for these rebuilding works.

**Bibliography**

- ERO Essex Record Office
- Morant, P. 1768 *The history and antiquities of Essex*, London (2 vols)
- RCHM Essex 1916 Royal Commission on Historical Monuments (England) *An inventory of the historical monuments in Essex. Vol. 1. North-west Essex*, London: HMSO
- Watkin, E. 1996 *The Essex Bellframes Survey, Essex Archaeology and History*, 27, 289-291

**Stapleford Tawney, St. Mary.**  
**The construction of the north extension**  
 M. Peachey and D.D. Andrews

In 1998, an extension was added to the north side of St. Mary's church, an archaeological watching brief being maintained on the work as it proceeded (Peachey 1998). The development of this church is not entirely clear, but lancet windows in the east wall and the St. Agnes chapel on the south side of the chancel, and the plain two-centred arch in Reigate stone of the north nave door (the only original feature in the nave), point to several building campaigns in the 13th century (RCHM Essex 1921, 225). There is what seems to be Roman brick and tile in the fabric of the church.

The church was restored in 1862, as is evidenced by the framed plan inside by the architect J. Turner of Wilton Street, London SW. The 1862 work included adding the buttress on the north side, which adjoins the new extension, and the chimney to the west of the north door which has been removed to make way for the extension. Both buttress and chimney butted the north wall with little or no attempt at bonding. The chimney connected via a brick flue with a tortoise stove set in the alcove formed by the blocked north doorway. It is unclear whether the diagonal buttresses at the corners of the church are original.

As is still evident, there was a break in slope about 10 feet from the north wall of the nave. This was probably created in 1883/84, when a drainage system was installed round the church and the wall footings repointed.<sup>1</sup> To avoid excessive disturbance of the burial ground, the foundations were designed to consist of a raft on mini-piles. Ground level reduction over the footprint of the building initially varied from about 300mm close to the church to 650mm away from it.

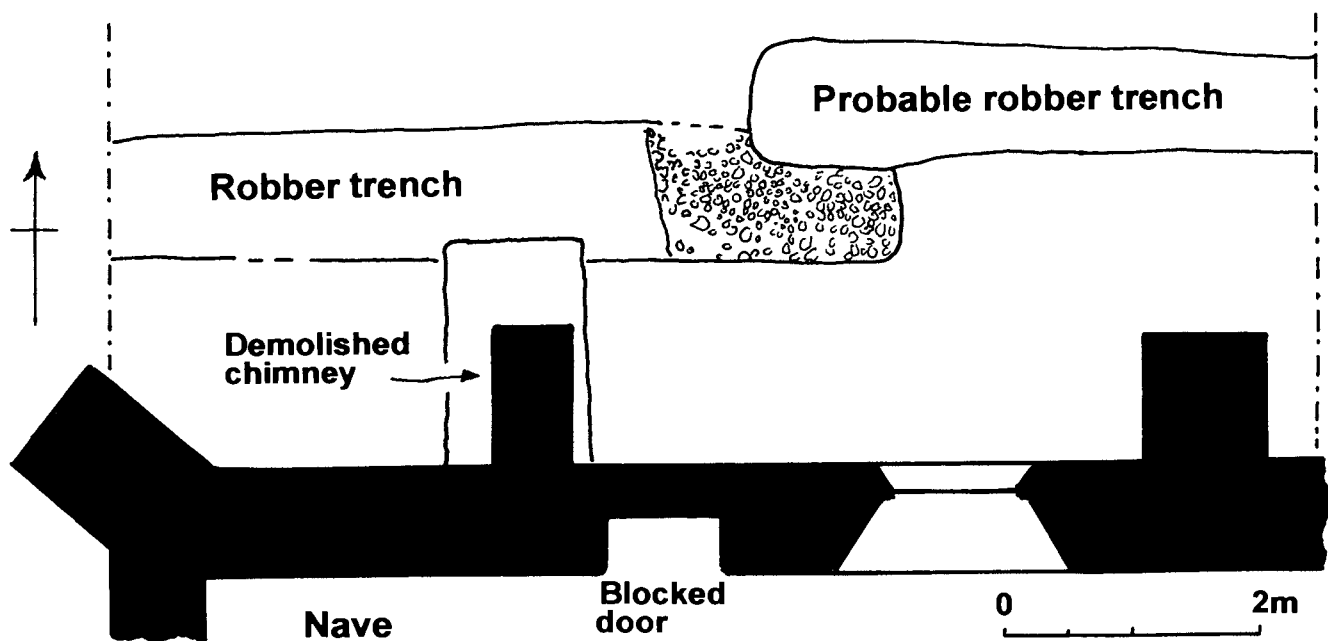


Fig. 9 Stapleford Tawney, St. Mary, foundations found on the north side of the church



A little below existing ground level (about 280mm below the threshold of the blocked north door) the offset foundation of the nave wall was exposed. This projected by 120mm, seemed to be at least 300mm deep, and consisted of flints in clay laid in a trench dug from the original ground level.

The natural subsoil as exposed in the ground level reduction was chalky Boulder Clay, overlain by a more silty dark orangey brown soil. In the area closer to the church, the soil seemed to be deeper and there seemed to be a fair amount of disturbance, doubtless arising from previous building work and burials, as well as the extensive roots of the lime tree north-west of the church. Further away from the church, where the Boulder Clay was cleaner, there seemed to be a pattern of two rows of graves (indicated by chalky patches) about 1m apart.

Further ground level reduction over the footprint of the new building revealed a flint rubble wall footing 1.9m long by 1.1m wide, and 0.1m deep (Fig. 9). It was parallel to the north wall of the church, and 1m from it. It had been robbed to the west where it was traced for a distance of 3.9m to the limit of excavation. To the east of the wall remnant, a robber trench was identified on a slightly more northerly alignment, at a distance of 1.5m from the church.

Service trenches excavated to a soakaway 6m north of the extension, and to a new septic tank 27m north-east of it, next to the northern boundary of the churchyard, uncovered parts of ten graves. The hole for the septic tank was located in the former garden of a cottage demolished in the late 19th century. At a depth of 500mm, a layer of flint and brick demolition rubble was recorded above the natural clay subsoil.

No artefacts were noted amongst the spoil from the excavations apart from one sherd of sandy orange ware datable to the 13th-15th centuries, and a small fragment of lava quern.

The discovery of the foundation to the north of the church is of considerable interest. It appears to have been made of stones laid in a trench without mortar, a technique characteristic of stone buildings of the 12th and 13th centuries, though probably with a rather longer date range than that. The change in alignment of the foundation could mark the junction of a nave and chancel. If the existing church is indeed of the 13th century, then the foundation must be that of its Saxo-Norman precursor, unless it belonged to a free-standing chapel in the churchyard.

<sup>1</sup> Information from Ann Padfield.

#### **Bibliography**

- Peachey, M. 1998 *St. Mary's church, Stapleford Tawney. Archaeological watching brief*, Essex County Council Field Archaeological Unit  
 RCHM Essex 1921 Royal Commission on Historical Monuments (England) *An inventory of the Historical monuments in Essex. Vol. 2. Central and South-west Essex*, London: HMSO

*The Society is extremely grateful to Essex County Council for a generous grant towards the cost of publishing this article.*

## Shorter Notes

### A flint axe from Bradfield

By Philip Wise

The discovery of a Neolithic flint axe at Bradfield, near Manningtree was reported to Colchester Museums in September 1998. It had been found by Mrs P. Gandy in the back garden of her house during the removal of an old rose tree in 1997. The axe was subsequently donated to Colchester Museums (Accession Number 1999/124).

The axe is of pale grey flint with a dull surface appearance. It is flaked all over the exterior surfaces (Fig. 1), but there is no evidence of polishing. The axe has a trapezoidal shape, with a narrow rounded butt,

semi-circular blade, pointed oval section, and parallel faces. It is excellent or even mint condition, with no sign of wear on blade or butt and is complete. The axe has a length (max.) of 192 mm, a blade width of 75 mm, a butt width of 50 mm, a thickness of 40 mm and a weight of 878 g.

The Bradfield axe is of considerable importance because of its similarity to a number of hoard finds from eastern England. In particular it may be compared with axes buried in the hoards from Whitlingham, Egmere and Holkham all in Norfolk (Smith 1921). The possibility exists therefore that other axes remain to be found at the same location, although at present it has not been possible to undertake an excavation.

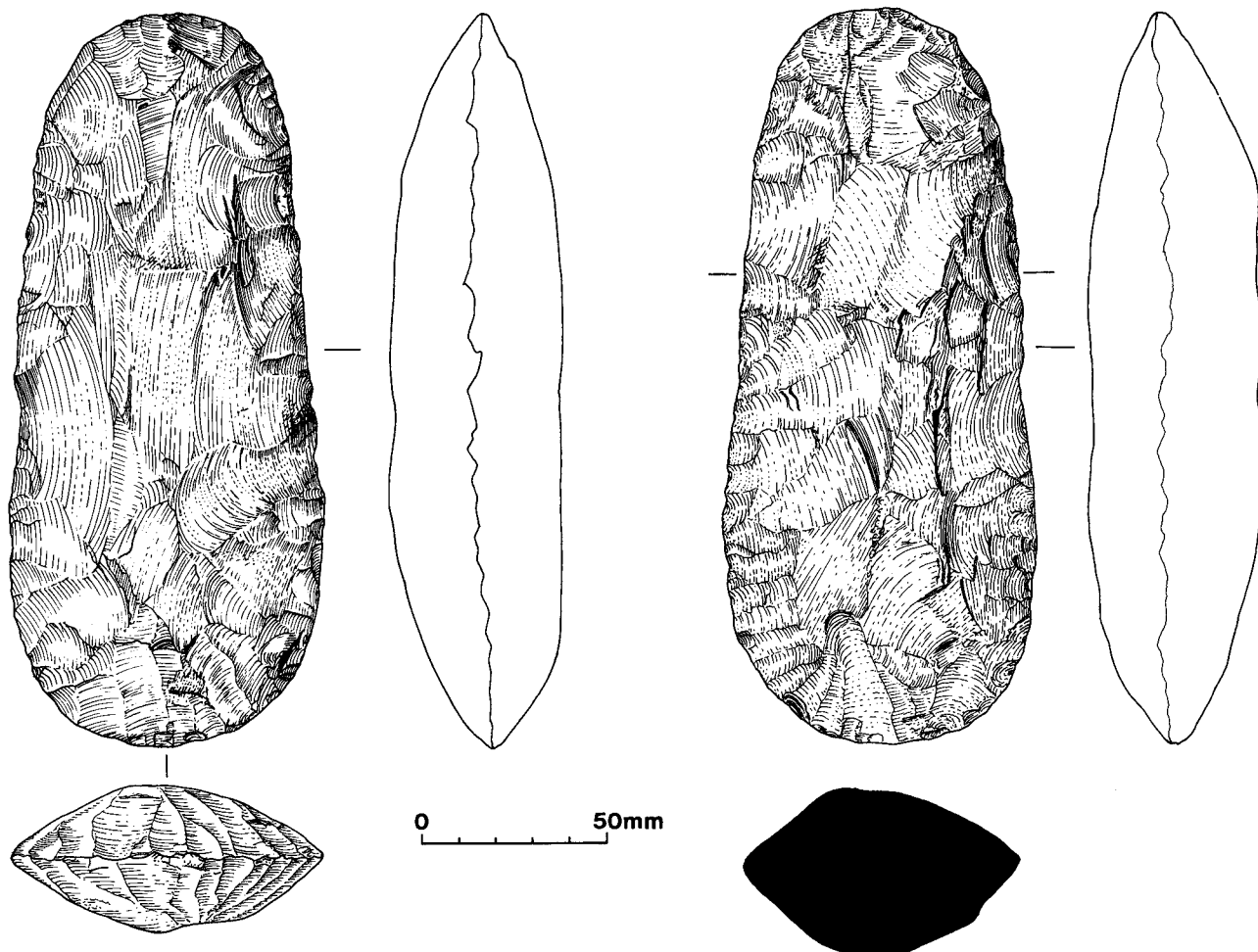


Fig. 1 Flint axe from Bradfield



Fig. 2 South Ockendon Hospital, Thurrock. Site location and nearby archaeological sites. (Reproduced by kind permission of Ordnance Survey. © Crown copyright NC/01/154)

*Acknowledgements*

I am grateful to Mrs Gandy for reporting and subsequently donating the axe to Colchester Museums and to Roger Massey-Ryan for preparing the drawing.

**Reference**

Smith, R.A. 1921 'Hoards of Neolithic Celts', *Archaeologia* LXXI, 113-24.

**Late Bronze Age activity at South Ockendon: an evaluation at South Ockendon Hospital, 1995**

By Helenka Jurgielewicz and David Maynard

with contributions by Nigel Brown and Owen Bedwin

*An archaeological evaluation in the grounds of South Ockendon Hospital uncovered prehistoric remains indicating a localised domestic settlement probably dating to the Late Bronze Age. A field boundary of probable post-medieval date and a second, undated, ditch were also*

*recorded. No other significant archaeological features were encountered.*

**Introduction**

In January and February 1995, Essex County Council's Field Archaeology Unit excavated a series of trial trenches in the grounds of South Ockendon Hospital (TQ 598 825), to evaluate the site in advance of a residential development by Countryside Properties plc (Figs 2 and 3). A detailed report (Jurgielewicz 1995) is held in the Essex Sites and Monuments Record (ESMR), the site archive will be deposited at Thurrock Museum.

The 20ha development area overlies Thames Terrace Gravels; these deposits have been extensively occupied, settled and exploited from the Neolithic onward (Buckley (ed.) 1980, 6). At the time of the evaluation there were no recorded archaeological remains within the development area; however, the site was surrounded by a series of crop-mark features and archaeological sites recorded on the Essex SMR (Fig. 2).

Ring-ditch features characteristic of the Bronze Age

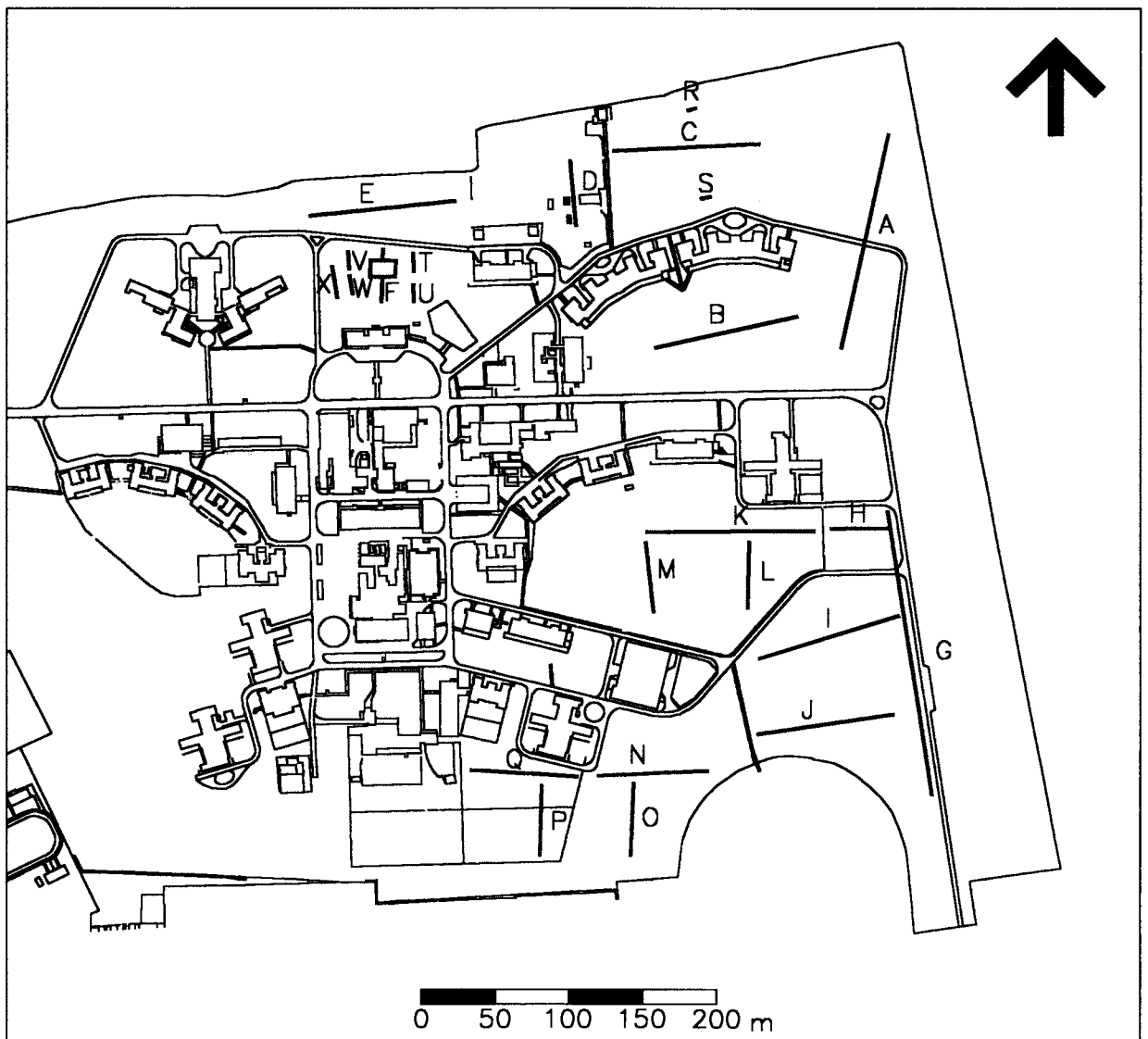


Fig. 3 South Ockendon Hospital, Thurrock. Trench location plan

are visible on aerial photographs to the north and east of the development area (ESMR 5098, 14659 and 5166). Late Bronze Age pottery (ESMR 1865) was recovered during the 1954 examination of a probable Roman barrow, now flattened, 400m east of the hospital site (ESMR 1867, Thompson 1958). The investigation also produced Iron Age pottery (ESMR 1866).

A second Roman barrow (ESMR 5135-7) is situated north of South Ockendon Hall. It was partially excavated in 1957 and is now a Scheduled Ancient Monument (EX 129). A group of Roman cremations was recorded in 1970 some 500m to the south-east of the development area (ESMR 5193). It is quite likely that these cremation burials are associated with a nearby complex of small square and rectangular enclosures (ESMR 5265), which may represent a small rural settlement site.

Linear and pit features are visible as crop-marks all around the development site, within complexes ESMR 5098, 5100, 5166, 5194, 5260, 5265, 5271 and 14699, but are essentially undated without excavation. Although the linear features are generally aligned approximately north/south or east/west, the considerable variations in alignment within each group suggests that they are not all contemporary.

On the 1st Edition O. S. (1872), the development area was farmland, divided by a series of field boundaries and tracks. The fields are regularly shaped and would appear to be of post-medieval date. Also shown on the 1872 O. S. is a 'Mound' at TQ 6035 8194, surrounded by a hedged enclosure. This feature is adjacent to the cremation burials ESMR 5193 and may be associated with them.

### Excavation

The development area was generally flat, lying between 20m and 25m OD, with approximately 0.35m of topsoil overlying between 0.3m and 1.6m of brickearth. A total of 24 trial trenches (A-X) were excavated across the site (Fig. 3); topsoil was removed using a mechanical excavator, exposing the top of any archaeological deposits, and further excavation was carried out by hand. Only Trench F uncovered significant archaeological features, one of which, a ditch, continued west into Trench V. Trenches E and G were positioned as near as possible to known crop-marks but uncovered no significant features. Trenches C, B, K, J, R and S uncovered sections of the same field boundary. In general, the archaeologically important features were filled with a clean brownish-grey silty loam; only those deposits which contained finds or other indications of human activity are described below.

#### *Trench F* (Fig. 4)

When significant archaeological features were uncovered in the northern part of the trench, it was widened to allow further examination to take place. The features revealed were mainly clustered in the centre of the excavated area with some inter-cutting, indicating more than one phase of activity.

### F435 and F437

The earliest features uncovered were two intersecting irregular hollows, F435 and F437, located in the centre of the trench. Feature 435 was cut by F437 which, in turn was cut by post-hole/small pit F107. The fills of both hollows contained a few small pottery sherds, which could only be broadly dated to the prehistoric period. Their purpose is not known, but the proximity of the pits to the post and stake-holes suggests that they may have had some structural significance.

### Building 1

The remaining features consisted of two adjacent groups of post and stake-holes; one cluster located to the north-east of pits F435 and 437, and a smaller group to the north-west, these are interpreted as the remains of a post-built roundhouse with a diameter of *c.* 5.5m. The smaller group was arranged in a rough square, supporting the centre of the structure, with the post-holes in the larger group forming a south-east-facing porch, similar to Structure 1 at Aldermarston Wharf, Berkshire (Bradley *et al.* 1980, figs 9-10).

Pottery from the fill of post-hole F107 (context 108) included diagnostic sherds dateable to the beginning of the Late Bronze Age. Pottery from the fill of post-hole F109 (context 110) included sherds of somewhat later date. The fills of post-holes F104, F408, and F419 contained charcoal flecks. Brief analysis of the environmental samples taken indicated that burnt flint, seeds and very occasional fragments of burnt bone were also present. The low bone content suggests that it is unlikely the charcoal originated from funerary activity. It is possible that the burnt flint fragments may have resulted from a cooking method using heated stones to heat food and liquids, suggesting that the activity here was domestic.

### F430

The western edge of the archaeological activity was demarcated by the north/south gully F430. It did not reappear in Trench E approximately 25m to the north, nor did it turn to appear in Trench F or Trenches T, U, V, W, X close-by. The gully was broad but shallow, measuring 0.5m wide and 0.14m deep; its fill, context 431, contained no finds. The line of the gully lay outside the circuit of the roundhouse and may be contemporary with it.

### F 433 and F470

These two pits, F433 in the west of the excavated area and F470 in the north, were shallow and their fills contained no finds. No function for the pits could be discerned.

### F439

This feature ran almost east/west across the north end of the trench. At this point, the ditch was 2.5m wide and 0.84m deep. The profile of the ditch was slightly irregular, with a 0.4m wide step on the northern side of the bottom. It did not appear from the fills that this

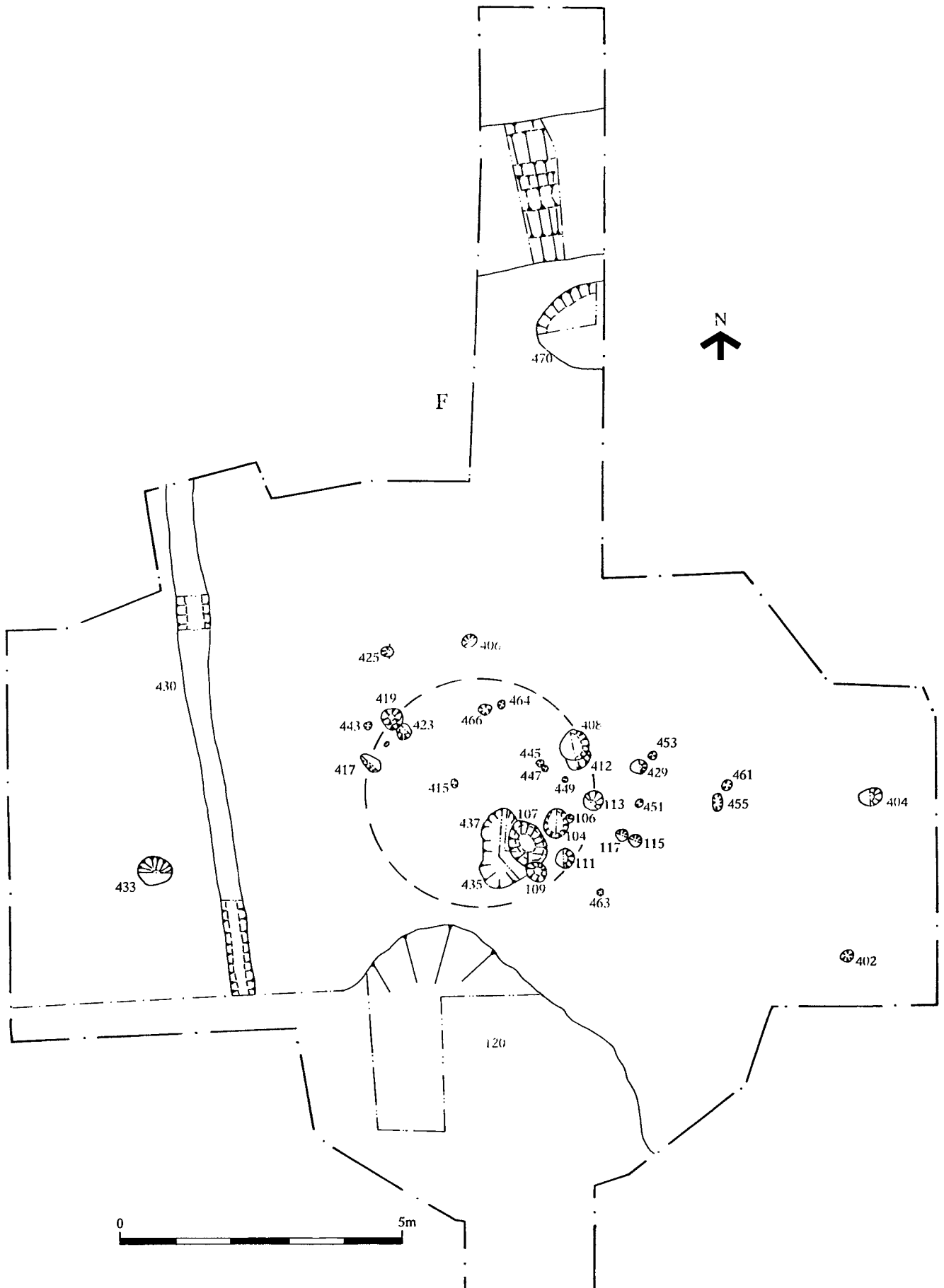


Fig. 4 South Ockendon Hospital, Thurrock. Building 1, Trench F

shelf resulted from a re-cut; it may have been produced by periodic cleaning of the ditch. The lower fills 468 and 469 each contained a single sherd of pottery. The piece from context 468 was Roman, but the poor condition of the sherd rendered it doubtful as dating evidence, and the ditch may therefore be post-Roman.

#### Layer 120

This deposit was an amorphous spread of orange brownish-grey clayey silt, spreading beyond the western limit of Trench F, but not extending into adjacent Trenches V, W or X. The northern edge of the deposit was excavated by machine and it was found to seal gully F430. It is likely that this deposit accumulated through natural processes such as silting into uneven ground.

#### Trench V

##### F439

The ditch reappeared in this trench, in a position suggesting that its alignment was turning slightly toward the south. Although this section was not excavated, at this point the ditch was narrower than before, measuring 2m in width.

#### Trenches T, U, W, X

Though in close proximity to Trench F, no features were present. The natural subsoil was homogenous and undisturbed.

#### Trench D

A small sherd of prehistoric pottery was found on the surface of a band of pale orange-brown clay sandy silt, context 62. This layer was shallow and probably naturally formed. The pottery is likely to be residual and cannot be directly associated with this feature.

#### Trenches C, B, K, I, J, R, S

This group of trenches was positioned along the line of a field boundary recorded on the 1872 Ordnance Survey.

##### F42

The boundary ditch F42 was found running north/south through each, except Trench I, where a modern pipe-trench was found occupying its alignment. The dimensions of the ditch were not constant between the trial trenches; with the width varying from 1-2m; the depth was generally less than 0.5m. Finds recovered include a mix of modern debris, post-medieval pottery, tile and brick, and a single residual sherd of medieval pottery.

#### F46, F344 and F368

A series of parallel narrow linear features ran alongside ditch F42. Two were uncovered in Trench C, and three in Trenches R and S. All were extremely shallow (0.01-0.02m) and contained no finds. Their fills were similar to that of the ditch and they may be remains of track ruts associated with the boundary. In Trench S,

however, they appeared to trace across a modern disturbance.

Also in Trench I, a small sherd of prehistoric pottery was found in a band of pale orangey-grey sandy clayey silt, context 164. This deposit was shallow and moderately well defined but probably naturally formed. The pottery is likely to be residual.

## Finds reports

Prehistoric pottery  
Nigel Brown

A small quantity of pottery was recovered from the excavations, 288 sherds weighing 2137g. The majority came from the fills of two features; post-hole F107, context 108 (126 sherds, 1065g) and post-hole F109, context 110 (93 sherds, 756g). The pottery from context 108 included part of the rim of a hook-rim jar decorated with fingernail impressions (Fig. 5, 1), and a rim of a small bucket urn with part of a row of pre-firing perforations surviving (Fig. 5, 2). This indicates a date early in the Late Bronze Age, (LBA) perhaps the 11th/10th centuries BC (Brown 1988). Pottery from context 110 comprised mainly flint-tempered body sherds from a large jar, which might be contemporary with the material from 108. However, part of a small, abraded cup was also present in a sandy fabric (Fig. 5, 3). Such fabrics are not common before the Early Iron Age but do occasionally occur in earlier assemblages. A few vesicular sherds, which seem to have been burnt, also came from this context and appear originally to have been shell-tempered. Shell temper is again locally uncommon before the Early Iron Age, but does occur from the Middle Bronze Age (MBA) onward. A somewhat later date within the

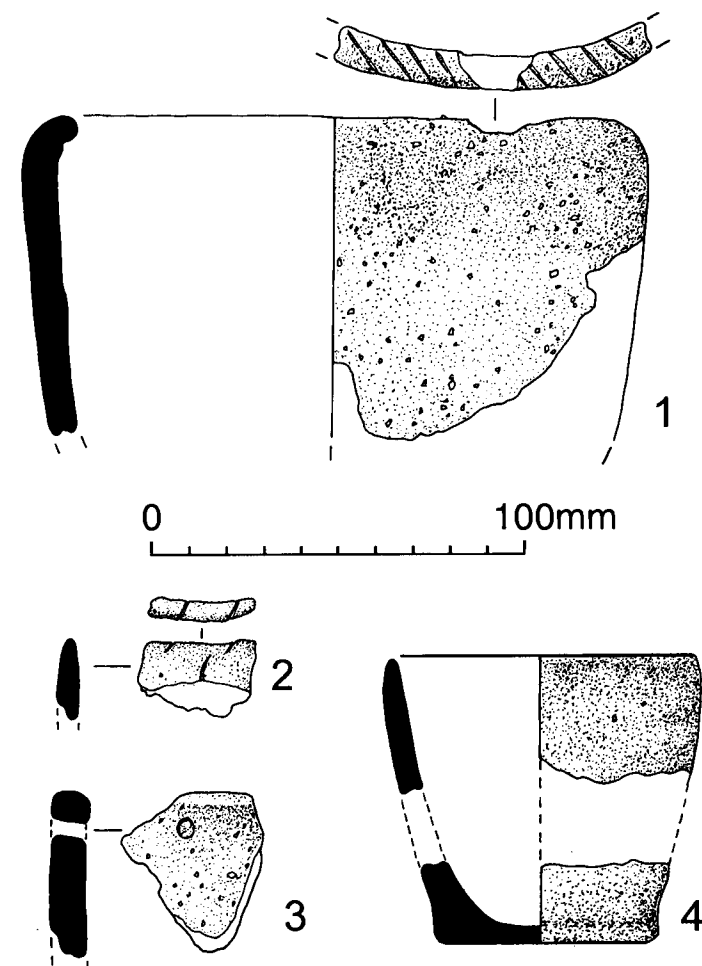


Fig. 5 South Ockendon Hospital, Thurrock. Prehistoric pottery

LBA appears likely for the pottery from F109.

The remaining contexts only yielded a few, mainly flint-tempered, sherds, not closely dateable within the prehistoric period.

#### Worked flint

Owen Bedwin

Three flint flakes and one flint chip (the latter probably humanly struck) were recovered; all were on good quality medium to dark grey flint. Little comment can be made, except to suggest a general prehistoric date.

#### Other finds

Reports on the Roman pottery, medieval and later pottery and miscellaneous finds are contained in the site archive.

#### Discussion

The concentration of well-preserved prehistoric features dating to the early part of the Late Bronze Age indicates localised domestic activity centred on a post-built roundhouse. The limited area of the evaluation does not allow firm conclusions to be drawn about the extent or duration of the settlement. No evidence was found for the continuation into the evaluation area of the crop-mark ring-ditch (ESMR 5098) on the northern site boundary, or the crop-mark pit-cluster near its south-eastern boundary.

While ditch F439 recorded in Trenches F and V would appear to be a boundary feature, not enough evidence was recovered to provide a date for its use. The only closely dated find was a very abraded sherd of a Roman greyware beaker, insufficient to indicate anything more than the ditch post-dated the main phase of activity in Trench F. The few sherds of Roman pottery also found in this trench indicate some activity, probably agricultural in nature.

The crop-mark features recorded around South Ockendon are probably the long-term accumulation of traces. It is likely that for much of the time the area has been farmed and it would appear that the focus of settlement has shifted several times. The boundary ditch F42 uncovered running north/south through trenches C, B, K, J, R and S is shown on the 1872 O. S. and is of probable post-medieval date.

In an interim note (Bennett and Gilman (eds) 1996, 265), it was stated that ditch F439 aligned with a linear crop-mark feature visible to the east of the hospital. The crop-mark has subsequently been reinterpreted as a natural feature.

#### Acknowledgements

The evaluation report was prepared by Helenka Jurgielewicz, and revised for publication by David Maynard. The evaluation was funded by Countryside Properties plc. who also supplied plant, on-site services and survey data. The excavation team consisted of A. Daykin, J. Cowley, E. Heppell, D. Gadd, M. Ingram, R. James, M. Medlycott, and D. Platt under the supervision of Helenka Jurgielewicz. Surveying was undertaken by I. Peet. Finds were processed by P. McMichael and E. Stretton and the soil samples were processed by C. Forrest. Specialist reports were compiled by O. Bedwin,

N. Brown, H. Major, T. S. Martin and H. Walker. L. Austin of ECC Archaeological Advisory Group monitored the project. N. Brown also assisted with the interpretation of the site.

#### Bibliography

- Bennett, A. and Gilman, P.J. (eds) 1996 'Archaeology in Essex 1995', *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* **28**, 261-76
- Bradley, R. *et al.* 1980 'Two Late Bronze Age Settlements on the Kennet Gravels: Excavations at Aldermarston Wharf and Knight's Farm, Burghfield, Berkshire', *Proc. Prehist. Soc.* **46**, 217-95
- Brown, N. 1988 'A Late Bronze Age settlement on the boulder clay plateau: excavations at Broads Green 1986', *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* **19**, 7-15
- Buckley, D.G. (ed.) 1980 *Archaeology in Essex to 1500*, CBA Res. Rep. **34**
- Jurgielewicz, H. 1995 *South Ockendon Hospital, South Road, South Ockendon, Thurrock, Essex: Archaeological evaluation*, Essex C. C. Report
- Thompson, M.W. 1958 'Excavation of a supposed Roman Barrow at South Ockendon, Essex', *Transactions of Essex Archaeological Society* **XXV**, 271-2

#### Marshland-Inland Relationships in Roman Essex: Sheep, Salt-licks and Seasonal Salters - a reply to Sealey

By P.M. Barford

An article by Dr Paul Sealey (1995) published in a recent volume of this journal purports to shed "new light" on the Red Hills. This thought-provoking paper discusses several new ideas and reassesses some statements and opinions expressed in the extant literature, among them several papers by the present writer. While it is good to see new material like this and ideas discussed at such length, several points raised by Sealey require further consideration in light of other work before they are uncritically accepted. This short paper attempts to continue the discussion on several points about which the present author feels there is room for doubt.

Dr Sealey discusses new finds of inland briquetage and (1995, 68-9) dismisses the arguments of the present author (Barford 1990) in which it is concluded that inland briquetage was most likely used as a salt-lick for livestock, using the example of amphorae to discount my misgivings about the transport of salt in briquetage troughs. My point is, however, that (unlike the generally liquid contents of amphorae) salt can be packed in other containers (such as lighter, more easily handled and waterproof leather sacks or barrels). Thick-walled rectangular briquetage troughs are heavy, unwieldy and brittle, it would be possible to put a few in the base of a river-boat (I owe this suggestion to H. Major), but they are not suitable for strapping on the back of a pack-horse. In a cart on a rough road they would probably crack and spill their contents. The Droitwich salt vessels are something quite different, the product here was a solid salt-cake, whereas the Essex industry probably produced loose salt (Fawn *et al.* 1991, 17). It should be noted that in the vast majority of cases on each site



where inland Red Hill-type briquetage occurs, only a few abraded sherds of several different vessels are found, and not the shattered remains joining to form one or two vessels; also as the Red Hills themselves show, the vast majority of salt vessels were left on the production site. These are among the reasons why I suggested that salt was not traded in these vessels.

I hypothesised that the briquetage was used as a source of poor-grade cheap salt in a semi-rural environment. Sealey believes that I am "mistaken to think that briquetage vessels could somehow have become impregnated with salt". I have, however, (in connection with work on the Mucking briquetage assemblage) conducted several large-scale experiments in brine evaporation and salt drying in replica porous briquetage vessels, and have observed this process in operation. It seems that Sealey has confused two phenomena, pan-scale and the 'bitters' (Fawn *et al.* 1990, 18-21). The pan-scale of insoluble salts only slightly affects the porosity of the fabric, and from my experiments I am in no doubt whatsoever that the fired clay not only absorbs salt, but salt crystallises on the exterior of the vessel and forms drips on the hearth furniture.

I am not convinced by Sealey's (1993, 69) discussion of the associations of this material in ditch fills with domestic and industrial material as proof that these sherds are not salt-licks. Such a discussion requires a greater amount of attention paid to the taphonomy (questions of formation processes) of such mixed deposits.

The salt-rich briquetage may have been distributed along with poor-grade and dirty salt scraped off the hearth walls and floors at the end of the season. Sealey notes that salt-production was carried out on a large scale in Essex, thus sees no problem with its "availability" for agricultural use inland, to which however I would add that good quality sea salt would presumably also have had a value commensurate with the labour required to produce it. In my model, instead of pure salt being used in such contexts, a cheaper substitute may have served just as well for agricultural and similar uses. In addition to its use as salt-licks, we may note that other agricultural processes may have used ashes and salt waste from the salterns, such as for dressing land, or in making hay. Arthur Young for example (1771, 191-2) mentions its use in "sweetening" hay cut in rainy weather "... *however bad it may be, even to blacknefs; and it has been found by experiment, that horses and horned cattle will eat damaged hay if falted, in preference to the beft.*"

It has been further suggested (Sealey 1995, 69) that briquetage was transported inland in order to dry any salt which became accidentally damp during transport and invokes the seasonal migration of salters to the coast in the summer. He neglects to explain why he thinks that they took the easily replaceable (and extremely fragile and heavy) briquetage with them on their wanderings. Only in three cases out of nearly 30 (Lt Oakley, St Albans (?) and Layer-de-la-Haye) have fragments of

hearth furniture been found. The rest of the finds consist of abraded vessel sherds.

Seasonal migration to the coast for salting, first suggested by Warwick Rodwell, is a notion perhaps acceptable in the earlier phases of the Iron Age (Bradley 1978, 68-9) but I feel causes greater problems in the different social conditions of the period of the Red Hills. Most of these seem (at least in northeast Essex) to relate to Roman farms or villas, and probably formed parts of their estates (Dovercourt, Little Oakley, Alresford, St Osyth, Mersea). They were exploited as a source of revenue. If, for example, seasonal salters took the summer's batch of salt away home inland with them for sale only when they left, how did they pay the Roman estate owner (or his pre-Roman predecessor) rent and for the fuel from the coppiced woodland they consumed? Perhaps by yielding-up a portion of the salt? Why, then, was salt not made by workers already on the estate (when all of the produced salt would be available for use, sale or exchange, and not just any hypothetical salt-due)?

Sealey (1995, 77-8) gives a list of half a dozen new Red Hill inland briquetage finds. While these are a welcome addition to existing lists, and show a greater awareness of this problem, not all these "findspots" are as acceptable as others. The Asheldham rim sherd has been seen by me and is much earlier than, and clearly unrelated to, the Red Hills which are the subject of the discussion. It should also be noted that Sealey is clearly confusing the issue (1995, 69) when he considers the Middle Iron Age Ardale briquetage (Barford 1988) as the same as the Chelmsford briquetage. The two assemblages are of quite different salting traditions and completely different ages. The Orsett Cock firebar is not only published, but has been seen and rejected by the present writer when collecting material for the 1990 list. There is no doubt that this is a kiln firebar; the thickness is too great to be a Red Hill firebar (which are uncommon in the southern Essex Red Hills in any case). I saw the fired clay from Rainham in 1981 (courtesy of Dr P. Greenwood) and noted several vegetable-tempered undoubtable 'Belgic Brick' fragments, but no briquetage from the enclosure ditches. Perhaps it was in a box not seen by me, or perhaps Dr Sealey is mistaken; he admits that he finds (1995, 69) that "*fired clay... - such as loomweights and burnt daub - can be indistinguishable from briquetage*", a difficulty overcome only by extensive experience of handling such material from one area.

Only thorough study of comparable material can reduce these uncertainties and prevent potentially spurious additions to the data already collected. It is interesting to note that the (for this and several other topics of research) potentially important scrap of fired clay from Asheldham was originally overlooked in the short site report. Is the student of the "less popular" finds categories forever doomed to go through the boxes of material from even the published sites? Matters were simpler in the days of "traditional" and fuller site reports when, even if the material was not fully understood, it

was carefully drawn, photographed and published (e.g. Wheeler and Wheeler 1936, 178-181, figs 25-6 pl LVI), signalling its existence to those who later wish to give such material fuller study. With current trends towards rapid production of short reports written with the maximum cost-effectiveness in mind and thus the minimum of ancillary research, such "less easy" finds categories such as fired clay scraps are often given only a cursory glance in processing and often (accidentally or purposefully) omitted from the published account. This lack of discussion therefore increases the difficulty of those, like Sealey, who wish to increase the amount of information at our disposal on such an "unpopular" artefact type.

In several places (e.g. 1995, 75-6) Sealey attempts to correct our dating (Jefferies and Barford 1990) of some Red Hills, preferring the dating of abraded scraps of inland briquetage in ditch fills (which can only provide a *terminus ante quem* and only date the appearance of briquetage inland which may not correspond to the whole period of Red Hill use). The mound of RH89 which he discusses cannot be much earlier than c.AD 70 because of the types of greywares in it (as well as Cam 278-9). Sealey claims that we may also have dated other sites too late apparently by our not realising that some sites were used for other purposes once salt-making had ceased, though on rereading the cautionary tone of our text (1990, 35-6) more carefully, it may be seen that this is not so; the idea is of course an old one (e.g., Hull 1963, 33-4, quoting the report of the Red Hill Exploration Committee). Although, as we state, the evidence we studied was poor and we recognise the need for new work on fresh material, I feel that in the circumstances we treated the available sources sufficiently critically, that I feel that there is as yet no compelling reason to lower the date we proposed in 1990 for the decline in the number of Red Hills in operation. Most sites were in use in the first century AD, the number begins to fall off at the end of the century, by the end of the second-century most Red Hills seem to have gone out of operation (*as Red Hills*). It is worth noting that some of the second century material came from the excavation of the body of Red Hills (RH 33, 86, 176 (?), 219, 269-71 (?), 278(?)) - though the Canvey material is uncertain evidence) and thus very likely to be associated with its operation. Only 4% of the sites produced pottery after "c. 180/200", and it seems that in most cases this pottery seems to have been generated by use of the site postdating the Red Hill activity. There is no need to invoke special factors to account for the presence of Late Roman material on Red Hills. Latest Roman material is not rare at a range of rural sites all over the county. The Mersea (RH 101) bowl was complete; it most likely came from a burial (we were unable to find this vessel in COLEM at the time of our study).

A major problem is the question of the end of the salt industry on the Essex coast (Barford 1988). We have seen that by about AD180/200, the evidence suggests that the majority of the Red Hills changed their

character. The production of Red Earth seems to have come to an end on most sites, as does the deposition of the small amounts of pottery and other material sometimes present. We usually interpret this to mean that the sites went out of use. Does this mean that salt production ceased in Roman Essex by the beginning of the third century? It is too early to decide this issue. The demise of the Red Hills indicates that if salt production continued, there was an alteration in technology, we may surmise that at this period the metal pans so characteristic of the early Medieval and later industries may have been introduced, but (with the exception of the flues discovered by Reader on RH 176) there is as yet little evidence from Essex for this. The problem seems to be that the open pan process leaves little debris (i.e., no Red Hills) above ground to be found in the sort of fieldwork which has up to now been done on the Essex coastal marshes (and in any case will be sealed by the Late Roman marine transgression). My own feeling is that salt production probably did occur on the Essex coast in the third and fourth centuries, and may be part of the explanation for the continued success of establishments such as the Little Oakley villa until the first decades of the fifth century.

In the final part of his article, Sealey (1995, 76-7) suggests that after the Red Hills had gone out of use as Red Hills, the Essex marshland was also used for intensive Late Roman sheep farming. Parallels with the medieval situation are however misleading; the extent and nature of the coastal marsh in the Late Roman period is quite unknown. At the time of the Red Hills, their siting shows that in most cases the marsh was a relatively thin strip of land along the coast; at a subsequent date they were inundated by a Late Roman marine transgression which produced the alluvium which formed the medieval marsh. Possibly sheep were grazed part of the year on the Late Roman marshes, they were a resource of Late Roman estates and farms to be exploited (like the salt), and it would be surprising if these resources were not exploited - especially in times of a changing economic situation. The literary evidence Sealey quotes is inconclusive concerning a major woollen industry (and cannot be restricted to Essex), and the distribution of iron woolcombs and other tools cited (1995, 77) cannot be used to support a theory of an intensive marshland Essex wool industry. None of them came from a marshland estate centre, and the distribution is well inland. They may be related to some form of relatively intensive thread and textile production at the sites where found, but whether in excess of that likely to be practised on other large farms, villas and urban centres cannot be determined. The few bone assemblages from coastal farms and villas (such as Little Oakley) do not support the idea that these were Late Roman intensive sheep farms (though paradoxically Sealey (1995, 77) fails to appreciate the significance of the ceasing of arable farming on the Mucking establishment for his theory - the evidence from this site is in fact incapable of determining whether the site reverted to pasture or open scrub or heathland).

The Essex marshes were without doubt exploited in the past, especially in periods where conditions were drier than today, they may have been used (amongst other activities) for sheep pasture, but the slight evidence amassed today after almost a century and half of investigation of the Essex marshes is hardly sufficient to allow "us to write a whole new chapter in the agrarian history of the county" (Sealey 1995, 77). The evidence for such a claim has to be better than that cited by Dr Sealey who places too much weight on a few chance finds of material recovered in less than ideal conditions. We can agree on two things however, the first is that we urgently need to consider the problems of the utilisation of the coastal marshes in Essex, before some of the evidence disappears forever due to ploughing, land reclamation and coastal erosion. The second is the urgent need for a series of large scale planned professional investigations of the Red Hills and their environment before it is too late and closer attention paid to the minutiae of detail as well as the broader issues they raise. Only then can "new light" illuminate and not obscure our view of the past of the area.

#### Bibliography

- Barford, P.M. 1988a 'Briquetage' in A.J. Wilkinson *Archaeology and Environment in South Essex: Rescue Archaeology along the Grays By-pass 1979/80*, (East Anglian Archaeology 42), 97-8, Chelmsford
- Barford, P.M. 1988b 'After the Red Hills: salt-making in Late Roman and Saxon and Medieval Essex' CAG 31, 3-8.
- Barford, P.M. 'Appendix 1: Briquetage finds from inland sites', in 1990 Fawn *et al.* 1990, 79-80.
- Bradley, R. 1978 *The Prehistoric settlement of Britain*, London: Routledge Kegan Paul.
- Dunning, G.C. 1934 'Iron Age pottery from Danbury, Essex', *Antiq. Jnl* 14, 186-90.
- Fawn, A.J., Evans, K.A., McMaster, I. & Davies, G.M.R. 1990 *The Red Hills of Essex: salt-making in Antiquity*, Colchester: Colchester Archaeological Group.
- Hull, M.R. 1963 'The Red Hills' in W.R. Powell (ed.) *Victoria County History of Essex III (Roman Essex)*, London: Oxford University Press, 32-4.
- Jefferies, R. and Barford, P.M. 1990 'The pottery of the Red Hills', in Fawn *et al.* 1990, 35-6 and 73-78.
- Sealey, P. 1995 'New Light on the salt industry and Red Hills of prehistoric and Roman Essex' *Essex Archaeology and History* 26, 65-81.
- Young, A. 1771 *The farmer's kalender or, monthly directory*, London: Robinson & Roberts and Knox.
- Wheeler, R.E.M. & Wheeler, T.V. 1936 *Verulamium, a Belgic and two Roman cities*, (Rep. Res. Comm. Soc. Antiq. London XI), Oxford: University Press.

#### Possible Saxon burials at Hatfield Peverel: an evaluation at Smallands Farm, 1993

By Katherine Reidy and David Maynard

with contributions by Nigel Brown, Owen Bedwin, Susan Tyler and Hilary Major

*A research evaluation was carried out to investigate two adjacent crop-marks at Smallands Farm, Hatfield Peverel, the larger of which had been interpreted as a possible Neolithic causewayed camp. Trial trenching uncovered a group of ditches and gullies which had produced the larger crop-mark, but their small size and the lack of definite*

*dating evidence did not support the initial interpretation. A pit containing an Early Saxon globular jar cut the largest of the ditches. The pit, and two similar features nearby, are interpreted as graves although no skeletal material was recovered. A cremation burial uncovered to the south-east may have been part of the same cemetery. Investigation of the smaller crop-mark suggested that it was a natural feature. Subsequent fieldwalking was inconclusive, producing no further evidence.*

#### Introduction (Fig. 6)

In August 1993 Essex County Council's Field Archaeology Group excavated a series of trial trenches at Smallands Farm, Hatfield Peverel (TL 821 108) on behalf of the British Museum and Essex County Council, who jointly funded the work. The aim of this research evaluation was to define the exact position, extent and nature of the sub-surface features which produced two adjacent crop-marks. A detailed report (Reidy 1994) is held in the Essex Sites and Monuments Record (ESMR); the site archive will be deposited at the British Museum.

The crop-marks, ESMR 8385, were identified through an aerial photograph taken by the Royal Commission on Historical Monuments (England) (NMR TL8210/3/76). Potentially the most interesting feature was a segmented arc about 60m long, cutting off what appeared to be a small gravel promontory extending into the alluvium. It was thought that this crop-mark represented a single circuit similar to the Neolithic causewayed enclosure excavated at Springfield Lyons near Chelmsford, 9km to the south-west, and so far published only in summary form (Gilman (ed.) 1991, 157; 1992, 108). This feature was only visible on photographs taken during the very dry summer of 1976.

Other features visible in the aerial photograph include a possible pit circle, about 25m in diameter, adjacent to the first crop-mark, and a second possible pit circle, 300m to the south. The Essex SMR also records a Bronze Age loom weight from Smallands Farm (ESMR 8220).

#### Excavation (Fig. 7)

The site is located immediately to the south of the buildings of Smallands Farm, Hatfield, on a gravel terrace above the alluvium of the Blackwater Valley, at a height of c. 20m OD.

A rectified plot of the crop-marks was made and their position surveyed on to the ground prior to excavation. Four trenches (A-D) were excavated across the line of the larger crop-mark, one of which (Trench C) also crossed the line of the adjacent circular feature. The topsoil was machined off with a grading bucket to reveal features cut into the natural gravel; all further excavation was carried out by hand. Archaeological features were confined to Trenches B and C.

#### Trench B (Fig. 8)

This 26m-long trench was positioned to examine the

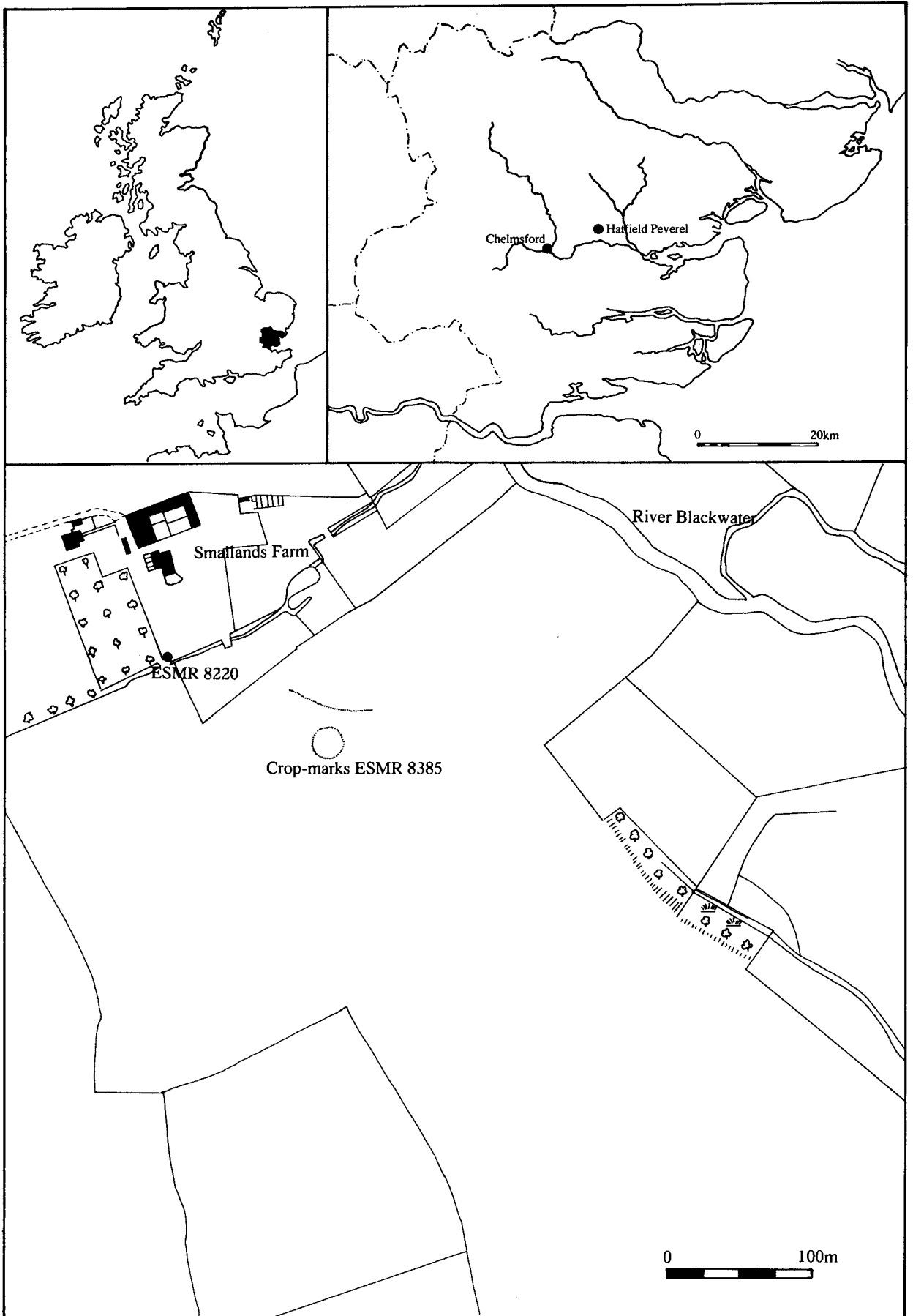


Fig. 6 Smallands Farm, Hatfield Peverel. Site location.  
(Reproduced by kind permission of Ordnance Survey. © Crown copyright NC/01/154)

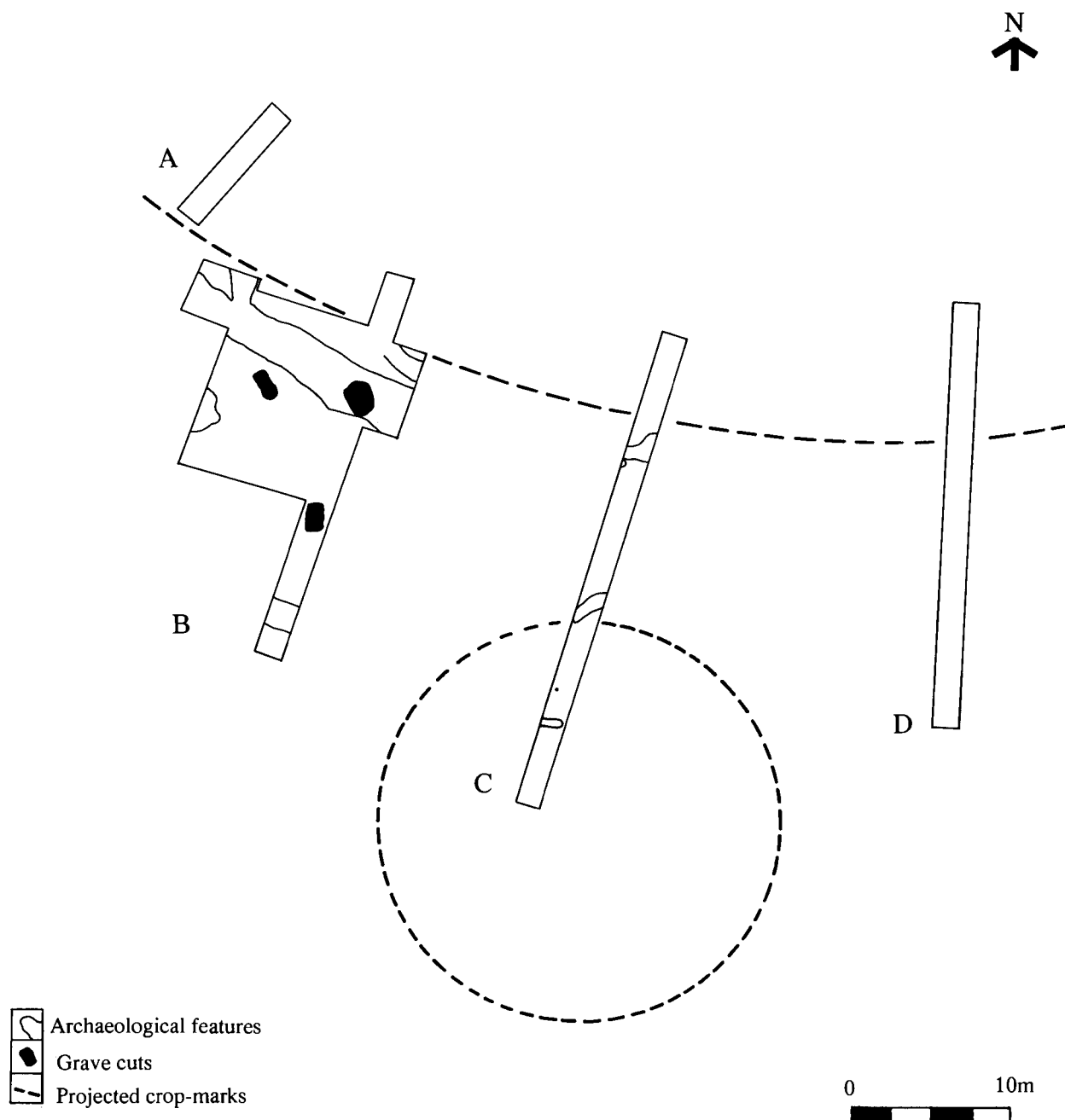


Fig. 7 Smalllands Farm, Hatfield Peverel. Trench location plan

predicted line of the main crop-mark. The central and northern part of the trench was widened when features were revealed, uncovering a central area measuring approximately 12m by 12m.

As well as a group of ditches and gullies on the line of the crop-mark, the trench revealed three features (F10, F38 and F43) which were more difficult to interpret. These are interpreted as graves, although they contained no surviving evidence of burials. Their interpretation is based on comparable features at Springfield Lyons, which were definitely graves (below).

#### *Ditch F5* (Fig. 8)

This ditch ran north-west/south-east across the trench, measuring 2.5-3m wide and up to 0.5m deep. The ditch

was flat-bottomed, and slightly deeper on the southern side. Four segments were excavated across the ditch, and in each segment the fills were similar: the upper sandy silt and the lower fill contained much gravel, probably redeposited natural. The fills were also very clean; the only finds were five pieces of burnt flint, which came from the upper fill of segments 7 and 17 (contexts 6 and 18).

Ditch F5 lay 2m south of the rectified plot of the linear crop-mark, and can be considered to have produced a section of the crop-mark. Its shallow depth probably accounts for the fact that the feature was only visible in the very dry summer of 1976.

#### *Ditch F59*

Before Trench B was back-filled, an area in the north-

western corner was stripped by machine, revealing a small ditch F59, running north from ditch F5. Unfortunately, due to the similarities in fills it was not possible to determine the relationship between these two ditches.

*Ditch F47*

In the north-eastern corner of trench B was a shallow ditch F47, 1.05m wide and 0.3m deep. It contained a single fill (context 48) which produced 3 sherds of prehistoric pottery and a small amount of burnt and worked flint. Cutting ditch 47 was a possible post-hole F45, which also produced a small amount of prehistoric pottery.

*Gully F40*

A wide, shallow gully, measuring 1.87m wide and 0.27m

deep, lay in the south of the trench. The upper fill of the gully (context 39) produced one sherd of prehistoric pottery.

*Possible burial F10*

Cutting ditch F5 was a shallow, sub-circular pit F10, approximately 2.1m in diameter and 0.1m deep. The pit had been truncated by ploughing, and to some extent during machine-clearance of the topsoil. The pit was filled with a sandy silt (context 11), which was very similar to the fill of the ditch F5, and it is possible that the pit was over-cut along the eastern edge during excavation, making it appear more circular than it actually was. In the pit were fragments of baked clay, some charcoal, and sherds from a large globular jar of Early Saxon date. The pot was not centred in the pit but placed towards the southern end. No other trace of a

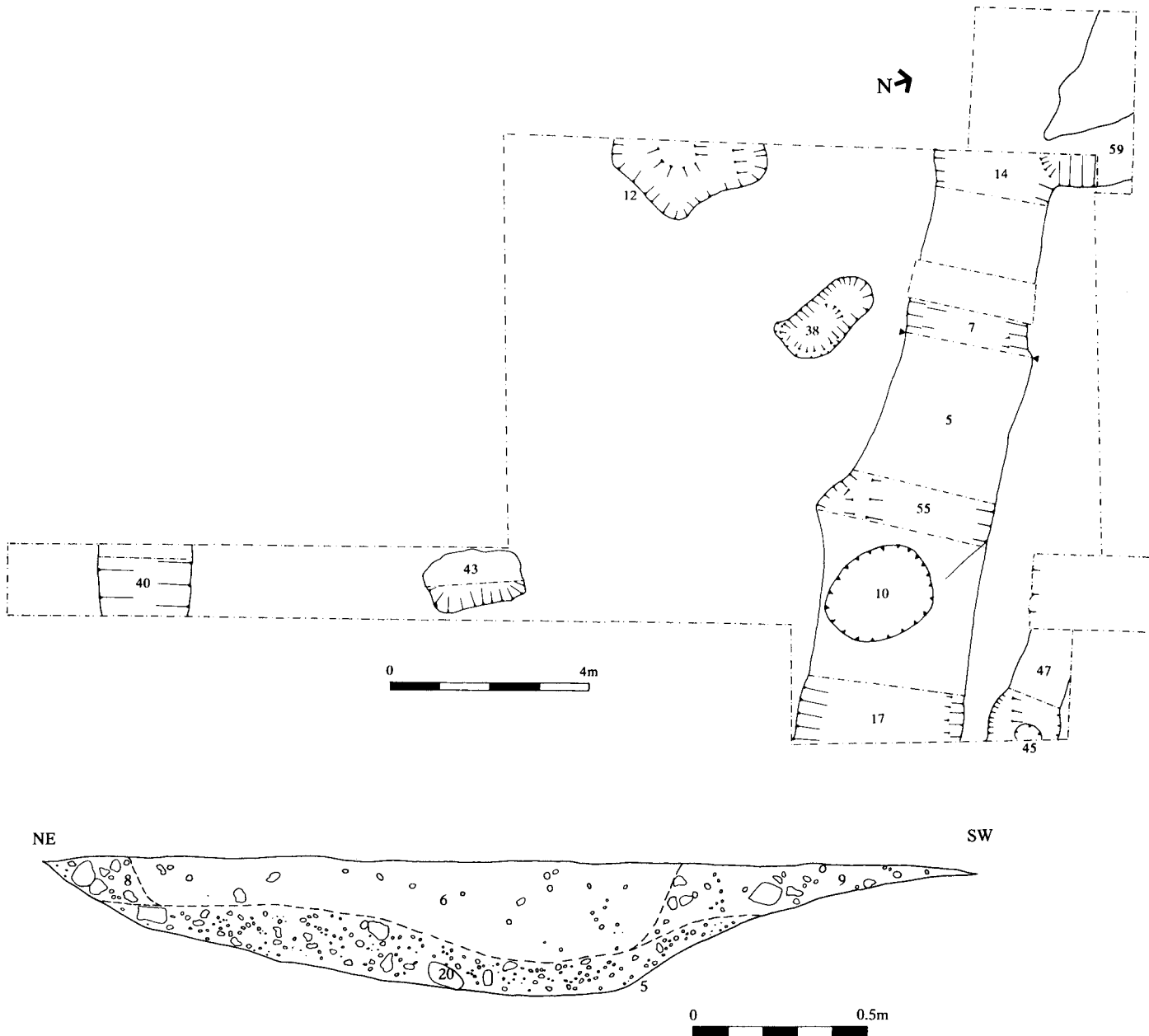


Fig. 8 Smallands Farm, Hatfield Peverel. Trench B; plan, plus section across ditch F5

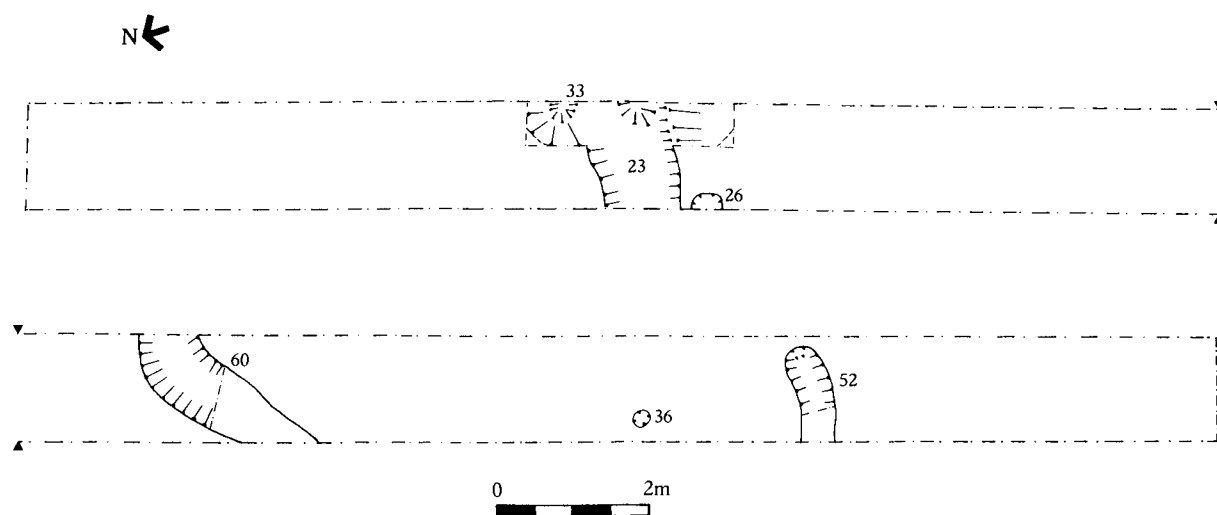


Fig. 9 Smallands Farm, Hatfield Peverel. Trench C plan

burial was recorded during excavation.

#### *Possible burials F38 and F43*

Also uncovered in this trench were two further similar, sub-rectangular features (F38 and F43). Pit F38 was orientated north-west/south-east; 2.1m long, 0.94m wide and with a maximum depth of 0.4m. The sides sloped down to a fairly flat base, which fell slightly toward the south-east. The feature contained a single fill (context 41), which produced a single piece of burnt flint, two flint flakes and a few flecks of charcoal.

Feature 43 was orientated north-north-east/south-south-west, 2.0m long, 1.02m wide and 0.39m deep. The sides of the cut were fairly steep and the base was flat. The single fill (context 44) contained very occasional flecks of charcoal but produced no finds. No trace of any burial was recorded in either feature.

A shallow, amorphous hollow F12, filled with brown silty loam, was probably a natural feature.

#### **Trench C** (Fig. 9)

This 31m-long trench was sited to cross the predicted line of the linear crop-mark and also the adjacent pit circle.

#### *F33, F23, F26*

In the northern end of the trench part of a small cut F33 was uncovered, this may have been a small pit or a ditch terminal. The feature had steep sides and a concave base but its full extent lay outside the trench. Cutting this was a ditch F23, *c.* 1.3m wide and 0.4m deep, aligned roughly east/west across the trench. On the southern side of F23 was a further small cut F26, the full extent of which could not be recorded as it extended beyond the eastern baulk of the trench, but again it may have been a pit or the terminal of a small gully.

#### *F60, F36, F52*

In the centre of the trench a curving gully F60 coincided approximately with the predicted position of the circular crop-mark; its irregular shape and undulating base

suggested that it was a natural feature. To the south of F60 was a small steep-sided circular cut F36, 0.24m in diameter; this contained a small amount of burnt bone and may have been an unurned cremation, of unknown date. At the southern end of the trench, a slightly curved, shallow gully F52 produced a single sherd of prehistoric pottery.

#### **Fieldwalking**

After the excavation the area was fieldwalked; only burnt flint and post-medieval building materials were recovered. Fieldwalking is unlikely to identify any additional burials and the extent of the cemetery therefore remains uncertain.

#### **Finds reports**

Full finds reports are contained in the evaluation report.

#### **Prehistoric pottery**

Nigel Brown

All the sherds of prehistoric pottery were small and abraded and therefore undiagnostic. They cannot be closely dated.

#### **Worked flint**

Owen Bedwin

Eleven pieces of humanly struck flint were recovered. These consisted of flakes and blades, almost all of which were either battered, broken, or both. The assemblage offers no firm clue as to date; its generally battered appearance indicates residuality. Certainly, the flintwork offers little support for the interpretation of the crop-marks as a Neolithic causewayed enclosure.

#### **Saxon pottery**

Susan Tyler

A large globular jar was recovered from context 11, the fill of F10 (111 sherds, 1182g). Unfortunately, the vessel could not be reconstructed sufficiently for illustration. Six large sherds joined to give most of the profile; an everted rounded rim with a slight neck, long, ovoid body and a slightly sagging base. The fabric was soft and friable with abundant vegetable temper. The outer surface is smoothed and part-burnished and patchy-reddish brown to dark brown in colour. The inner surface is a dark reddish-brown and the core very dark grey.

The form and fabric of the vessel date it to the period AD 500-700 with the abundance of vegetable-temper in the fabric suggesting a date in the second half of this date range. The dating of heavily vegetable-tempered fabrics in Essex has recently been examined with reference to the large pottery assemblage from the Saxon settlement contexts at Mucking, Thurrock (Hamerow 1993, 31). At Mucking it was found that the pottery fabrics showed a marked increase in the proportion of grass-tempered to sandy fabrics in *Grubenhäuser* assemblages to the north and west of the site. When this distribution is compared to that of datable finds and the proportion of grass-tempered pottery in twelve *Grubenhäuser* of known date is calculated, it becomes clear that there is a marked increase in the use of grass tempering in the 6th and 7th centuries. A very close parallel for the Hatfield Peverel jar came from Mucking *Grubenhäuser* 166 (Hamerow 1993, fig. 164.18). The Mucking example is also heavily grass-tempered, and was found with a gilt copper-alloy button brooch; Avent and Evison's type Ai, a Kentish type dating primarily to the first half of the 6th century (Hamerow 1993, 61).

#### **Baked clay**

Hilary Major

Thirteen small fragments of baked clay (total weight 33g) came from context 11, the fill of F10. All were in the same fabric, which was friable with sparse inclusions, and orange-brown in colour. There were no original surfaces present. The fragments may have derived from structural daub, or from a baked clay object.

## **Discussion**

### *Crop-marks*

The linear crop-mark appears to have been caused by a combination of archaeological features. Parallel ditches F5 and F47 in Trench B lie towards the western end of the crop-mark, while the smaller ditch F23 in trench C may be responsible for its eastern section. The common alignment of ditch sections F47 and F23, coupled with their similarity in size and form suggests that they are sections of the same feature; their relationship to F5 is uncertain.

The features which form the crop-mark were not very deep; ditch F5 was 0.5m deep and ditch F23/47 0.35m deep, and their fills had similar drainage characteristics to the surrounding natural gravel. These two factors probably explain why the crop-marks were only visible in the very dry conditions of 1976.

The initial interpretation, that the crop-mark represented a single-circuit Neolithic causewayed enclosure similar to that examined at Springfield Lyons, does not appear to be supported by the results of the excavation. The section of ditch recorded in Trench B was over 15m long with no evidence of interruption; the enclosure at Springfield Lyons was made up of a series of elongated pits, none of which was more than 10m long (Gilman (ed.) 1992, 108). While the excavated features are not of the same type as those recorded at Springfield Lyons, it is still possible that they are of prehistoric date. The finds are abraded and generally undiagnostic and cannot provide precise dating for these features.

No convincing archaeological features were located which could have produced the circular crop-mark. F60 in Trench C was approximately on the line of the

crop-mark, but it appeared to be a natural feature, possibly root disturbance or an animal burrow.

### *Burials*

While F10, F38 and F43 cannot be regarded from the site evidence alone as definite burials, comparison with burials at the Early Saxon cemetery at Springfield Lyons does yield similarities (Buckley and Hedges 1987, 14-23).

The Hatfield Peverel jar from F10 resembles cremation vessels at Springfield Lyons; most of which were globular or sub-biconical in shape with sagging bases and everted rims (Tyler in Buckley and Hedges 1987, 15-16). At Springfield Lyons accessory vessels found with inhumations were similar in both form and fabric to cremation jars and of the same date range (Tyler in Buckley and Hedges 1987, 18). The evidence therefore points towards interpretation of F10 as a plough-damaged Saxon burial, probably of a 6th-century date. Since F10 was somewhat larger than is usual for a pit containing an urned cremation and no cremated bone was recovered from Trench B; it is suggested that the burial was an inhumation with the jar as an accessory vessel.

No skeletal remains survived; nevertheless F38 and F43 are similar in size to Early Saxon graves found at Springfield Lyons. Although no bone or staining survived, the acidic gravel may well have destroyed any visible traces of an inhumation. At Springfield Lyons, where the subsoil is similar, none of the 138 graves excavated produced bone although teeth survived in some instances. Overall, of the graves recorded at Springfield Lyons, 54% contained no staining, teeth or grave goods. The orientation of F38 and F43 at Hatfield Peverel was approximately north/south; similarly aligned graves at Springfield were considered to be the earlier burials in the cemetery. It is considered likely that F38 and F43 contained burials contemporary with F10, but without grave goods, or none that survived. The cremation burial in Trench C (F36) may be part of the same cemetery, but a prehistoric date cannot be excluded.

The area was certainly being farmed in the late Saxon period since Smallands Farm is listed in the Domesday Book of 1086, where it is referred to as *Smalelant* (Rumble (ed.) 1983, 85, section 41.2). The presence of the burials suggests that a settlement may have been active as early as the 6th century.

### **Acknowledgements**

The evaluation report was prepared by Katherine Reidy, and revised for publication by David Maynard. The excavation was jointly funded by the British Museum and Essex County Council Planning Department. The fieldwork team consisted of Rachel Clarke, Sally Gale, Adam Garwood and Dave Smith under the supervision of Katherine Reidy. Specialist reports were prepared by Nigel Brown, Owen Bedwin, Hilary Major and Susan Tyler. Nigel Brown advised throughout the evaluation. Thanks are also due to the



tenant, Mr. Ashby, for permission to excavate, and for his help and support.

#### Bibliography

- Buckley, D.G. and Hedges, J.D. 1987 *The Bronze Age and Saxon settlements at Springfield Lyons, Essex*, Essex CC Occasional Paper 5
- Gilman, P.J. (ed.) 1991 'Archaeology in Essex 1990', *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* 22, 148-61
- Gilman, P.J. (ed.) 1992 'Archaeology in Essex 1991', *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* 23, 98-113
- Hamerow, H. 1993 *Excavations at Mucking Vol. 2: The Anglo-Saxon settlement. Excavations by M.U. Jones and W.T. Jones*, English Heritage Archaeol. Rep. 21
- Reidy, K. 1994 *Smalllands Farm, Hatfield Peverel: Archaeological evaluation, trial trenching*, Essex C.C. Report
- Rumble, A. (ed.) 1983 *Domesday Book, Essex*, Phillimore

### **A medieval oven at Grays, Thurrock: excavations at the Stifford County primary school, Parker Road 1995-6**

by Damian C. Boden and Stuart I. Gibson  
with contributions by Nigel Brown, Colin Wallace and Helen Walker

*Excavation in advance of the construction of a school playing field in 1995-6 revealed a number of Roman and medieval field boundaries and a small medieval oven.*

#### Introduction

The excavation at Parker Road, Grays was carried out on behalf of W.S. Atkins Property Services by Essex County Council Field Archaeology Unit in advance of the construction of a playing field 0.9 ha in size, immediately west of Stifford County Primary School (Fig. 10). The site is located in the former grounds of Belmont Castle, a large house erected in the closing years of the 18th century.

Belmont Castle was demolished in 1943, after being crashed into by an aircraft. The grounds of the house are known to have been heavily landscaped with many specimen trees planted, and ornamental ponds established, replacing the otherwise relatively flat arable and pasture land known locally as Knots Farm.

Local documentary sources suggest that at least some of the area was made over to allotments as early as 1912, although it is more likely to have been cleared and ploughed flat following the demolition of the house in the 1940s. After demolition, the area of land formerly occupied by the house was used for the small-scale quarrying of chalk.

Immediately adjacent to the site, a 3rd-century Romano-British jar (ESMR 1700) and two 3rd-century Roman coins (ESMR 1811 and 1816) have been found. In 1995 an archaeological evaluation of the area to the south of the school, carried out by the Field Archaeology Unit, revealed no archaeological evidence (Garwood 1995).

A further evaluation carried out on the area of the

proposed new playing field (Reidy 1995) revealed a number of small pits, ditches and irregular north-south orientated linear features that were interpreted as being furrows from a medieval field system. A few sherds of medieval pottery were apparently recovered from the upper parts of these striations, but the provenance of these is not secure, and they must be considered intrusive. They are probably the result of the later ploughing of the area in the medieval period.

During this evaluation a thick deposit of light yellowish brown sandy silt overburden was also identified (context 100), which appeared to seal the medieval deposits, and was considered to possibly be the result of hill-wash. A small number of finds of prehistoric and Roman date were also recovered, although the highly abraded nature of these suggested that they were of a residual nature only. Objectives for the project were to investigate the medieval deposits in order to establish their date, character and status, and to determine the nature and establish a date of deposition for the overburden layer (100). In addition, data regarding the nature of any pre- and post-medieval activity and the topographical and environmental profile of the site was also to be retrieved.

An area of c. 0.35 ha, was stripped of topsoil and the underlying allotment deposits, down to the top of the overburden layer (Fig.11). Selected areas around the trenches of the previous evaluation, where known archaeological features were present, were hand-cleaned. A number of features were recognised to be cutting layer 100. These were investigated and found to be modern and probably associated with the allotments. After establishing that these features were modern, the overburden was then removed mechanically.

Subsequent to the excavation two further evaluation trenches were excavated close to the school which revealed no archaeological evidence (Clarke 1996).

#### Natural deposits

The area excavated lies on the north bank of the Thames estuary, on the Corbets Tey gravel terrace, overlying the Upper Chalk bedrock. The local natural deposit is a clay deposit containing fragments of chalk.

Furrows identified in the original evaluation as possibly belonging to a medieval field system, were found to take the form of striations present over the entire excavated area. Although having a predominantly straight, linear character, the striations were noted to behave rather erratically, often becoming curvilinear or terminating abruptly. The north-south alignment and the archeologically sterile nature of the fills suggest that these features are of periglacial origin and very similar to the "tiger stripes", that are common glacial features of the chalk downland landscape present south of the Thames.

#### Prehistoric and Roman

Although small amounts of residual prehistoric and Roman pottery were recovered during the excavation, the only features of these periods appear to be small-

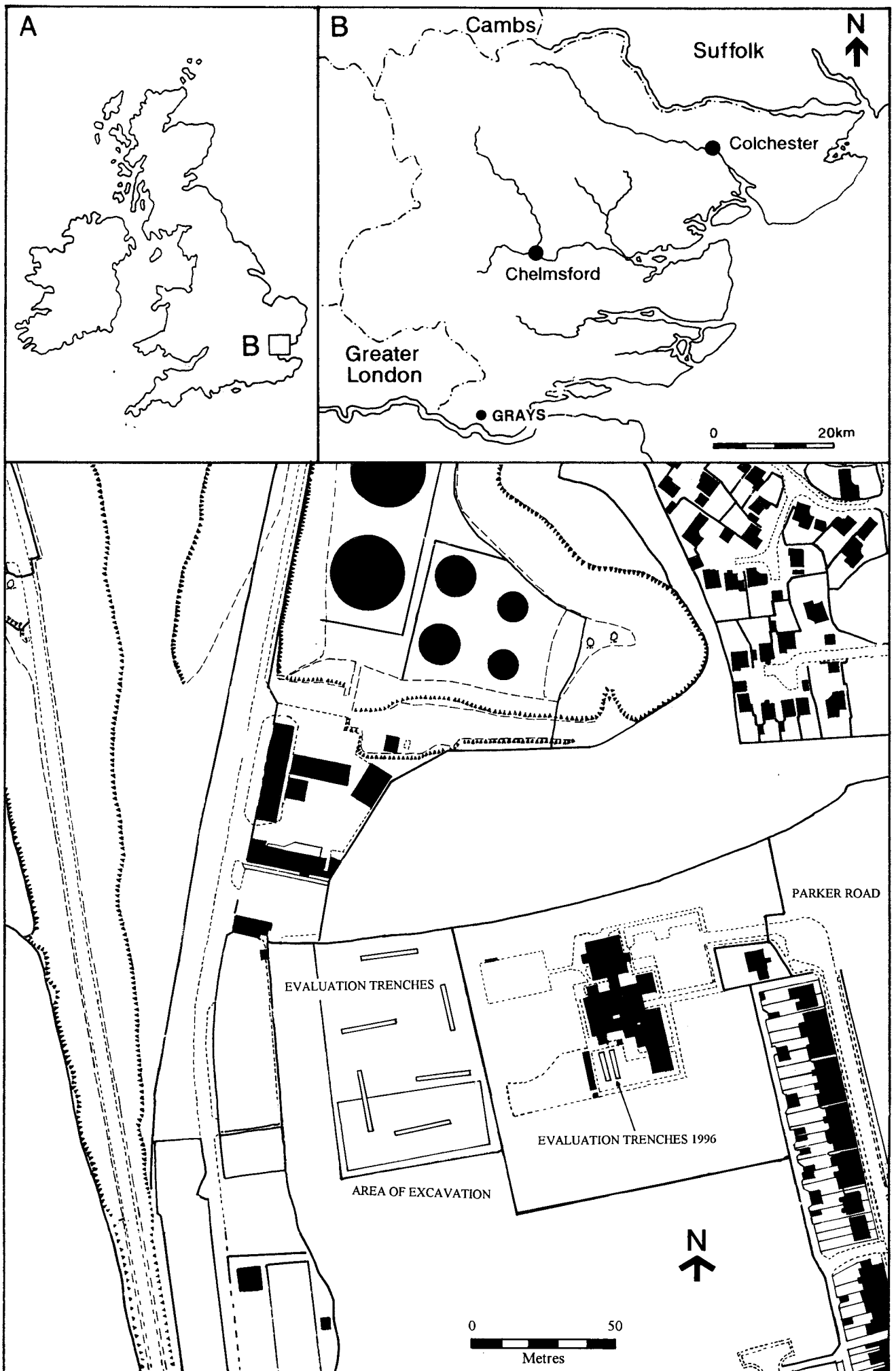


Fig. 10 Parker Road, Grays. Site location.  
 (Reproduced by kind permission of Ordnance Survey. © Crown copyright NC/00/494)

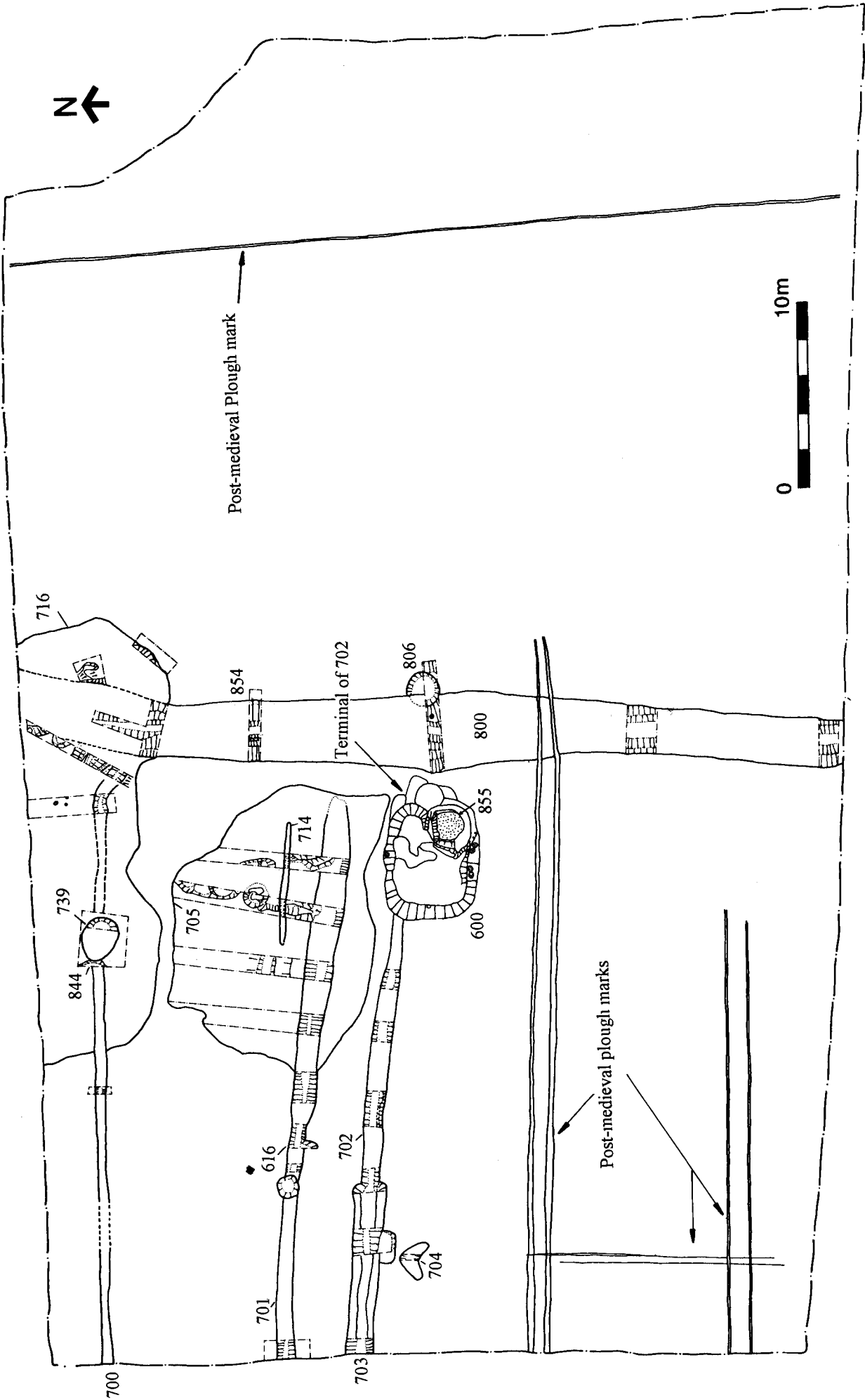


Fig. 11 Parker Road, Grays. General site plan

scale clay extraction pits. The paucity of pottery recovered from these features and its heavily abraded state makes accurate dating and interpretation very difficult, although the stratigraphical relationships between these, the natural periglacial striations below and the far more securely dateable medieval features above, suggests that they are of prehistoric or Roman origin.

#### *Pit 716*

This large shallow pit measuring 11.0m by 3.0m at the northern limit of the excavation had an irregular form and depth (Fig. 11). Its lower fills were also very similar to those of other features on the site, consisting of naturally deposited, light coloured clayey silts. Deposits 718 and 722 contained abraded sherds of Roman and prehistoric pottery along with waste flakes of worked flint.

#### *Pit 739*

This small pit measuring 1.00m in diameter was located *within* the western half of clay-pit 716 and was sub-circular in plan. The lower fill of this feature was a light yellowish brown clayey silt, very similar to the lower fills of clay-pit 716. This feature contained two fills, the lower or primary fill 740, a light yellowish brown silty clay, which contained no artefacts. The upper fill 738 produced sherds of heavily abraded Late Bronze Age or Early Iron Age pottery, highly likely to be residual.

The relationship between this feature and the clay pit 716 is uncertain owing to the similarity of the fills. Pit 716 probably represents quarrying. It is possible that the purpose of pit 739 is the same, although it is far more regular in shape and appears to have been excavated deliberately deeper than the other areas of clay quarrying. However, the nature of the fills suggests that any other purpose is unlikely.

#### *Pit 806*

This steep-sided pit, circular in plan, with a diameter of 1.70m and a depth of 0.69m, was situated on the eastern edge of, and cut by, ditch 800 (see below). It contained two, very similar, light yellowish brown, clayey silt fills with flint gravel inclusions, which appeared to be the result of natural silting. A small number of flint-tempered prehistoric pottery sherds were recovered from the lower fill (806). The shape and dimensions of this feature are similar to those of pit 739, suggesting a similar function, probably small-scale clay extraction.

The later ditch 800 was found to truncate the lower fills of the pits, although the relationship between the upper fill(s) of both features was impossible to establish. It is possible that although the clay pit predates the ditch, the two separate features share a similar upper fill, probably representing the final infilling or silting of the features. As with ditch 800 the relationship between this feature and the large clay pit 716 is unclear.

### **Medieval**

The sequence of medieval activity on the site is

represented by a large north-south boundary ditch; a series of east-west aligned boundary or drainage ditches, a number of small pits, and a structure comprised of mortared flint interpreted as an oven (Figs 11-13).

#### *Pit 705*

This was a large, irregular shallow depression, located to the north and north-east of oven structure 855. The fills of this feature were all clayey silts and appeared to be the result of natural erosion of the base and sides of the open depression and subsequent natural silting rather than a deliberate backfilling. Pottery recovered from its fills included abraded Roman sherds and sherds of 11th or 12th-century pottery.

#### *Ditch 800*

A north-south orientated ditch with V-shaped profile, extended from the northern to southern limits of the excavated area. Five box-sections were excavated through it. The bulk of the pottery recovered was dated to the Late Iron Age and Roman periods but consisted of very fragmentary, heavily abraded sherds, which were almost certainly residual.

A single sealed fill of this ditch (794) produced a number of medieval pot sherds. This segment was located immediately to the east of the oven structure 855. The similar composition of this deposit to those associated with the use and later demolition of the oven structure, suggests that the ditch was considerably silted up by the time that the oven was in use.

#### *Ditch 700*

An east-west orientated ditch extended from the western limit of the excavation, but became less distinct where cut the clay pit 716. No physical or stratigraphic relationship could be established between this ditch and ditch 800, although pottery recovered from its fills (624 and 652) would suggest that it was either contemporary with or later than 800. An abraded sherd of medieval pottery was present in the top of fill 666, (although considered intrusive in origin by the excavator).

#### *Ditch 701*

This east-west ditch was situated to the south of, and parallel to, ditch 700. Its basal fill was a yellowish grey brown clayey silt with occasional small flint gravel fragments, which probably represents natural silting and weathering. Sealing the lower fill of the ditch was a darker and less clayey deposit which, particularly in the stretch of the ditch to the north of oven 855, contained much charcoal, fragments of burned flint and daub-like, mortar-like material. Some of this material contained the impressions of timber wattle and the waste deposits associated with oven 855 which may be derived from some kind of structure associated with the oven's use. The pottery recovered from the lower fill(s) of the ditch was of 11th to 12th-century date and appears to be contemporary with the construction and use of the oven 855. A single sherd of mid 12th to 13th century from the upper fill (650), in the vicinity of 855, suggests that

this ditch was back-filled at the same time as the demolition of the oven structure.

*Ditches 703 and 702*

An east-west orientated, ditch extended 9.40m from the western edge of the excavation where it ended abruptly in a rounded terminus. A total of three box sections were excavated through this ditch. This ditch had a single fill and was recut along its entire length by the more narrow ditch 702, and contained one sherd of abraded Roman pottery and two sherds of 11th-century pottery. With only three sherds of pottery recovered from the fill this feature is not securely dated. Ditch 702 extended from the western edge of the excavated area to the south of and running parallel to ditch 701. A total of seven box sections were excavated across this feature. This feature is truncated at its eastern end by cut 600, the construction trench/pit for oven structure 855, before finally terminating just before the western edge of north-south ditch 800. It is likely that 702 is a recut of the earlier ditch 703 which had completely silted up

before the cutting of the later ditch. Pottery recovered from the lower fills of this feature was all of 11th to 12th century in date, with pottery from the upper fills dating from the 12th to 14th centuries. This suggests that although oven construction cut 600 is stratigraphically later than this ditch, parts of it had not silted or been backfilled until after the oven had been abandoned and demolished.

*Pit 616*

This was a sub-circular scoop cutting ditch 701, located approximately 9m from the western limit of the excavation. The fill of this feature produced sherds of 11th to 12th-century pottery very similar to that from the underlying fills of the ditch, from which they are probably derived. This feature had light coloured, clayey silt fill which appeared to be the product of natural silting rather than a deliberate backfilling. The naturally derived appearance of the silt in the ditch would suggest that, in common with the other pit features identified on the excavation, was a by-product of quarrying.

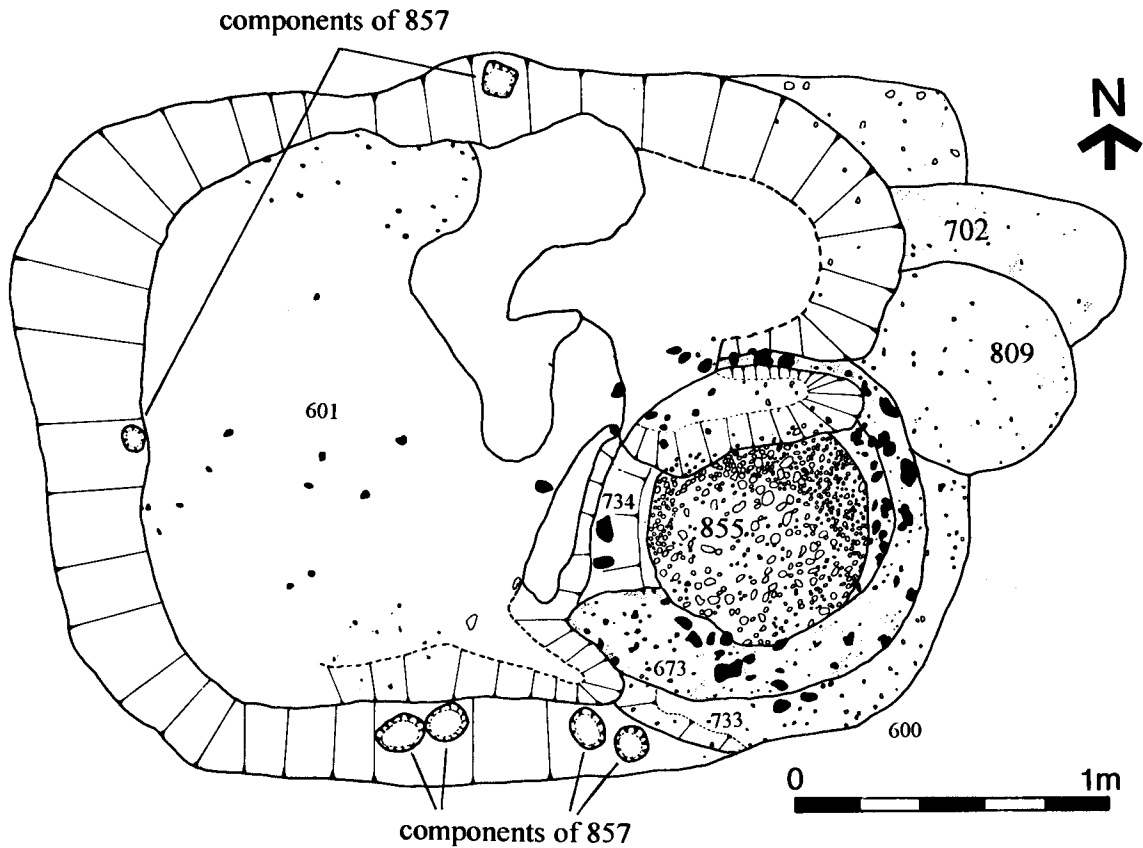


Fig. 12 Parker Road, Grays. Oven 855 in plan

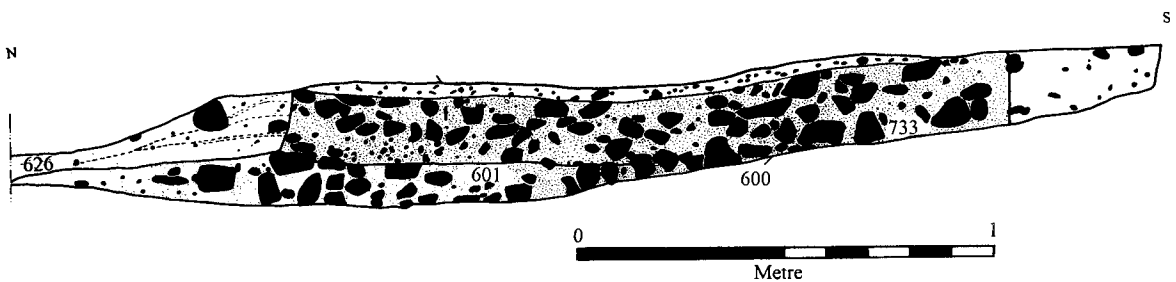


Fig. 13 Parker Road, Grays. Oven 855 in section

*Oven 855*

A circular, mortared flint oven (855) (Figs 12 and 13) was constructed in a large, relatively shallow, subrectangular, concave-sided and flat-bottomed construction pit. It was composed of a thick basal layer of flint and mortar rubble (735) occupying the south-eastern extent of cut 600. Above this a second and very similar deposit of flint and chalky mortar (733) was laid down which formed the flat and level platform above which the flint pebble oven or oven floor (674) was constructed. This was composed of small, rounded flint gravel pebbles, bonded with a light pinkish white, chalky mortar. Although this pebble and mortar floor represents the base or lining of the oven, the flint pebbles and mortar bonding showed only minor signs of crazing and heat discoloration. The minor discoloration in this structure would suggest that the life of the oven was very short or the temperatures produced within the oven were low.

A circular wall built with flint nodules (673) was constructed around the oven floor, which had an opening, or stokehole facing out into the western part of the construction cut 600. A compacted chalky mortar ramp (734) sloped down from the oven floor to the compacted chalk working surfaces and waste deposits, which filled the remainder of the construction cut.

A possible timber structure 857, represented by six post-holes was present in the western part of the construction cut. Its configuration suggests that these posts formed some kind of framework or scaffold associated with either the oven's use or construction, rather than a roofed building.

From the pottery recovered from associated working surfaces and waste deposits, the oven appears to have been in use during the 11th to 12th centuries. Pottery recovered from the disuse and destruction deposits (601, 620, 621, 747 and 748) suggests that it was abandoned and subsequently demolished toward the end of this period. Given the lack of any substantial waste deposits from within the oven structure itself or in the immediate vicinity, no definite use or product can be established. It was originally thought that the presence of burned chalk recovered from the ditches and from the working surfaces associated with the oven's use, indicated that it may have been used a lime kiln. However lime production requires considerable amounts of chalk, or alternative source for calcium carbonate, to be heated at high temperatures (Gibson 1996); the small amount of chalk found, together with the lack of evidence for intense heat, does not support this interpretation as a lime kiln.

*Pit 809*

This was a large, shallow, "scoop" located between, and cut by oven construction pit 600 and the north-south ditch 800. This had a single fill consisting of very light yellowish brown chalky mortar (810). It truncated ditch 702 on its southern side and was in turn truncated by the oven sub-structure. No dating evidence was recovered from this feature although the stratigraphic

relationships suggest that it post-dated ditch 702 and pre-dated the larger oven structure 855.

Although no definite evidence of any further medieval structures was found, a beam-slot 714/818 was identified, situated 2m to the north of, and running parallel to, ditch 701. This was a narrow and relatively long feature (0.30m x 10m), with almost vertical sides and a flat base. The absence of further slots or postholes, casts doubt on any structural interpretation, although the proximity of oven structure 855 to the south may suggest that this feature may be related. The single fill was similar to the fill of ditch 701 and the upper fills of the oven structure and produced a single sherd of 12th-century pottery.

All medieval activity in the area excavated appears to cease with the disuse and subsequent demolition of the oven.

**Post-Medieval***Layer 100*

This varied in thickness from 0.50m at the northern limit of the excavated area, gradually decreasing in depth towards the southwest limit of excavation, where topsoil and allotment related deposits were found to be directly above the natural clay and gravel. This would suggest that hill-wash was not responsible for its deposition, as usually it would be expected to find the greatest thickness of silts at the bottom of a slope.

Artefacts recovered from layer 100 had a very wide date range including struck and burned flint, Roman coins and pottery and fragments of tile and brick and pottery from post-medieval to 19th century in date. This would suggest that this layer is largely composed of redeposited material, probably associated with the large scale landscaping of the area at the end of the 18th century. The later disturbance of layer 100 is therefore presumably related to the chalk quarrying to the north of the site and the establishment of the allotments in the first half of this century

**The finds****Prehistoric Pottery**

by Nigel Brown

A small quantity (66 sherds weighing 164g) of prehistoric pottery was recovered from the excavation the material has been recorded according to the system devised for prehistoric pottery in Essex. The pottery is generally of small sherd size and abraded, in some cases, such as the pottery from context 738, very heavily. The range of flint and sand-tempered fabrics present are not closely dateable, but more than one period may be represented. Although rather abraded, the surface treatment and fabric of a sherd from context 100 appears similar to material from early Neolithic assemblages in Essex, including the Orsett causewayed enclosure (Hedges and Buckley 1978). A small sherd from context 808 might be part of a rolled rim of early Neolithic date although, since the top of the rim is missing definite identification is impossible. Fabric E which occurs in contexts 718, 720, 738, although known in earlier periods is very common in LBA and EIA assemblages, and the material from these contexts may be of that date.

**Late Iron Age and Roman pottery**

by Colin Wallace

There were 61 sherds/425 g of Late Iron Age and Roman pottery from 27 contexts. This pottery has been studied to identify the residual component in medieval features and to see whether or not any Roman features were among those excavated. Almost without exception, sherds were small and poorly preserved, so that in some cases identification are less certain than others and few specific forms could be recognised. The general lack of sherds, their small size, the lack of profiles or joining sherds and the poor preservation of surfaces are all signs that the Late Iron Age and Roman pottery was originally deposited at much earlier dates than those of the contexts in which it was found.

Virtually all the pottery, except for some unstratified sherds, could be subsumed under the broad date-range of Late Iron Age to early Roman (here probably 1st-2nd century AD). The only later pieces came from the north-south ditch 800 and the overburden (context 100). There were local and regional coarsewares, samian and amphora sherds and two late Roman finewares. The prehistoric and the medieval pottery are the subjects of separate reports; many contexts contain more than one sort of pottery.

Full details are recorded in the Pottery Record Forms and in an archive report. The pottery has been classified using the system current for all Essex sites (Going 1987, 3-54).

*The pottery in context*

There were two small Roman bodysherds from contexts 718 and 722 (and prehistoric flint-tempered pottery from several contexts in box-section 716).

*Ditch 800*

The Late Iron Age and Roman (LIA/R) pottery in these contexts (19 sherds/103.5g) can be dismissed as too poorly-preserved to be anything other than residual; the average sherd sizes are confirmation of this (LIA/R: 5.4g; Medieval 14.1g). The latest datable pieces were mid Roman dish rims (B2, fabric 47, context 851; and B3.2, fabric 47, context 758).

*Contexts earlier than the east-west ditches*

Aside from LBA/EIA pottery in context 738 and possible prehistoric pottery in context 746, there was a total of 6 sherds/29.5g of residual-looking Roman pottery from disturbance area 705, periglacial feature 743 and pit 844. Far better preserved was the medieval pottery from these contexts: features 669, 705 and 745 produced 7sherds/75g of 11th/12th-century pottery (Walker, below).

*The east-west ditches*

As with ditch 800, the LIA/R sherds (22 sherds/108g, and a possible prehistoric sherd in 624) are in poor condition and are clearly residual, especially when medieval pottery comes from features earlier than these ditches. Overall the average sherd size of the medieval pottery (4.7g) was almost as low as the residual LIA/Roman (4.9g), so that poor preservation is not confined to the latter. The key contexts however are the better-preserved fills (666, 650, 604 and 606), with higher average sherd sizes and diagnostic forms surviving, where the differences between medieval and Late Iron Age/Roman sherds are sharper.

**Medieval pottery**

by Helen Walker

*Introduction*

A very small quantity of medieval pottery, totalling 111 sherds weighing 1.07kg, was excavated from 21 contexts. The pottery has been recorded using Cunningham's typology (Cunningham 1985, 1-4) and her fabric numbers are quoted in this report. Finds comprise mainly early medieval fabrics with examples of traded early Surrey ware and London-type ware. The shelly wares, Fabrics 12A, B and C and early medieval ware, Fabric 13, are long-lived and have a date range of 10th to 13th centuries. These wares, and medieval coarse

ware, are fully described by Drury (1993, 78-86); see also Walker (1996) for a discussion of the dating of Fabrics 12 and 13. Several early medieval cooking-pot fragments are present and, in Essex, they can be roughly dated by their rim type; plain and thickened everted rims generally date from the 11th century, while beaded and thumbbed rims are usually dated to the 12th century (Cunningham 1982, 362). There is one example of a more developed rim, described below.

*Pottery from features earlier than east-west ditches*

The earliest features to contain pottery were natural periglacial features, which were, cut by east-west ditches 700 and 702 respectively. Periglacial feature 669 produced a single sherd of early medieval ware. In contrast, feature 745 produced rather more interesting pottery, comprising sand with superficial-shell-tempered ware cooking pot with a thickened everted rim and a sherd of early Surrey ware thumbbed cooking pot rim (No.1). A sherd from this vessel was also excavated from disturbance (fill 693), which was stratified below the E-W ditches and indicates that both features were backfilled at the same time. Early Surrey ware is described by Vince and Jenner (1991, 44, 73-5). It is made from a white-firing clay, which distinguishes it from Essex coarse wares, and is tempered with abundant, rounded, iron-stained quartz sand. As the name implies, this was made in the Surrey area, and is a common find in London, where it first appears in mid to late-11th century groups, but is most abundant in the late 11th to mid-12th-century (Vince and Jenner 1991, 75). To the author's knowledge, early Surrey ware has not been identified in Essex before, and has been classified as Fabric 23B in Cunningham's typology.

*The pottery from east-west ditches 700, 701, 702 and pit 616*

Only one context in ditch 700, fill 666, produced medieval pottery, comprising a body sherd of early medieval ware and a shell-and-sand-tempered ware beaded cooking-pot rim.

A small amount of pottery was excavated from several fills of ditch 701 with an average sherd size of only 5g. Most of this pottery comes from primary fills and comprises shelly wares (Fabrics 12A and B) and early medieval ware. No featured sherds are present, although a sherd of early medieval ware from fill 651 contained sparse inclusions of chalk (as well as coarse sand-tempering) which indicates a non-local origin. Indeed, an early medieval chalky ware is found in London (Vince and Jenner 1991, 70-2), but apart from the presence of chalk, the example found here is not particularly similar to that found in London. The most interesting find from E-W ditch 701 comprises three joining sherds from the base of a London-type ware jug found in the upper fill of ditch cut 649 (context 650). The base is flat or very slightly sagging and the fabric has buff surfaces and a thick pale grey core. There are splashes of pale green glaze on the sides and on the underside of the base. London-type ware is described by Pearce *et al.* (1985); it was made somewhere in the area of the City of London and its main period of production was the mid-12th to mid-13th century. Unfortunately the base is not a particularly datable type. Also in this fill was an early medieval ware thumbbed, beaded cooking-pot rim.

Pit 616, which cut ditch 701, produced sherds of shell-tempered ware including a fragment of bead-rim cooking pot. These sherds are oxidised to a burnt-orange colour and have an early, hand-made appearance. They are very similar to those found in ditch 701, fill 643, and may be derived from the ditch.

Parallel ditch 702 produced a similar amount of pottery, this time with an even smaller average sherd size of 4g. The upper fill of cut 664 (context 676) produced a single sherd of medieval coarse ware datable to the 12th to 14th centuries. The upper fill of cut 603 (context 604) produced examples of shelly wares (Fabrics 12A and 12B) including a Fabric 12B beaded cooking pot, and a body sherd of early Surrey ware.

With such a small amount of pottery from these features, it is difficult to assign a date, especially as the small sherd size and presence of Roman pottery suggest high residuality. The beaded cooking-pot rims and the single sherd of early Surrey ware would be consistent with an early to mid-12th century date, but the latest pottery is the London-type ware base dating from the mid-12th to mid-13th century. The sherd of medieval coarse ware and shell-tempered sherd with a developed-type rim may also be later, and could have

been deposited as late as the earlier 13th century.

*The pottery from oven structure 855, ditch 800 and slot 818*

The oven structure cut east - west ditch 702 and produced the largest group of pottery. Some sherds weighing 676 g were recovered from oven residue/working surfaces 611, 610 and demolition/back fill 601, with an average sherd size of 14g. The range of fabrics is similar to that from the east-west ditches and forms comprise cooking pots with thickened everted rims, and beaded rims (no.2), along with a possible bowl fragment with a plain everted rim. However there are no examples of the later London-type ware, medieval coarse ware or developed cooking-pot rims. Body sherds of early Surrey ware were found in demolition/backfill deposit (601) but not in the earlier layers, however as sherds from cooking pot no. 2 were found in fills (601) and (611), it quite likely that all fills were deposited contemporaneously.

Only one context in ditch 800 produced pottery, the middle fill of cut 794 (context 796), which was adjacent to the oven. It produced similar pottery to the oven, comprising a shell-tempered ware beaded cooking-pot rim (No.3) and part of the base of an early Surrey ware vessel, indicating this fill is contemporary with the oven. Both the oven and ditch fill 798 probably date to the first half of the 12th century. Small E-W slot 818 produced a single sherd of shell-and-sand-tempered ware.

*Pottery from overburden 100*

Single sherds of shell-tempered ware and transfer-printed ironstone, the latter dating to the early 19th to 20th century, were excavated from the overburden.

*Discussion of the medieval pottery*

The evidence that some of the pottery from the east-west ditches may post-date that from the stratigraphically later oven structure, suggests that at least parts of the ditches may still have been open after the disuse of the oven. The extreme date range of the pottery found on the site is 11th century (from the plain and thickened cooking-pot rims) to the mid 13th century. It is worth noting however that later medieval pottery was found during the evaluation, including Mill Green ware, which dates from the mid 13th to 14th century (Walker 1995).

The presence of early Surrey ware probably reflects the proximity of the Thames and extended distribution of pottery from London along the river. Although early Surrey ware has not been seen in the county before, later Kingston-type coarse wares from Surrey have been found at Rochford (Walker forthcoming) and Canvey (collected from the foreshore by Rochford Archaeological Group). These are both sites near the Thames and although Kingston-type ware glazed jugs are relatively common in Essex, the coarse wares are not normally found. The same conclusions cannot be drawn from the presence of London-type ware, however, as this ware is often found at inland sites in the county, albeit in small quantities, and does not constitute evidence of extended distribution along the Thames. There is not enough pottery to comment on the nature of the activity on this site but it certainly suggests the oven was not for the firing of pottery.

*Miscellaneous finds*

Other than the pottery, the only other artefacts recovered were modern finds from layer 100, such as 20<sup>th</sup>-century buttons and a toy cannon.

## Discussion

Although features and associated deposits were recognised from a number of periods, the relatively small quantity and poor quality of the artefacts makes accurate dating of the features and deposits very difficult, and only the medieval pot provides reasonable dating evidence.

The earliest activity is represented by a number of relatively small, shallow and localised pits and disturbances that can only be interpreted as areas of small-scale clay or gravel quarrying. A late prehistoric or

early Roman date is suggested for these features by the presence of small amounts of very abraded pottery from these periods *only* in their lower fills, all of which had the appearance of naturally deposited accumulated silts associated with the pits having been left open after excavation, and their relationship with more closely dateable features and deposits that were stratigraphically later.

The uneven bases of the pit cuts and the nature of the fills present suggest that these were excavated and utilised over a period of time. The apparent large extraction pits are probably the result of several smaller quarrying features densely located in one area. This was most evident in the eastern extent of pit 716 where individual workings were found to disturb redeposited material from earlier quarrying. The similarity in fills is probably partly due to natural silting, but it is also likely that once the flint and larger gravel pebbles had been extracted, the remaining soil matrix then was discarded back into the worked extraction pit.

The areas of flint or clay extraction would appear to have been abandoned at around the same time as the cutting of the large north-south ditch 800 and the apparently contemporary and less substantial, east-west aligned ditch 700. The pottery recovered from their primary fills suggest a late Roman or sub-Roman date for these ditches. It is interesting to note that 800 although stratigraphically later than 716, was found apparently to cut only its lower or primary fills, suggesting that the pit had only been partially backfilled in the deeper, eastern half, with both the clay pit and the ditch appearing to share the same upper fill.

Although the pottery recovered from the primary fills of this feature was scarce and very abraded, suggesting residuality, it is important to note the absence of later pottery from these deposits. This may suggest that although no conclusive evidence was recovered to date the ditch to the Roman period, the ditch would appear to have been well established and subsequently partially backfilled prior to the deposition of later medieval material which was only recovered from the later, upper fills of the ditch. These upper fills appear to have been deposited at the same time as the east-west ditches and oven structure were established.

The ditches that bisect the excavated area all appear to have been relatively short-lived. The lower fills of light coloured clayey silts representing a moderate period of slow, natural silting, and upper fills of a much darker, 'dirtier' nature suggesting a far more rapid and deliberate infilling contemporary with the construction, use and demolition of the later oven.

The oven 855 was, stratigraphically, the latest activity on site below the layer of allotment soils, with deposits associated with its use and destruction occurring in the upper fills of both ditches 800 and 701. The deposits associated with the demolition of the oven structure contained the largest and latest group of pottery, although the presence of Roman pottery in these deposits illustrates a high degree of residuality and cross-context contamination. A further demonstration



of this is the presence of pottery, in the upper fill of ditch 702 (the cutting of which pre-dates the construction of the oven), of a later date than that found in the deposits associated with the demolition of the oven, suggesting that although the various ditches were cut and used as field boundaries and drains at various stages through out the site's development, they were not backfilled deliberately but simply silted up when as they went out of use.

There is some evidence to suggest that ditch 800 was still a visible and possibly still respected as a land boundary with the ditches 701 and 702 terminating just short of it. It was noted that all medieval activity was situated to the west of the ditch and concentrated in the north-western corner of the area investigated. This suggests that the focus of any domestic occupation may be situated on the flatter land to the northwest of the site.

There is no evidence to suggest that the area was ever more than open farmland throughout the later medieval and post-medieval periods, to the end of the 18th century, when it was landscaped in conjunction with the construction of Belmont Castle to the north. It is not possible from the results of this excavation to determine the extent of truncation occurring to the archaeological deposits caused by the landscaping and subsequent levelling of the area for allotment use. As both the homogenous layer (100) and the very modern garden soils associated with the allotments were found to be in contact with the natural clay and gravel suggests that some, if not all, archaeological deposits will have been affected in some way.

#### Bibliography

- Clarke, C.P. 1996 *Stifford County Primary School Parker Road, Grays, Essex Archaeological Evaluation*. ECC Planning Division
- Cunningham, C. M. 1985 'A typology for post-Roman pottery in Essex', in Cunningham, C. M. and Drury, P. J., *Post-medieval sites and their pottery: Moulsham Street, Chelmsford*, and Chelmsford Archaeol. Trust Rep. 5, CBA Res. Rep. 54, 1-16
- Cunningham, C.M. 1982 'The medieval and post-medieval pottery', in Drury, P.J., 'Aspects of the origin and development of Colchester Castle', *Antiq. J.*, 139, 358-80
- Drury, P. J. 1993 'The later Saxon, medieval and post-medieval pottery', in Rodwell, W. J. and Rodwell, K. A., *Rivenhall: Investigations of a villa, church and village, 1950 - 1977*, Chelmsford Archaeol. Trust Rep. 4.2. CBA Rep. 80, 78-95
- Garwood, A. 1995 *Belmont Allotments, Parker Road Grays, Essex Archaeological Evaluation*. ECC Planning Division
- Gibson, S. 1996 *The Essex Lime Industry*. ECC Planning Division
- Going, C.J. 1987 *The Mansio and other sites in the south-eastern sector of Caesaromagus: the Roman pottery*, CBA Res. Rep. 62
- Hedges, J.D. and Buckley, D.G. 1978 'Excavations at a Neolithic Causewayed enclosure, Orsett, Essex 1975', *Proc. Prehist. Soc.* 44, 219-308
- Manning, W. 1968 'Excavation of an Iron Age and Roman site at Chadwell St Mary', *Trans. Essex Archaeol. Soc.* 3 ser 1, 127-40
- Pearce, J. E., Vince, A. G. and Jenner, M. 1985 *A Dated Type Series of London Medieval Pottery Part 2: London-type wares*, Trans. London and Middlesex Archaeol. Soc. Special paper no. 6
- Reidy, K. 1995 *Stifford County Primary School Parker Road, Grays, Essex Archaeological Evaluation*. ECC Planning Division
- Vince, A. G. 1991 'Early medieval London: refining the chronology', *London Archaeol.* 6, 263-71
- Vince, A. G. and Jenner, M. A. 1991 'The Saxon and early medieval pottery of London', in Vince (ed.) *Aspects of Saxon and Norman London 2: Finds and Environmental Evidence*, London and Middlesex Archaeol. Soc. special paper no. 12, 19 - 119
- Walker, H. Forth-coming 'The medieval and later pottery', in Isserlin, R. M. J. and Wadhams, M., 'The excavation and recording of a medieval hall house at 17 South Street, Rochford, Essex'
- Walker, H. 1995 'The Medieval and later pottery', in Reidy, K. *Stifford County Primary School Parker Road Grays, Essex Archaeological Evaluation*. ECC Planning Division.
- Walker, H. 1996 'Medieval and post-medieval pottery', in Medycott, M., 'The medieval farm and its landscape: excavations at Stebbingford Farm, Felsted', *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* 27, 73-92
- Wilkinson, T. J. 1988 'Archaeology and Environment in South Essex: Rescue Archaeology along the Grays By-pass 1979/80', *E. Anglian Archaeol.* 42

## The Probable Site of Pleshey Old Church Located

By Michael J. Cuddeford and Peter J. Cott

### Introduction

The village of Pleshey constitutes one of the most significant medieval sites in Essex, with the earthworks of a motte and bailey castle and a medieval brick bridge standing within a ditched town enclosure (Fig. 14). Despite the historical potential of the location, archaeological work has been limited to a number of early investigations on the motte, and excavations within the upper bailey between 1959 - 1963. Other than that there has only been minor work carried out within the town enclosure as and when opportunity has afforded itself through planning applications.

The ecclesiastical history of the village is described in Williams (1977); relevant references are summarised here. References occur to a maximum of six religious buildings in Pleshey, of which some may be one and the same. There was certainly a chapel in the upper bailey of the castle, and quite probably one within the castle itself. A chapel with cemetery was dedicated in c. 1175 to alleviate the need for townspeople to use the mother church at High Easter. Gough (1803, 90) published a mid 13th-century document relating to the dedication of the 'ecclesia de Plecy' to Our Lord, St. Mary, St. Nicholas and All Saints. After 1394 the parish church was taken down and rebuilt on its present site as part of the new chantry college founded by Thomas of Woodstock. It would seem likely that if the 12th-century chapel was replaced by a new parish church in the 13th-century, it would have been constructed on or near to the same site in order to continue to serve the cemetery. It is clear from the foundation charter of the college (itemised by Gough 1803, 175-81) that a chapel dedicated to St. Nicholas continued in use on the site for some time afterwards.

The Ordnance Survey gives the position of the original parish church, referred to as St. Mary's Church, as being in the middle of a field to the NW of Back Lane. The Tithe Award map gives the name of this field as the Old Churchyard.

In 1957, a dwelling was constructed on a plot of land

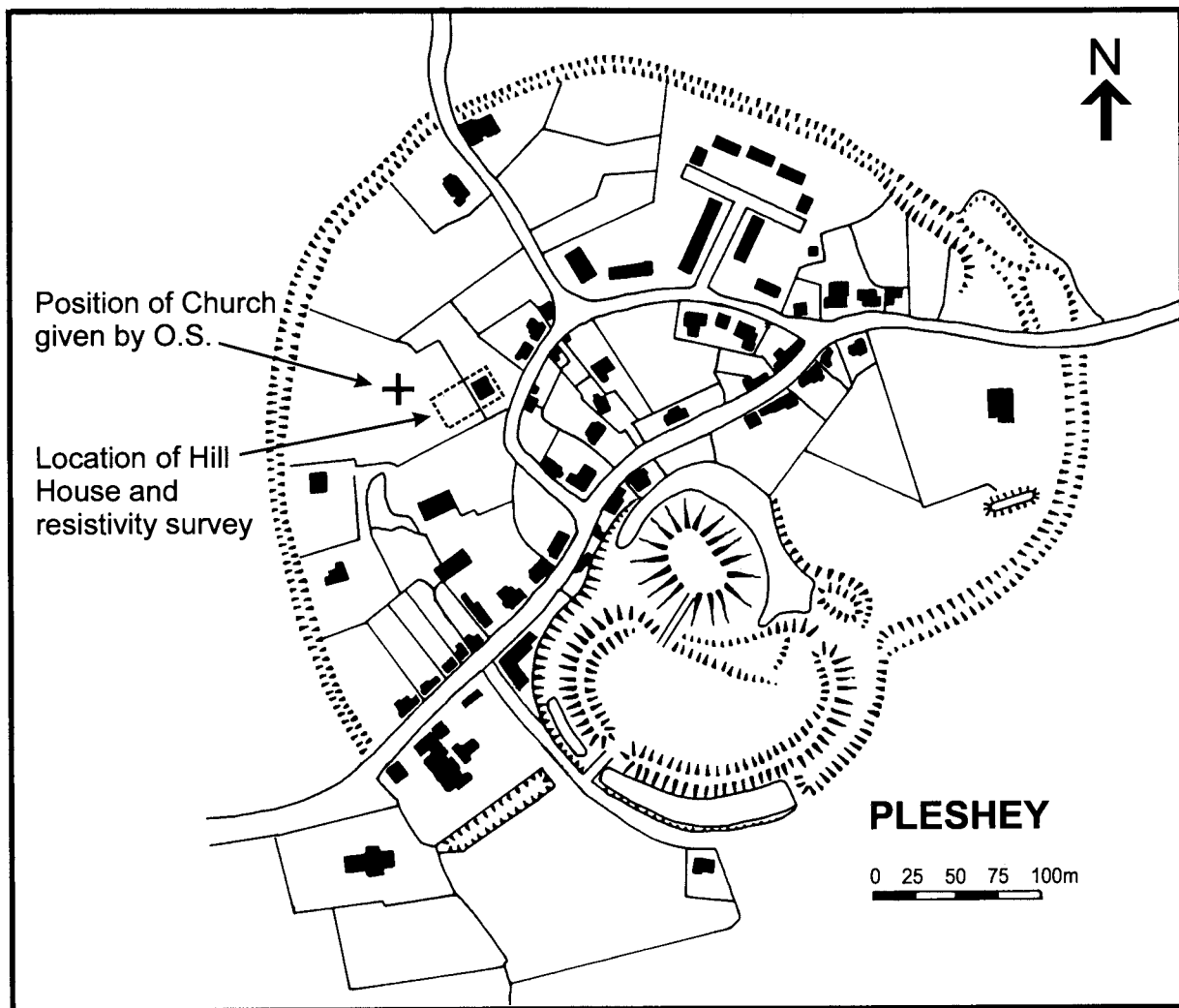


Fig. 14 Pleshey, Hill House. Site location. (Reproduced by kind permission of Ordnance Survey. © Crown copyright NC/01/154)

adjacent to the eastern boundary of this field. Part of the plot had formally been occupied by a timber-framed barn built in 1889, and which was demolished in the 1950s. The 1957 house was originally called "Braehame" (now Hill House), and was constructed of 9" solid brick on concrete footings. The house was purchased from the former resident (who was also the original builder) by its present owner in 1989. Because of the historic nature of the location, the present owner had asked the former resident if any archaeology had been observed during construction or subsequent occupancy, and was informed that nothing had been found.

During the occupancy of the present owner, some archaeology had been evident. The soil of a vegetable garden some 30m NE of the house contained many small abraded pottery sherds of medieval date, as well as oyster shell fragments. A swimming pool installed adjacent to the vegetable plot in 1992 was subject to a watching brief, but revealed little other than a few more sherds, plus a few fragments of burnt daub. The vegetable garden had been formed from part of a large meadow, which in medieval times could conceivably have contained habitation. In 1994 a patio was laid to

the rear of the property, which involved the turf being stripped back with a small digger. The removal of the turf revealed many fragments of tile, some of Roman origin, in the underlying soil. Some topsoil was also removed by the digger, which on examination produced a farthing of Edward III, a copper-alloy buckle plate of probable 13th-century date, and a brass thimble of probable 19th-century date. Additionally, several large fragments of pewter and a number of bone fragments were recovered from one particular spot where the digger had inadvertently dug deeper. The timescale of the contractor precluded any further investigation, and a patio was duly laid over a hardcore base. A subsequent examination and metallurgical analysis of the pewter fragments suggested that they represented a chalice and paten made substantially from tin.

In 1996, planning consent was granted to extend the property with additions to the north and east side. As the site fell within the area of Pleshey scheduled as an ancient monument, consent was also sought and granted by English Heritage, whose only stipulation was the requirement of a watching brief. At this stage there was still no real reason to question the position of the church as given by the Ordnance Survey, but the finds

of 1994 emphasised the need to be vigilant.

The first stage of the operation was to clear the 1994 patio, and to dig footing trenches to a depth of 1.2m. The first trench was abutted to the existing NW corner of the property and within the first five minutes of excavation a human femur was observed in the spoil. Careful mechanical excavation continued, revealing a mass of disarticulated human bones, including a skull, in one concentrated area in the approximate location of the previous chalice and paten find. The trench then turned 90 degrees around the bones, and proceeded in an easterly direction to interface with further foundation trenches on the east side of the house (Fig 15). In the course of completing the footings on the east side, at

least a further six burials were cut through, and a quantity of human bone was collected from the excavated spoil. Additionally, a number of flint rubble features interpreted as wall footings were sectioned by the trenches. The timescale of the contractor, and to some extent the sensibilities of some of the workers to the human remains, made detailed examination of the archaeology difficult. The flint rubble footings were recorded by the ECC staff, and the general positions of the burials noted. Excavated spoil was initially dumped on the site, and later removed to landfill. This was examined for finds with no result. It was clear that apart from the flint rubble features and the inhumations, very little other archaeology appeared to be present.

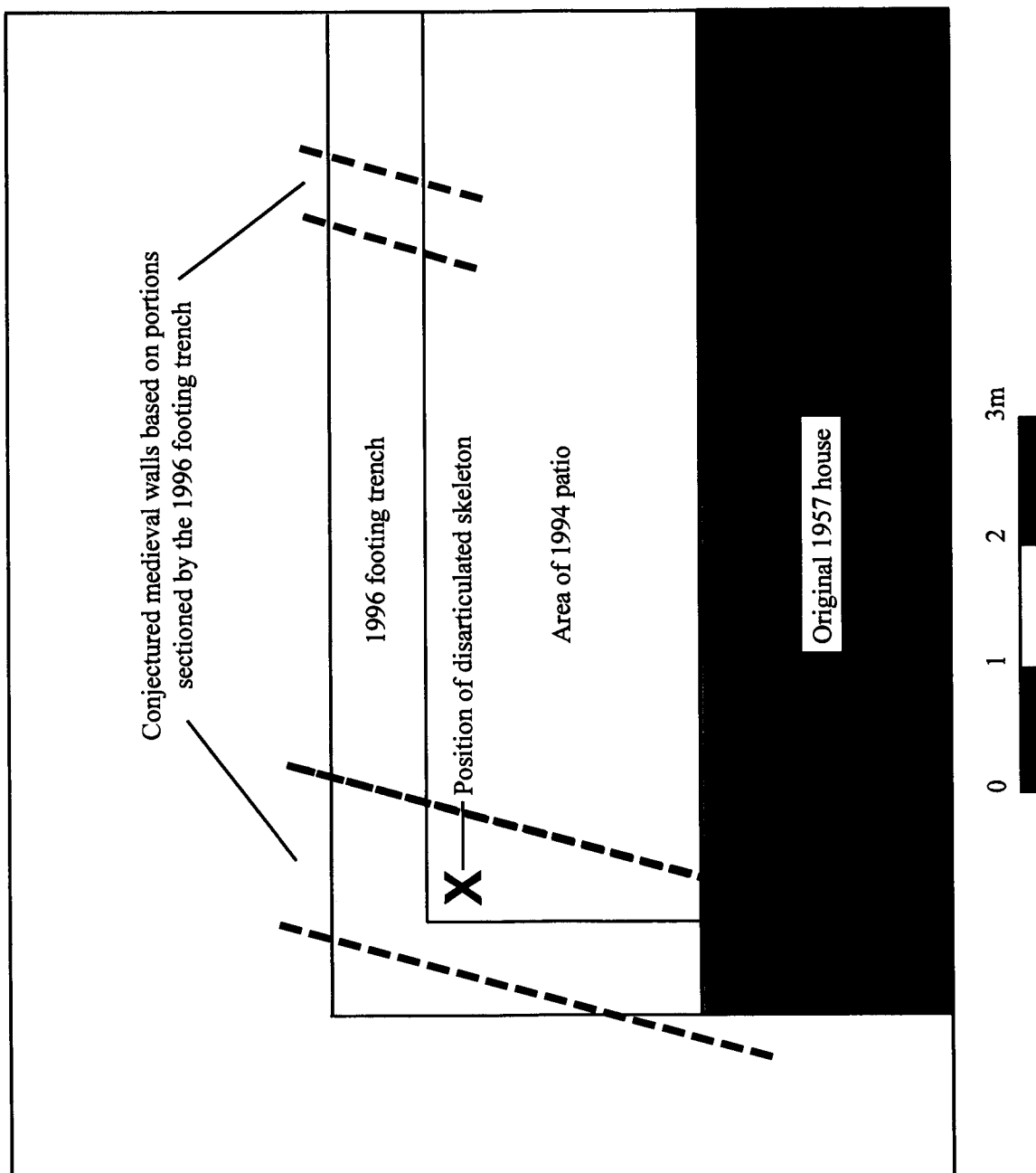


Fig. 15 Pleshey, Hill House. Plan of main archaeological features

**The flint rubble features**

The westernmost foundation trench revealed that the NW corner of the 1957 house sat on a shallow concrete footing excavated directly into an underlying flint rubble feature, interpreted as a wall footing. The top of this

foundation was 0.34m below the modern surface, 0.45m high, 1.10m wide and evident for 3.00m, which was the extent of the trench. The flints were of various sizes, bonded with sand and lime mortar. Another flint rubble footing 0.40m deep and 0.40m wide was sectioned at about 5m east of the 1m wall. The

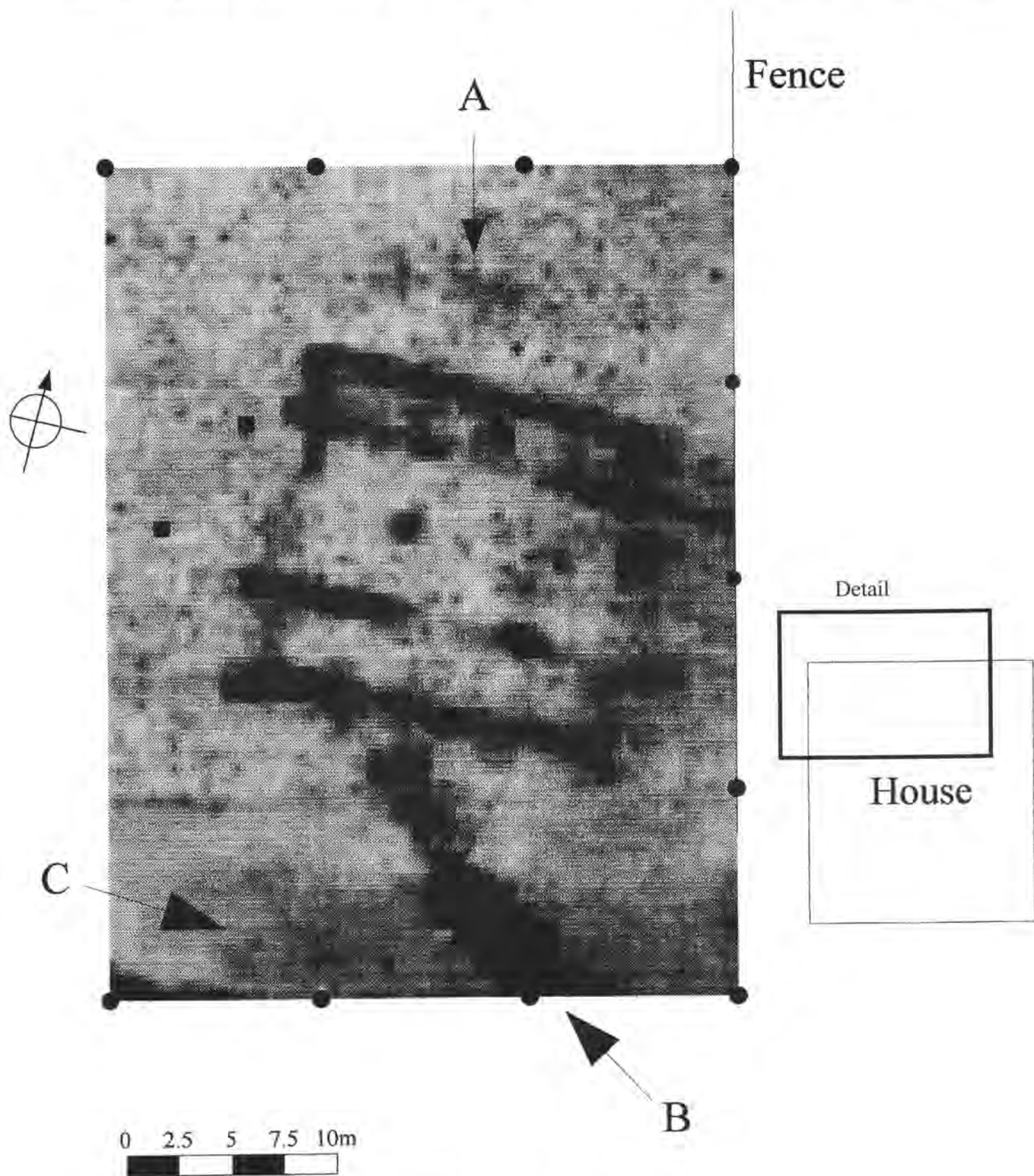


Fig. 16 Pleshey, Hill House. Resistivity survey plot

alignment of both features was north-south (Fig. 15).

The location and nature of these features strongly suggested that they represented elements of the original church demolished in 1394, which clearly lay further east than was indicated on the OS map. In order to further explore this hypothesis permission was sought and granted by English Heritage to carry out a resistivity survey of the adjoining field.

### The resistivity survey

The survey was carried out in September and October 1996 in the field immediately west of Hill House. The weather was generally warm and dry, but the soil was sufficiently moist to facilitate good conductivity. The survey area covered 1200 sq.m., comprised of 12 metre squares with sides 10m in length. In each 10m square, readings were taken at 0.5m intervals using a zigzag method of survey. There were therefore 400 readings per square. A baseline was set up along the fence at the west side of Hill House, from which the 12 survey squares were constructed.

The survey plot uses a grey scale method of presentation, in which a particular shade of grey is allocated to each of the 400 readings per square. Thus a high reading, representing a probable presence of stone, masonry or brick appears black, and a low reading, which represents an absence of such materials, or possibly a ditch, appears white.

Each 10m square in the raw data plot was plotted without any upper or lower cut-off value, and each square was matched in contrast as nearly as possible to its neighbour. No contrast factor was used, so the plot density in each square varies linearly from the minimum to the maximum value according to the resistance value.

The result appeared to indicate a rectangular building on an east-west alignment (Fig. 16). It suggested masonry foundations that had not been completely robbed in antiquity. The building dimensions are approximately 18m east-west, and 15m north-south. There appear to be two "aisles", the northern being 3m wide and the southern 4m. A projection of the southern central wall would take it to a 90 degree return interface with the section of wall exposed in the 1996 footing trench at Hill House. All measurements were taken between the centres of the dark lines on the plot. At the west end of the feature, and again in the south-east corner, there is a suggestion that buttresses may be present.

Discrete high resistance responses are present in the centre of the north "aisle", in the centre of the main body of the building, and at the eastern end. These responses may have been caused by blocks of masonry associated with the construction, or by rubble accumulated when the building was demolished.

Anomaly A on the plot is outside the north wall of the building, and was probably caused by stone or masonry.

Anomaly B on the plot appears to be a curved run of stone or masonry. One possibility may be a metalled path to a south doorway.

Anomaly C is an area of high resistance along the southern edge of the plot. This was almost certainly caused by the presence of fir trees along the field boundary at this point.

### The inhumations

As mentioned, some six burials in addition to the disarticulated one were sectioned by the footing trenches. Most were at the 1.2m limit of the trench, some being evident only by a cavity appearing in the bottom of the trench where a skull was sliced by the digger bucket. One burial was at a slightly higher level. All were, as far as could be ascertained, on a general east-west alignment. All were left *in situ*, with only bones recovered from excavated spoil being collected. These comprised two or three partial skulls and various small bones. They were placed in a box in a sump excavated at the south-east corner of the garage, and were buried below the concrete of the footing. In the small area exposed by the footings trenches, all but one of the burials was at the same depth, and with no evidence of intercutting.

The disarticulated remains were excavated by hand, and were found to comprise a nearly complete adult skeleton. The interment was completely disassembled, and lay in an area of around 0.6m square, in a hole that cut directly into the 1.10m rubble footing. The top of the interment cannot have been much more than 20cm from the modern surface at most. It was clear that the interment represented a re-burial, but there was nothing evident that might give a date for such action. A small fragment of rusted iron of indeterminate function was found under the burial, but no nails or other fittings were observed. The bones had either been placed directly into the shallow rectangular hole, or in a container of which no trace remained.

### Analysis of the exhumed remains

The disarticulated human remains uncovered in the preliminary stages of the excavation were removed and examined by Dr. Sarah Bakewell, a local G.P. The skeleton was approximately 90% complete, which Dr. Bakewell assessed as being that of a male aged around 35-45 years old, and of slight build. The individual was determined to have had an adequate diet, albeit of a coarse ground nature as evidenced by considerable wear to the teeth. All the teeth were otherwise intact and in good condition. A general lack of wear to most of the joints suggested someone not engaged in regular manual labour. There were however traces of arthritis in the vertebrae of the lower back, and traces of wear to the neck vertebrae. There was also some wear evident to the surviving kneecap. Dimensions: overall length of femur 46cm., excluding neck of femur 43cm.

In accordance with the wishes of the Diocese, the remains of this burial were re-interred in the present-day churchyard, in a simple ceremony conducted by the Bishop of Bradwell. At the request of the Church the chalice and paten were also interred. Details of the discovery were encapsulated in acrylic and buried with

the remains.

**The chalice and paten**

Although found separately and previously to the discovery of the exhumed skeleton, it seems most probable that the chalice and paten formed part of the same deposit. The paten was a flat plate decorated with three concentric circles (Fig. 17). The outer edge was reduced for the whole circumference, making it impossible to estimate the original diameter, or if any outer rim had been present. The chalice survived as three fragments, which were the lower part of the bowl, the bottom of the bowl and part of the stem, and the

remains of the foot. The fragments were subjected to X-ray fluorescence spectrometry analysis, which revealed that they were predominately tin, with a little more than 10% being lead with just traces of copper, antimony and bismuth. The pieces were recovered as one compressed mass, suggesting that they had been placed upright as in use, and then subjected to direct downward pressure.

The practice of burying chalices and patens with clergymen is well documented. William de Blois, Bishop of Worcester, specified in 1229 that every church should have two chalices, one of silver for the Mass and the other of tin for burial with a priest. Although silver-gilt vessels were used for some high-echelon churchmen,

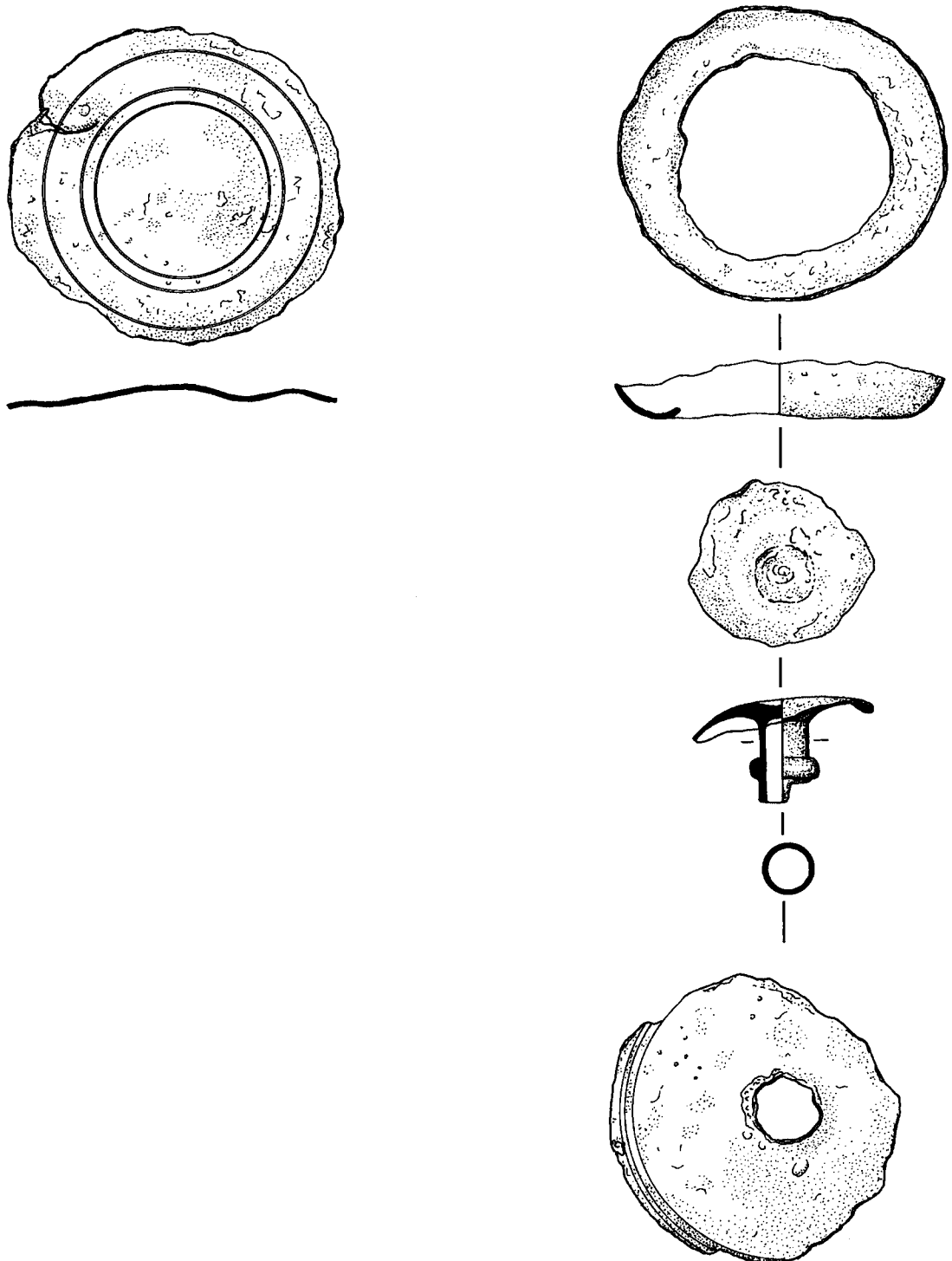


Fig. 17 Pleshey, Hill House. Chalice and paten (scale 1:4)

most recovered from burials are indeed of pewter, lead or tin. A useful discussion may be found in Biddle (1990, 789), and a number are illustrated and discussed in Bruce-Mitford (1959). Chalices have been found in various locations in relation to the bodies. A silver-gilt example accompanying the body of Archbishop Hubert Walter (Archbishop of Canterbury 1193-1205) had been placed to the right of the Bishop's body. Examples from Wharram Percy and from Lincoln have the chalices on the right shoulder. In a burial at Barton-on-Humber (Rodwell 1989, 164), a chalice and paten stood upright, clasped in the hands of the corpse upon his stomach. In such a position the downward collapse of a grave would possibly achieve the same sort of compression as that noted in the Pleshey example.

The dating of base metal chalices is dependent on likening examples to more datable silver parallels, and giving consideration to any other dating evidence for relevant burials. The practice seems to have been current from around the 12th century until perhaps the 16th. On stylistic grounds the Pleshey chalice would accord with the 13th-century date attributed to the chalices from the Chapter House vestibule graves at Lincoln.

### Conclusions

The evidence implies that the original church of St. Mary is adjacent to, and partially underlies the present property known as Hill House. The resistivity results appear to show an aisled building on an east-west alignment. Features at the east end were unclear, but the substantial nature of the footings at that point may be significant. If the 13th-century church had been built to a cruciform plan (used for larger post-1200 churches and used for the 1394 collegiate church at Pleshey - a selection of cruciform churches are illustrated in Blair and Pyrah 1996, 16) one would expect substantial foundations at the crossover point of nave, chancel and transepts. The lesser foundation would also accord with the expected position of a chancel east wall. No transepts were however evident within the limitations of this investigation, and the lesser foundation could equally be an external structure, or part of the chapel of St. Nicholas. The resistivity plan also shows an anomaly in the respective widths of the two aisles, if that is indeed what they are. Another explanation may be the superimposition of two structures of different phases. Only excavation is likely to resolve this.

The finding of Roman brick is not surprising, and can be paralleled in many churches where nearby "villa" ruins were robbed to provide convenient material for reinforcing corners or window arches. A "villa" is located some 1.5 km west of the village, and another has been recently identified at a similar distance to the south (exact location recorded on ECC SMR). Very little Roman brick is evident in the existing parish church, but this was itself extensively robbed following the Reformation. The present structure is largely late 18th century with substantial 19th-century additions, but apparently following the original cruciform plane of the

collegiate chapel.

The association of the chalice and paten with the disarticulated burial cannot be certain, as the finds were made on two separate occasions. The circumstantial evidence however suggests strongly that they were associated, with the chalice and paten being scraped from the top of the burial in 1994. The remains were clearly re-interred on the site, but when is not clear. The builder of the present property is adamant that this was not done during construction of the house, which indeed seems likely as one would expect any such reburial to be at some remove from a new property. The location of the re-interment would place it in the area of the presumed chancel of the church, where it was in all probability originally buried. It may have been a re-interment of a chapel priest when the church was enlarged, or the contents of a demolished tomb re-interred on site once the fabric of the church had been removed, or uncovered by chance at a much later date and reburied. The fact that the burial had partially cut into the robber trench and consequently into the surviving masonry footings suggests that those excavating were unaware of what lay beneath. This together with the apparent compression of the chalice would suggest reburial at some time after the demolition of the church in 1394.

It has been postulated that the line of Back Lane represents an original lower bailey for the first castle thought to have been built by Geoffrey de Mandeville the Elder. If this is so the close proximity of the church suggests that any earthworks for a lower bailey had been removed by the time of the church's foundation. William de Mandeville was granted a licence to fortify (re-fortify?) Pleshey Castle in 1180, which may approximate with the founding of the chapel and the levelling of any earthworks in Back Lane. Further supporting the early removal of any earthworks was the discovery of 13th-century pottery sealed beneath the floor of a cottage on the opposite side of Back Lane (ECC SMR), in a position that would presumably have been covered by the inner rampart of the lower bailey had it previously existed.

### Acknowledgements

The authors are most grateful to Dr. Sarah Bakewell for her examination of the skeleton, to Dr. John Richardson of the British Pewter Society for his analysis of the chalice and paten, and to Sarah Gibson for much help and advice.

### References

- Biddle, M. 1990 *Object and Economy in Medieval Winchester*. OUP
- Blair, J. and Pyrah, C. 1996 *Church Archaeology - Research Directions for the Future*. CBA Res. Rep. 104
- Bruce-Mitford, R. 1959 'The Chapter House Vestibule Graves at Lincoln and the Body of St. Hugh of Avalon', in F.G. Emmison and R. Stephens (eds.), *Tribute to an Antiquary*, 127-40
- Gough, R. 1803 *The History and Antiquities of Pleshey in the County of Essex*. London
- Rodwell, W. 1989 *Church Archaeology*. London
- Williams, F. 1977 *Excavations at Pleshey Castle*. BAR 42

## Medieval Remains at Parsonage Farm, Wimbish

By D. A. G. Gadd

With a contribution by H. Walker

*The watching brief on ground-level reduction and excavation of footings prior to the building of an extension at Parsonage Farm, Wimbish, revealed various structural and cut features. These included a metalled pathway, probable wall footings, and a number of pits and/or ditches. Most features dated to the 13th century and the pottery evidence suggests continuous occupation on this site from that time to the present day.*

### Introduction

This report describes the results of an archaeological watching brief carried out in September 1999 during the reduction of ground level and the excavation of footing trenches for an extension to Parsonage Farm, Wimbish. Also included are the results of an evaluation of the area in 1995. English Heritage and HAMP

monitored the work.

### Historical and Archaeological Background

The site, which was first recorded on court rolls of 1392 as Personeslane, is a Scheduled Ancient Monument (SAM 20712) comprising a moat and three fish ponds. The moated site is sub-rectangular in shape, measuring c. 90m north-south by 75m east-west (Fig. 18). The arms of the moat are between 6m to 10m in width and seasonally contain water. The present house dates to the 19th century, but its foundations are from an earlier structure, and survive partially incorporated within it (see below).

Three fishponds, located to the west, south and east of the moat, are also included in the scheduling. All three fishponds were originally connected to the moat and to this day two of the ponds still contain water.

The moat at Parsonage Farm has been cleaned out on a fairly regular basis, at least once every 25 years the last time being in or around 1973 (Mr F. Dhalla, pers. comm.).

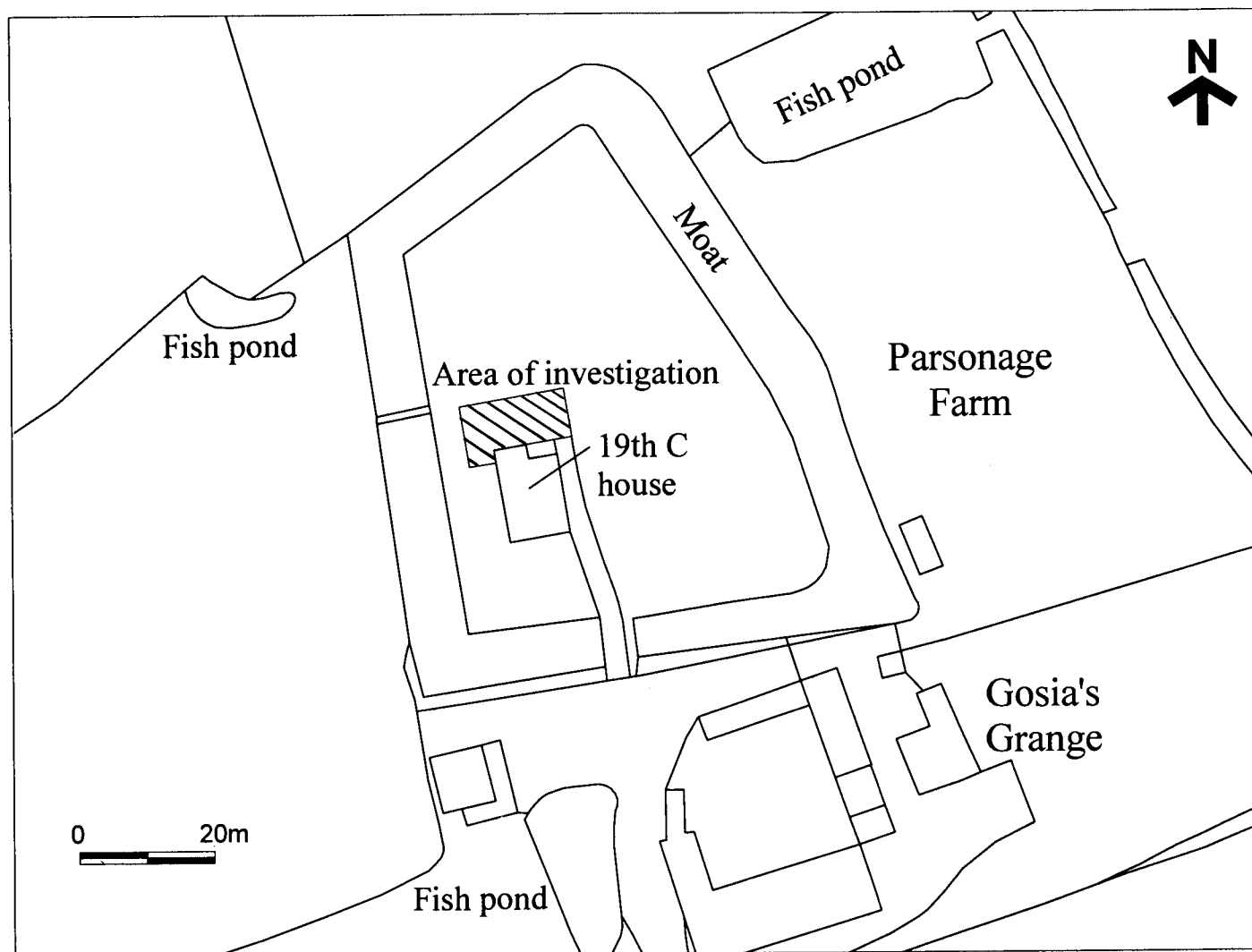


Fig. 18 Parsonage Farm, Wimbish. Site location.  
(Reproduced by kind permission of Ordnance Survey. © Crown copyright NC/01/154)



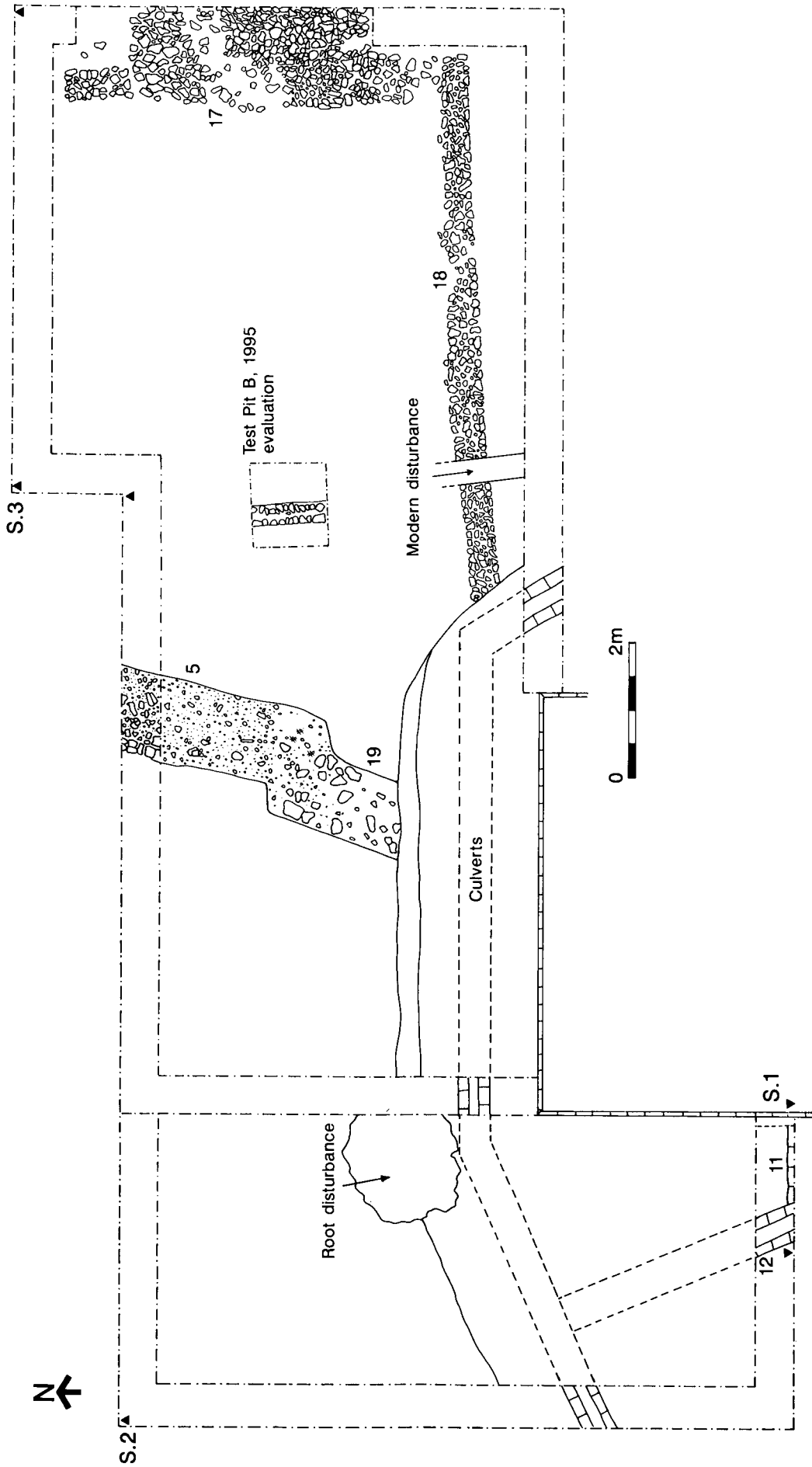


Fig. 19 Parsonage Farm, Wimbish. Plan of excavation

*Location and Topography*

The site of the proposed development lies immediately to the north of the present house and covers an area of 106.3m<sup>2</sup> within the moated enclosure of Parsonage Farm, Wimbish (Fig. 18). The moat lies on high ground, 1.8km south-west of All Saints Church and immediately north of the junction of the B184 Thaxted Road and Water Lane. The underlying geology of the site is chalky boulder clay.

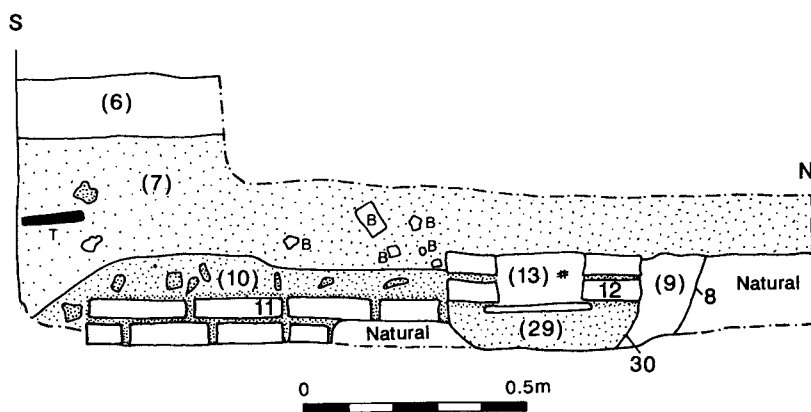
*The Excavation*

The watching brief and excavation took place over an area covering 106m<sup>2</sup> immediately to the north of the existing house (Figs 18 and 19). Topsoil was machine stripped to a depth of 0.3m. The foundation trenches were then excavated by hand to a depth of between 0.7m – 0.9m. The archaeological deposits and structural remains were cleaned and recorded in both plan and section. All finds were collected and removed for specialist analysis.

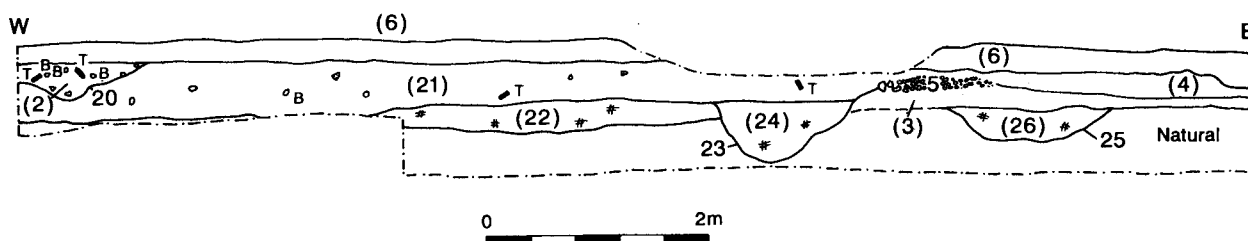
**Fieldwork**

Ground-level reduction and subsequent cleaning, revealed four structural features. The first, contexts (5/19), formed a disjointed metallated feature running roughly north-south; it was subsequently revealed in section when the footings for the extension were excavated (Figs 19 and 20). Pottery from this feature and the deposit directly below dated from the 13th century. A culvert trench cut the southern extent of feature 19. This appeared to run around the northern extension of the present building and is likely to be contemporary with the foundations of the first phase of its construction (Fig. 19).

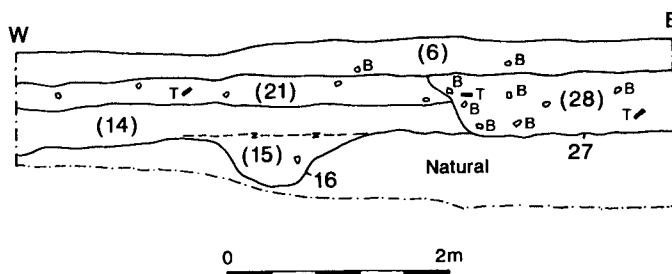
Feature 17, possibly a wall foundation, consisted of an area of unmortared flint cobbling aligned north-south (Fig. 19). The cobbling, as exposed, measured a maximum of 1.1m wide and 4.5m long. The northern most part was only 0.4m wide, and could be interpreted as a wall footing. The southernmost end appeared to lie beneath the mortared flint feature, 18, though this was



Section 1. North facing section through masonry structure 11 & culvert 12 in southern/most foundation trench.



Section 2. South facing section along north central stretch of foundation trench.



Section 3. South facing section along northern foundation trench at east end.

Fig. 20 Parsonage Farm, Wimbish. Selected sections; refer to Fig. 19 for locations of these

difficult to define. Pottery from feature 17 included a decorated sherd from an early medieval curfew, dated generally to the range 10th to the 14th/early 15th centuries.

Feature 18, aligned east-west, consisted of flint cobbles bonded with a sandy yellowish mortar. As exposed, the feature measured 6.5m long by 0.35m wide and was cut at its western end by the same culvert trench that cut context 19 (Fig. 19). Larger cobbles with smaller ones to fill in between had been carefully laid to achieve an even facing on both sides of the wall. The feature is therefore interpreted as a wall footing.

Test pit B from the 1995 evaluation (Fig. 19) indicated the presence of a wall the visible extent of which measured 0.9m long by 0.3m wide running north-south. The test pit was located 3m north-east of the existing extension. Every care was taken during the reduction of ground level for the proposed extension to locate and preserve this feature, but no sign of it was detected. It should be noted that the reduction of ground level was to a depth lower than that of the evaluation.

The drainage culverts seen running around the northern extension headed south-west towards the moat, and were of a brick wall and tile base type. Two courses of bricks (context 11) running perpendicular to the present northern extension, were partially revealed in the south-western corner of the site, during excavation of the footing trench. This structure stepped out from the wall over a distance of 1m, where it butted up against culvert 12 (Figs 19 and 20). It was noted that the top five courses of bricks that formed the wall plate of the extension were new, and sat on top of a foundation of seven courses of pre 19th-century bricks.

Hand excavation of the northern foundation trenches revealed five features that were only visible in section once the foundation trenches had been excavated. Also revealed were medieval and post-medieval deposits.

Feature 20 and 27 were post-medieval in date with high concentrations of tile, brick and mortar (Fig. 20). Although pit-like, the precise nature of these features could not be determined due to the confines of the trench.

Feature 23 appeared to be a ditch running on the same alignment as feature 5 and cut layer (22). No finds were assigned to it, as it was only seen in section (Fig. 20). Layers (22) and (14) contained medieval pottery and may represent an occupation layer, although no detailed investigation was possible.

Feature 25 was either a ditch or a pit cut through natural subsoil and appearing below context (3). The latter dated to the early 13th century and seemed, in section, to be a spread lying under metal path 5 (Fig. 20). Two sherds of 12th-century were recovered from feature 25.

Feature 16 was cut through the natural chalky boulder clay and appeared to be below (14). However the interface between the two was not very clear. Seen running across the width of the foundation trench, this

feature may have been a ditch or a gully. Pottery from it dates to the early to mid 13th century.

### Medieval and post-medieval pottery

H. Walker

A small amount of pottery (201 sherds, weighing 3?kg) was excavated. Most of the stratified pottery from the moat platform dates to the earlier 13th century, and there is evidence of occupation of this site from the later 12th to 19th centuries. Some interesting, but unstratified, Tudor and 19th-century pottery is reported on.

#### Method

The pottery has been classified according to Cunningham's typology for post-Roman pottery in Essex (Cunningham 1985a, 1-16), and some of her vessel and rim-form codes are quoted in this report. The cooking-pot rims are dated using Drury's typology at Rivenhall (Drury 1993, 81-4). All the fabrics mentioned have been described in previous volumes of *Essex Archaeology and History*, and Drury (1993) also defines most medieval fabrics in this report.

#### *The pottery from the moat platform*

*Sequence along northern foundation trench (wt of pottery 205g)* Pit/ditch 25 produced single sherds of early medieval ware and medieval coarse ware dating from the 12th century (from fill 26). A larger group of pottery was excavated from succeeding layer 3, comprising thirteen sherds of medieval coarse ware, some of which is borderline with early medieval ware. Featured sherds comprise a B4 cooking-pot rim, datable to c.1200. Stratified above, wall 5 produced a single sherd of medieval coarse ware, which must date to c.1200 or later.

#### *Sequence along north-eastern foundation trench (wt of pottery 342g)*

Pottery was found only in pit/ditch 16 (fill 15) and may be slightly later than that from the northern foundation trench, as finds include the top half of a Heddingham coarse-ware cooking pot with an H2 rim datable to the early to mid 13th century. It has buff-coloured surfaces, a grey core and is quite large with a diameter of 300mm. As is typical of large cooking pots, it has a vertical, thumbled, applied strip originating below the neck. There is a second Heddingham coarse-ware H2 cooking-pot rim, uniform grey in colour and slightly smaller, with a diameter of around 280mm. Also present in this context are three examples of early medieval ware. All sherds are large and unabraded, indicating low residuality.

#### *Sequence along northern foundation trench (wt of pottery 380g)*

Pottery was excavated from wall/wall foundation 17, producing a more mixed assemblage. Finds include a single sherd of shell-tempered ware, dating between the 10th and 13th centuries. There are also seven sherds of early medieval ware including the rim of a curfew (a large bowl-shaped vessel placed over the hearth at night, to keep the fire alight but stop sparks escaping). It is decorated with a double band of combed thumbing and is closely paralleled by an example from the late 12th to early 13th century phase at Stebbingford Farm, Felsted in NW central Essex (Walker 1996, fig.19.28). Examples of medieval coarse ware are again common (22 sherds) and forms comprise a small B4 cooking-pot rim (diameter 140mm) and a larger B2 rim (too fragmented to measure). Both types are datable to c.1200. It was noted that some sherds of medieval coarse ware contain sparse chalk inclusions. The latest pottery from this feature comprises two sherds of 14th to early 15th-century Cambridgeshire sgraffito ware (Bushnell and Hurst 1952, 21-6), showing curving lines incised through a coating of white slip to show the orange colour of the pot body beneath. Both sherds have a clear glaze, flecked with green.

*Occupation deposit 4 in test pit B (weight of pottery 8g)* This test pit was located within the moat platform, and produced two body sherds of medieval coarse ware from medieval occupation deposit 4, most likely dating to the 13th century.

*The unstratified pottery from cleaning/machining layer 1 (wt of pottery*

1804g) By far the largest amount of pottery came from this context, and has a date range of 12th to 19th centuries. All sherds are unabraded, including the early medieval material, and although unstratified, the pottery is summarised below as shows something of the duration and nature of occupation at Parsonage farm.

*Medieval pottery from context 1* The largest proportion of this assemblage is medieval, and as would be expected, most is similar to the stratified material from the moat platform, i.e. with examples of early medieval ware (15 sherds) and medieval coarse ware, including Hedingham coarse ware (58 sherds). Of interest, is an early medieval ware sherd with chalk tempering, and two joining sherds of early medieval ware with grog-tempering. Vessel forms are also similar to those from the stratified assemblage, comprising mainly cooking pot fragments with rim-forms datable from c.1200 to the mid-13th century. There is also one example of the more developed H1 cooking-pot rim, not present in the moat platform assemblage, and current throughout the 13th century. All but one of the rims are from quite small cooking pots. Other featured sherds consist of a medieval coarse-ware sherd with a rouletted applied strip and a Hedingham coarse-ware ribbed strap handle from a jug. There are two cross-fits between context 1 and wall/wall foundation context 17, further evidence that this pottery derives from the moat platform.

Medieval wares that do not occur in stratified contexts comprise Hedingham fine ware (8 sherds) and sandy orange ware including medieval Harlow ware (7 sherds). Featured Hedingham ware includes sherds with a creamy orange fabric, vertical combed decoration and a mottled green glaze, dating to perhaps the second half of the 13th century. There are also two sherds with a buff-coloured fabric, and splash glaze, which may indicate a date in the second half of the 12th century (Cotter forthcoming). The only form present is a slightly everted rim with vertical sides of around 320mm diameter showing an external, pale green, splash glaze. This may be from a large bowl or dish and is an unusual form in Hedingham ware. Featured sandy orange ware sherds include a fragment with cream slip-coating, green glaze and rouletted decoration, comparable to that found on North French style London-type ware jugs of the early to mid 13th century (Pearce *et al.* 1985, pl.10c). There is also a slip-painted and glazed sandy orange ware sherd, datable to 13th to 14th centuries. Medieval Harlow is represented by one body sherd showing a typical pitted splash glaze (see Walker 1991, 107 for a description of this ware).

*Tudor pottery from context 1* Pottery belonging to the Tudor period, i.e. the late 15th to 16th centuries, comprises a late medieval sandy orange ware bifid handle from large jug or cistern, and the remains of two drinking vessels. One is a fragment of ?Cistercian ware showing a wide pad base, the beginnings of a bulbous body and an apparent brown glaze, both inside and out. It is most likely to be from a two-handled cup (Brears 1971, 18-23, type 4), as this is the most common form. The second vessel is a frilled pedestal base from cup. It has a fine pinky-orange, very micaceous fabric with slightly darker surfaces and a glossy honey-coloured glaze. Such vessels have been found at Moulsham Street, Chelmsford, and also at Rivenhall, Kelvedon and Maldon (Cunningham 1985a, 60, fig.9.15-16). They are classified as Form E3C - standing cups, with either thumbbed or frilled pedestal bases, and appear in the sequence at Moulsham street at the end of the 16th century (Cunningham 1985b, 71).

These standing cups are described as post-medieval red earthenware, but the fabric is not typical and Cunningham speculates that they could be late Hedingham ware products, although there is as yet no evidence of this industry continuing into the post-medieval period (Cunningham 1985a, 15-16). However, this vessel also bears similarities to some recently published early 16th-century Red Border ware cups found in London, and made in the Surrey-Hampshire border region (Pearce 1997, 43-59). The exact form could not be paralleled, but the fabric description is very similar, as is the appearance of the underside of the base. Both this vessel and the Red Border ware cups exhibit a 'rim' around the circumference of the underside, along with gouge marks, lumps of adhering clay, and curving striations where the cup was removed from the wheel (Pearce 1997, fig. 4). Further work will need to be done to find the provenance of standing cups found in Essex.

*Post-medieval pottery from context 1* There are seven sherds of post-medieval red earthenware; the only form present is a flanged bowl rim with a partial internal glaze. A sherd of black-glazed ware and a sherd of Frechen stoneware with a 'tiger ware' salt glaze, most likely date to the 17th century.

*19th-century pottery from context 1* There are several 19th-century sherds including the base of a pearlware foot-ring bowl showing mocha decoration, and a pearlware saucer with a blue transfer-printed floral border, both are earlier 19th century.

However, of most interest is a fragment of 'Arts and Crafts' style pottery (Fig. 21) showing a fabric very similar to that of medieval Hedingham ware, pinky-orange in colour with a pale grey core. It shows applied press-moulded oak leaf and acorn decoration in white clay, enclosed within an applied ring of white clay. Some of the applied decoration has come away from the body of the pot. A green glaze

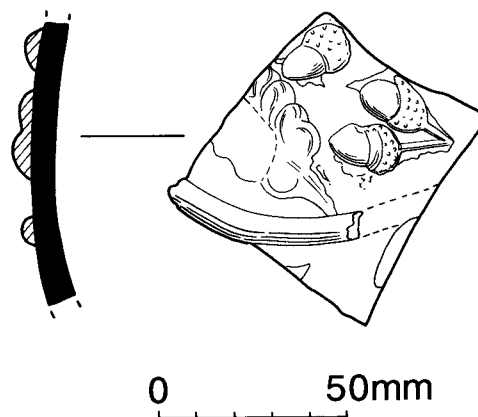


Fig. 21 Parsonage Farm, Wimbish. 'Arts and Crafts' pottery

gives a pale sage-green colour to the decoration and an olive green background. This is not a medieval piece, as press-moulded decoration was not used then. It is possible that this is an example of 19th-century Hedingham ware made by Edward Bingham who worked at the Castle Hedingham pottery from the mid-19th century to 1905 (Bradley 1968). Bingham used local clays, imported white Dorset and Devon clays, and made extensive use of press-moulded decoration. However, on examining examples of Bingham's work in the Braintree and Chelmsford museums, the author could find no parallel for either the oak leaf and acorn motifs, or the glaze colour. Bingham's green glazes tend to be either jade-green or a bright, almost lime-green, but given the general style of decoration and the Hedingham like fabric it still remains a possibility that this is an excavated example of 19th-century Hedingham ware.

*Pottery from the remaining test pits* Small amounts of pottery were recovered from test pits A, C and D dug during the 1995 excavation, but lying outside the area of the 1999 excavation. Pottery was also recovered from topsoil 6, and from post-medieval build up context 5 in test pit B. A total of 38 sherds of medieval and later pottery, weighing 723g was excavated and is tabulated in the archive. Medieval sherds were found in all three test-pits, but the only fine ware present is a sherd of Hedingham ware (from layer 3, TPA). It shows a broad applied strip in a pale coloured clay, beneath a plain lead glaze, and is probably an example of Rouen-style decoration datable to the early to mid-13th century. The coarse wares are very similar to the stratified material from the moat platform, comprising sherds of early medieval ware and medieval coarse ware, including single examples of B2 and H2 cooking-pot rims.

Post-medieval pottery from build up layer 5 in TPB and topsoil 6, includes part of a post-medieval red earthenware horizontal-handled storage jar, and the rim of a salt-glazed stoneware tavern mug datable to the 18th century. Pottery dating to the 19th and 20th centuries was excavated from topsoil 6 and TPA layer 2.

*Discussion of pottery*

The stratified pottery, the pottery from context 1, and the pottery from the test-pits, show good evidence of occupation during the first half of the 13th century. The preponderance of coarse wares over fine wares indicates most of the pottery is from a service or kitchen area. Occupation may have begun in the later 12th century, as evidenced by the early-type Hedingham ware in context 1.

The presence of Hedingham fine and coarse wares is expected as this ware was made in and around Sible Hedingham, which lies only about 18km to the east of Wimbish, and the fine ware is common throughout north Essex and Suffolk. Medieval Harlow ware usually has a fairly localised distribution, although it does occur in NW Essex (e.g. Stansted [Walker forthcoming], and Saffron Walden [unpublished]), and makes its way into Cambridgeshire. This extended distribution northwards infers it may have been traded along the route-way formed by the Rivers Lee/Stort/Cam. Cambridgeshire sgraffito ware is also relatively common in NW Essex. The presence of Cistercian ware which is rare in East Anglia, may be due to purely geographical considerations, as this corner of Essex is much nearer to the Midlands, where Cistercian ware is commonly found (Moorhouse 1984, 4). Chalk inclusions in some of the early medieval ware and medieval coarse-ware sherds indicate a local source of manufacture as this area of Essex overlies chalk deposits. This assemblage therefore shows a definite NW Essex sphere of influence.

It is difficult to gauge status from the pottery, although the presence of Tudor drinking cups, perhaps indicates middle class occupation during this period. There is less evidence of post-medieval occupation and it is unfortunate that the origins of No.1 could not be proved, as this would show 13th and 19th-century Hedingham ware in the same archaeological context.

**Conclusions**

Feature 5/19 was aligned on a different axis compared to all the later structures on this site. The stratigraphy suggests that it formed part of the earliest phase of occupation, possibly contemporary with the construction of the moat. Its original function is hard to determine but the depth of this feature suggests that it may be the remains of a metalled path. This interpretation is backed up by the relationship of this feature to feature 23, a ditch, which appeared to run on the same alignment (Fig. 20). Large cobbles were present on the ditch side of feature 5/19. These may have been acting as a support for this side of the path.

Wall 17 appeared to be a flint wall foundation laid 'dry' which ran north-south at the eastern end of the site. It had an area of flint on its eastern side that was probably part of a collapse. This wall, which was earlier than wall 18, may have been part of a building extending to east of the site. The majority of pottery retrieved from the surface of wall 17 dated from the 12th to the early 13th century and it is likely that this feature dates from this period. The two sherds of 14th to 15th-century pottery would have been intrusive. Although feature 18 was mortared and is from a later period, the perpendicular relationship between wall 17 and wall 18 suggests that these two walls could have formed part of a single building.

Feature 18 was the remains of a mortared flint wall that ran east-west, perpendicular to feature 17 and, although slightly wider, to the wall identified in trench B of the 1995 evaluation. Wall 18 overlaid wall 17 at its eastern end and may have been a later extension to the previous structure. The wall identified in the 1995 evaluation did not extend as far as wall 18, but its

method of construction and the fabric were very similar. The southern face of this wall was very carefully laid so as to produce a flat surface that suggests that it was intended to be seen. The wall found in trench B of the 1995 evaluation may have been an internal wall for a building represented by 18. The wall in trench B was dated to the post-medieval period (Garwood 1995), and is therefore probable that wall 18 dates to the same period.

It is possible that the original dwelling on the moated platform is represented by wall 17 and that this survived right through until the 16th century, when wall 18 was added. The present building was built in the 19th century. However it appeared to have been rebuilt using the foundations of a pre-19th century building. This previous phase of the present building had replaced the building represented by 17/18. It seems logical that the culverts are contemporary with the pre 19th-century phase of the present building due to the fact that the brickwork and bonding is of a similar type.

**Acknowledgements**

Mr F. Dhalla funded the project. C. Down and the author carried out on site recording. Finds analysis by H. Walker. Robert Rose allowed access to H. Walker to examine the collection of 19th-century Hedingham ware at Braintree Museum store. The pottery illustration is by Iain Bell.

**Bibliography**

- Bradley, R. J. 1968 'The story of Castle Hedingham pottery' (1837-1905): Part 1, *The Connoisseur* February, March and April 1968, 16-20
- Brears, P. C. D. 1971 *The English Country Pottery: Its History and Techniques* (Newton Abbot, David and Charles)
- Bushnell, G. H. S. and Hurst, J. G. 1952 'Some further examples of Sgraffito ware from Cambridge' *Proc. Cambridge Antiq. Soc.* 46, 21-6
- Cotter, J. forthcoming *The post-Roman pottery from excavations in Colchester 1971-85*, Colchester Archaeol. Rep. 7
- Cunningham, C. M. 1985 'A typology for post-Roman pottery in Essex', in Cunningham, C. M. and Drury, P. J., *Post-medieval sites and their pottery: Moulsham Street, Chelmsford*, Chelmsford Archaeol. Trust Rep. 5, CBA Res. Rep. 54, 1-16
- Cunningham, C. M. 1985 'The pottery', in Cunningham, C. M. and Drury, P. J., *Post-medieval sites and their pottery: Moulsham Street, Chelmsford*, Chelmsford Archaeol. Trust Rep.5, CBA Res. Rep.54, 63-78
- Drury, P. J. 1993 'The later Saxon, medieval and post-medieval pottery', in Rodwell, W. J. and Rodwell, K. A., *Rivenhall: Investigations of a villa, church and village, 1950 - 1977*, Chelmsford Archaeol. Trust Rep. 4.2. CBA Rep. 80, 78 - 95
- Garwood, A. 1995 Parsonage Farm, Wimbish, Essex. Archaeological Evaluation Report. ECC Internal Report.
- Moorhouse, S. 1984 'Cistercian wares', *West Midlands Pottery Research Group Newsletter*, 4, 2 - 5
- Pearce, J. E. 1997 'Evidence for the early 16th-century Surrey-Hampshire Border Ware industry from the City of London', *Medieval Ceramics* 21, 43-59
- Taylor, C. C. 1978 'Moated sites: their definition, form, and classification', in *Medieval Moated Sites* (ed. F. A. Aberg), CBA Res. Rep. 17
- Walker, H. 1991 'The medieval and later pottery', in Andrews, D.D., 'An archaeological sequence at the edge of Old Harlow marketplace', *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* 22, 107-12
- Walker, H. 1996 'Medieval and post-medieval pottery', in

Medlycott, M., 'The medieval farm and its landscape: excavations at Stebbingford Farm, Felsted', *Essex Archaeol. Hist.* 27, 127-50

Walker, H. forthcoming 'The medieval and post-medieval pottery', in Brooks, H. and Havis R., *Excavations at Stansted Airport*, E. Anglian Archaeol.

**Martello Tower 'C', Lion Point, Jaywick, near Clacton-on -Sea**

By Dave Went

The Martello tower at Lion Point, Jaywick (Tower 'C' in the original designation of the defences of the Essex shore line) was surveyed in January 1999 as part of an assignment for a Master's degree from Leicester University. The survey was also prompted by the discovery, during English Heritage's recent review of the scheduled status of all the six surviving Essex towers, that no adequate plans or descriptions of the east coast design could be found and that published works tended to confuse the east coast towers with the earlier and more prolific south coast examples. This survey was therefore intended to rectify a shortcoming by placing a

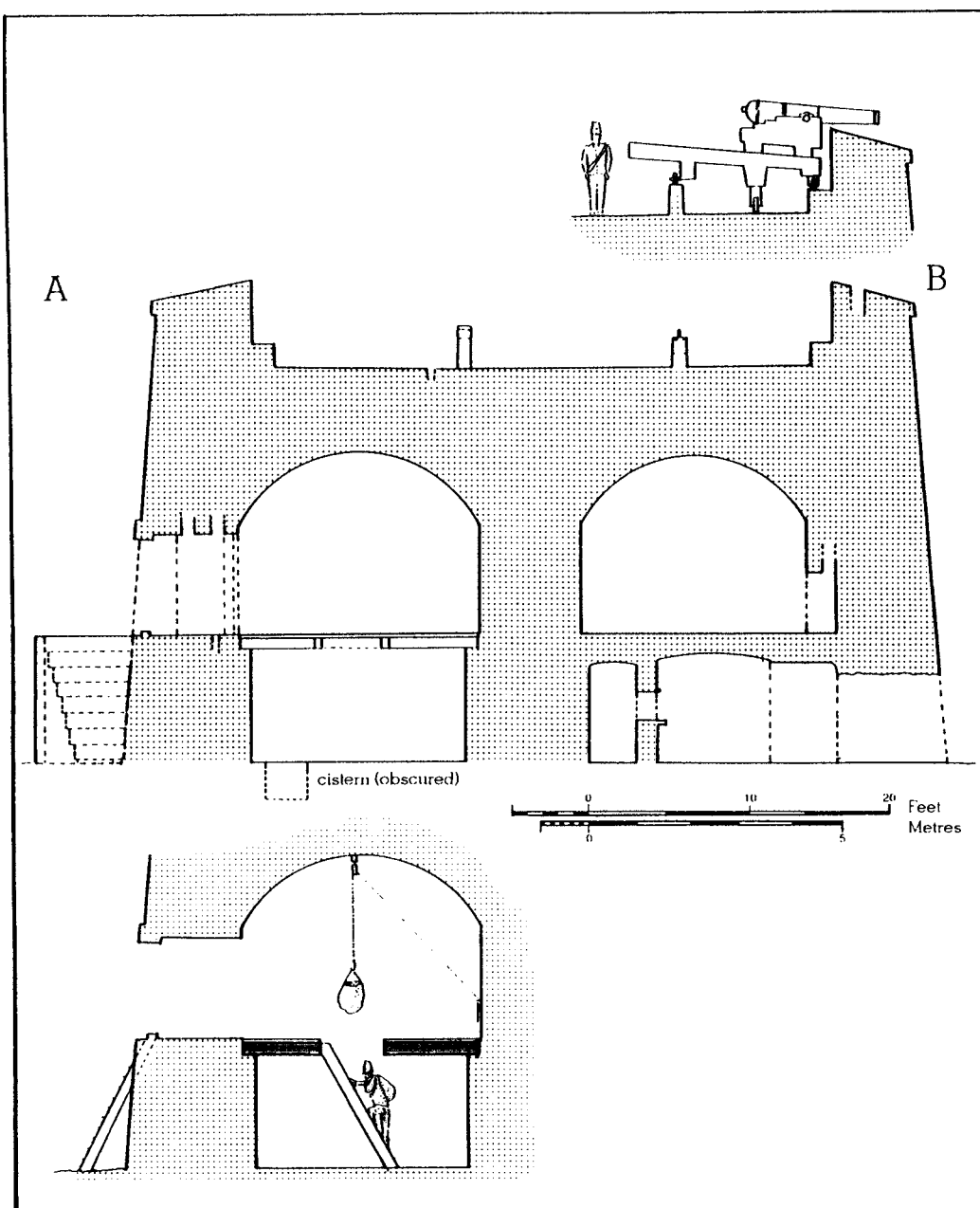


Fig. 22 Martello Tower 'C', Lion Point, Jaywick; elevation

set of detailed plans and descriptions on the record.

Martello towers developed in two phases after the renewal of French hostilities in 1803. Construction began along the south coast between 1805 and 1808 and continued around the shorelines of Essex and Suffolk between 1808 and 1812. In all 103 towers were constructed, as well as three ten-gun forts (or redoubts) situated at Eastbourne, Dymchurch and Harwich. The essential difference between the two phases is that the east coast towers were built to carry greater armament which dictated a more massive structure and a slightly triangular (rather than truly circular) plan. The measured plans and elevations of Tower C (Figs 22 and 23) provide a model for this later design. The tower is constructed primarily in brick, measuring 8.9m from base to parapet and 17m across the widest axes at ground level. The fighting top retains pivots for three guns (a 24 pound long cannon and two 5½ pound Howitzers) as opposed to the earlier single cannon, each set within a semicircular embrasure behind the bevelled stone parapet. The weight of the fighting top was supported by a vaulted ceiling rising from a central brick column. The middle floor provided accommodation and served as an intermediate stage for the ammunition - which was brought from the basement magazine through a wooden trapdoor and carried aloft along two flights of stairs built into in the thickness of the outer wall. Tower C, as with all Martello Towers, was provided with a single door at first floor level. The door

was always set on the landward side so as to be less vulnerable to bombardment, although the east coast design compromised this ideal by allowing two additional windows which faced towards the sea. Surviving details were numerous; one of the most telling being the use of wooden dowels to secure the garrison room floor in order to reduce the danger of sparks and the possibility of igniting powder trails formed during action. Like most Essex towers Tower C supported a forward battery - a thick V-shaped brick wall pointing seawards, terraced to the rear and equipped with five 24-pound cannons on carriages similar to those employed on the tower. In the 1960s new sea defences were constructed over the line of the battery, but its plan can still be seen in the curious projection of the modern sea wall. Only two Essex towers now retain fragments of battery walls. Those at Tower A (St Osyth) have been known for some years, although the remains at Tower K (Walton Creek) have only recently been rediscovered as a result of the scheduling review.

Napoleon's anticipated invasion failed to materialise and the defensive strength of the tower system (perhaps one of the major deterrents) was never tested. The whole concept was rendered obsolete and the towers came to be regarded as an expensive folly. They are, nonetheless, significant features of Essex's historic landscape - reflecting the sense of national emergency during the international conflict which came to be regarded as the defining event of the early 19th century.

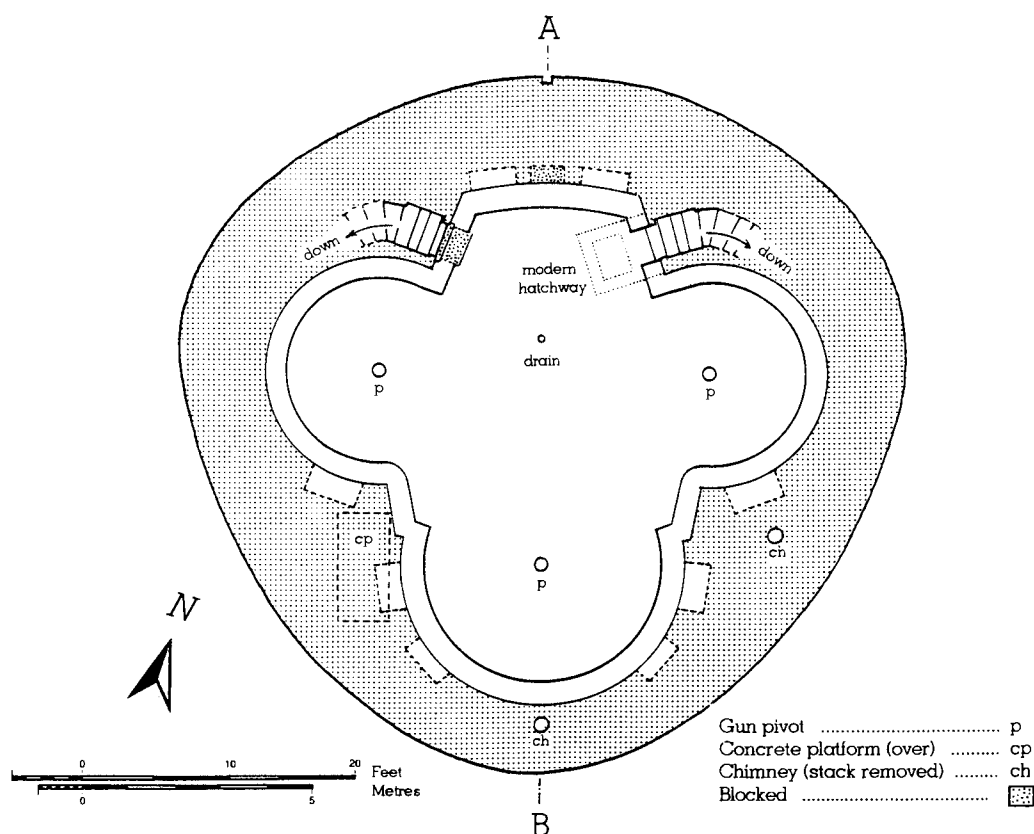


Fig. 23 Martello Tower 'C', Lion Point, Jaywick; plan

## Book reviews

**Aspects of the History of Ongar,**  
by the Ongar Millenium History Group. Ed.  
Michael Leach. 1999. Pp. xii + 333. Card cover  
in colour. Map. 26 illus. £12.95, from 2  
Landview Gardens, Ongar, Essex, CM5 9EQ.

Chipping Ongar is a small town and parish 21 miles NE of London. Brief accounts of it appeared in Morant's *History of Essex*, and in booklets by Isaac Jennings (1862), P.J. Budworth (1876) and R.I. Porter (1877). *The Victoria County History of Essex volume IV* (1956), edited by this reviewer, included an article on Ongar. It owed much to a survey of the town (now E.R.O., T/P 96) made in 1951 by the local branch of the W.E.A., under the direction of the late Reyner Banham, a young student who went on to become a distinguished professor of architecture. The secretary of the Ongar W.E.A. at that time was Mr D.W. Hutchings, and he kindly assisted the *V.C.H.* editor by carrying out topographical surveys for all the 26 parishes of Ongar hundred in volume IV.

The good example of local collaboration set by the W.E.A. has been followed by Michael Leach and his team. Their book contains 31 chapters on different topics, contributed (sometimes jointly) by 28 writers. Three of the chapters were written by Elisabeth Barrett, three by Michael Leach, and two each by Sandra Kerr and Martyn Lockwood. The book is well designed and beautifully presented. A map shows 'Sites of Historic Interest'. It would have been useful, also, to have mapped the many modern features mentioned.

The scope of the book is wider than the title suggests. 'Ongar Great Park' (Sandra Kerr) was in Stanford Rivers and High Ongar. 'St Andrew's church' (David Tester) is in Greensted. 'Health care and hospitals' (Michael Leach) includes institutions in Stanford Rivers and Shelley. 'Primrose McConnell' (Sandra Kerr) was tenant of Ongar Park Farm in High Ongar.

The chapters vary in length from two pages to fifty-two. While they range from the 11th century to the present day, twenty of them relate to the years since 1800. Earlier periods figure in three overlapping chapters, on 'Local government' (Jenny Main), 'Poor relief' and 'Law and order' (Martyn Lockwood). 'Chipping Ongar and the Morices' (Margaret Buxton) is a study of more than local interest. The Morices, lords of the manor from 1542 to c. 1650, rose to

prominence in the service of Henry VII and Henry VIII. They were involved in the religious movements of the 16th century, and had close links with both Cranmer and Sir Richard (later Lord) Rich. This chapter pays full attention to their local estates, showing how these were affected by their involvement in national affairs. 'Religious dissent ... from 1662 to 1810' (Michael Leach) uses a wide variety of sources, and notes the connexions between Ongar's dissenters and those elsewhere. 'St. Martin's church' (Frank Hart) gives an account of the building, the rectors, and the parish officers.

Robin Taylor Gilbert's 'The Taylor family ... and their houses' deals with the well-known literary family headed by Isaac Taylor, minister of Ongar Congregational church from 1811 to 1829. This is twice as long as any other chapter in the book, and contains many quotations from family letters. These extracts would have benefited from drastic pruning, but they certainly evoke the past, and some are highly entertaining. Readers who have recently moved house will appreciate Mrs Taylor's account of the family's move from Castle House in 1814. The remover's waggon, carrying Isaac's books, and drawn by 'a horse worth 60£', almost ran into the castle moat, and later upset its load of furniture and wine onto the road. This chapter has a comprehensive bibliography.

'The history of Ongar Grammar School' (two chapters, I.L. Williams and John Whaler) is a condensed version of an article recently published in *Essex Archaeology and History*. This private school (1811- c. 1940) had its own dairy farm, and one of the earliest cadet corps in Essex. 'Secondary education ... 1936-89' (John Harrop and John Swallow) traces the fortunes of Ongar county secondary school. In the second half of the chapter John Swallow, the last headmaster, describes the local campaign to save the school from closure, and makes no secret of his regret that it was unsuccessful. 'A home for the homeless' (Ron Barnes) is a history of Ongar Cottage Homes, later Great Stony school, founded by Hackney Poor Law Union, and surviving until c. 1990. 'Trade and commerce' (Elisabeth Barrett) is based on a thorough analysis of census reports, personal information and many other sources. It has some pleasantly light touches, as in recalling the smell of cheese that pervaded the post office, c. 1910, from the grocery cellar below.

'Captain Budworth and the Budworth Hall'



(Michael Leach) is a biography followed by a history of the memorial hall. Budworth (1817-85), squire of Greensted, was a towering local figure. In his *Memorials of Greensted-Budworth, Chipping Ongar and High Ongar*, he even tried, though unsuccessfully, to graft his name onto the ancient parish.

'The Railways of Ongar' (Edwyn Gilmour) will be welcomed both by the general reader and the technical expert. 'Scouting' (Peter Evans) is a detailed chronicle, by an enthusiast, revealing the variety and value of scouting in the town since 1921. 'The development of Cloverly Road' (Wendy Thomas) describes the origin and growth of a suburban road laid out in 1903 by Henry Jones of Marden Ash House. It contains much information about the residents and their social status. We learn, for example, that one of the first houses was occupied by Henry Jones's butler.

'Living history' (Felicite Barnes), is an exercise in oral history. It includes the memories of Marie Korf, the daughter of a German tailor who settled in Ongar in the 1890s, but was interned during the First World War.

This chapter might have been even better if more of the reminiscences had been reproduced verbatim. 'Landmark trees' (Bob MacDonald) is a novel and exemplary feature. It identifies several ancient oaks, and some new trees, including a chestnut 'sown from a conker ... planted at 7.20 p.m. on 27 March 1990.' An Appendix to the book contains a list of measurements and currency and a table of abbreviations.

In his preface the editor apologises for the fact that the articles are not always referenced to sources as thoroughly as he had hoped. It may also be suggested that a general bibliography would have been useful. A few literal errors have been noted, which this reviewer is reporting to the editor for his list of corrigenda in the second edition of *Aspects of the History of Ongar*. The first edition has already been sold out. This is not surprising, for it is an admirable contribution to the history of the 'pretty little town' of which Isaac Taylor remarked, on seeing it for the first time, 'I could be content to live and die in that spot.'

W.R. Powell.

## Essex bibliography

Bibliography of journal literature on Essex archaeology and history at February 2000.

Both monograph and periodical literature are included. Articles published in journals which are devoted exclusively to Essex (e.g. *Essex Journal* are not included). Items which have been overlooked in earlier bibliographies are added for completeness of coverage.

- Allen, S. 1998 'A miniature medieval or post-medieval cauldron from near Silchester', *Proceedings Hants Field Club and Archaeological Society* 53, 227-9 [specimen from Chelmsford discussed]
- Atkinson, M. 1999 'Growth and decay of an Essex village', *British Archaeology* no. 47, 8-11
- Bedwin, O.R. and Bedwin, M.J. 1999 *A Roman malt house: excavations at Stebbing Green, Essex 1988*, E. Anglian Archaeol. Occ. Pap. 6
- Blair, I. 1999 'Low Hall Manor, Walthamstow', *Current Archaeology* no. 162, 226-9
- Byford, M. 1998 'The birth of a Protestant Town: the process of Reformation in Tudor Colchester, 1530-1580', in Collinson, P. and Craig, J., *The Reformation in English Towns, 1500-1640*, 23-47
- Carter, G.A. 1998 *Excavations at the Orsett 'Cock' enclosure, Essex 1976*, E. Anglian Archaeol. 86
- Crummy, P.J. 1999 'Colchester: making towns out of fortresses and the first urban fortifications in Britain', in H.R.Hurst (ed.), *The colonia of Roman Britain: new studies and a review*, Journal of Roman Archaeology supplementary series no. 36, 88-100
- Dobney, K., Hall, A. and Kenward, H. 1999 "'It's all garbage" .... A review of bioarchaeology in four English colonia towns' in H.R.Hurst (ed.), *The colonia of Roman Britain: new studies and a review*, Journal of Roman Archaeology supplementary series no. 36, 15-35
- Eckhardt, H. 1999 'The Colchester "child's grave"', *Britannia* 30, 57-89
- Lloyd, C.D. 1999 'The C mint of Carausius and Allectus', *British Numismatic Journal* 68, 1-10 [Colchester unlikely to have been mint location]
- Mason, A.S. 1999 'Summer camps for soldiers 1778-82', *Local Historian* 29 no. 4, 212-22 [Essex based]
- Pearson, J. 1998 'Threshing out the Common in Community: the Great Tey riot of 1727', *Rural History* 9, 43-56
- Spyvee, H. 1999 'Eld Lane, Colchester and the Spurgeon family', *Baptist Quarterly* 38, no. 3, 123-7
- Sutherland, A. 1999 'Conserving Roman artefacts from a Roman settlement in Essex', *Archaeology International* 2, 20-2
- Symonds, R.P. and Wade, S.M. 1999 *Roman pottery from excavations in Colchester 1971-86*, Colchester Archaeological Report 10
- White, M., Mitchell, J., Bridgland D. and McNab, J. 1999 'Rescue excavations at an Acheulean site at Southend Road, South Woodford, Borough of Redbridge E18', *Archaeological Journal* 155, 1-21

Andrew Phillips  
Paul Sealey

ESSEX SOCIETY FOR ARCHAEOLOGY AND HISTORY

OFFICERS AND COUNCIL DECEMBER 1999

*Patron*

Lord Braybrooke, J.P., Lord Lieutenant of Essex

*Honorary Life President*

Colonel Sir John Ruggles-Brise Bt, CB, OBE, TD, JP

*President*

D.G.Buckley

*Vice-Presidents*

The Rt. Hon. Lord Braybrooke  
Lord Bishop of Chelmsford  
The Master of Sidney Sussex College, Cambridge  
The Master of Pembroke College, Cambridge  
Lord Petre

The Mayor of Southend  
The Mayor of Maldon  
Dr A.F.J. Brown  
Dr. G.H. Martin  
Mrs M.U. Jones

*Hon. Secretary*

Dr M. Leach

*Trustees*

J.S. Appleby; M.S. Crellin; W.R. Powell; P. Buxton;  
Dr. J. Ward

*Hon. Programme Secretary*

Dr D.D. Andrews

*Hon. Excursions Secretary*

Mrs P. Ryan

*Hon. Treasurer*

R. Fuller

*Hon. Editor for this volume*

Owen Bedwin

*Hon. Assistant Treasurer and  
Publications Development Fund Secretary*

W. Hewitt

*Hon. Librarian*

A.B. Phillips

*Hon. Newsletter Editor*

P. Gilman

*Curator*

Dr P. Berridge

*Hon. Legal Adviser*

Charles Sparrow, Q.C.

*Hon. Membership Secretary*

Dr J. Kemble

*Council*

The President and Honorary Officers, the Trustees  
N. Brown; P. Cott; C.E. Crossan; K. Crowe; N.R. Edwards; J. Fawn; M. Medlycott; W. Petchey; J. Smith;  
H.M. Stuchfield; B. Watkin; R. Wood

*Representative Members*

Essex Record Office: K. Hall  
Essex County Council Archaeology Section: D.G. Buckley  
Victoria County History: Dr. J. Cooper  
University of Essex: Dr K. Schurer  
Chelmsford and Essex Museum: N.P. Wickenden

*Representatives of the Society on other bodies*

Colchester Archaeological Trust: J. Burton  
Chelmsford Borough Council Conservation Area Advisory Committee: Mrs J. Beardsley  
Colchester Borough Council Conservation Area Advisory Committee: Mrs C. Mabbitt  
Chelmsford Borough Council Arts Committee: N.P. Wickenden  
Advisory Committee for Archaeology in Essex: Dr. J. Kemble  
Essex Archaeological and Historical Congress: H.M. Stuchfield  
Victoria County History: Dr D.D. Andrews  
Council for British Archaeology: Dr. C.C. Thornton  
Colchester Borough Council Recreation, Tourism and Arts Committee: Dr P. Berridge  
Essex Record Office Users Forum: Mrs N. Edwards  
VCH Appeal Committee: J.S. Appleby

